

DUQUESNE UNIVERSITY
The Gumberg Library





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2023 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/isbn_040456528

A FOURTEENTH CENTURY
ENGLISH BIBLICAL VERSION

AMS PRESS
NEW YORK

Bible. M. English & Middle English.
"Selections. 1974.

A FOURTEENTH CENTURY ENGLISH BIBLICAL VERSION

EDITED BY

ANNA C. PAUES,

PH.D. UPSALA ; FELLOW OF NEWNHAM COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.

CAMBRIDGE :
at the University Press.

1904

Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data

Bible. N. T. English (Middle English). Selections.

1974.

A fourteenth century English Biblical version.

I. Paues, Anna Carolina, 1867- ed. II. Title.

BS2038.P3 1974 225.5'201 76-178573

ISBN 0-404-56528-X

BS2038

P3

1974

Reprinted from an original copy in the collections of
the George Peabody Department, Enoch Pratt Free Library.

From the edition of 1904, Cambridge

First AMS edition published in 1974

Manufactured in the United States of America

AMS PRESS INC.

NEW YORK, N.Y. 10003

DEDICATED
TO
J. E. KENNEDY.

MAR 11 1981

PREFACE.

THE text which appears for the first time in this volume was printed for private circulation in May 1902 as a thesis for the degree of Phil. Dr. at the University of Upsala. It was preceded by a few introductory chapters on the history of Middle English Biblical Versions, a subject which had scarcely been touched since the Rev. Josiah Forshall and Sir Frederic Madden gave a historical survey of early English Scriptural translations in the first volume of their great quarto edition of the Wycliffe Bible, published in 1850. I had succeeded in discovering a fair amount of new material and I found that it was impossible to treat the subject at all adequately within the limited space of an introduction. In consideration of this the Syndics of the University Press with their accustomed courtesy and kindness agreed to a change of plan, and have allowed me to publish the text with an introduction special to itself. I hope later to complete the historical introduction and expand it into a separate volume.

With regard to the work in its present form, a few words of explanation may be necessary. In the chapter on 'Language' I have, for instance, limited myself to the English and Scandinavian elements since an enquiry into these proved sufficient for my purpose, viz. to establish the composite nature of the text and determine the dialects of the different parts.

In the Notes the principal deviations from the text of the Vulgate have been recorded and when possible explained by reference to Old Latin and other sources. As a basis of comparison I have adopted *Codex Amiatinus* which M. Berger in

his *Histoire de la Vulgate* (p. 37) pronounces to be 'le meilleur et le plus célèbre des manuscrits de la Bible latine.'

The list of words found at the end of the volume makes no pretension to being a complete glossary. It is mainly intended to explain such words as could not be readily understood by the average English reader without reference to a Middle English dictionary.

In conclusion I have to express my grateful thanks to the Syndics of the University Press for undertaking the publication of this book, and to the Staff for great assistance in the course of the printing; to the Master and Librarian of Selwyn College, Cambridge, and the Earl of Leicester, of Holkham Hall, Norfolk, for the loan of manuscripts; to the Librarian of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, for facilities offered in copying MS. Parker 434; and to Miss Haggitt, of 6, Clifton Place, Hyde Park, London, for the loan of a transcript of MS. Douce 250.

I also wish to express my indebtedness to the Staff of the University Library for much kind assistance given and many facilities offered, especially to the Librarian, Mr Francis Jenkinson, to Mr Magnússon and Mr Rogers.

Further I have to thank Docent Eilert Ekwall of Upsala for reading the proof-sheets of Chapter III. of the introduction, and for many helpful suggestions in connection therewith, and last, but not least, my friend and former teacher, Miss J. E. Kennedy, for helping me to transcribe part of the MS. Parker 434, and for reading the proof-sheets of the text and the greater part of the introduction. Her warm interest and unfailing sympathy have proved the greatest encouragement and help to me during the whole course of my work.

A. C. PAUES.

NEWNHAM COLLEGE,
CAMBRIDGE.

April 1904.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE
PREFACE	vii
INTRODUCTION :—	
CHAPTER	
I. Account of the MSS., contents and source of the Version	xi
II. The 'Raison d'être' of the Version	xxiv
III. Language	xxxiii
IV. Translation	lxviii
TEXT :—	
Prologue	1
1 Peter i. 3—v. 11	18
2 Peter	24
James	29
1 John	36
2 John	42
3 John	43
Jude	44
Romans v. 19—viii., xii., xiii.	48
1 Corinthians i. 10—iii., v.—vii., xi.—xiii.	56
2 Corinthians vi.	68
Galatians v. 2—vi. 17	69
Ephesians iv.—vi.	71
Philippians i. 27—ii. 18, iii.—iv. 1, iv. 4—9	76
Colossians i. 9—iv. 8	79
1 Thessalonians i. 2—v. 25	84
2 Thessalonians i. 3—iii. 16	88
Hebrews i.—xiii. 21	91

TEXT (*continued*):

	PAGE
1 Timothy	109
2 Timothy i.—iv. 5	116
Titus i. 5—iii. 11	120
The Acts i.—xv. 32, xv. 34—xxviii. 28, 30–31	123
Matthew i.—vi. 13	199
APPENDIX I. The Catholic Epistles of MS. Douce 250	209
APPENDIX II. Variant readings of MS. Holkham 672	226
NOTES	230
LIST OF WORDS	256
LIST OF SIGNS AND ABBREVIATIONS	262

ERRATA.

Page 23, l. 8 from above, *for vnleffel read vnlefful.*
,, 26, l. 2 „, *below, for bodylyche read bo[l]dylyche (=H.).*
,, 40, l. 13 „, *for sunne read s[o]ne (=H. P.).*
,, 42, l. 1 „, *for haue read haue [herde] (=H.).*
,, 45, l. 9 „, *above, for comaundementes) read comaundementes.*
,, 62, l. 17 „, *below, for [heo] read he[o].*
,, 105, l. 8 „, *for poroʒ read poroʒ.*
,, 113, l. 9 „, *for nerewes read ne[u]ewes (=H.).*
,, 119, l. 6 „, *for pinges read pinges.*
,, 153, l. 3 „, *for Holygoste¹⁹ read Holygoste¹⁹).*
,, 153, l. 2 „, *for Criste) read Criste.*
,, 174, l. 11 „, *above, for pupul read pupul.*
,, 207, l. 14 „, *for falsly⁸ read falsly.*
,, 207, l. 15 „, *for ȝe⁵ read ȝe².*
,, 210, l. 6 „, *below, for doune read do[m]e (D. doune).*
,, 218, l. 7 „, *above, for br[o]pur[hede] read br[e]jur[hede].*

INTRODUCTION.

CHAPTER I.

ACCOUNT OF THE MANUSCRIPTS, CONTENTS AND SOURCE OF THE VERSION.

THIS version, now for the first time printed, has come down to us in five MSS., of which three are preserved in Cambridge libraries, the fourth in the Bodleian Library, Oxford, and the fifth in the private collection of the Earl of Leicester at Holkham Hall, Norfolk.

The MSS. are as follows :

(1) *S.=Selwyn College 108 L. 1.*

This copy formerly belonged to the Rev. Canon W. Cooke, F.S.A., of Trinity Hall, and was bequeathed by him together with other MSS. and books to Selwyn College. It is a small quarto, written according to the opinion of Dr Montague James about the year 1400. The vellum is coarse and soiled in many places, the handwriting is large and uneven. Two scribes were probably at work, one supplying ff. 86—101^b, the other the preceding and following parts of the volume.

Folios 1—19 have black initials of later date, ff. 86—93 have contemporary red ones, in the remaining parts they are omitted. The volume has been corrected throughout by a nearly contemporary hand, designated in the notes as the 'first corrector'. The same hand has further repeated in the margin at irregular intervals certain words of the text, surrounding them with a line. Other corrections have been made by hands belonging to the late fifteenth and early sixteenth centuries.

¹ To judge from some of his notes and additions this 'first corrector' must have been a Kentishman, e.g. *sen* (O.E. *synn*) Eph. v 27, *brynggynk* Acts xiv 12, *pynke?* (þinge P.) Heb. xi 13. For other examples of his dialect, see p. 8 l. 9, 1 Pet. iii 3, Acts vii 59, xxi 20, xxii 28.

The names Maria, Jesus, Johannes occur without any apparent reason at the head of the first page of this MS. as well as of the Parker copy. I am indebted to Mr Jenkinson, the University Librarian, for the excellent suggestion that they in all likelihood originally explained a picture of the crucifixion in some earlier illuminated MS., and that the scribe in copying wrote the names down as if the picture were still there.

S. is not homogeneous in dialect. The Prologue, Peter, James, 1 John and the Pauline Epistles are Southern, see p. lxvi § 92; 2—3 John, Jude, Matthew and the Acts are Midland with a more or less strong intermixture of Southern forms, see p. lxvii § 93; the Acts moreover retain pronounced traces of a North Midland dialect, in character similar to that of C., see § 91, e.g. in chap. i—ii 7 all the pres. participles (16) end in *-ande*; the 3 sg. pres. ind. has *-(e)s* in *has*, *byhoues* i 16, *byhouys* i 21; further occasional characteristic forms like *wore* iv 1, or xxiii 16, *mykel* i 5, *whulke* xxiii 21, *gaf*(pt. pl.) i 26, *schal* (plur.) i 8, ii 17, 38, *brake* (plur.) ii 46, the pronoun *he þis* i 11, 18, iii 3, *hym þis* iii 12, the def. article *þo* i 15, ii 10 (4×), ii 11 (3×) etc.

S. was unknown to the Rev. Josiah Forshall and Sir Frederic Madden, who in the first volume of their great quarto edition of the Wycliffe Bible gave a historical survey of early English Scriptural translations (Oxford, 1870). It was brought to my notice through a note in the Librarian's catalogue of the Parker MSS. in Corpus Christi College, Cambridge. This note, appended to MS. Parker 434, states that it had been transcribed in 1882 for the Rev. Canon Cooke, who had another copy. In 1884 S. formed part of the Wycliffe Exhibition in the British Museum, lent for the purpose by Canon Cooke; it is shortly described by Sir E. M. Thompson in the catalogue of the exhibited MSS. (p. 13 f.). I have found no further mention of this MS.

S., being the older and better of the two complete MSS., has been taken as the basis of the present edition. The text of the Prologue, of the Epistles, and Gospel of St Matthew, is printed from it.

(2) *P. = Parker 434, Corpus Christi College.*

An octavo volume written on vellum in the earlier half of the fifteenth century, in a clear pretty court hand, the same throughout. The dialect of P. is Southern with a fair intermixture of Kentish forms:—e.g. *amonk* Acts iv 17; *þet* ib. xxiii 28; *þing* for *þink* Prol. 7. 5; *pet* 2. 29; *heden* 3. 13; *dedest* 3. 22; *hel*, 10. 9, 11, 12; *wrezed* 13. 29; *feer* 13. 30, 1 Pet. i 7 etc. The scribe of P. writes regularly *fram*, *nat*, *nauȝt*, *þorw*, *eny*, *wele*, in other respects he scarcely deviates from the orthography and phonology of S. In the Acts P.

exhibits the same Northern peculiarities as S. The contents of the two MSS. are the same.

A short account of this MS. and its contents, together with a few extracts from the text, is given by Forshall and Madden, *Wycl. Bible*, 1 p. xii f. They state that it is 'in the western dialect and probably the original copy.'

(3) *C. = University Library Dd. XII. 39.*

A duodecimo on vellum from Bishop John Moore's library, which was bought and subsequently given to the University of Cambridge by George I. in 1715. It was written in the latter part of the fourteenth century in a small square court hand. The volume contains several religious pieces¹ of considerable interest, and on ff. 16—72^b our version of the Acts of the Apostles.

For the dialect of C. see p. lxv § 91. The text of the Acts is here printed from C., as it is the oldest of our MSS. and comes nearest to the original.

C. was unknown to the editors of the Wycliffe Bible, and I have found no reference to it elsewhere.

(4) *D. = Douce 250, Bodleian Library.*

A small octavo written on vellum circa 1400. Two hand-writings are discernible, remarkably like those of S. Ff. 8—8^b and f. 58 are written by one hand, the remaining parts by the other.

The contents of the volume are as follows:—f. 1, Matthew i 1—19, iv 7—v 34; f. 8, Acts i 1—19, iv 7—xv 32, xv 34—xvi 28, xvii 7—xxiii 24, xxiii 26—xxviii (verse 29 missing); f. 58, James; f. 62, 1 Peter (iii 19—22, iv 2—6 missing); f. 67^b, 2 Peter (i 19 missing); f. 72, 1 John; f. 77^b, 2 John; f. 78, 3 John (verses 9, 10, 12 missing); f. 78^b, Jude. The translation of Matthew and the Acts found in this volume agrees with that of the preceding MSS. The Catholic Epistles, however, represent an entirely different version from which the early compiler evidently borrowed 2—3 John and Jude and introduced them into his collection of Biblical books. See on this point p. lxx.

MS. D. is referred to by the editors of the Wycliffe Bible, 1 p. xiii note *h*.

¹ These are: f. 1, *Of þe seuen vertewes*, a part of the so-called Dan John Gaytrigg's Sermon, edited by Perry, G. G., E.E.T.S. Original Series No. 26; f. 3, *Of wedded men ande þer wyues ande þer childer*, attributed to Wycliffe and printed by Arnold, *S.E.W.* iii 188—201; f. 72^b, *þo Pater noster in Englyshe*, attributed to Wycliffe by Thomas Waldensis, *Doctr. Fidei*, iii 34, printed in *S.E.W.* iii 93—97.

The Catholic Epistles of D., with the exception of 2—3 John, Jude which appear in the body of the text, are printed in Appendix I, p. 209 ff.

D. is a Southern transcript of a Midland text. The dialect scarcely deviates from that of the corresponding parts of S. Matthew differs only in the following cases: *zeftys* ii 11, *fulfullud* ii 17, *whas* iii 11, 12, *byzande* iv 15, *schepē* iv 21, *meny* iv 25, *þristyn* v 6, *candylstyke* v 15, further in having the pres. part. regularly in *-inge* as compared to the frequent *-enge* in S. The Acts have as a rule the same Northern and North Midland peculiarities as S., and in addition *whorto* v 9, *wore* vii 21, ix 21, *þore* xxv 14, *whas* ix 11, x 6, xi 28, *þeir* xxiii 32, *þat at* vii 44, x 15, xi 9, *þou ert* x 26, *eftyr* xxvii 14. James, Peter, 1 John have also traces of the same Northerly dialect: *or* 1 Pet. i 20, *ware* (prt.) ib. iii 16, *wore* ib. v 8, *þeire* ib. ii 8, 2 Pet. iii 16, *hald* (imp.) 1 Pet. iii 15, *þat at* ib. iii 16, iv 14, v 2, 2 Pet. i 14, 1 John ii 24, *late* (imp.) 1 John iii 7, *seke* 1 Pet. iii 11, *bysekynge* 2 Pet. iii 1, *He þis* 1 John v 20 etc. 2—3 John and Jude differ from S. in the following instances: *haue* 2 John 1, *whyche* 3 John 6, Jude 4, *purple* Jude 5, *angel* 6, *fyre* 7, *þeire flesche* 8, *haruest* 12, *hem silf* 19, *ouþere* 23.

(5) *H. = Holkham Hall 672.*

A small folio written on vellum soon after 1400. The contents are as follows:—ff. 1—132 ‘*þe Myrrour*,’ a collection of homilies on the Gospels for the Sundays and principal festivals of the year—other MSS. are found in Magdalene College, Cambridge 2498, Corpus Christi Coll. Camb. 282, and Harl. 5085, which latter was known to the editors of the Wycliffe Bible (see Bible, 1 p. xx note); ff. 132—161^b the Catholic and Pauline Epistles as contained in MSS. S. and P. and printed on pp. 18 l. 5—122 (end) of our text; ff. 161^b—256 the four Gospels with prologues according to the so-called Earlier Wycliffite Version. The text of the Gospels is complete but divided up into the various Gospels of the Church Service, each division being preceded by a heading in red telling for what Sunday or other festival it is appointed to be read, e.g. Mt. i 1—17, ‘The gospel of *þe natyuyte of oure lady* and of *þe concepcyoun of hir*.’

Four hands are discernible; the first extends from f. 1 to f. 16^b, the second wrote ff. 17—25 l. 2, the third ff. 25 l. 3—161^b (to the end of the Epistles), the fourth ff. 161^b—256 comprising the Gospels with their respective prologues.

The volume belonged in 1592 to Johannes Forestius ‘rector de Ramseton in Comitate Essex’ (f. 7); later on it passed into the hands of the famous Chief Justice Sir Edward Coke (1552—1634), as his autograph is found on the first page; it evidently never left the

family, for the book-plate now bears the name and crest of Thomas William, Viscount Coke and Earl of Leicester of Holkham.

The dialect of the Epistles of H. with the exception of 2—3 John and Jude is Southern, and deviates but slightly from that of S., the tendency of the scribe evidently being to introduce Midland forms and omit the most pronounced Southern peculiarities of his original, e.g. always *synne*, *whiche*, *chirche*, *breþeren*; further *seye*, *fell(en)*, mostly *haueþ*, for *sugge* etc. § 4, *fullen* § 4, *habbeþ* etc. § 77; the pt. sg. *3af*, *bar* for *3ef* § 73, *ber* § 72, often *sche* for *he(o)* § 63. As further illustration I give the variations of H. in the first chapter of 1 Corinthians:—i 10 *suggen seye*, *bote bute*, 12 *sugge seye*, *bote bute*, *saiþ seiþ*, 13 *oper wheþer or wher*, 14 *þonke þanke*, 15 *sugge seye*, 19 *y-wryten y wryte*, 20 *mad ymaad*, 21 *wes was*, 24 *bote bute*, 26 *bryþeren breþeren*, *mony many*, 30 *bote bute*, *for-buggyng forbyggynge*.

2—3 John and Jude are Midland with a fairly strong mixture of Southern forms; for the sake of comparison I give its dialectical variations from S.:—2 John 1 *whuche whiche*, not *noȝt*, *bote bute*, *han haueþ*, 2 *be ben*, 4 *yeh I*, 5 not *noȝt*, *fro from*, 7 *knowlecheþ knowlechen*, *comen come*, 8 *lese lose*, *han haue*, *wroȝt wrouȝt*, 9 not *noȝt*, 10 not *noȝt* throughout, 12 *bote bute*.—3 John 1 *whuche whiche*, 4 *pise þes*, 5 *feiþfulliche*, 6 *whuche whiche*, 8 *beþ be*, 9 not *noȝt*, 10 *moue meue*, *churche chirche*, 11 not *noȝt*, 12 *knowe y knowe*, 13 not *noȝt*, 14 *schul schal*.—Jude 4 *come comen*, *whuche whiche*, 5 not *noȝt*, 6 not *noȝt*, *bote bute*, 9 not *noȝt*, 10 *pise þes*, *beþ ben*, 12 *heruest haruest*, 13 *whuche whiche*, 14 *azeyn azen*, 15 *whuche whiche*, *wrouȝte wrouȝten*, *azeyns azens*, 18 *whuche whiche*, 19 not *noȝt*, 23 *fyre fuyr*, *opere ouþer*, *whuche whiche*.

H. is a good and serviceable copy, in many instances it corrects the readings of S. and supplies omissions, e.g. 1 Pet. i 13, ii 4, 25, iii 21, 2 Pet. ii 10, Jam. iii 16, iv 10, 1 John vi 20, 2 John 6, Rom. vii 5, viii 7, xii 2, 18, xiii 2, 1 Cor. vi 4, xi 12, Phil. ii 12 etc. In other cases it is inferior to S., e.g. Jam. v 16, 1 John iii 18, Rom. vi 12, viii 4, 36, 1 Thes. iv 7, Heb. vi 8 etc. Its deviations from S., that is from the text here printed, are noted in Appendix II, as owing to defective cataloguing¹ and consequent misinformation I only discovered this MS. after the whole of the text had been printed.

¹ It is almost incredible that H. should have remained unknown to or at all events unnoticed by the editors of the Wycliffe Bible. The Holkham MS. catalogue was compiled in 1815 by William Roscoe (1753—1831, *vide D.N.B.*); his catalogue was collated and enlarged in 1828 by Sir Frederic Madden, one of the two editors of the Wycliffe Bible. By some curious oversight they both failed to identify the important Biblical texts contained in MS. 672, evidently looking upon them as part and parcel of the 'Myrrour.' It was through a chance visit to the library that I first became aware of the actual contents of H.

In reproducing the text from these MSS. I have corrected the most obvious scribal errors, but mistakes on the part of the translator have only been rectified where the sense of the passage absolutely required it. Every deviation from the MS. has been duly recorded in the foot-notes. Brackets are used to denote additions whether of a letter, a word or a whole phrase or sentence not occurring in the MS., e.g. p. 11 l. 36 *go[1]d*, 2 Pet. i 1 [*in*], Jam. ii 8 [*þy nexte neijeboure*], the original reading being in every case given in the foot-notes. Letters or words which have dropped out of all the MSS. are supplied without further reference, e.g. Eph. vi. 6, Col. iii. 7. Parentheses again are used where alternative readings or explanatory glosses are inserted, especially when denoted as such by underlining in the MS. The readings of the various MSS. are given in the foot-notes¹, but I have ignored mere orthographical variations and phonetic ones of no consequence.

Throughout the volume the numbering of chapters and verses follows that of the Vulgate, which was generally taken as a basis of mediæval English translations. Headings and superscriptions like 'Prologue,' '1 Peter' etc. have been added for the sake of clearness.

The establishment of the relationship between our five MSS. does not present great difficulties. A glance at the foot-notes at once shows the close agreement between S. and P., and a further examination proves that P. was evidently copied from S. after the 'first corrector' had made his emendations of the text. His corrections are almost in every instance adopted by the scribe of P. and introduced into the text². The errors of S. are also repeated by the scribe of P., e.g. 1 Pet. iv 2, Rom. vi 5, 6, 1 Thes. iv 9, Heb. ii 1, v 12, ix 23 etc. The differences between S. and P. are very slight, being mostly due to careless readings or omissions on the part of the scribe of the later MS.³ or to unimportant changes made in the course of copying, and probably due to a comparison with the Latin text.

¹ The readings of MS. Holkham 672 are printed in Appendix II, p. 226.

² e.g. p. 5. 2 *to kepe*, 8. 9 *hes*, 10. 15 *have*, 10. 17 *þei*, 16. 30 *renýnge*, 1 Pet. iii 3 *serklenge*; 1 Cor. ii 14 *ded goslech*, carelessly written in the margin with the *g* as a mere curve, was misread by the scribe of P. and inserted in the text as *ded sôbliche*; Gal. v 8 *or euidence*, inserted before the word it was to explain because this happened to begin the line; Col. iv 2 *lordes* in S. is one of the ordinary marginal repetitions, standing before the line beginning 'And be *ȝe*.' The scribe of P. adopts it in the text. Cf. 2 Tim. iii 10, Acts iii 2 etc. A few corrections passed over by the scribe of P. occur in the following places: 1 Pet. i 14, i 18, Jam. i 13, iv 10.

³ e.g. 1 Cor. v 7, iii 12, Phil. ii 8, 15, iii 3 etc.

As regards the relationship between S. and H. it is clear from the following instances that S. cannot have been copied from H.:— 1 John v 4, Jude 10, p. 47 l. 11, p. 48 l. 8 f., Rom. vi 12, xii 2, 1 Cor. i 25, Heb. vi 18 etc.; nor can H. have been copied from S.:— 1 Pet. ii 24, 1 John iii 4, 10, Rom. xii 2, 18, xiii 2, 1 Cor. xi 17 etc. On the other hand, as can be seen from the few and unimportant variations between the two manuscripts, the agreement between them is so close as to make it certain that they could not have been far removed from the same Southern original. The exact degree of relationship is of course impossible to determine. An interesting scribal error makes it further appear as if the original of H. were Kentish. In Rom. vii 13 the copyist writes *seye* ‘peccans,’ which makes no sense; but P. has *sunge* and S. has *synnyng* in a late hand on erasure; from this it is easy to see that the original of H. must have had *senye* (*sēye*), a distinct Kentish form. Then there are a few stray forms *bisyeb* *zou* Gal. v 15, *þonkynges* 1 Thes. iii. 9, possibly *by* for *bēo(n)* Jude 25, 2 John 3, 1 Tim. vi 5, cf. § 28, which point in the same direction. If we then consider that a fair number of Kentish forms appear in S. (§§ 2^b, 8, 28, 92), in spite of its chief characteristics being South-Western (§ 92), it seems a natural inference to draw that the common original of S. and H. was Kentish. For a geographical connection with Kent speaks further the fact that the contemporary ‘first corrector’ of S. was a Kentish man (p. xi), and that P. a later transcript from S. (p. xvi) is strongly tinged with Kenticisms (p. xii).

The Prologue, James, Peter, 1 John, and the Pauline Epistles are only found in S.(P.) and formed, as I take it, the nucleus of the original composition, additions being subsequently made in all likelihood from some already existing version. I infer this from the following: (1) The introductory lines to 1 Peter i (p. 18), where only Peter, James and John are mentioned as writing ‘pysteles to þe pepel how they schulen lyue,’ while on p. 47 the name of Jude is added, probably after the later insertion of his Epistle. (2) The concluding words addressed to the ‘sister’ at the end of the Pauline Epistles (p. 122), which indicate that the work there comes to an end. (3) The fact that all the above-mentioned Epistles and probably the Prologue are the work of one translator, while 2—3 John, Jude, the Acts and Matthew contain a different rendering. See on this point under translation §§ 95—98. (4) The fact that these Epistles together with the Prologue and intervening pieces of dialogue (pp. 47,

48, 122) are in the same Southern dialect (§ 92), whereas the remaining parts are Midland (§§ 91, 93).

The Epistles 2—3 John and Jude occur in S.(P.), H. and D.; of these the text of S.(P.) and H. cannot have been copied from D., see 3 John 9, 10, 12, nor from any immediate common original, see 2 John 9, 11, 3 John 2, 11, Jude 4, 6 etc.

These Epistles were probably an early, possibly a contemporary addition to the monk's collection of Biblical books, as they retain less of their Midland character (§ 93) than the Acts and Matthew (p. xii and § 93), and follow 1 John as a matter of course both in S.(P.) and H.

As regards the text of the Acts, S.(P.) and D. form a group¹ from which C. stands apart, S. and D. being derived through some intervening link from the same original (S.D.*). The coincidences between S.(P.) and D. on the one hand and C. on the other are, however, so great as to make it probable that (S.D.*²) and the original of C. (C.*²) had a common source (C.S.D.*²).

The text of the Gospel of St Matthew was in all likelihood found in (S.D.*), and, we may surmise, in (C.S.D.*²) as well, as it has the ordinary introductory line addressed to the nun, 'Matheu seiþ in þe firste chapytyl on þis wyse' and further represents the same translation with the same kind of explanatory glosses as the Acts (p. lxxi f.).

We may now proceed to a short account of the contents of our MSS.

The two fuller copies are preceded by a Prologue which opens with a brief account of the creation of man and his state in paradise, of the pride and fall of Lucifer, of the temptation and fall of Adam and Eve and their subsequent life upon earth, of the flood, of Noah, and finally how God put his 'reyn-bowe in þe cloudes of heuene & þe streng toward þe erþe in tokene of pees bytwen hym & man.'

The narrative then assumes the form of a dialogue (p. 4) between

¹ e.g. Acts viii 32, 34, 36, 40, ix 1, 3, 14, x 1, 3, 10, xii 19, 20, xiv 12, xvi 26, 27 etc.

² This view is supported by:—The introductory lines, 'Als saynte Luke telles and writes of þo dedes of þo apostuls, ande sais vpon þis wise,' originally addressed to the nun for whom the compilation was prepared, are the same in the four MSS. Verse xxviii 29 is omitted in all. The glosses introduced into the text are, with a few exceptions (e.g. ii 18, 23, xi 3, xiv 12), the same in the four MSS., e.g. i 2, 7, 13, 17, 31, 35, v 28, xi 3, 17, xiii 7, xv 9, 22 etc.

a 'lewed and vnkunnynge' brother and sister, that is, a monk and a nun¹, on the one hand, and on the other their brother superior², whom they implore for the love of Christ to teach them what is needful for the welfare of their souls. The brother superior is, however, somewhat loth to undertake this task. He answers, 'Broþer, y knowe wel þat y am holde by Cristis lawe to parforme þyn axynge; bot naþeles we beþ now so fer y-fallen a-wey from Cristis lawe, þat ȝif y wolde answere to þyn axynges y moste in cas vnderfonge þe deþ.'

The ignorant brother, however, argues in a lengthy speech against these fears and doubts of his learned superior, winding up with an expression of the hope that God might exercise his judgment upon him in the 'dredeful day of dome' if he did not truly answer the questions put to him.

The brother superior answers (p. 8), 'Broþer, þou hast agast me sumwhat wiþ þyn argumentys. For þouȝ þou ne hafe noȝt yben a-mong clerkes at scole, þi skelis þat þou makest beþ y-founded in loue þat is a-bofe resoun þat clerkes vseþ in scole: & þerfor it is hard for me to aȝeynstonde þyn skelys & þyn axynges.' He then goes on to describe the calling of the people of Israel, their sojourn in Egypt, their deliverance from the power of Pharaoh, and their guidance into the land of promise. 'þus þorouȝ an argument of loue God almyȝty þoroȝ hys myȝt delyferyd his pepel out of bodylyche þraldom... And so nedilyche y þat am his serfaunt & þi broþer mot graunte þyn argument of loue, & parforme þyn axynges by my power: for þi loue haþ ouercome my resoun. And þerfore axe nouȝe what þou wylt.'

¹ *Broþer, suster* (Prol. 3. 9, 15, 18 etc.), the usual way of addressing a monk or a nun, cf. the *Ancren Riwle* (Morton, Camden Soc. 1853), where the author calls the three anchoresses 'mine leoue sustren' throughout; *Commentary on Richard Rolle of Hampole's Psalter*, MS. Reg. 18. D. 1, f. 129^b 'al þese yuelis ben doon for-to gete goodis to be breþered & sustrid and to haue sikirnesse of worldly prosperite amoneþ þese couentis'; Aungier, *History of Sion and Isleworth, Additions to the Rules*, p. 364 'Of the servise of *sustres* unlettrred,' ib. chap. xxii 'The obseruauntes at the autyrs longeth to the *brethren* and not to the *sustres*' etc.; Eckenstein, *Woman under Monasticism*, p. 364 'The nuns both of the Dominican and the Franciscan orders...are usually spoken of not as nuns but as sisters.' See further Sir E. Maunde Thompson's description of MS. S., *Catalogue of the Wycl. Exhibition*, 1884, p. 13 'A treatise, chiefly cast in the form of a dialogue between a brother and sister, or monk and nun.'

² Note how his superior degree is indicated by the more respectful address *þe* Prol. 4. 27, 10. 1, 3, *ȝow* 4. 32, 10. 3, *ȝou* 9. 33, 34, whereas the ignorant 'brother' and 'sister' are merely styled *þou* Prol. 5. 2, 8. 1, 2, 3 etc.

In answer to several questions put by the nun, he then gives an account of the law, moral, civil and ceremonial¹, but whilst he is engaged in this latter narrative a sudden break occurs in the MSS. in the middle of a sentence. A few words then introduce the translation of the Catholic Epistles:—‘Suster, þe apostoles þat weren most prufe wiþ Crist, Petur & Iames & Ion, wryteþ pysteles to þe pepel how þei schulen lyue; & Peter seiþ on þis wyse.’

The translation of the Pauline Epistles is likewise preceded by a short introductory dialogue (p. 47 f.), wherein the nun asks the monk ‘wheþer þat Poule, þat wes a postel of mysbeleued men, tauȝte hem eny þing ellys þan to byleuen in Crist, & ben y-folewed in his name.’

The monk then answers: ‘Suster, þou schalt vnderstonde þat Poule wryteþ many epysteles to dyuerse men þat he turned to þe byleue, how þei schulen byleuen, & how þei schulleþ lyuen; bote y ne may noȝt at þis tyme wryte to þe alle his pysteles as þei stondeþ; bote naþeles, ȝef it be Goddus wylle, þou schalt habbe hem her-aftur.’ He then relates how Paul teaches three things in his Epistles, the first thing being that men and women should believe in Jesus Christ, the second ‘þat it is noȝt nedful for cristien men to kepe þe poyntes of þe olde lawe,’ the third ‘how men schulleþ forsake synne in kepynge Cristes lawe of charite, & of þis poynt, suster, þoroȝ Goddes grace ich wole telle þe what he seiþ in his pisteles, & of þe oþer poyntes when ich haue gretter leyser.’

The translation then follows (p. 48), the Pauline Epistles being all represented with the exception of that to Philemon.

Each separate Epistle, again, has a few introductory and usually a few final words addressed to the nun, e.g. p. 48 ‘Seynt Poule wryteþ to þe Romaynes, & seiþ’; p. 56 ‘þus, suster, seynt Poule wryteþ to þe Romaynes, how thei schuleþ lyuen þat byleueþ in Crist’; ib. ‘And to þe Corynthes he wryteþ, & seiþ’; p. 69 ‘Suster, in þis manere seynt Poule wryteþ to þe Corynthes’; p. 71 ‘To þe Epheses, suster, he wryteþ, & sayþ’; p. 109 ‘þus, suster, seynt Poule haþ y-tauȝt men for-to lyfen þat byleueþ in Crist in his pystelis. And to Tymoþe he wryteth on pistel, how he schulde hafen hymself in good ensampel to oþer men, & seiþ in þis wyse.’

¹ *Wycl. Bible*, Prologue, p. 3. ‘The old testament is departid into thre parties, into moral comaundementis, iudicials and ceremonials.’

At the end of the Pauline Epistles (p. 122) there are a few lines which lead us to believe that the monk-translator now considers himself to have fulfilled the request of the ignorant 'sister' and 'brother': 'Pus, suster, seynt Poule techeþ how Cristene men schuleþ lyfe, & his techyng acordeþ wiþ Cristis techynge in þe gospel, as þe techynge of þe oþere apostoles doþ. And now, suster, my counseyl is þat þou lyfe vertuouslyche after Cristes techynge, & kepyng his hestes whyles þou art in þis world; & þanne þou schalt þoroþ his mercy come to an eferlastynge lyf of blysse, boþe in body and in soule. Amen.'

It is probable that this passage points to an earlier copy in which fewer books were included, the Pauline Epistles there occupying the last place. In our two MSS., however, the Acts immediately follows (p. 123) with the usual introductory sentence, 'Als saynte Luke telles ande writes of þo dedes of þo apostuls, ande sais vpon þis wise.'

The first chapters of the Gospel of St Matthew (i—vi 13) close the series of translations given by the monk.

The source of the present version is the Latin Vulgate. The text used by the translator of Peter, James, 1 John and the Pauline Epistles is fairly pure with a comparatively small amount of readings from other sources. Similarly the text used for the Gospel of Matthew does not present any notable divergences, e.g.

1 Pet. iii 7 with *wymmen*, ib. 15 of *þe feiþ & of þe hope*, ib. 21 *oure Lord*, 2 Pet. i 16 *vnwyse fables*, Jam. ii 2 *on his hond*, v 10 *of an efel yssew*, 1 Cor. ii 16 *bote þe Spiryt of oure Lord*, Col. iii 8 *ne passe noȝt forþ*, 1 Thes. v 5 *Goddes chyldren*, 1 Tim. ii 6 *is y-confermed*.

Matthew ii 22 & *Joseph was amonestyd in his sleep by an aungel*.

The text used for the Acts, 2—3 John and Jude is on the other hand very considerably corrupted by the introduction of a number of readings from older Latin versions and other sources, e.g.

Acts v 34 *He comanded þat þe apostuls schulde gange oute a lytel*, ib. 36 *þat he was hymseluen grete*, vii 2 *bifore þat he schulde dye in Charre*, ib. 19 *ande ordeynde þat of oure ȝonge childer þat were þanne borne þo knauechilde schulde not life*, ib. 21 *he was putte forþe into þo flode*, ib. 24 *Ande whanne þat he sawe one of his kynne*, viii 1 *þat dwelled stille in Ierusalem*, x 25 *ande worschipped hym...as þow erte*, ib. 30 *I have fastud ande preyed*, xi 1 *ande worschipped God þeroffe*, ib. 17 *werne oure Lorde forto gife hem þo Holygoste* *þat trowed in þo name of Iesu Criste*, xiv 3 *Bot God grawnted sone pees*, ib. 6 *Ande alle þo multitude was stired in per doctrine; ande Poule ande Barnabas dwelled in Lystris*, ib. 9 *To þe I saye in þe name of oure Lorde Iesu Criste, rise etc.*, ib. 12 *he wolde haue done sacrifice vnto Poule ande*

Barnabas, xv 2 *ande Poule saide vnto hem þat þei schulde abide in þo same trowþe þat þei wore inne*, ib 29 *ande þat þe wille noghte were done vnto ȝowe, dos hit noghte vnto an-þper*, ib 30 *Ande Poule, Barnabas, Iudas ande Sylas wente fro þo apostuls ande kome vnto A....þo multitude of þo disciplis*, ib. 31 *þei ioyed in a grete ioye for þo comforþe þat þei hade*, ib. 35 *wiþ ȝoper discipuls of Criste*, ib. 39 *Ande so amonge hem was made discencyone*, ib. 41 *confermande þo congregucyone of holy chirche & bade hem þat þei schulde kepe þo biddynge of þo apostuls ande of þo eldars*, xvi 1 *Ande whanne þei hade gone abowte þise nacyons...a trewe wydowe sone*, ib. 40 *þei tolde hem whatte God hade done wiþ hem*, xvii 6 *þise ben þei þat stiren alle þo worlde ande hider þei come*, ib. 11 *wheþer hit wore so as hit was preached to hem*, xix 9 *fro þo houre of sexte to þo houre of tenne*, xxii 28 *Lyghtly sais þou þat þow erte a buriase of Rome*, xxviii 16 *wiþouten þo castels*, ib. 30 *þo Iewes ande þo naciones þat wore called gentiles etc.*

2 John 9 *Wyte ȝe þat*, ib. 11 *Lo, y haue warned ȝow byfore, þat in þe day of oure Lord ȝe be noȝt confounded*, ib. 13 *þe grace of God be with þe. Amen.*

3 John 4 *in soþfastnesse of charyte.*

Jude 6 *in þe grete dome of God*, ib. 9 *God overcome þe.*

Some of the curious and interesting readings found in the Acts can be traced back to the Old Latin text of *Codex Bezae* (*d*), e.g. x 25, xv 2, 29, xvi 40, xix 9, others to *Gigas librorum* (*g*), e.g. vii 57, xi 1, xxi 16, or to *Codex Laudianus* (*e*), e.g. xxvi 18. The reading of xxii 28 'Lyghtly sais þou þat þow erte a buriase of Rome' does not occur in any of the above-mentioned O.L. texts, but we find it in the Vulgate of the famous *Codex Armachanus* (see notes). In many instances our text of the Acts exhibits the same peculiarities of readings as MS. Bibl. Nat. 11532—3, written in Corbie and anterior to the Theodulfian and Alcuinian recensions, e.g. v 34, vii 20, x 25, 26, xi 17, xvi 1, 40¹. In fact amongst the many Vulgate texts described by M. Berger in his *Histoire de la Vulgate* it is closer to this MS. than to any others, though on the whole I have been unable to find any one text which shares all its peculiarities.

For a number of curious readings and interpolations I have not succeeded in finding any authority, e.g.

i 18 *fledde away*, iv 22 *fourtey ȝhere ande twoo more*, ib. 23 *laten oute of þo kownseile to wende farþe þer way*, þei komen vnto þer breper þat wore conuerted, v 23 *faste sparred as hit was lefte*, ib. 39 *bot suffure hem*, vii 55 *hise fadire*, ib. 57 *two falsse wytnes*, viii 4 *how he was Goddes sone*, ib. 15 *þat wore turned*, ix. 2 *of þo company of þe apostuls or hemseluen*, xii 13 *to loke who was þere*, ib. 18 *þat hym kepped*, xix 9 *sexta*, xxvii 5 *in twelue days*, xxviii 15 *þo merket of Appii, þo senator etc.*

¹ Berger, *Vulgate*, p. 106 f.

Another class of corrupted readings is due to scribal errors in the Latin text, uncritically reproduced by the English translator, e.g.

1 Pet. i 3 Vulg. spem uiuam *on hope* (evidently *unam* read), iv 16 in isto *þoroȝ a rizful* (iusto), Ephes. iv 18 uita *þe wey* (uia ?), iv 11 sanctorum *of þe worldes* (sæculorum), Hebr. ix 8 uiam *lyfynge* (uitam), xi 30 muri *men* (uiri), xi 35 mortuos *housbondes* (maritos !), xiii 21 bono *place* (loco ?), Acts i 17, 25 ministerii *priuete* (mysterii), xvi 19 spes *spiritte* (spiritus) etc.

The letters *u* and *n* were evidently no more distinguishable in this text than in others of the time, as can be seen from the following misreadings :—

1 Pet. i 3 nos *ȝow*, iv 4 uobis *we*, ib. 17 nobis *at ȝow*, cf. 2 Pet. iii 11, Jam. v 17, 3 John 9, 2 Cor. vi 3, Col. ii 14, 1 Thes. i. 8, 2 Thes. ii 12, Acts v 30, vii 44 ; 3 John 10 commonebo *y schal moue* (commouebo), Acts iv 19 iudicate *telle vs* (indicate), vii 7 iudicabo *I schal schewe* (indicabo).

Deus (d̄s) and its oblique cases were frequently misread or miswritten for a corresponding case of *Dominus* (d̄ns), and vice versa, e.g.

Jam. i 7 a *Domino of God*, cf. 1 Cor. i 31, iii 6, 1 Thes. iii 13, 1 Cor. iii 6, Acts xix 9 etc.

In other cases words, phrases, even whole sentences have been left out. It is of course impossible to decide whether the fault lies with the Latin or English scribe or the English translator, e.g.

1 Pet. i 3 et, ib. 8 nunc quoque, ib. 11 in quod vel quale, ib. 24 omnis... tamquam, ii 24 ut peccatis mortui iustitiae viveremus, 1 John ii 24 si in vobis permanserit quod ab initio audistis, Rom. xiii 2 potestati, Dei ordinationi resistit. Qui autem resistunt, Acts iii 8 exiliens—et intravit cum illis in templum—et exiliens etc.

For further examples see the notes.

In spite of all these errors and deficiencies the Latin originals of our text were no doubt fairly typical specimens of the current versions of the Vulgate. Indeed, the writer of the Prologue to the Later Wycliffite Version¹ bears special testimony to the sadly corrupted state of the Latin Bibles of his time :

‘First this symple creature hadde myche trauaile, with diuerse felawis and helperis, to gedere manie elde biblis, and oþere doctouris, and comune glosis,...to make oo Latyn bible sumdel trewe.’

Further down in the same page he warns any intending corrector of his translation to

‘examyne truli his Latyn bible, for no doute he shal fynde ful manye biblis in Latin ful false, if he loke manie, namely newe ; and the comune Latyn biblis han more nede to be correctid, as manie as I haue seen in my lif, than hath the English bible late translatid.’

¹ *Wycl. Bible*, i 57.

CHAPTER II.

THE 'RAISON D'ÊTRE' OF THE VERSION.

FROM the explanatory pieces of dialogue found in the Prologue and referred to above, p. xviii ff., it is evident that our version was undertaken at the urgent request of the inmates of some religious house, more especially, to judge from the repeated references to the 'Suster' at the beginning and end of the various Epistles, of a woman vowed to religion.

Many works during the later Middle Ages—and some of the more important ones—were thus written for the use of women and at their request.

Such was for instance the *Ancren Riwle*¹, written in the first half of the thirteenth century for three sisters who in the bloom of youth had forsaken the pleasures of the world to become anchoresses (*l. c.* p. 192). To about the same time belongs *A Luue Ron*, a spiritual love song, one of the most beautiful productions of the early mystics². Again the *Wooing of our Lord*, a prose rhapsody dating from the fourth decade of the thirteenth century, was designed for a nun if we may believe the concluding words of the treatise, 'Prei for me, mi leue suster, þis haue i writen þe' etc.³

One of the later mystics, Richard Rolle, the Hermit of Hampole, translated the *Psalter* together with Peter Lombard's Commentary upon it 'at a worthy recluse prayer cald dame Merget Kyrkby'. For the same 'Margaretam anachoritam, suam dilectam discipulam' he composed a beautiful prose-tract *The Form of Perfect Living*; for another, 'Moniali de gedingham,' he wrote the equally beautiful

¹ Morton, J., Camden Soc. 1853.

² Morris, *Old Engl. Miscellany*, E.E.T.S. 1872, p. 93 'Incipit quidam cantus quem composuit frater Thomas de Hales de ordine fratrum Minorum ad instanciam cuiusdam puelle Deo dicata.'

³ Morris, *Old English Homilies*, First Ser., Part II, p. 269 ff.

⁴ Bramley, *The Psalter...by Richard Rolle of Hampole*. Oxford, 1884, p. 1.

Ego dormio et cor meum vigilat; for a 'Sorori de Hampole,' *The Commandment of Love to God*¹.

At various periods, from Anglo-Saxon times onwards, the *Rule of St Benet* was translated into English for the benefit of nuns. In a metrical version, written in the Northern dialect and found in a MS. belonging to the beginning of the fifteenth century, the translator takes care to explain his reason for undertaking the work²:

‘Monkes & als all leryd men
In Latyn may it lyghtly ken,
And wytt þarby how þay sall wyrk
To sarue God and haly kyrk.
Bott tyll women to mak it couth,
þat leris no Latyn in þar ȝouth,
In Ingles is it ordand here
So þat þay may it lyghtly lere.’

There is also an interesting MS. in Trinity College, Cambridge (B. 14. 19 of the fifteenth century), containing amongst other devotional treatises an epistle entitled the *Chastisynge of Goddis children*, clearly written for a nun as can be inferred from the opening lines (f. 5^b): ‘In drede of almyȝti God, religious sister, a schort pistle I sende ȝou of þe mater of temptacions which pistle as me þenkiȝt mai resonabli be clepid chastisynge of Goddis children.’

Again, the *Myroure of oure Ladye*³ is written for a community of nuns. It is as the title-page tells us ‘a devotional treatise on Divine Service with a translation of the offices used by the Sisters of the Brigittine Monastery of Sion at Isleworth during the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries.’ Sion Monastery was founded in 1415, and the ‘Myroure’ was probably written between the years 1415 and 1450 (*l. c. p. viii*).

From the fact that all these various works are in the vernacular, it may be inferred that the average nun’s knowledge of Latin was somewhat scanty. Indeed during the fourteenth century the convents as educational training grounds had greatly deteriorated. Excluded from the Universities and practically from all access to secular learning, with their time and mind given up to devotional exercises and ritual, it is small wonder if the nuns found it in-

¹ Horstman, *Richard Rolle of Hampole*. London, 1895, 1 pp. 3 ff., 49 ff., 61 ff.

² Kock, E. A., *Three M.E. Versions of the Rule of St Benet*, E.E.T.S. Orig. Ser. No. 120, London, 1902, p. 48.

³ Ed. Blunt, E.E.T.S. 1873.

creasingly difficult to grapple with Latin service-books and Psalters, not to mention less familiar devotional works or texts of Scripture. (Eckenstein, *Woman under Monasticism*, Cambridge, 1896, chap. x.)

Then down to the middle of the fourteenth century French was the legal and official language. It was spoken at Court and by the upper classes¹, and presumably also in the nunneries, where it often replaced Latin as the official language if one may judge from entries in their registers, from petitions and other documents of the time². Consequently the nun who had little or no knowledge of Latin could always have recourse to the French missals, breviaries, ordinals and texts of Scripture which were found in great numbers throughout the country. In the small priory of Easebourne, for instance, numbering five or six nuns, the inventory of goods taken 1450 shows that there was one French Bible and two 'ordinalia' in French³.

But during the second half of the fourteenth century French gradually fell into disuse⁴, and we may surmise that French service-books and Scriptural versions soon became as much of a dead letter to the ordinary inmate of a nunnery as the corresponding Latin volumes.

French maintained itself longest in the religious houses of the South⁵, and we can therefore record but a single Biblical translation into English in this part of the country. This one instance is the text of James, Peter, I John and the Pauline Epistles printed in this volume.

Further North, to judge from the number of translations extant, the imperative need of versions in the vernacular must have been earlier felt. Before the middle of the fourteenth century the Book of Psalms had been twice rendered into English, once in Yorkshire by the Hermit of Hampole, once well up in the West Midlands by an unknown translator⁶. Gradually, and in all likelihood before the great Oxford versions attributed to Wycliffe and his school had spread over the country, the whole of the New Testament had been

¹ Paul's *Grdr.* i p. 952 ff.

² Dugdale, *Monasticon*, 'Shaftesbury' ii 471, 'Romsey' ii 507 note, 'Davington' iv 288 'Ankerwyke' iv 229 etc.

³ Blaauw, *Sussex Arch. Collections*, ix 2; cf. Berger, *La Bible française au moyen âge*. Paris, 1884, list of MSS. p. 385 ff., *E.B.V.* p. xvii ff.

⁴ Paul's *Grdr.* i 957.

⁵ Eckenstein, *l.c.* p. 358.

⁶ Bülbring, *Earliest Complete English Prose Psalter*, E.E.T.S. No. 97, cf. *E.B.V.* p. lvi.

translated into English of the North or of the North Midlands. These Northerly versions are as follows: Commentaries upon the Gospels of St Matthew, St Mark and St Luke¹; the Acts and Catholic Epistles as printed in this volume on pp. 123 ff., 42 ff., 209 ff., cf. pp. iv, lxv; the Pauline Epistles with a Commentary² found in MS. Parker 32, Corpus Christi Coll., Cambridge; finally the Apocalypse with a Commentary. This last was for a long time attributed to Wycliffe³, but I found that in reality it is nothing but a verbal rendering of the famous Norman Apocalypse which dates back as far as the latter half of the twelfth century.

Thus we see that after the Conquest the earliest home of the English Bible was the North of England.

There is no reason to suppose that these versions were anything but orthodox in origin; in fact, as has been pointed out above, Hampole's Psalter and the version here printed were compiled for nuns. The Commentary on the Apocalypse represents the very pink of orthodoxy, exalting the prelates and the religious orders, likening for instance the 'eyes' of the 'Maiden's Son' to 'þe wyse clerkis of hooli chirche, þat liȝtneñ opere wiþ teching & techen hem wiþ good ensaumple of goode werkes,' his 'head' to 'þe goode prelatis of hooli chirche,' his hair to 'men of trewe religioun þat shulen be whijte þurȝ hoolinesse & good liȝf'.⁴ Moreover, the earliest known copy of it (MS. Harl. 874), written in the second third of the fourteenth century, has the name of the owner inscribed in a nearly contemporary hand as Richard Shepard *presbiter*. The Commentaries on the Gospels referred to above were undertaken, as the translator tells us, 'at the suggestyon of Goddys seruant,' and he adds 'gretly in this doyng I was comforted of other Goddys seruauntes dyuers', whereby he cannot very well mean anything but that they were in some way within the pale of the Church. Again, the Catholic Epistles of MS. Douce 250⁵ were evidently glossed for the benefit of men in religious orders, if one may judge from a commentary

¹ Cf. *Wycl. Bible*, i p. ix. The Commentary on the Gospel of St John has not come down to us in any MS., but its existence can be inferred from the fact that its prologue together with those of the other Gospels precedes the Commentary on Matthew in MS. Camb. Univ. Libr. II. 2. 12.

² *Wycl. Bible*, i p. xiii.

³ See Forshall and Madden, *Wycl. Bible*, i p. viii, cf. *E.B.V.* p. xxi ff., Berger, *La Bible française*, Paris, 1884, p. 78 ff.

⁴ MS. St John's Coll. Cambr. G. 25, f. 19^b, cf. *E.B.V.* p. xxix.

⁵ MS. Camb. Univ. Libr. II. 2. 12, f. 1.

⁶ See Appendix I.

added to James ii 2, ‘& þerfore if eny man come in-to ȝoure siȝt, þat is, in-to ȝoure cumpenye þat beþ Godes religiouse men in what degré so ȝe be.’ Concerning the Pauline Epistles referred to above (MS. Parker 32) there is no direct evidence to connect them with either side, but, as far as I have been able to examine them, they contain nothing but what is strictly orthodox, being, in fact, a mere verbal translation of the Latin, with occasional brief comments on the text.

Concerning the *reading and use* of these vernacular versions it may be of interest to know the opinion of an evidently fair-minded and moderate member of the orthodox party. The author of the ‘Chastisynge of Goddis children’ (see p. xxv) sets forth his views on this point in the following way:—

f. 62^b ‘I seie in þe maner as it was ordeyned; for summe now in þese daies vse to seie on Englische her Sawter and Matyns of oure Ladi and þe vii Salmes and þe Letanye.

Many men repreueþ to haue þe Sawter or Matyns or þe Gospel in Englisch or þe Bible, bicause þei moun not be translatid in-to no vulgar word bi þe word as it stondiþ wiþoute greet circumlocucioun aftir þe felyng of þe firste writeris whiche translatiden þat in-to Latyn bi þe teching of þe Hooli Gost. Neþeles I wole not repreue suche translaciouns, ne I repreue not to haue hem on Englische, ne to rede on hem where þei mowe stire ȝou to more deuocioun and to þe loue of God. But utterli to vse hem on Englische and leeue þe Latyn I holde it not commendable, and nameli in hem þat ben bounden to seie her Sawter or Matyns of oure Ladi. For a mannys confessour ȝyueþ him in penaunce to seie his Sawter wiþouten ony oþir wordis, and he go forþ and seie it on Englische and not in Latyn as it was ordeyned, þis man, I wene, doiþ not his penaunce. Skilis I mai schewe resonable and manye, but bi-cause þat I truste to God þat ȝe wole not vse your Sawter in þat maner, þerfore I leeue off to speken of þis mater and counseile ȝou, as I seide bifore, þat ȝe preie enterely in tyme of ȝoure seruyce wherto ȝe ben bounden, bi þe ordynaunce of hooli chirche and in þe maner as it was ordeyned bi oure hooli fadres.’

It is a noteworthy fact that the author of this tract must have lived and written during the earlier part of the Wycliffite movement, as he begs the ‘sister’ to beware of ‘summe þat now holde plainli and ȝit not openli, but priueli for drede, aȝens confessiouns & fastyngs, aȝens worshipping of ymagis and schortli as men seien aȝens alle statis and degrees & lawe or ordynaunce of ‘hooli chirche.’ Further, he must have written before 1408, as he seems unaware of any prohibition of the use of the Scriptures in the vernacular, such as was afterwards made for clerics and laymen alike by the famous

Constitutions of Archbishop Arundel in the above-mentioned year 1408¹. The author of the 'Myroure of oure Ladye' writing after 1415 speaks in consequence in a different strain concerning the use of Biblical texts in the vernacular :

'And for as moche as yt is forboden vnder Payne of cursyng that no man schulde haue ne drawe eny texte of holy scripture in-to Englyssh wythout lycense of the bysshop dyocesan ; and in dyuerse places of youre seruyce ar suche textes of holy scripture ; therfore I asked & haue lysence of oure bysshop to drawe suche thinges in-to Englysshe to your gostly comforde and profyt, so that bothe oure consyence in the drawynge and youres in the hauynge may be the more sewre and clere' (ed. Blunt, p. 71).

And again on p. 3 he refers to the need of special licence :

'Of Psalmes I haue drawen but fewe, for ye may haue them of Rycharde Hampoules drawynge, and out of Englysshe Bibles if ye haue lysence thereto.'

From the passages quoted above it would seem as if before 1408 Scriptural versions in the vernacular were freely used by *orthodox members of the Church and religious orders*, who through ignorance were debarred from the use of the Latin and French Bibles.

Still Latin—one of the so-called three sacred languages—was held in greater value, since the mere hearing of it seemed to have conferred an almost sacramental benefit², in spite of its not being understood. It was in consequence looked upon as something of a desecration to set forth high matters of Divinity in the 'vulgar,' a language that had but lately shaken off the stigma of being the rude speech of the lower classes. This feeling is clearly expressed by the author of the 'Chastisyg of Goddis children.'

'Also, my sister, I drede fore-to writen of suche hiȝe materis, for neiȝer I haue felyng ne knowing openli for-to declare hem in Englisch ne in Latyn, and nameli in Englische tunge, for it passiȝ fer my witt for-to schewe ȝou in ony maner vulgar þe termes of dyuynyte' (MS. Trin. Coll. Cambr. B. 14. 19, f. 5^b).

¹ Wilkins, *Concilia*, III p. 317; vii *Constitutio*; 'Ne quis texta S. Scripturæ transferat in linguam Anglicanam....statuimus igitur et ordinamus ut nemo deinceps aliquem textum sacræ scripturæ auctoritate sua in linguam Anglicanam vel aliam transferat, per viam libri, libelli, aut tractatus, nec legatur aliquis hujusmodi liber, libellus, aut tractatus jam noviter tempore dicti Johannis Wycliff, sive citra, compositus, aut in posterum componendus, in parte vel in toto, publice vel occulte, sub majoris excommunicationis pœna, quousque per loci diœcesanum, seu, si res exegerit, per concilium provinciale ipsa translatio fuerit approbata: qui contra fecerit, ut fautor hæresis et erroris similiter puniatur.'

² Simmons, *Lay-Folks Mass-Book*, E.E.T.S. No. 71, London, 1879, p. 185 f.

It is also present in the mind of the author of the 'Myroure of oure Ladye' when he cautions the nuns of Sion that

'This lokeynge on the Englyshe whyle the Latyn ys redde, ys to be vnderstonde of them that haue sayde theyre mattyns or redde theyr legende before. For else I wolde not counsell them to leue the herynge of the Latyn for entendaunce of the Englysshe' (Blunt, p. 71).

It is a curious fact that the author of our Prologue, though preparing his version for the inmate of some religious house, seems to have entertained considerable fear as to the possible consequences of his action. The passage on p. 4 f. can hardly be otherwise interpreted: 'Broþer, y knowe wel þat y am holde by Cristis lawe to parfome þyn axyng; bote naþeles we beþ now so fer y-fallen a-wey from Cristis lawe, þat ȝif y wolde answere to þyn axynges *y moste in cas vnderfonge þe debþ*'.

This passage seems to point to the fact that within some dioceses the translation of English versions and the use of them even amongst the religious was looked upon with more disfavour than in others, which state of things is also indicated by the author of the 'Chastisyg of Goddis children' (p. xxviii). And the disfavour must have been of a remarkably strong nature if it went so far as to endanger the life of the transgressor¹.

As our translator was in all probability a Kentishman (p. xvii) it may be possible to explain his attitude as owing to the exceptionally severe handling of the Lollards in the dioceses of Canterbury and Norwich². Kent had been one of the hot-beds of insurrection during the Peasants' Rising of 1381, one incident of which was the sacrilegious murder of Archbishop Sudbury. Now the 'Poor Priests' were accused of having helped to organise the rising³, which accounts for some of the hostility shown towards them. In 'De Officio Pastorali,' written in or before 1380⁴, Wycliffe states that the true preachers were stopped and arrested by bishops and lords: 'freris procuren comynly boþe lordis and bischops to lette þis

¹ The passage quoted from our Prologue p. 4 f. has naturally not been referred to by Dr Gasquet in his article on *The Pre-reformation English Bible*, Dublin Review 1894, reprinted as *The Old English Bible and other Essays*, London, 1897, cf. Matthew, F. D., *Engl. Hist. Rev.* Jan. 1895, p. 91, Kenyon, *Our Bible and the Ancient Manuscripts*, London, 1895, p. 204 ff., etc.

² Trevelyan, G. M., *England in the Age of Wycliffe*, 1899, p. 322.

³ Wright, *Pol. Poems*, R. S. p. 235 f., *Rot. Parl.* iii 124—5, cf. Trevelyan, *l.c.* p. 363.

⁴ See Trevelyan, *l.c.* p. 363.

preaching¹,' and in the same tract (p. 429) :—'freris wiþ þer fautours seyn þat it is heresye to write þus Goddis lawe in English, & make it knowun to lewid men.'

Since then, as we have seen, at this early period translation of the Scriptures for 'lewid men' was held to be heretical and consequently punishable, and since the Archbishops of Canterbury were famed for their severity in putting down heresy, it is small wonder if even a good and orthodox churchman within that diocese may have felt some doubt as to the undertaking of such a perilous piece of work, even if it was destined for an equally orthodox member of a religious house.

No divergent opinions seem, however, to have existed amongst the prelates and friars concerning the use of the Scriptures in the vernacular by *laymen*, more especially by the *common people*. In this respect their attitude was wholly condemnatory, and it is well illustrated by the oft-quoted statement by Henry Knighton, Canon of Leicester :

'This Master John Wyclif translated from Latin into English the Gospel which Christ gave to clerks and teachers of the Church, so that they might sweetly minister to the lay folk and infirm etc. In this way he made it vulgar and more open to lay men and women who know how to read than it is wont to be to learned and well instructed clerics. In this way the pearl of the Gospel is scattered broadcast and trodden under foot by swine. And thus, what is wont to be esteemed by clerks and laity as precious is now become as it were the common joke of both ; the jewel of the clerics is turned to the sport of the lay people : so that what had before been the heavenly talent for clerks and teachers of the Church is now the commune æternum for the laity²'.

A similar testimony concerning one of the bishops is given by Wycliffe :

'And herfore oo greet Bishop of Engelond, as men seien, is yvel paied þat Goddis lawe is writun in Englis, to lewide men ; and he pursueþ a preest, for he writiþ to men þis Englishe, and somoniþ him and traveiliþ him, þat it is hard to him to rowte.' (*Sermons*, S.E.W. i p. 209.)

Concerning the hostility of the friars against the English Bible, the testimony of Wycliffe and his followers is explicit :

'þe freris wiþ þer fautours seyn þat it is heresye to write þus Goddis lawe in English, & make it knowun to lewid men³'

¹ Matthew, p. 444.

² *Chronicon Henrici Knighton*, ed. Lumby, ii p. 152. Cf. Gasquet, *l.c.* p. 171 f.

³ *De Officio Pastorali*, Matthew, p. 429, in all probability written before 1380, see evidence given by Trevelyan, *l.c.* p. 362 f.

‘And þus þei [i.e. þe freris] pursuen prestis, for þei reproven hor synnes as God biddes, bothe to brenne hom, and þo gospels of Crist written in Englische, to moost lernyng of oure nacioun¹.’

‘Et ex eodem patet eorum stulticia, qui volunt dampnare scripta tanquam heretica propter hoc quod scribuntur in Anglico et acute tangunt peccata que conturbant illam provinciam².’

The use of the vernacular Bible seems, however, to have been tolerated amongst the wealthier classes:

‘But oo confort is of knyȝtis, þat þei savoren myche þe Gospel and han wille to rede in Englische þe Gospel of Cristis liif.’ (*Wyclif's Sermons*, S.E.W. I 209.)

To sum up, before the Constitutions of Archbishop Arundel in 1408, it appears from the preceding pages as if the Church had raised no serious objection to the use of the Scriptures in English by the clergy, the religious orders and probably by the wealthier members of the community. There is, however, not a scrap of evidence to show that the Church in any way encouraged or even allowed vernacular versions amongst ‘the vulgar,’ the laity of the middle or lower classes. When the Lollard translations, which were mainly intended for these classes, appeared, they were denounced by the Church.

¹ *Fifty Heresies and Errors of Friars*, S.E.W. III 393, written according to Arnold about 1384.

² Buddensieg, *Polem. Works of Wyclif*, p. 168.

CHAPTER III.

LANGUAGE.

I. VOWELS.

A. O. E. SHORT VOWELS.

FOR the sake of convenience I divide the text printed from MS. S in the following way: S¹ = the Prologue, 1—2 Peter, James, 1 John, the Pauline Epistles; S² = 2—3 John, Jude; S³ = Matthew.

§ 1. *O. E. a except before nasals and shortened O. E. ā*
(Morsb. § 87).

O. E. *a* remains, value [a, ā]: (a) In closed syllables: *habbe* (inf.) Prol. 47. 25, *habbeþ* (pl.) 1 John i 1, ii 13 etc. Scand. loanwords: *castande* Acts xxv 7, *caste* (imp. sg.) Mt. v 29, 30, *casten* (pt.) Prol. 11. 21, *gabberē* 1 John i 10, v 10 (uncertain whether Scand. or native, see Bj. p. 240, Ekw. p. 25. 1), but *keste* (inf.) Acts xxvii 30, (pt. pl.) xiii 50, 51, xxi 27, xxii 23, (p. p.) xxvii 17, (imp. sg.) xii 8.

Shortened O. E. *ā*: *hatte* (pt. sg.) Acts v 1, *halewed* Prol. 17. 18, *asched* (pt. pl.) Acts i 6.

(b) O. E. *a* in open syllables: *make* (inf.) Mt. i 21, iii 3, *take* Mt. ii 13.

§ 2. *O. E. a (o) before nasals* (Morsb. §§ 88—94).

(a) O. E. *a* before single nasal usually remains, value [a, ā]: *man* Acts v 38, 1 John ii 27 etc., *bigan* Acts i 1, *can* ib. xxviii 22, Jam. iv 17, *name* Acts i 23, Mt. i 21, 23, 25, 1 Cor. i 10, 13, 15, vi 11, Eph. v 20, Phil. ii 9, 10, Col. iii 17 etc., *many* Acts i 3 etc., 1 John ii 18, 2 John 7, 12, Rom. v 19, 2 Tim. ii 2. But S¹ has *nome* 1 Cor. v 4, three times *mony* 1 Cor. i 26, and *from* throughout except occasionally *fro* (O. N. *frá*) in the Prologue 2. 11, 14; S² S³ and the Acts have regularly *fro*.

(b) O. E. *a* > *o* [ā^o], before lengthening consonant-groups: *wombe* Acts iii 2, xiv 7, Mt. i 18, 1 Cor. vi 13, Phil. iii 19, Tit. i 12, *lomb* 1 Pet. i 19, 1 Cor. v 7, *honged* Acts i 18, *hongyngē* Col. ii 14, *among(es)* Prol. 1. 18, Acts ii 22 etc., *strong(e)* Prol. 8. 16, 1 John ii 14, 1 Cor. i 27 etc., *lond(e)* Prol. 1. 2, 3, Acts xiii 19, Mt. ii 20, 21, Heb. viii 9, Jude 5 etc., *sonde* Acts i 4, *fond(e)* Acts xii 19, 2 Tim. i 17, *hond(e)* Mt. iii 12, Acts ii 18, 1 Cor. xii 21, Gal. vi 11 etc. But in the Acts *lande* vii 29, 36, *sande* xxvii 17, *understande* xxviii 26, *stande* xxvi 22; always *gange* v 34 etc. depending on earlier shortening (Morsb. § 90), similarly *nerehande* i 15, vii 17 (Morsb. § 55, anm. 6).

Before other than lengthening consonant-groups: *answeren* Col. iv 6 etc. throughout. Before *nk* *a* prevails except occasionally in S¹: *þonke* Rom. vi 17, 1 Cor. i 14, 1 Tim. i 12, *þonkynges* 1 Tim. iv 3, *dronk* Prol. 13. 10, see Morsb. § 94, 2.

§ 3. O. E. *æ* (Merc. Kent. *e*) and earlier shortened O. E. *ǣ* (ē) (Morsb. §§ 95—105).

(a) O. E. *æ* > *a* [a, ā] both in closed and open syllables: *gras* 1 Pet. i 24, 25, *alsfaste* Acts v 10, *almes* ib. iii 2, *þat* 1 Pet. i 3 etc., *palle* (Lat. *pallium*) Mt. v 40, *fader* 1 John i 2, 3, *water* Mt. iii 16.

O. E. *wæs* appears with *e* occasionally in S¹: *wes* 1 Pet. i 12, 1 Cor. i 21, ii 3 (twice), 1 Tim. i 14, Prol. 47. 18.

O. E. *æfter* is *after* throughout S, e.g. Prol. 1. 1, Jude 18, Mt. iv 19; the Acts have usually *eter* (Morsb. § 96, a. 2, 1. p. 131) i 3, 5, 10, ii 45 etc. *After* is rare viii 39, xi 25, 29, xii 21, xiii 20, xiv 19, xv 13.

For *heruest* Jude 12, and *wheþer* p. 47 l. 18 etc., see Morsb. § 96 p. 131.

O. E. *ȝæd(e)rian*, *ȝadrian*, *to-ȝæd(e)re* appear in the Acts with *a* and *i* (Morsb. § 96 p. 131, § 109): *gader* (inf.) xv 25, *gadurd(e)* (p. p.) i 21, v 35, *gadured* (pt. sg.) x 24, (pt. pl.) xii 12, xvii 5, cf. iv 5, xiv 26, xv 30, *gider* (imp. pl.) xix 38, cf. xxviii 3, *togider* i 15, 21, ii 6, iv 15, 24, 26, 27, 32, v 12, 16, 21, 24 etc., less frequently *togader* i 6, 14, ii 1, 12, 44, 46, x 27, xiv 1 etc.

In S. *e*-forms prevail: *gedere* (inf.) Rom. xii 20, 2 Tim. iv 3, cf. 1 Cor. v 4, Mt. ii 4, iii 12, *togedere* throughout S¹ except in Romans where the proportion of *togedere* : *togydere* = 9 : 1, in 1 Corinthians 10 : 1, 2 Tim. 3 : 1, 1 Pet. 1 : 3, 1 John 0 : 6; Matthew has *togyder* once i 18.

O. E. *þærne*, *hwænne* usually have *a*: *þanne* Rom. viii 35, Acts ii 14, 42, v 5, 6, 11, Mt. iv 1, 10 etc., *whanne* Acts i 9, 10, 13, ii 1, 6, 15, Mt. iv 2, in S² and S³ more frequently *þan* Mt. iv 5, 11, v 29, 37, *whan* Jude 9, Mt. ii 1, 8, 9, 13, 19 etc., in S¹ occasionally *when(ne)* Prol. 13. 2, 12, 25, 27, 28, 14. 5,

1 Cor. xiii 11, Phil. ii 6, Col. iii 4, 1 Thes. iii 4, 6, 2 Thes. i 10, Heb. vii 1, viii 4, 2 Tim. iv 3. Cf. Urk. pp. 28 f., 82. The O. E. form *hwenne* occurs in North. texts, see Lindelöf, Glossar.

(b) The shortened O. E. *ā* (ē) gives double forms with *e* and *a* (Morsb. § 96 p. 132 f.).

(a) O. E. *ā*=Gmc. *ai*. S¹ has frequent *a*-forms: *eferlastynge* 1 John i 2 etc. throughout, *wraſtlynge* Eph. vi 12, *lasse* (comp.) 1 Tim. v 9, Heb. ii 9, vii 7, *laſte* (pt. sg.) Tit. i 5, *y-laſt* Heb. iv 1, 9, x 26, 1 Thes. iv 16, *lefte* (pt. sg.) 1 Pet. iv 1, *y-leſt* 1 Cor. vi 4, *ladde* (pt. sg.) Prol. 9. 2, 13, Heb. ii 10, Col. ii 15, *lad(e)* (pt. sg.) Prol. 9. 8, 24, 10. 9, *y-lad* 2 Pet. iii 17, 1 Cor. xii 2, Gal. v 18, Heb. xiii 9, *clansyþ* (prs. sg.) 1 John i 7, *clansyngē* Heb. ix 13, Prol. 16. 29, *clansed* (part.) Prol. 16. 5, *vnclannesse* Eph. iv 19, 1 Thes. iv 7, Rom. xiii 13, 2 Pet. ii 10, Col. iii 5; *clensen* 1 John i 9, *clensyngē* Prol. 16. 19, *y-clensed* 2 Pet. iii 6, *vnclannesse* Jam. i 21, *any* Phil. ii 1, iii 11, Heb. iv 1 etc., more frequently *ený* 1 Pet. ii 19, iii 14 etc. (once *ony* 1 Tim. v 21); *wraþþe* (O. E. *wraþþo*, *wraþþo*) Mt. iii 7 etc. throughout S.

S² and S³ have *e*-forms, except *euerlastynge* Jude 6, 7, 21, e.g. *lefte* (pt. sg.) Mt. iv 11, (pt. pl.) 20, (part.) 13, *led* (part.) Mt. iv 1; the Acts have *e* as a rule: *ledde* (pt. sg.) vii 36, 40 (pt. pl.) ix 30, xvii 19, *lefte* (pt. sg.) xii 14, *lesse* xxvi 22, *spred(de)* (part.) v 36, viii 4, but *a* always in *lastande* etc. i 14, *any* viii 31 etc. and exceptionally in *ladde* (pt. sg.) v 26, *cladde* (pt. sg.) xii 21, *dalte* (pt. sg.) xiii 19. The imper. *late* xvi 35, xix 38 and part. *laten* iv 23, x 11, xi 5, xvi 35, xxvi 32, xxviii 18 are due to Scand. influence (O. Swed. *läta*, O. N. *látta*, cf. Bj. i p. 91), the *a* is regular throughout. Exceptional *me(e)ste* viii 10, Heb. viii 11, beside *mo(o)ste* xxii 5, xvii 11 etc. corresponds to O. E. *māſt* and *māſt*.

(b) W. S. *ā*, Angl. ē=Gmc. *ā*. Forms with *e* prevail, *a* occurs exceptionally in S¹: *dradde* (pt. sg.) Heb. xi 23, *y-rad* Heb. ix 19, but *dredde* (pt. pl.) Acts xvi 38, (pt. sg.) x 7, Mt. ii 22, *redde* (pt. sg.) Acts viii 32, 35, (part.) xiii 27, always *edder* Prol. 2. 35, 3. 22, Jam. iii 7, *nedder(s)* Acts x 12, xxviii 3, *nedderis* Mt. iii 7; on Scand. influence depends probably *blaste* Acts xxvii 40, see Morsb. § 96 p. 133 and Bj. p. 84.

§ 4. O. E. ē, ē and shortened O. E. ē, ēo.

These *e*-sounds are usually written *e* (*ea*); value [e] in closed, [e—ē] in open syllables, before lengthening consonants [ē] (Morsb. § 106).

(a) Short O. E. ē, ē in closed syllables except before length. cons.: *helle* Prol. 2. 29, *nempned* (part.) Heb. iii 13, *legge* (inf.) Prol. 13. 20, *seggeþ* (ps. pl.) 1 Thes. iv 14, *mysseggere* 1 Cor. v 11.

(b) Shortened O. E. ē (ēo): *kepped* (pt. sg.) Acts xvi 27, *deppest(e)* Prol. 2. 11, 17, *lette* (pt. sg. < O. E. *lētan*) Prol. 13. 20, *betty* (pt. sg. < O. E. *bēatan*) Acts xxii 19, *wepped* (pt. pl. < O. E. *wēpan*) Acts ix 39.

The above preterites *lette* and *betty* may of course be explained as M. E. formations from their respective infinitives, in which case they would belong to §§ 3 and 19.

O. E. *ɛ* before nasal + palatal *c, ȝ + t, d > ey* in S¹: *dreynte* (pt. sg.) Prol. 4. 17, *adreynt* (part.) ib. 9. 11, *y-spreynd* (part.) Heb. ix 13, *spreynde* (pt. sg.) ib. ix 19. See Morsb. § 107. 3.

M. E. *e > a* before nasal + consonant occasionally in S¹: *branneþ* (sg.) 1 Cor. iii 15, *y-brand* 2 Pet. iii 10, Heb. vi 8, beside more usual *brenne(n)* (inf.) Jam. iii 6, Mt. iii 12, *brennynge* 2 Pet. iii 12, cf. 2 Pet. i 19, Prol. 14. 22, 1 Cor. vii 9 (Morsb. § 108 1).

O. E. *lettan* has occasional *a*-forms in S¹: *lattyngē* 1 Cor. vii 35, 1 Tim. v 21, *latte* (ps. sg. sbj.) Heb. xii 15, beside usual *e*. Cf. Acts vii 56, 1 Thes. ii 18.

M. E. short *e > an [i]-sound* before dentals in the following cases (Morsb. § 109): *lyte* (O. E. *lēt*) Mt. iii 15, *togider, togydere, gider*, see § 3; *bryþeren, briþeren* in S¹ beside more frequent *breþeren*, the proportions being in 1 Pet. 1 : 2, 2 Pet. 2 : 3, James 5 : 9, Rom. 1 : 5, 1 Cor. 6 : 3 etc.; *bryþerhed(e)* 1 Pet. i 22, 2 Pet. i 7 (twice), elsewhere *e*-forms; in S² S³ *breþeren* only: Mt. iv 18, 3 John 5 (twice), 10, Jude 17, 20; the Acts have *breþer* throughout.

Further, in S¹ only *u* for O. E. *ɛ, ēo (eo)* in *sugge* (prs. sg.) 1 Cor. i 12, 15, *suggen* (prs. pl.) 1 Cor. i 10, *suggyngē* Heb. viii 13, x 8, *fullē* (pt. sg. < O. E. *fallan*) 1 Pet. iv 12, *fullēn* (pt. pl.) Heb. xi 30 (cf. Q. F. 63 p. 106 f.).

O. E. *þencean* has *i*- and *e*-forms in S¹: *þink* (imp.) Prol. 7. 5, 19, cf. Heb. xii 3, 2 Tim. i. 5, Prol. 5. 20, 1 Cor. vii 34 (twice), *by-þenche* (imp. sg.) 1 Tim. iv 15, *þenkeþ* (prs. sg.) 1 Cor. vii 32, xii 6, cf. Phil. iv 8, Heb. x 17; in S² no instance, in S³ *þenkyngē* once Mt. i 20; the Acts have *e*-forms: *þenke* (inf.) xx 35, *þenkyngē* xvii 29, cf. x 19, once *ȝhe þinke* v 35 (Morsb. § 109).

(c) O. E. *ē, ɛ* before lengthening consonant-group, value [*ɛ, ē*] (see Morsb. § 110). *Sendē* (inf.) 3 John 13, *tendeþ* (prs. sg.) Jam. iii 6, *wende* (inf.) Acts i 11, *felde* ib. i 19 etc.

(d) O. E. *ē, ɛ* in open syllables, M. E. *ē*, for value of this sound see Morsb. § 111: *meate* Acts xxvii 34, *eten* (prs. pl.) Prol. 3. 7 etc.

§ 5. O. E. i and shortened O. E. ī.

The O. E. *i* remains as a rule, written *i, y*, value *i* [*i^e*] (Morsb. § 112).

(a) In closed syllables: *wylne* (imp. pl.) Jam. iii 1, *lygge* (inf.) Prol. 14. 12, *syȝt* Prol. 3. 10 etc. Shortened O. E. ī: *wysdom* Jam.

iii 15, 17, *lyckned* (part.) Jam. i 23, cf. Mt. vi 8, Heb. vii 3; before lengthening consonants: *fynde* (prs. sg.) Rom. vii 18, *chylde* 1 Cor. xiii 11, *þinge* 1 Cor. xiii 10.

(b) In open syllables: *wydowes* Acts ix 39, *hider* ib. x 21, *abiden* (part.) Acts xxviii 6, *risen* ib. x 40, 41.

M. E. *i* > *e* [*i^e*] sporadically (Morsb. §§ 113—115); in closed syllables: *blesse* (O. E. *bliss*, *blīþs*, but cf. N. E. D.) 1 Pet. v 10, *kandelsteke* (O. E. *candelsticca*, but cf. Morsb. § 115. 6) Mt. v 15, *y-lekened* (cf. *lyckned* § 5a) Heb. ii 17, not unfrequently *-eng(e)* for *-ing*; *spryngenge* 1 Cor. v 7, *seyenge* Heb. iv 7, Jude 11, cf. Rom. viii 4, Heb. ii 9, 1 Cor. ii 1, S³ has 14 *-enge*, 31 *-yngē*; for *seþþe* Prol. 4. 26, 10. 1, 2 Pet. iii 11, 17 etc. by the side of *siþþe* see Morsb. § 143, 3;—in open syllables: *vnderneme* (imp. sg.) 1 Tim. v 20, *vndernemeþ* (ps. sg.) 1 John iii 20, beside more frequent *i*-forms: 1 John iii 21, Eph. v 11, Tit. ii 15, 2 Tim. iii 16, iv 2 etc., *speryte* Mt. v 3, *wetēþ* Prol. 11. 18, *aresen* (part.) Col. iii 1, *steghne* (part.) Acts x 4, *lefed* (? Late W. S. *leofode*, *lyfode*, Siev. Gr. § 416. 2 c) Rom. vii 9; occasionally *-schep* (< O. E. *-scipe*): *nakedschep* Rom. viii 35, *wedewe* 1 Tim. v 4, *meke* Acts xxiv 2, *besy* ib. xviii 5, *besily* ib. xviii 25, 26; *skelis* Prol. 8. 3, 5 (Kent. Ayenb. Schor.) is probably due to a Scand. form represented by O. Swed., O. Dan. *skiael*, see Bj. p. 126.

The 3 sg. *es*, the reg. form in the Acts, may be due partly to its unaccented position in the sentence, partly to analogy with the other North. present-forms *erte* § 88 and *er(e)*. Another explanation is offered by Luick p. 238, § 427.

§ 6. O. E. o and shortened O. E. ð.

Written *o* throughout, value [*o*, *ð*] in closed syllables (Morsb. §§ 116—118); on the value of the lengthened *ð* in open syllables, see Morsb. § 119.

(a) In closed syllables: *folkke* Acts iv 16, 17, *flok* 1 Pet. v 2, 3; shortened O. E. *ð*: *softē* 1 Pet. iii 4; before length. consonants: *worde* Acts viii 25 etc., *korne* Mt. iii 12, *gold* Prol. 11. 20.

(b) In open syllables: *y-boren* (part.) 1 John v 19, *y-stolen* Eph. iv 28, *y-roted* (part.) Jam. v 2.

§ 7. O. E. u and shortened O. E. ð.

Written *u*, *o*, value [*u^o*]; before the lengthening consonants *mb*, *nd* written *ou*, in the Acts *ow*, value [*ð*] (Morsb. §§ 121—126).

(a) In closed syllables: *ful* 1 John i 4, *cumynge* 1 Pet. iii 7,

connynge 1 Tim. vi 21, 2 Pet. i 5, *vnkunnyngnesse* 2 Pet. ii 16, *curseþ* (ps. pl.) Jam. iii 9, *cursynge* 2 Pet. ii 15, Jam. iii 10, *sunne* Mt. v 45, Jam. i 11, Acts xxvi 13, *sonne* Eph. iv 26, Acts ii 20, xiii 11, xxvii 20, *tunge(s)* Jam. i 26, Acts ii 26, xxvi 14, 1 Tim. iii 8, Acts xix 6, *tonge* Jam. iii 5, 6, 8, 9, 1 John iii 18, Phil. ii 11, *dronken* (part.) Eph. v 18, 1 Cor. xi 21, 1 Thes. v 7, *dronkelew* 1 Cor. v 11, *drunken* (part.) Acts ii 15, *ronne* (pt. pl.) Gal. v 7, *y-ronne* (part.) Phil. ii 16, *runnen* (pt. pl.) Acts v 16, *songen* (pt. pl.) Prol. 11. 35, *y-sprongen* (part.) 1 Thes. i. 8. Shortened O. E. *ū* : *buxum* Rom. vi 16, Prol. 1. 4, *boxum* Rom. vi 12, 16.

O. E. *þurh* appears in S. as *þorow*, *þorouȝ*, *þoroȝ*, *þorowȝ*, Prol. 8. 10, 1 Pet. iv 16, 2 Pet. iii 5, 7, 12 etc., in the Acts as *þurghē* ii 22, 23, 30 etc.

O. E. *u* before *mb*, *nd* : *doumbe* 2 Pet. ii 16, 1 Pet. ii 15, *grounde* Acts xvi 26, *hound* 2 Pet. ii 22, *y-bounde(n)* Rom. vii 2, 1 Cor. vii 27, *vnbounden* (part.) Rom. vii 6, *bownden* (part.) Acts xx 22, *y-founde* Prol. 6. 6, Rom. vii 10, *fownden* (p. p.) Acts xiii 22, (pt.) Mt. ii 11, *founde(n)* (part.) Mt. ii 8, 2 John 4, (pt. pl.) 1 Pet. ii 10, but exceptionally *dombe* 1 Cor. xii 2; with liquid or nasal in the following syllable : *wondur(e)s* Acts ii 43, iv 30, vi 8, xiv 3 etc., *wondres* 2 Thes. ii 9, Heb. ii 4, *wondurful* 1 Pet. ii 9, *awonderde* Acts iii 10, *isonder* Acts viii 1.

(b) In open syllables the writing *o* prevails : *loueþ* 1 John iv 7, ii 10 etc., *come* (part.) Jude 4, (inf.) 2 John 12 etc., *y-comen* Heb. viii 6, *wonynge* 2 Pet. ii 8, *vndernomen* (part.) Eph. v 13, *-nomyn* (part.) Tit. i 11, *schonye* (imp. sg.) 1 Tim. vi 20, 2 Tim. ii 23, *sone* Acts iv 36, vii 21, Mt. i 21, 1 Tim. i 18, Heb. i 5 etc., *dore* Acts v 9, xii 13, Col. iv 3, Mt. vi 6.

§ 8. O. E. *y* (e) and shortened O. E. *ȳ* (ē).

S¹ sometimes retains the old sound, written *u*, when lengthened *uy*, value [ū, ȳ], sometimes, though less frequently, *i* (*y*)- and *e*-forms [*e*, *ȳ*] appear. S² and S³ have *i* (*y*), less frequently *u*, *uy*; the Acts have *i* (*y*), value [*i^e*, *i*], as a rule, occasionally *e* [*e*, *ȳ*] through the influence of certain consonants (Morsb. § 127).

1. O. E. *y* (e), *y* (ȳ) in S¹.

(a) On late O. E. *i* for earlier *y* the following cases depend which occur throughout S (Siev. Gr.³ § 31a). Always *kyng* (-*dom*, -*lyche*) Prol. 8. 27, 33, 1 Pet. ii. 9, 14, 17, Mt. ii 1, 2 etc., *kynde*

(*man-, vn-, -lyche, -ly*) Jude 10, 1 Pet. ii 9, Jam. iii 7, 8, 2 Tim. iii 2 etc., *kynredes* Col. i 26, Mt. i 17, *kyndomes* Jam. v 4.

On O. E. *bisiȝ* (later also *bysiȝ*) depends constant *bysy*: *bysynesse* 1 Pet. v 7, Jam. v 16, Rom. xii 8 etc.; on O. E. *bycȝan*, later *bicȝan*: *forbugge* (prs. pl.) Eph. v 16, *buggeþ* (prs. pl.) 1 Cor. vii 30, *forbuggyne* Rom. viii 23, 1 Cor. i 30, Heb. ix 15, Col. i 13, iv 5 beside *fore-byȝenge* Tit. ii 14. The late O. E. forms *hire*, *-a*, *hyre*, *-a* appear as *hire*, *hure* §§ 63, 64, for *here* see Urk. p. 121.

(b) O. E. *y* in closed syllables.

(a) Always *u* in *furst(e)* Prol. 18. 2, 3, 1 Pet. i 11, 2 Pet. i 20, iii 3, Jam. iii 17, 1 John iv 10, Rom. viii 23, 1 Cor. xii 28, Eph. vi 2, Col. i 15, 18, 19, 1 Thes. ii 2, iv 15, 2 Thes. ii 3, 12 etc., *a-þrust* Rom. xii 20, *churche(s)* Jam. v 14, 1 Cor. xi 16, 17, 22, xii 28, Eph. v 23, 24, 25, 29, 32, Col. i 18, 24, 1 Thes. ii 14, 2 Thes. i 4, Heb. ii 12, xii 23, 1 Tim. iii 5, 15, *hul, hulles* Prol. 10. 9, 11, 12, 11. 6, 9, 16, 31, 13. 9, 1 Cor. xiii 2, Heb. viii 5, xi 38, xii 20, 22; shortened O. E. *ȝ*: *y-hud, hudde* Prol. 3. 17, 1 Pet. iii 4, 2 Pet. iii 5, 8, 1 Cor. ii 7, Heb. xi 23, Col. i 26, ii 3, iii 3, 1 Tim. v 25; before lengthening consonants: *y-buld* 1 Pet. ii 5, Heb. iii 4, Col. ii 6, *buldeþ* 1 Cor. iii 10, *buyldynge* Eph. iv 12, 16, 1 Pet. ii 8, 1 Cor. iii 9, *buyldeþ* (sg. prs.) 1 Cor. iii 10, 12, *y-buylde* 1 Cor. iii 14, *gurde* (inf.) Prol. 12. 3, *burȝene(s)* Gal. vi 2, 6; with liquid or nasal in the following syllable: *buyldere* 1 Cor. iii 10.

On late O. E. *y* < *ie* depend: *hurnyng* Prol. 16. 30, *hurneþ* 1 Pet. iv 4 (< O. E. *iernan*, later *yrnan*), *ȝurstay* Heb. xiii 8 (O. E. *ȝiestran dæȝ*, late W. S. *ȝyrstandæȝ*).

(β) *u* with occasional *i* (*y*)-forms in the following cases: *whuche* prevails but *whyche* 1 Pet. i 6, Jam. i 24, 1 Thes. i 5, iv 2, Heb. iii 6, 2 Tim. iii 11, *whyche-efer* Gal. v 10, vi 16; *gult* 2 Pet. ii 14, *gulty* Jam. ii 10, 1 Cor. xi 27, *agulteþ* (ps. sg.) Tit. iii 11, once *gyltes* Heb. vii 27; *fulfulle(n)*, *-ed* etc. 1 Thes. ii 16, iii 10, 2 Thes. i. 11, 2 Tim. iv 5, i 4, Gal. v 14, vi 2, Eph. iv 10, Rom. xiii 8, Prol. 13. 27, Heb. vi 11, but *y*-forms 2 Pet. i 2, ii 13, Phil. ii 2, Col. i 9, 25, Gal. v 16; *stuntyng* 1 Thes. ii 13, v 17, *styntyng* 1 Thes. i 2; before length. consonants: *murþe* Heb. xi 25, *myrþe* Prol. 11. 35; *muynde* Prol. 18. 3 etc. (11 x), *mynde(s)* 2 Pet. i 15, iii 2 etc. (10 x).

O. E. *synn*, *synjian* etc. have mostly *y*; thus *i* (*y*)-forms only in 2 Peter, James, 1 John, Hebrews, 1—2 Timothy; in the Prologue *i* (*y*): *u* = 17 : 1, in 1 Peter 3 : 1, Rom. 2 : 36, 1 Cor. 2 : 1, Eph. 0 : 1.

(γ) *u*- and *e*-forms in *grun* 1 Tim. iii 7, vi 9, *grunnes* 2 Tim. ii 26, *gren* 1 Cor. vii 35.

(c) O. E. *y* (ɛ), *ÿ* (ɛ̄) in open syllables appear as

(a) *u* in *stude* Eph. iv 27.

(β) *u* and *i* (*y*) in *dude(st)*, *duden* Prol. 3. 22, 8. 35, 10. 6, 12. 5, 13. 8, 14. 19, 30, 1 Cor. xi 23, 1 Tim. i 13, Heb. iii 15, iv 10, vii 27, *dyde*, *dide* Prol. 1. 4, 1 Pet. ii 22; *muche* [ü or *u*°] Morsb. § 133 p. 180] the regular form, *myche* occasionally Prol. 15. 2, 1 Pet. ii 12, 1 Thes. ii 2, 2 Cor. vi 4, 1 Tim. iii 8, Heb. xiii 19.

(γ) *u* and *e*: *luther* Eph. vi 13, *lether* Tit. i 12; *y-buryed* Col. ii 12, *y-beryed* Rom. vi 4, *schunye* 1 Tim. iv 7 [ü- or *u*°-sound, cf. *schonye* 1 Tim. v 11, vi 20, O. E. *scynian*, *scunian*], *schenye* 2 Tim. ii 16, iii 5, Tit. iii 9, 10.

(δ) *y* and *e*: *yfel*, *yuel(e)* Prol. 1. 12, 3. 9, 4. 2, 1 Pet. ii 12, iii 9, 10, 12, 17 etc., more frequently than *efel*, *euel* Rom. vii 19, 21, xii 9, 17, 21, xiii 3, 4, 10, 1 Cor. vii 36 etc.

(ε) *e* only in *stere*, *y-stered* etc. 2 Pet. ii 14, iii 1, Jam. i 14, Eph. vi 4, 1 Tim. vi 2.

For the above *e*-forms see also Morsb. §§ 114, 115, but since the change of M. E. *i* > *e* (§ 5) is rare in S¹, they are most likely due to Kentish influence.

2. O. E. *y*, *ÿ* in S² and S³ are as a rule *i*-, *ɛ*-sounds.

(a) In closed syllables: *schytt* (imp. sg.) Mt. vi 6, *synned* (pt. pl.) Jude 7, *synful* Jude 15, *fulfylded* (part.) Jude 2, *-fylle* (inf.) Mt. iii 15, cf. Mt. i 22, ii 15, 17, 23, iii 15, v 6, 17, *hylle* Mt. v 1, 14, *gylty* v 22, *hyd* (sb.) Mt. vi 6; before length. consonants: *mynde* Jude 17.

(b) In open syllables: *yuel(e)* 3 John 11 (twice), Jude 14, Mt. v 11, 37, 39, vi 13, *dide* Mt. i 24, *dyde* Jude 7, *bysyly* Mt. ii 7, 8, *bysynesse* Jude 3, *mychil* Mt. ii 18, vi 7, *myche* Mt. vi 7.

Exceptionally *u* in *whuche* throughout S² S³, *churche* 3 John 6, 9, 10, *þrusten* (prs. pl.) Mt. v 6 [ü < O. E. *þyrstan*, or *u*° on analogy with O. E. *þurst*], once *e* bef. *r* in *ferst* Mt. v 24 (Morsb. § 129. 2).

3. The Acts render O. E. *y*, *ÿ* regularly by *i*-, *ɛ*-sounds, written *i*, *y* (Morsb. §§ 128, 129), rarely by *e*.

(a) In closed syllables: *filled* (part.) ii 13, *synne* vii 59, *firste* i 1, *wirche* (prs. sg.) xiii 41, *girdels* xix 12; before length. consonants: *mynde* ii 6; shortened O. E. *ÿ*: *hiddels* (O. E. *hýdels*) xxvi 26.

On O. E. *fylzian* or O. N. *fylgja* the following *i*-forms depend: *filowande* xiii 42, *filowed* xxi 36, *flowar* xxii 3, *flowers* xxi 20 beside more usual *o*-forms < O. E. *folzian*: xiii 43, 44, xii 8, 9 etc.

Before nasals *e* occurs always in *kenge(s)* iv 26, vii 18, xiii 21, xvii 7, xxvi 13, 19, 26, 27, 28, *-dam(s)* viii 25, xiv 21, *-dome* i 3, 6, xxviii 23, *kendames* viii 1, cf. § 5; in *me þenke* 'mihi videtur' xxv 27 the *e* may be due to the influence of *þenke* (O. E. *pencean*), see § 4 (Morsb. §§ 113, 114). Before *r*, *e* occurs once in *hernes* xxvi 26 (O. E. *hyrne*), see Morsb. § 129. 2, p. 167.

(b) In open syllables: *biried* (pt. pl.) v 6, *stired* (part.) iv 31, *myche* i 5, xv 32 etc., *mykel* iv 16, x 7, with *e* according to § 5: *meke* xxiv 2, *besy* xviii 5, *besily* xviii 25, 26.

B. O. E. LONG VOWELS.

§ 9. O. E. ā.

Written *o*, *oo*, value [ā^o], Morsb. § 134: *holy* 1 John ii 20, iii 3, *wot* (sg.) 1 John ii 11, *lore* 2 John 9, 10, *þore* (O. E. *þāra*, *þār*) Acts ii 2, *þoo* Acts xvii 11.

The Northern *ā* occurs once in the Acts: *takens* ii 22.

Double forms with *ō* and *ē*, depending on O. E. forms with or without mutation (Morsb. § 137): *mo(o)ste* Acts xxii 5, xx 38, *meeste* Acts viii 10; *-hēd* in *princehede* Jude 6, *bryþerhēd(e)* 1 Pet. i 22, 2 Pet. i 7 (twice), *manhēde* Acts xxviii 2, *þreþerhēde* Heb. xiii 1, *euenhēde* Acts xvii 31, *apostulhēd* ib. i 25, *-hōd* in *presthod(e)* Heb. vii 5, 11, 12, 24, 1 Pet. ii 5, 9.

O. E. (*n*)ā-*uicht* is in the Acts *oghte* xxiv 19, *noghte* i 4, xviii 15, xxvi 19 etc. throughout; S² and S³ have *not* as a rule, *noȝt*, *nouȝt* Mt. ii 18, v 39, 2 John 7, 8, 11, 3 John 4; S¹ has *noȝt*, occasionally *not* Prol. 1. 15, 2. 1 etc., *ouȝt* 1 Cor. iii 7.

§ 10. W. S. Angl. ā (Gmc. ai) and W. S. ā Angl. Kent. ē (Gmc. ā).

Written *e*, *ee*, value ē, ē (see Morsb. Urk. p. 43 ff., t. Br. §§ 23—25): *see* Jam. i 6, *er* Prol. 4. 19, 17. 17, *seed* 1 Pet. i 23, *where* Prol. 3. 16 etc., *wherto* Acts i 11, ix 4 etc., with less frequent *wharfore* 2 Pet. i 12, Acts viii 11, Eph. vi 13, *wharto* 1 Cor. v 10, Col. ii 20, Acts v 9, vii 26, xv 10 due to shortening § 3, or possibly to *r*-infl. § 34; *þer(e)* except in the Acts where *þore* ii 2 etc. is frequent (< O. E. *þār*, *þāra* Siev. Gr.³ § 321. 2, Bj. p. 97).

Characteristic of the Acts is the pret. *wore(n)* i 6, ii 1 etc. which is more frequent than *were(n)* i 14, ii 1, 4, 41, 44, further *or* xxiii 15 (also in

Mt. i 18) < late O. E. *ār* acc. to Skeat, Kluge-Lutz and Ekwall p. 46. 1, but probably due to Scand. influence, Bj. pp. 86, 108, 200, Kluge Gdr.² i p. 1033, cf. for these words N. E. D., Morsb. Urk. p. 46, Bülbring, Q. F. 63 p. 59.

O. E. *ālc* 'omnis' is in the Acts regularly *iche*: iii 2, 23, 26 etc., in S² and S³ *eche* 2 John 5, 9, Mt. iii 10, iv 4, v 32, vi 11 (no instances in 3 John, Jude); in S¹ 'omnis' is regularly rendered by *eferich(e)* James i 5, 14, 17 etc., seldom *eferech* 1 Cor. xi 5.

O. E. *āz(hwæ)eþer*, *nāz(hwæ)eþer*, *āhwæþer*, *nāhwæþer* appear in the Acts as *noþer* ii 31, iii 6, xix 37, *neþer* ii 31, viii 21, and *eyþer* used pronominally vii 26. In S¹ *nouþer* 1 Cor. vii 15, 19, xi 11, 16, vi 9, iii 7, Prol. 5. 17; in S³ *neyþer* Mt. v 34, 35, *noyþer* Mt. v 35; O. E. *nā-ze-hwæþere* gives *nowȝere* Heb. ii 16.

§ 11. O. E. ē.

Written *e*, *ee*, value [ē], see Morsb. Urk. p. 46, t. Br. §§ 23, 26: *fet* Prol. 15. 21, *queene* Acts viii 27, *sechen* (inf.) 1 Cor. vii 27.

§ 12. O. E. ī.

Written *i*, *y*, value [ī], cf. Urk. p. 47, t. Br. §§ 21, 22: *wys* Prol. 1. 19, *lyche* Jam. v 17, *abide* (inf.) Acts i 4.

§ 13. O. E. ȏ remains written o, oo, value [ȏ].

Cf. t. Br. §§ 30—32, Urk. p. 47: *goode* 1 John iii 12, *stode* (pt. sg.) Acts ii 14, *schoyeþ* (imp. pl.) Eph. vi 15.

§ 14. O. E. ū.

Written *ou*, in the Acts principally *ow*, value [ū]. Cf. t. Br. §§ 33, 34, Urk. p. 48: *house(s)* Acts ii 2, Heb. xi 9, *roust*, *y-rousted* Jam. v 3, *lowde* Acts vii 59, *howsinge* Acts iv 11.

§ 15. O. E. ū.

Written *uy* in S¹, value [ū], in S³ and Acts *i* *y*, value [ī]. Cf. t. Br. §§ 21, 49, Urk. p. 49, Morsb. § 133: *fuyr* Prol. 11. 20, 13. 30, 14. 1, 1 Pet. i 7, 2 Pet. iii 7, 12, 1 Cor. iii 13, 15 etc., *huydynge* Prol. 6. 24, Heb. vi 19, *fuyry* Eph. vi 16, *luytel* 1 Pet. i 7, v 10, 2 Pet. ii 18, 1 Tim. iv 8, Heb. ii 9, beside frequent *lytel* Prol. 5. 12, 6. 26, Jam. iv 14, 1 Cor. xiii 11 etc. which points to shortening. S² has *fuyr* once Jude 7, *fyre* once ib. 23. S³ and the Acts: *fire* Acts ii 3, Mt. iii 10, 11, *hire* Acts i 18, *hyre* Mt. v 12, vi 4.

C. O. E. SHORT DIPHTHONGS.

I. *Breaking.*§ 16. *O. E. ea (Angl. a) < a before r + cons.*

is *a* throughout, value [a], t. Br. §§ 12, 48, Urk. p. 50: *markes* Gal. vi 17, *maryȝes* Heb. iv 12, *warde* (sb.) Acts xii 10, *inward* Rom. vii 22, *-nesse* 2 Cor. vi 12, *harded* Prol. 8. 32, *art* Prol. 3. 24. The Acts have *erte* (once *arte* xxi 38); further *þider-*, *efter-*, *afterworde* ix 3, v 7, xii 21 owing to weak stress, cf. Siev. Gr.³ § 51.

§ 17. *W. S. Kent. ea, Angl. a (ā) before l + cons.*

Before *ld* regularly *o* [ā^o], before other *l*-combinations *a* [a]. Cf. Urk. p. 49, t. Br. §§ 16, 29, 48: *y-tolde* 1 Cor. i 11, *soldē* (part.) Acts i 18, but *aldere* 1 Tim. v 1 (Morsb. § 57 c); *halte* (adj.) Acts xiv 7, *walken* (inf.) 1 John ii 6.

§ 18. *W. S. Kent. ea, Angl. æ before h or h + cons.* Urk. p. 51,
t. Br. §§ 11, 12, 41, 44, 48.

Before *x*, *a* and *e*: *ax* Mt. iii 10, *waxe* (imp. pl.) 2 Pet. iii 18, *waxeþ* (prs. sg.) 2 Thes. i 3, *waxyngē* 1 Cor. iii 6, *wexen* (prs. pl.) 1 Thes. iv 1, *wexyngē* Col. ii 19.

Before *ht*, *h*, see § 30. 5.

§ 19. *O. E. eo before r, l + cons.*

Written *e*, value [ɛ], before lengthening cons. [ɛ̄]. Urk. p. 53, t. Br. §§ 11, 48: *sterre(s)* 2 Pet. i 19, Jude 13, Heb. xi 12, *þerf* Prol. 18. 1, 1 Cor. v 7, *swerd(e)* Rom. viii 35, Heb. iv 12, Acts xii 2, *hymseluen* Acts i 18 etc., *hym-selfe* Jam. i 26 etc.

§ 20. *O. E. eo < e before h + cons.*

This breaking is supplanted by the later so-called palatal umlaut. Cf. t. Br. §§ 10, 48, Urk. p. 69, Siev. Gr.³ § 108: *righte* Acts vii 55, *highte* (pt. sg.) ib. xiii 32, xvii 7, *fyȝt* 1 Tim. vi 12, *fyȝteþ* (prs. pl.) 1 Pet. ii 11, *knygħtes* Acts xxiii 23, 31, *sixe* Prol. 15. 5, 17. 20, 25, 28. The Acts have *reghte* vii 37, *sexē* xi 12, xviii 11, *sextē* (?) xix 9. But *i*-sound [i^e] in *bitwixe* Acts xv 9, see Siev. Gr.³ §§ 84. 1, 329. 1.

§ 21. *The i-umlaut of O. E. ea, eo (W. S. ie, y, i, Angl. e, io etc.) appears as e throughout. t. Br. § 35, Urk. p. 55: elders Acts ii 17, elde ib. iv 22, eldren 1 Pet. v 5, 1 Tim. v 4, schepherdes 1 Pet. v 4, werne Acts x 47, xi 17.*

II. u-, o-umlaut.

§ 22. *O. E. eo as u-umlaut of e is e [e], Urk. p. 54: seuen Acts xiii 19, xxi 8, seueþe Jude 14, heuene Mt. v 12, 18, 34, 1 Thes. i 10 etc.*

§ 23. *O. E. io, later ie, i, y, late W. S. eo as u- o-umlaut of i is i, y [i^e], in Sⁱ occasionally e [e, ē], Urk. p. 54: siluer-maker Acts xix 24, syluer Acts xvii 29, iii 6, Jam. ii 18, sylfer 2 Tim. ii 20, siþen Acts xvii 29, siþþe Prol. 7. 22, 1 Pet. i 12 etc., mylk 1 Cor. iii 2, quic Mt. ii 18, but selfer 1 Cor. iii 12, seluer Jam. v 3, seþþe Prol. 4. 26, 10. 1, 2 Pet. iii 11, 17 etc. For siþen, seþþe, see also Morsb. § 114. 3, Siev. Gr.³ § 107. 5.*

III. Consonant influence.

§ 24. Pal. + æ, a.

W. S. ea, Merc. e, æ (ea) > a throughout, Urk. p. 52 f., t. Br. §§ 12, 27: schal Mt. iii 2 etc., ȝate Jam. v 9, ȝhate Acts xii 10, 13, 14, 16, y-schape (part.) Eph. iv 24, schaken (part.) Acts xxvii 18, ȝaf (pt. sg.) Prol. 3. 11 (pt. pl.) Jude 4.

§ 25. Pal. + o, u.

Written o, u. Cf. Siev. Gr.³ §§ 74, 157, Urk. p. 54: ȝonge 1 John ii 14, Acts ii 17, ȝonglynges 1 John ii 13 (once ȝenge Acts xx 9), ȝoke Acts xv 10, schulde(n) throughout.

§ 26. Pal. + e (W. S. ie, Angl. e).

Cf. Urk. p. 56 ff., t. Br. § 146. Before length. consonants e throughout: ȝerdes Acts xvi 22, ȝernes Acts xxiii 26, ȝeldeþ Rom. xii 8, ȝelde(n) Prol. 14. 34, 2 Thes. i 6, ȝeldynge 1 Pet. iii 9, scheld Eph. vi 16; in other cases i prevails in the Acts, e, occasionally i, in the remaining parts:

gife Acts ii 19, 27, iii 6 etc., forgifnes Acts ii 38, v 31, forgive Acts viii 22, gift(e) Acts ii 38, viii 20, ȝesterday Acts vii 28, if throughout Acts. Matthew has ȝefe, ȝeue v 15, 26, 31, 34, vi 4, 11, forȝeue (2 x) vi 12, once

ȝif (imp. sg.) v 39; *if* iv 3, 6, v 20, 29, 46, 47, *ȝif* iv 9, v 13, 30; *ȝifte* v 23, 24, *ȝyftys* ii 11. S¹ has O. E. *ȝiefan* throughout with *e*, further *forȝeteþ* 2 Pet. i 9, *forȝeten* Jam. i 24, Heb. vi 10, *forȝetful* Jam. i 25, *forȝete* Heb. xiii 2, 16, Phil. iii 13, O. E. *ȝif*, *ȝef* is in the Prologue represented by *ȝef* (20 x) *ȝif* (16 x), 1—2 Peter, James, 1—3 John have *ȝef* (once *ȝif* James v 19), Romans *ȝif* (17 x), *ȝef* (2 x), 1 Cor. *ȝif* (27 x), *ȝef* (4 x) etc.

ȝeft(es) Jam. i 17, Heb. vi 4, viii 3, 4, *ȝift(es)* Heb. v 1, 1 Cor. vii 7, Eph. iv 8. Always *gete(n)*, *bygete(n)* Prol. 48. 8, Rom. xiii 2, Mt. i 25, Jam. i 18, 1 John v 1.

D. O. E. LONG DIPHTHONGS.

§ 27. O. E. ēa.

Written *e*, *ee (ea)*, value [ǣ, before palatals ē̄]. Urk. p 58 f., t. Br. §§ 24, 49: *chees* (pt. sg.) 1 Cor. i 28, Acts i 2, *deade* Acts vii 4, 15, ix 40, x 42, xx 9, *greet* Mt. v 19, *bleþelyche* Prol. 7. 8, Jam. iii 17 (derivative from O. E. *blēað*, see N. E. D. art. *blethely*). M. E. shortening: *gretter(e)* Prol. 6. 27, 48. 18, 1 John v 9, 2 Pet. ii 11, Heb. vi 13, 16. O. E. shortening: *chaffare(n)* Prol. 6. 25, 2 Pet. ii 3, cf. 1 Thes. iv. 6, *astur-lomb* 1 Cor. v 7.

§ 28. O. E. ēo.

Written *e*, *ee*, *eo*, value [ē̄]. Urk. p. 59, t. Br. §§ 21, 23, 49: *seo* (prs. sg.) Prol. 47. 5, Rom. vii 23, (pl.) Jam. ii 24, *se* (prs. sg.) Prol. 12. 16 etc., *freo* 1 Cor. xii 13, *fre* Rom. vi 18, *þreo* Acts ii 41, *treo* 1 Cor. iii 12, 2 Tim. ii 20, *trees* Prol. 1. 13, *wheol* Jam. iii 6, *seek* Jam. v 14, *sek* ib. v 15, *seke* Acts v 15, ix 37, xix 12, 1 Cor. xi 30, *sekenes*, Mt. iv 24, *meknes* Acts viii 33 (but in S¹ *muke* 2 Tim. iii 3, *mukelyche* 2 Tim. iii 12, Titus ii 13, see Morsb. § 16, a. 1. 1; O. N. *miúkr*).

O. E. *eo* or *eō*: *chese* (inf.) Acts xv 22, 25, *lese* (pres. pl.) 2 John 8, (inf.) Prol. 2. 33, *ȝete* (inf.) Acts ii 17, *ȝote* (inf.) Acts ii 18, *ȝotted* Acts x 45, ii 33, *ȝede(n)* 2 John 7, 3 John 7, Jude 7, 11, Mt. iv 12, 16, Acts viii 25, 27, xi 19, xii 17, xx 11, *ȝode(n)* Acts viii 4, 38, 39, 40, ix 3, 17, x 9, 23, i 13, 21, iii 1, 2, 8, v 26, 41, vii 31, viii 3, 4, 5, 7, ix 20, 39, x 21, 23, 27, xi 12, xii 9, 10, 19, xiii 4, xiv 9, xviii 18, 23, xxiii 32, *ouerȝode* ib. vii 19, xxiii 14, *ȝodeste* ib. xi 3.

In the following isolated cases *by* stands for W. S. *bēo(n)*, unless we have to do with misunderstandings or corruptions of the text; 1 Pet. v 11 *Ipsi gloria...* To hym by *blysse...*, Jude 25 *Soli Deo...gloria* only to God... by *glorye...*, 2 John 3 *Sit vobiscum gratia Wiþ* *þou* by grace..., Rom. xii 9 *Dilectio sine simulatione* By þer lofe wiþowten feynynge..., 1 Tim. vi 5 *existimantium quæstum esse pietatem þat weneþ þat getynge by pte.*

§ 29. *i-umlaut of O. E. ēa, ēo.*

Written *e, ee*, value [ē]. Urk. p. 61, t. Br. §§ 23, 39: *heere* (prs. sg.) 1 Cor. xi 18, *leue* 3e 1 John iv 1, *nedfulle* Acts xv 28.

O. E. *ȝiet* appears in S¹ with *e* or *i*: *ȝet* 1 John ii 9, iii 2, Rom. vi 1, xii 4, Phil. iii 13, Heb. ii 8, v 8, vii 10, xi 31, Gal. v 11, *ȝit* Rom. vi 2, vii 12, viii 22, 1 Cor. iii 2, 3, Phil. iii 12, Gal. v 11. The Acts have *i*, *ȝitte* viii 16, x 14, xiii 28, 31, xiv 17, xxvi 11, 22, xxvii 22.

E. CONSONANT INFLUENCE.

§ 30. *Vowel + pal. spirant.* Urk. pp. 67—72, t. Br. §§ 40, 41, 48.

1. O. E. *æ + ȝ > ai, ay* as a rule: *day(e)* Prol. 3. 7, 2 John 11, Acts i 2, *saide* Acts i 4, 6, 7, *honde-maydens* ib. ii 18, *fayr* Prol. 1. 22, *may* Mt. v 14.

O. E. *secȝan* has in S¹ forms with *ey* and *ay* (see Urk. p. 67). 1 Peter has *ey* throughout, the Prologue has *ey*: *ay* = 44 : 2, 2 Peter 2 : 1, James 12 : 2, Romans 7 : 2 etc.

O. E. *onȝæȝn*, *-ȝeȝn* is in the Acts *agayn(es)* v 39, vi 1 etc. (< *gagani, cf. N. E. D., Bj. i 151), in S *ȝeȝyn(s)* Prol. 2. 10, 13, Mt. ii 8 etc.

2. O. E. *e + ȝ > ey* in S, *ai, ay* in the Acts: *wey(e)* Mt. ii 9, iii 3, iv 15, 2 Pet. ii 21 etc., *reyn-bowe* Prol. 4. 23, *leyen* (part.) Prol. 16. 33, *y-sey(n)* (part. O. E. *ȝeseȝen*) 1 John iv 12, 14 etc., *waye* Acts xv 40, *raynes* ib. xiv 16, *laide* (pt. sg.) ib. iv 37, *sayle* ib. xxvii 2; ib. xx 10. *lyne* (part.), O. E. *leȝen*, Acts ix 33, x 38 is due to analogy; cf. *lyne* (prs. pl.) Acts xxiii 21, *lyþ* (prs. sg.) Prol. 2. 25.

For O. E. *onȝeȝn* see § 30. 1.

O. E. *-breȝdan* has, however, only forms with *ay* in S¹, probably by analogy with the str. sg. pret. *bræȝd* and with the noun which has double forms with *æ* and *e*: *obbraydeþ* (sg. prs.) Jam. i 5, *obrayded* (part.) 1 Pet. iv 14; cf. *obbrayd* (sb.) Heb. xiii 13, *obbrayd* ib. xi 26, see t. Br. § 140.

3. O. E. *ȝ + ȝ > [i]*, written *y*: *y-wrye* (part.) Prol. 13. 6, *wrye* (inf.) 1 Cor. xi 7, (imp.) xi 6, *lyþ* (prs. sg.) Prol. 2. 29; analogically *wryed* (pt. sg.) Prol. 13. 29, *lye* (opt. sg. < O. E. *licȝan*) ib. 17. 5, *lyne* (prs. pl.) Acts xxiii 21, *y-styed* (part. < O. E. *stīȝan*) 1 Cor. ii 9.

4. O. E. *y + ȝ > [i]*, written *y*: *fore-byȝenge* Tit. ii* 14, *byare* Acts vii 35, analogical forms.

5. O. E. *ea* (later also *e*) + *h, ht > ey, ei* in S, *e* in the Acts: *eiȝte* 1 Pet. iii 20, *eyȝteþe* Phil. iii 5, 2 Pet. ii 5, Prol. 16. 30, *eyȝtþe* Prol. 17. 16, *streyȝte* (imp. pl.) Mt. iii 3, *seyȝ* (pt. sg.) Prol. 3. 9, 18 etc., *sey* (pt. sg.) 1 John iii 6, *eghte* Acts xxv 6, *eghtod* ib. vii 8.

6. O. E. *i* + *ht* : *myȝt*, Prol. 1. 19, 2. 18, *myghte* (pt. pl.) Acts xxvii 12, *nyghte* ib. xii 6, *dighte* (pt. pl.) Acts x 10, *rightwisenes* ib. x 35, *knygħtes* ib. xii 4, 6, 18, *brytnesse* § 51. Cf. § 20.

7. O. E. *ā* + *ȝ* > *ey* [ɛi] : *eyþer* Acts vii 26, *neyþer* Mt. v 34, 35 (but *noyþer* Mt. v 35), *seyen* (pt. pl.) Prol. 3. 12, 11. 27, Heb. xi 23.

8. O. E. *ē* + *ȝ* > *ey* [ei] : *tweyn(e)* Prol. 13. 15, Acts i 23, *twey* Acts vii 29.

O. N. *deyja* has mostly *i*-forms : *dye* (inf.) Acts xxv 11, *dighe* (inf.) ib. xxi 13, cf. Rom. vi 9, Heb. vii 8, ix 27 etc., but *deyȝen* Rom. viii 13, cf. Bj. i p. 66.

9. O. E. *ȝ* + *ȝ* > [iː], written *uy* : *druye* (adj.) Heb. xi 29, *y-druyed* Jam. i 11.

10. O. E. *ēa* (late W. S. Engl. *ē*) + *h*, *ȝ* gives double forms : S¹ has *yen* Prol. 3. 7, 12, 2 Pet. ii 14, Heb. iv 13, *yȝe(n)* 1 John i 1, ii 11, 16, 1 Cor. xii 16, 17, 21, 1 Pet. iii 12, but *eyȝe* once 1 Cor. ii 9—*hyȝenesse* Jam. i 9, Rom. xi 39, 1 Cor. ii 1, Col. ii 4, *hyȝschyp* Heb. xi 21, -*e* 1 Tim. ii 2, *hyȝ(e)* Rom. xii 16, Heb. i 3, viii 1, *hiȝ* Jam. v 4, *nyȝ* 1 Pet. iv 7, 2 Pet. i 14, Jam. iv 8, Phil. iv 6, Heb. vi 8, viii 13, but *neyȝ(e)bore(s)* Rom. xiii 8, 9 (twice), 10, Heb. viii 11, Eph. iv 25, Jam. iv 12, -*boure* Gal. v 14, *neyȝlachen* Jam. v 8, -*lacheȝ* Heb. vii 19, -*leche(n)* Jam. iv 8, Heb. x 25, xii 18, -*lyche* Rom. xiii 12, *neyȝenge* Heb. vii 25 ; in S² no instances ; S³ has *eyȝe* Mt. v 29, 38 (twice), *neyȝebores* v 38, but *hyȝ* iv 8, *nyȝ* iv 17 ; the Acts have *eyne* ix 8, 40, xxviii 27, *eyghne* i 9, ix 18, xxvi 18, *neghburs* v 16, *neghe* xvii 17, but *highe* i 14, xiii 17.

11. O. E. *ēo*, *īo* (Angl. *ē*) + *ȝ*, *ht* > *y* [i] : *lyer(e)* 1 John ii 4, 22, iv 20, *lyghe* (inf.) Acts v 3, *lye* (inf.) Heb. vi 18, (prs. sg.) 1 Tim. ii 7, (imp. pl.) Col. iii 9, cf. Acts v 4, Mt. v 11, 1 John i 6, *lyȝt* (O. E. *lēoht*) Mt. iv 16, v 14, 15, 16, Rom. xiii 12, *lyȝte* (prs. pl.) Mt. v 15, see further Acts ix 3, xiii 47, xvi 29, xxii 6, 9, 11, xxvi 13, xii 7.

12. W. S. *ie*, *ȝ* (Kent. Engl. *īo*, *ēo*) + *ȝ*, *h* > *y*, *ey*, in the Acts *i* : *lye* (O. E. *līeȝ*) Heb. i 8, 2 Thes. i 8, *hyȝere* Rom. xiii 1, *hey* (O. E. *hīeȝ*) 1 Cor. iii 12, *hey(ȝ)est(e)* Prol. 2. 6, 16, Heb. vii 1, *heyȝer* Heb. vii 26, *alþerhigheste* Acts vii 48, ?*highed* Acts v 31.

§ 31. *Short vowel + gutt. spirant.* Urk. p. 72 f., t. Br. §§ 44, 45, 46, 48.

1. O. E. *a* + *ȝ* > *aw*, *au*, value [au], *ow* [ou] : *y-drawen* (part.) 2 Cor. vi 11, 13, *y-slawe(n)* 1 Pet. iii 18, Jam. v 6, Rom. viii 36,

2 Cor. vi 9 etc., *lawe* (O. E. *lazu*) Prol. 13. 21, *felowes* (< Scand. *fēlagi*) Prol. 1. 20, *felawes* Heb. i 9, *felowschupe* 2 Cor. vi 14, *feloschype* 1 John i 3, 6, *felawschupe* Phil. ii 1, -*schype* ib. iii 10, *felauschype* 1 John i 3, *plawfere* Acts xiii 1.

2. O. E. *ea* (æ) + *h*, *ht* > *au* : *faughte* (pt. pl.) Acts xxiii 9, *slaughte* (O. E. *sleah*) ib. xxii 20, *slauȝt* 1 Cor. v 5, *manslauȝtes* Gal. v 21, *sauȝ* (pt. sg.) Prol. 8. 17, 29, *lawȝwynge* Jam. iv 9; unaccented O. E. *þeh*, *þah* gives *þauȝ* Rom. vii 3, 1 Cor. vii 31, cf. Bülbring, El. § 454.

3. O. E. *-o-* + *ȝ* > *ow* [ou]: *reyn-bowe* Prol. 4. 23, 25.

4. O. E. *u* + *ȝ* > *ow* [u] in *mowe(n)* from late O. E. *muȝe*, *muȝen*: *mowe* (sg.) Phil. iii 11, 12, (pl.) Rom. viii 8, Prol. 12. 27, *mown* (pl.) Eph. vi 11, *mowen* (pl.) 2 Tim. iii 15, Prol. 6. 3.

5. O. E. *o* + *h*. The loanword O. N. *þōh is in S *þouȝ* 1 John iv 10, 1 Cor. xi 5 etc., rarely *þoȝ* 2 Thes. ii 2 (see Bj. I p. 72 ff.); in the Acts *þoȝe* xvii 27, xxiii 9, xxviii 4. For *þouȝ* see § 31. 2.

6. O. E. *o* and shortened O. E. *ō* + *ht* > *o*, *ou*, in the Acts *o* [*o*, *qu*]: *y-boȝt* 1 Cor. vi 20, *y-bouȝt* 2 Pet. ii 1, *doghther(s)* Acts ii 17, xxi 9, *boȝhte* (part.) ib. i 18, (pt. sg.) vii 16, *roghte* (pt. sg.) ib. xviii 17, *broȝhte* (part.) ib. xxv 17, *þoȝte* (pt. sg.) Prol. 2. 1, *þouȝt* (sb.) Prol. 2. 4, 7.

§ 32. *Long vowel or diphthong + w or guttural spirant.* Urk. p. 73 ff., t. Br. §§ 33, 43, 44, 46, 49.

1. O. E. *ā* + *w*, *ȝ* > *ow*, *ou* [qu]: *sowle* Acts ii 43, iii 23, *soule* Acts iv 32, Rom. xiii 1, 1 John iii 16 etc., *knowe* (prs. pl.) Rom. vi 3, *owne* (adj.) Prol. 1. 1.,

O. E. (*n)āwiht*, (*n)āh̄t*, (*n)ōwiht*, (*n)ōh̄t* appear in S¹ as *noȝt* 1 Pet. i 4 etc., occasionally *not* Prol. 1. 15 etc., *ouȝt* 1 Cor. iii 7; S² and S³ have *not* as a rule but *noȝt* Mt. ii 18, 2 John 7, 8, 11, 3 John 4, *nouȝt* Mt. v 39; the Acts have *noghte* i 4, xviii 15, xxvi 19 etc., *oghte* xxiv 19 etc.

2. O. E. *ō* + *ȝ* > *ow*, *ou* [u, ou, see t. Br. §§ 33, 46]: *ynowghe* Acts xx 11, *drowe* (pt. sg.) Acts viii 3, 13, *slouȝ* (pt. sg.) 1 John iii 11, 12, *slow* Mt. ii 16, *lowghne* (pt. pl.) Acts ii 13, *slownen* (pt. pl.) Prol. 12. 5.

3. O. E. -*ēa*- + *w* > *ew* [ɛu]: *schewen* (inf.) 1 Tim. vi 15, *schewe* (imp. sg.) Jam. ii 18, *fewe* Heb. xii 10.

4. O. E. *ēo* + *w* > *ew*; *ow* rarely in S, more frequently in the Acts [*ēu*, *ou*]: *trewē* 1 John i 9, ii 8 etc., Acts xvi 1, 2 etc., *trewȝē* 1 John i 6, ii 4, 21, iii 19, 18 etc., *knew* (pt. sg.) Prol. 2. 9, *knewe*

(pt. sg.) Acts i 24, but *trowe* (inf.) Acts xv 7, (imp. sg.) xvi 31 etc., *trowed* (pl. pt.) xv 5, *trowþe* xv 2, *vntrowthfulle* xxvi 19.

O. E. *ēow* is *ȝow(e)* throughout, cf. Urk. p. 74, t. Br. § 49 p. 39.

O. E. *fēower* etc. gives *foure* Prol. 15. 2, 14. 12, Acts v 36, vii 6, x 11, *fourtenþe* Prol. 17. 31, *four(e)ty* Acts i 3, iv 22.

5. O. E. *ā + ht > au, aw [au]* (Urk. p. 75, t. Br. §§ 44, 45 anm.): *tauȝte* 1 Tim. i 3, *awghte* Acts xxvi 9, *tawghte* (pt. pl.) ib. v 21, (part.) xiv 20.

6. O. E. *ū + ȝ > ow [ū]* in *boue* 1 Pet. iii 11.

§ 33. *w-influence.* Urk. p. 63 ff.

1. O. E. *w + i* remains as a rule: *wille* (sb.) Rom. vii 18, Mt. vi 10, *wynDEL* Mt. iii 12, *wyte* (imp. pl.) Jam. i 19, 2 John 9, *wyke(s)* Prol. 17. 20, 25, *wydeues* Jam. i 27, *wydowe(s)* Acts vi 1, ix 39, 41, xvi 1, for *wedewe* 1 Tim. v 4, *weteþ* Prol. 11. 18, see § 5.

O. E. *willan* has forms with *o*, *e* and *i*. S¹ has *o* as a rule, *wole* Prol. 2. 4, 5, 2 Pet. i 15, Heb. viii 8 etc., *wolt* Prol. 12. 20, 26, *wol(l)eþ* Jam. iv 13, 15, 2 Tim. iii 12, iv 3 etc., but once *weleþ* 1 Tim. i 9, and twice *wylt* Prol. 7. 32, 9. 32; S² has *y wole* Jude 5, *wyle* (imp. pl.) 2 John 10; S³ has imper. pl. *wele* v 17, vi 7, 8, *wyle* iii 9, (3 sg. prs.) v 40, 42. The Acts have 2 sg. prs. *wilte* vii 28 etc., *o* throughout in the other present-forms.

With negation: *nul* Prol. 12. 16, 2 Pet. iii 9, Heb. viii 12, x 17 etc., *nole* Rom. vii 20, *nele þou* Mt. vi 2.

O. E. *swilc* (*swylc*) is *suche* with twice occurring *syche* Prol. 15. 13, Heb. xiii 16.

O. E. *wifman* appears as *womman* Prol. 1. 15, 17. 19, Rom. vii 2, Acts ix 36 etc., *wymman* Prol. 17. 2; plur. *wymmen* Acts i 14, xiii 50, 1 Pet. iii 1 (Morsb. § 112. 3).

2. O. E. *w + y* and *w + eo*: *world* 1 Pet. iv 11 etc., *worschippe* Acts vii 43, viii 27, xviii 13, -*schupe* 1 Tim. vi 1 etc., twice *wurschupe* Mt. ii 2, 8, (*y*)-*worþe* (O. E. *weorþan*) Acts v 38, Prol. 6. 1, cf. Acts v 36; *worþi* (O. E. *weorþiȝ*) Rom. viii 18, 1 Tim. i 15 etc.; twice *workus, -es* (< O. E. *ȝe-weorc*) 1 Cor. xii 21, Gal. v 19, else *werke* regularly in S, *warke* in the Acts, see § 34; *worse* 2 Pet. ii 20, 1 Tim. v 8 etc. O. E. *wyrcan* has *o*-forms as a rule: Eph. iv 19, Rom. viii 28, Phil. ii 12, 1 Thes. iv 11 etc., but in S¹ *werchynge(s)* 1 Cor. xii 6, 10, *wercheþ* (sg. prs.) 2 Thes. ii 7, *werche* (inf.) Prol. 17. 25; the Acts have *I wirche* xiii 41.

O. E. *sweljan* appears with *o* in *swolewynge* 1 Pet. iii 22. Cf. Pogatscher, *Engl. Stud.* 27 (p. 269 ff.).

O. E. *sweostor* is *suster* throughout S. Prol. 10. 9, 14. 18, 15. 18, 18. 4, 47. 1, 20, 25, 48. 16, Jam. ii 15, 2 John 13, 1 Cor. vii 15, *sustren* 1 Tim. v 2.

The Acts have *sister* (O. N. *systir*) xxiii 16.

§ 34. *r-influence.*

(Urk. p. 67, t. Br. § 48) M. E. *e* > *a* before *r* + cons. principally in the Acts: *warke* (O. E. *ȝe-weorc*) vi 3, vii 41, xiii 2, 41, xiv 25, xv 18, 38, *-men* xix 24, 38, *sparred* (part.) v 23, *sparde* (part.) xii 14, (pt. sg.) xxvi 10, *sperred* (pt. sg.) xxii 19 (O. E. *ȝe-spearrian*, O. N. *sperra*), *markenes* ii 20 (cf. Bj. i p. 146), *harde* (pt. pl.) iv 24, v 5, 11, 33, vi 11, 14 etc., (part.) i 4, ii 8, 11, iv 20, v 5, beside less frequent *herde(n)* (pt. pl.) ii 37, iv 4, v 24 etc.; *harbarowed(e)* x 18, 23, 32, xxi 16, *warne* (O. E. *wiernan*) xi 17; possibly *gart(t)e* (pt. sg.) xvi 15, xxvi 11, (part.) xxviii 19 (O. N. *gørva*, *gerva*); for *taries* xxii 16, *taried* xx 16, *tarye* (prs. sg.) xxiv 4, similarly 1 Tim. iii 15, 2 Pet. iii 9, see t. Br. § 48. 5.

In S¹ fewer instances occur: *dark* 2 Pet. i 19, Eph. iv 18, *darknesse* 1 Pet. ii 9, 1 John ii 9, 11, Eph. iv 18, v 11, vi 12, Col. i 13, 1 Thes. v 5, beside more frequent *derke*, *derknesse* Prol. 6. 29, 1 John i 5, 6, ii 8, 11 etc.; usually in Fr. loanwords; *parfyt(e)* Prol. 2. 22, Jam. i 25, 1 John iv 12 etc., *parceyfēþ* 1 Cor. ii 14, *parforme* Prol. 4. 35, Rom. vii 18, *parawnter* Prol. 5. 4.

§ 35. *Influence of l.* Urk. p. 66.

i > *u* in *chuldrēn* 1 Thes. ii 7, *tul* Mt. i 25.

F. VOWELS IN UNSTRESSED SYLLABLES.

Urk. pp. 77—85, t. Br. §§ 51—56.

§ 36. The following suffixes are noteworthy :

O. E. *-dōm*. Weakening to *-dam(e)* once in S: *þralldam* 1. Cor. vii 15, in the Acts *a* is frequent: *kendames* viii 1, *kengedam(e)(s)* viii 25, xiv 21, xxviii 31, xx 25.

O. E. *-hād*. The form *-hod(e)* occurs occasionally in S¹: the prevailing form is *-hed(e)*, see § 9.

O. E. *lāc* appears shortened in *wedlak* Heb. xiii 4.

O. E. *-līc*, *-līce* is *-lyche* throughout S¹, *-ly* in S² S³ and the Acts, the only exceptions being *onlyche* Mt. iv 4, *gretelyche* Acts ix 19.

O. E. *-āre* forming nomina agentis, as well as M. E. *-er* < O. Fr. *-ier* < L. L. *-erius* are levelled under *-ar* in the Acts, whereas the M. E. ending of the comparative appears as *-er* and *-ar*: *eldars* xv 4, 41, *elders* ii 17, *schewar* xvii 18, *worschippar* xix 35, *kepar(s)* xvi 23, xii 19, v 23, *ledar*, *spekar* xiv 11, *clippar* viii 32, *motar* xxiv 1,

blasphemares xix 37, *pursewars* vii 52, *accusars* xxiii 30, *mansleare* iii 14. S. has *-er(e)* throughout: *man-sleer* 1 Pet. iv 15, *makere* 1 Pet. iv 19, *fyscherys* Mat. iv 19.

O. E. *-scip*, *-scyp* has in S the forms *-schupe*, *-schyp(e)*, *-schep*: *wurschupe* (inf.) Mt. ii 8, *worschupeden* Prol. 2. 24, *lordschupe* 2 Pet. ii 10, *worschypynge* Mt. ii 11, *nakedschep* Rom. viii 35. The Acts have *-schip(pe)*: *worschippe* (inf.) vii 43, viii 27, xviii 13, *worschipful* Acts v 34.

Noteworthy are further *howsebande* Acts v 9, *husbande* ib. v 10, *opunsched* ib. ii 20 (*opun schewed* MS. S), *neyʒlachen* Jam. v 8, *-lacheþ* Heb. vii 19, *-lyche* Rom. xiii 11, beside *-leche(n)* Jam. iv 8, Heb. x 25 (O. E. *-læcan*).

§ 37. Prefixes.

O. E. *on-*. *oknowe* Acts ix 14, 21, *obrode* ib. v 36, 37, viii 4, *otwynne* ib. xv 39, *abowte* ib. v 42, *a-knowe* 2 John 7, *a-mydde* Prol. 1. 10, *a-mong* Prol. 1. 18, *agayne* Acts xxi 28, *a-bofe* Prol. 8. 3.

O. E. *ze-* remains as a rule in S¹: *y-chose* 1 Pet. ii 6, *y-cleped* ib. ii 21, in S² S³ no instances; in the Acts *ynowghe* xx 11.

O. E. *be-*. *byleueþ* 1 Pet. ii 6, *byggynne* ib. iv 17, *biganne* Acts ii 4 etc., but *begynne* (inf.) Acts iii 3.

O. E. *of-*. *a-down* Prol. 2. 10, 5. 30, *a-þouȝt* Prol. 4. 14, *a-þinken* (inf.) Heb. vii 22, *an-hungred* Rom. xii 20, cf. N. E. D.

O. E. *fore-*. *fore-goere* 2 Pet. ii 5.

O. E. *in-*. *inmyddes* Acts i 15, *ymyddes* ib. iv 7, xxii 6, xxvii 21, *in myddes of* ib. xvii 22, *incalled* ib. xv 17.

§ 38. Unaccented words.

(a) *Prepositions* are as a rule unchanged, but occasionally weakened forms occur: *forte* Jam. v 7, *inte* Jude 21, *anone* Acts ix 20, 35, *a-mydde* Prol. 1. 10, *an hyȝ* 1 Pet. v 6, Heb. i 3, *a-morewe* Jam. iv 13, *a two partyes* Prol. 15. 22, *olonge* Acts xx 7, beside *onon(e)* Acts xxii 29, xxiii 7, xii 10, *on lyue* ib. ix 41.

(b) *Pronouns*. S¹ has *ych* 1 Pet. i 16 etc. beside the unstressed form *y* 1 John ii 12, 13, 14 etc.; *me* < O. E. *man*, see § 67.

(c) *Adverbs and conjunctions*. O. E. *eal-swā* 'as' is *as* throughout S, Heb. iv 3, v 6 etc. The Acts have occasionally *als* i 1 etc., see § 47; *an* 'and' Rom. xiii 10.

II. CONSONANTS.

The consonantal system of the texts here printed agrees in the main with that of Chaucer, and in the following account, owing to limited space, only the deviations from Chaucer will be given.

§ 39. Unorganic *p* appears between *m* and *s* in *Sampson* Heb. xi 32.

§ 40. O. E. *b* (t. Br. § 100, Urk. p. 103). Medial *-bb-* is retained in S¹ in forms of *habban*, for examples see § 77.

§ 41. O. E. *f* (t. Br. §§ 101—2, Urk. p. 103 f.).

Inter-vocalic O. E. *f*, *lf*, *rf* are often orthographically retained, especially in S¹.

lyfe 1 Pet. i 3, *lofēþ*, *hafēþ*, *bylefēþ* ib. i 8, *sylfer* 2 Tim. ii 20, *selfer* 1 Cor. iii 12, *ȝow-selfe* 2 John 8, *hafē* (2 sg. prs.) Mt. v 26; *f* is vocalised in *dewle* (O. E. *dēofol*) Acts x 38; *f* stands for *v* initially in the French loanword *fouche saaf* Prol. 5. 5, 2 Thes. i 11.

§ 42. O. E. *w* (t. Br. § 103, Urk. p. 104 f.).

For *suche*, *syche* see § 33; on O. E. aphæresis of *w* depends *nul* etc., see § 33. O. E. *cw-* is in the Acts written *qw*: *qweene* viii 27, *gwikke* x 42.

§ 43. O. E. *t* (t. Br. § 105 *a*, *δ*, *ε*, Urk. p. 105) is assimilated to *s* in *Wyssoneday* (S. P.) Acts ii 1.

þ occurs for *t* in the French loanword *comforþe* Acts iv 36, xv 31, *comforþed* ix 19, xv 32, xvi 40, xxvii 9.

§ 44. O. E. *d* (t. Br. §§ 106 *a*, 105 *γ*, Urk. p. 105 f.).

Double forms with *t* and *d* occur in the syncopated weak preterites and participles in O. E. *-nde*, *-lde*, *-rde* (t. Br. § 105 *γ*): *sende* (pt. sg.) Acts iii 26, vii 12, 14, (pt. pl.) v 21, vi 11, viii 14, *sente* (pt. sg.) ib. x 20, 33, (pt. pl.) ix 30, *sentte* (pt. pl.) ib. xv 27, *wente* (pt. sg.) vii 4, viii 1, x 9, (part.) xi 2, *y-buld* 1 Pet. ii 5, Heb. iii 4, Col. ii 6, *y-buyld* 1 Cor. iii 14.

O. E. *d* is lost in *an* ‘and’ Rom. xiii 10, *schenschype* 1 Cor. xi 14, 2 Tim. ii 15.

Unorganic *d* in *Symonde* Acts ix 43, x 6, 32 (twice). The *þ* in *hundreþe* (O. E. *hundred*) the regular form in the Acts (i 15, v 36, xiii 20, *hundreþ(e)* xxiii 23, xxvii 37) is due to Scand. influence, see Bj. i 163.

§ 45. O. E. *þ* still remains in *kouþe* (prt.) Acts xiii 8, *couþe* xxvii 43; *d* for final *-þ* in *dead* (O. E. *dēaþ*) Acts xxii 4, *eghtod* (O. E. *eahtoða*) Acts vii 8; *fourtende* ib. xxvii 33 is due to Scand. influence, see N. E. D., but cf. O. E. *siofund* etc.

þ assimilated to final *-t* in *þat at* Acts x 15, xi 9.

Unorganic *þ* introduced in *al-þer last* Heb. i 2, *alþerhigheste* Acts vii 47.

§ 47. O. E. *l* is lost in *wordlyche* Prol. 5. 31, 1 Cor. vi 4 (twice), Tit. ii 12. O. E. *eal-swā* 'as' in unaccented position has retained its *l* frequently in the Acts: *als* i 1, *als many* iv 34, *alsfaste* v 10, *alssone* ix 18, xvii 15.

§ 48. Unorganic *n* introduced in *chefenteyn* Prol. 9. 24, *messyn-geres* Jam. ii 25, *tenþinge(s)* Heb. vii 2, 4, 5, 6, 8, 9, *y-tenþed* ib. vii 9. Initial *n* lost in *edder* Prol. 2. 35, 3. 22, Jam. iii 7, the Acts and Matth. have regularly *nedder(s)* Acts x 12, xxviii 3, *nedderis* Mt. iii 7. Apocope of *n* in *me < men*: Rom. viii 36, 1 Cor. vi 15, vii 36, 1 Thes. v 3, Heb. x 2, xii 18; further in *o* Acts iv 32 for *on*, and in *a* for the weakened *an*; O. E. *on* bef. cons. in composition is in the Acts frequently *o*: *oknowe* ix 14, 21, *olonge* xx 7, *otwynne* xv 39, *o-brode* v 37, viii 4, xxvi 1 but *on lyue* ix 41; before vowels the *n* remains, *onone* xii 10, xiii 11, xvi 10, 33, xix 34, xxi 30, 32 etc. Elsewhere the weakened forms *an*, *a*: *a-knowe* 2 John 7, *abedde* Rom. xiii 13, *a-þrust* Rom. xii 20, *an hyð* Heb. i 3, *an-hungred* Rom. xii 20.

§ 49. O. E. pal. *ȝ* (t. Br. §§ 120, 123, Urk. p. 97 ff.) is written *ȝ* as a rule throughout the texts, but with *ȝh* in the Acts in the following word's: *ȝhe* (pron.), *ȝhe* 'yes,' *ȝhere*, *ȝhate(s)*. The deviations from Chaucer are slight: in the Acts *gife*, *gifte* etc. correspond to Ch. *yiven*, *yever*, *yift*; in S *forȝeten* to Ch. *foryeten*, *forgeten*.

The following are the chief instances of *ȝ*—Germ. *g*: *ȝeyn(s)* Prol. 2. 10, 13, Mt. ii 8 etc. throughout S, *ȝyftys* Mt. ii 11, *ȝifte* Mt. v 23, 24, *ȝeue* Mt. iv 9, vi 4, Rom. vi 13 etc., *ȝef* (prt. s.) Prol. 1. 3, 14, 15, 15, *ȝaf* (pl.) Jude 4, *y-ȝeuen* 1 John iii 1, 23, 24, iv 13, v 20 etc., *forȝeue(n)* Mt. vi 12 (twice), 1 John i 9, ii 12, Jam. v 15, *forȝeuenge* Col. ii 13, *forȝefyng* Eph. iv 32, *forȝeueness*? Prol. 2. 20, 28, 48. 8, 9, *forȝeten* (inf.) Heb. vi 10, (p. p.) Jam. i 24, Heb. xii 5, *forȝete* (1 sg.) Phil. iii 13, (imp.) Heb. xiii 2, 16,

forȝeteþ (3 sg.) 2 Pet. i 9, *forȝetful* Jam. i 25, *ȝelde* (inf.) Mt. vi 6, *ȝisterday* Acts vii 28, *ȝote* (inf.) Acts ii 18, Jude 11, *ȝate* Jam. v 9, Heb. xiii 12, Acts x 17, *ȝhate* Acts xii 10, 13, 14, 16; analogically *forȝouen* (p. p.) Eph. iv 32, *v-ȝolde* 3 John 12, *ȝote* (p. p.) Jude 11, *ȝotted* (p. p.) Acts ii 33, x 45, *ȝhates* Acts xxi 30, v 19, 23.

Forms with *g*: *bygynne*, *bygynnyng(e)* etc. throughout; further *getere* 1 Cor. i 20, *gate* (prt. s.) 38 times in Mt. i 1–16, *geten* (prt. pl.) Heb. xi 33, *bygeten* (p. p.) 1 Pet. i 3, Jam. i 18, 1 John iv 9, v 1, Heb. xi 17, i 6, *bygetynge* (sb.) 1 John v 18, *getynge* (prs. p.) 2 Thes. ii 13, *gete* (inf.) Acts xxvii 17, *goten* (p. p.) Acts xiii 33, xxii 28, *algates* 1 Cor. vi 7, Rom. xiii 5.

In the Acts always *gife* (inf.) ii 19, 27, (prs. sg.) iii 6 etc., *gafe* (pt. sg.) vi 14, vii 5 etc., *gifen* iii 14, iv 12 etc., *forgife* (inf.) viii 22, *forgifnes* ii 38, v 31, *gife* ii 38, viii 20. For *geldynge* viii 27, 34, see Bj. i 150 note.

ȝ-=Gmc. *j*: *ȝhe* (pron.) Acts i 8 etc., *ȝe* 1 Pet. i 6 etc., *ȝhe* 'yes' Acts v 8, *ȝitte* ib. viii 16, *ȝonge* ib. v 6, *ȝef* 1 Pet. iii 14 etc. See § 26.

O. E. pal. *cȝ* (t. Br. § 114, Urk. p. 100) is fairly frequent in S¹, written *gg*: *lygge* (inf.) Prol. 14. 12, *legge* (inf.) Prol. 13. 20, *seggeþ* (prs. pl.) 1 Thes. iv 14, *myssegere* 1 Cor. v 11, *sugge* (prs. sg.) 1 Cor. i 12, 15, *suggen* (pl.) 1 Cor. i 10, *suggynge* Heb. viii 13, x 8, *forbugge* (prs. pl.) Eph. v 16, *buggeþ* (prs. pl.) 1 Cor. vii 30, *for-buggynge* Rom. viii 23, 1 Cor. i 30, Heb. ix 15, Col. i 13, iv 5.

On O. E. *strenȝþ* beside *strenȝþ* (Siev. Gr.³ § 215) depends the regular form in the Acts, *strenkþe* v 26, vi 8, xxi 35 etc. (cf. t. Br. § 114. 1, Urk. p. 100). In S *strengþe* Prol. 8. 35, 2 Pet. ii 11, Rom. viii 38.

§ 50. O. E. *c* (t. Br. §§ 112 a, 113 a, 118 a, 119 a, Urk. p. 91 ff.).

O. E. *sēcan* is *seche(n)* etc. throughout, except in *sekeþ* Mt. ii 13, *sekunde* Acts xiii 11.

Regularly *þenke(n)*, *þynke(n)* etc. Mt. i 20, Acts v 35, xvii 29, xx 35, xxv 27, but once *by-þenche* 1 Tim. iv 15.

The geminate in *slekked* Mt. iii 12 is probably due to Scand. influence, see Bj. i. p. 147.

Noteworthy is *schidesteres* Tit. ii 3 for *chidesteres*, derivative from O. E. *cīdan*.

O. E. *ȝelic* adj. is *lyche* Prol. 13. 6, *glyche* 1 Pet. i 14, 15 etc., but in the Acts *lyke* xiv 14, xvii 29, also *mykēl* iv 16, *meke* xxiv 2, beside the regular *muche*, *myche*, see § 8 c.

O. E. *ascian* occurs in three forms; the Acts have *asche*, *asched* etc. throughout: i 6, iii 10, 14, v 27, xii 19, xxi 33, xxv 3, 15, *aschinge* (sb.) xv 7; S¹ has *axen* etc. Prol. 3. 1, 1 Pet. iii 15, Jam. i 5, 6, 1 John iii 22, v 14, 15, *axyngē* (sb.) Phil. iv 6; Matthew has *aske* vi 8.

O. E. *asce*, *axe* 'ashes' appears as *aschen* Heb. ix 13, *axen* 2 Pet. ii 6.

§ 51. O. E. *χ* (t. Br. §§ 121, 122, Urk. p. 101 f.) written *ȝ*, in the Acts *gh* is still orthographically represented with two exceptions, *brytnesse* 2 Thes. ii 8, *Heb.* i 3, O. E. *χ > f* in *þofe* Acts xvii 27, xxiii 9, xxviii 4.

§ 52. Unorganic *h* in *heres* 2 Tim. iv 3, *norþe-heste* Acts xxvii 14, *hatnunde* Mt. v 20, *hurnyng* Prol. 16. 30, *hurneþ* 1 Pet. iv 4.

§ 53. *Metathesis.* Beside the ordinary M. E. *axe*, *wrouȝte* etc. the following cases may be noted: *turst* 'trust' *Heb.* ii 13, *ȝurstay* (cf. § 34, late W. S. *ȝyrstandæȝ*) *Heb.* xiii 8, *a-þrust* (O. E. *þurst*) *Rom.* xii 20, *hurnyng* *Prol.* 16. 30, *hurneþ* 1 Pet. iv 4, *axen* 'ashes' 2 Pet. ii 6.

§ 54. *Loss of consonants and subsequent contraction*: *ner-þe-latere* 1 Cor. xii 15, *ȝurstay* *Heb.* xiii 8, *þen* (< *þeþen*) *Acts* xxvii 28, *Mt.* iv 21, *bus* *Acts* ix 7, *whyrlewyn* *Heb.* xii 19.

III. FLEXION.

A. NOUNS.

§ 55. *Genitive.* The case-ending is occasionally lacking in relationship-words and proper names: *his fadur wyf* 1 Cor. v 1, *his fader lendes* *Heb.* vii 10, *i. is... fader howse* *Acts* vii 20, *Pharoes douȝter sone* *Heb.* xi 24, *þi suster douȝter* 2 John 13, *his moder wombe* *Acts* iii 2;—*by David mowȝe* *Acts* i 16, *in Symonde howse* *ib.* x 32, but usually *Symondes house* *ib.* x 17, see *Acts* iii 11, v 12, vii 10, x 6, xii 12.

The ending is further absent in: *no man sone* 1 Tim. v 22, *wiþ þo awngel honde* *Acts* vii 35, *a...wydowe sone* *ib.* xvi 1. Full ending in *Witsonenday* *Acts* ii 1.

§ 56. *Plural.* The plural-ending has been assimilated to the final cons. of the stem in *witnes* 'testes' *Acts* ii 32, v 32, vi 13, vii 57, xiii 31, but regularly *wytnesses* *Acts* i 8, x 41, 1 Thes. ii 10, *Heb.* x 28 etc.

Several weak nouns retain the O. E. plural in *-n*: *oxen* *Prol.* 15. 24, *aschen* *Heb.* ix 13, *axen* 2 Pet. ii 6, *yȝen* 1 Pet. iii 12, 1 John i 1, *eyne* *Acts* ix 8, *eyghne* *Acts* ix 18, xxvi 18, *eldren* 1 Pet. v 5, *Col.* iii 20, 1 Tim. v 4 (but in the *Acts* *elders* xv 22 etc.).

The *n*-plural has been adopted in *schone* *Acts* vii 33, xii 8, *breþeren*, *children*, *honden* throughout S (but *hondes* *Heb.* x 31, *hondys* *Mt.* iv 6), *douȝt(e)ren* 2 Cor. vi 18, 1 Pet. iii 6, *sustren* 1 Tim. v i, *tren* *Prol.* 3. 3, 4. The *Acts* have *breþer* iii 17, vi 3 etc., once

breþeren vii 37; *childe* vii 19, 37 etc.; *hende* ii 23, vi 6, viii 17 etc., the prevailing form, but *hondes* v 12, 18, ix 17, xiii 3, xxviii 8. The O. E. plural is retained in *axynge* Phil. iv 6, *four doghter* Acts xxi 9, *to ȝoure fadire* ‘patribus nostris’ ib. vii 44, *get* Prol. 15. 25, but *gotes* Heb. ix 19. Double plural occurs in *breches* Prol. 3. 13.

§ 57. Strong neuters without plural-ending: *swyn* Prol. 15. 23, *schep* 15. 24, *hors* 15. 26, *water* 16. 10, *syxty wynter* 1 Tim. v 9 (cf. Siev. Gr.³ § 273. 3), *ȝer* 15. 5, *many ȝhere* Acts xxiv 10, 17, see further 2 Pet. iii 8, Heb. iii 17, Acts iv 22, vii 6, 23, but *ȝers* 2 Pet. iii 8, Heb. i 12 etc., *al(le) þynge* Prol. 9. 28, 10. 23, 13. 21.

B. ADJECTIVES.

§ 58. The O. E. ending of the gen. plural remains in *al-þer last* Heb. i 2, *alþerhigheste* Acts vii 47.

§ 59. Comparatives and superlatives with *i*-mutation: *strengere* 1 Cor. i 25, *strongest* Heb. vi 18, *no lenger(?)* 1 Thes. iii 1, 5, Acts xxiv 4, xxv 24, xxviii 4, *lenger tyme* Acts xviii 20, *eldere men* 1 Pet. v 1, *elder days* Acts xv 7, *elder breþer* Acts xv 23, *þe* *eldere* sb. 2 John 1, 3 John 1, *þo* *eldars*, *elders* sb. Acts xv 4, xxiv 1, xxv 15, *eldren* sb., see § 56, *þo* *eldeste* sb. Acts xi 30, but once *aldere* 1 Tim. v 1.

Double comparative: *more betere* 1 Cor. vii 40.

§ 60. The shortening of a long vowel in the comparative and superlative is occasionally orthographically represented: *gretter(e)* Prol. 6. 27, 48. 18, 1 John iv 4, v 9, Heb. x 29, *grett(o)ur* Heb. vi 13, 16, *deppest(e)* Prol. 2. 11, 17, *grettest* 1 Cor. xiii 13.

C. NUMERALS.

§ 61. The O. E. difference in gender between *twēzen* and *twā* is not kept up: *two ȝere* Acts xix 10, similarly xxviii 30, Mt. ii 16, *centurions* Acts xxiii 23, *wykes* Prol. 17. 20, *wytnesses* 1 Tim. v 19, cf. Prol. 11. 36, 15. 22, Heb. x 28, Acts iv 22, xxiii 23, xxvii 37; *twey stones* Prol. 13. 6, *tables* 13. 21, 9. 15, *sons* Acts vii 29; *tweyn(e) hornes* Prol. 13. 15, *immebel þinges* Heb. vi 18; used independently *tweyn* 1 Cor. vi 16, Eph. v 31, Acts ix 38, x 7, *twoo* Acts i 24.

§ 62. Ordinals: *þridde* 1 Cor. xii 28, *sext(e) (?)* Acts xix 9, *sefēþe* Prol. 15. 5, 17. 29, 18. 1, Heb. iv 4, 5, *seueþe* Jude 14, *eyþteþe*

Prol. 16. 30, 17. 12, 2 Pet. ii 5, Phil. iii 5, *eyȝþþe* Prol. 17. 16, *eghtod* Acts vii 8, *nynte* Acts x 3, *fourtende* Acts xxvii 33, *fourtenþe* Prol. 17. 31.

The cardinal is used for the ordinal in Acts xxvii 27 þo *fourtene nyghte* (S. P. D. have *fourtenþe*, cf. ib. verse 33 þo *fourtende duye*). For examples of similar usage see *Anglia* xxiv 219 (1901).

D. PRONOUNS.

§ 63. *Personal.* O. E. *ic*. The Acts, Matthew, 3 John, Jude have *y*, *I* exclusively, elsewhere *ych* and *y* alternate, the proportions being: 2 John *ych* once, *y* 6 times, 1 Peter 2:3, 2 Peter 5:1, James 1:0, 1 John 2:8, Romans 12:20, 1 Cor. 35:53 etc.

O. E. *hēo* is in the Acts and S³ represented by *sche*: Acts v 8, 10 etc., Mt. i 18, 21, 23, 25 etc.; no instances in S²; S¹ has *heo* Prol. 3. 10, 22, 17. 7, Rom. vii 2, 1 Cor. vii 34, 36, 39, 40, Heb. ii 3 etc., *he* Prol. 17. 4, Rom. vii 3, 1 Cor. vii 36 etc.

O. E. *hīere* g. d. sing. fem., also used as possessive, is in the Acts and S³ *hire*, in S² *here* (poss.) 2 John 1, in S¹ regularly *hure*: Acts v 8, 9, 10 etc., Mt. i 19, 20, v 28, 31, 32, Prol. 17. 6, Rom. vii 2, 3, Jam. iii 9 etc., rarely *here* (poss.) Rom. vii 2, *hire* once 1 Pet. iii 1.

The 3 person n., d., a., pl. are regularly *þei*, *hem*, once *þai* Acts xxviii 27.

§ 64. *Possessive.* The plural of the 3 person is in the Acts regularly *þer* i 13, 19, ii 41, 44, 45 etc., rarely *her* i 9, *hers* xxi 6, once resp. *þaire* vii 34, *þeire* xvi 19, note 11; in Matthew *her(e)* 9 x, *þer* 5 x, *hire* once vi 7; in 2—3 John no instances; Jude *here* 6 x, *þer* twice; in S¹ regularly *hure* Eph. v 28, vi 9, Phil. iii 19, Col. ii 22, 1 Thes. ii 16 etc., rarely *her(e)* Prol. 47. 12, 2 Pet. ii 2, 3, Eph. vi 4, *hire* Eph. v 24, 1 Pet. iii 1.

O. E. *mīn*, *ðīn*. Final *-n* occasionally remains before other consonants than *h*: *þyn skelys* Prol. 8. 5, *myn testament* Heb. viii 9, *þyne workus* 1 Cor. xii 21. Noteworthy are *ouren* 1 John ii 2, *ȝouren* 1 Cor. iii 21, 22.

§ 65. *Demonstrative.* In the Acts the def. article is regularly *þo* i 2, 3 etc., occasionally *þe* i 1, 12 etc., in S regularly *þe*.

O. E. *þes*, *þeos*, *þis* appear in the sing. as *þis* throughout, rarely *þes* 1 John v 6, Heb. iii 3, vii 1, x 12; as plurals appear in the Acts *þise* i 5, 9, 14 etc. throughout, in Matthew *þes(e)* 6 x, *þise* 2 x, in 2 John no instance, 3 John *þese* once, *þise* once, Jude *þese* 4 x, *þise*

once; in S¹ þese Prol. 16, 13, 1 John v 13 etc. throughout, once þuse Prol. 11, 3.

Characteristic of the Acts is the emphatic sing. nom. *he þis* i 18, iii 3, iv 9, 10, 11, vi 14, viii 10, ix 21, x 3, 36, *he þat* viii 13, acc. *hym þis* ii 32, iii 12, 16, xiii 22 etc. Noteworthy is *alle þat two þere* 'biennio toto' Acts xxviii 30.

§ 66. *Relative and interrogative.* For *whiche whuche* see § 8, 1 b, 2 b, *suche* § 33. Note *at* in *þat at* Acts x 15, xi 9, see § 45.

§ 67. *Indefinite.* *me* < O. E. *man* occurs sparingly: Rom. viii 36, 1 Cor. vi 15, vii 36, 1 Thes. v 3, Heb. x 2, xii 18.

§ 68. O. E. *self*. As adjective: *þe selfe wyse* Prol. 14. 22, *þe selfe sacrificys* Heb. x 1; preceded by a personal pronoun: *meseluen* Acts iii 22, *hymseluen* ib. i 3, 18, ii 34, viii 34, x 17, xii 11, but joined to a poss. pronoun: *þi-seluen* Acts v 4; Matthew has *þy-self* iv 6, *ȝoure-self* iii 8; the Prologue and Epistles have both combinations: *hymself(e)* Prol. 2. 34, 4. 27, *-selfen* 1 Cor. xii 18, Eph. v 28, *ous-self* Rom. viii 23, *-seluen* 2 Cor. vi 4, *ȝow-self(e)* 2 John 8, Rom. vi 11, xii 16, 1 Cor. xi 13, 1 Thes. ii 1, v 2, *-selfen* Rom. vi 13, 1 Cor. v 13, Eph. v 19, *hemself* Prol. 3. 12, *-selfen* 2 Pet. ii 1, Eph. iv 19, and *myselfe* 1 Cor. vii 7, *-selfen* ib. xi 34, *þi-selfe* Rom. xiii 9, Gal. v 14, *-selfen* Tit. ii 7, *oure-selfe* Prol. 6. 17, *ȝoure-selfen* Jude 20, 21.

E. VERBS.

1. *Gradation* (t. Br. §§ 128—160, Urk. pp. 132 f., 137 ff.).

§ 69. Class I. The O. E. gradation remains as a rule: pt. sg. *slod* 2 Pet. i 17, *roos* Mt. ii 21, *aros* Rom. vi 4, 9, *abode* 1 Thes. iii 5, *wrote* Prol. 9. 14 etc., pt. pl. *abyden* 1 Pet. iii 20, *dryfen* Heb. xi 34, *risen* Acts vi 9, *striuen* (< O. Fr. *estriver*) ib. xi 2, *wyten* ib. xix 25, part. *y-slyde* Heb. vi 6, *y-rysen* Jam. i 11, *risen* Acts x 40, 41, *aresen* Col. iii 1, *y-dryfen* 2 Pet. ii 17, *y-wryten* 1 Cor. i 19, 20, *smyten* Acts xxiii 3. The Acts have, however, carried the vowel of the sg. pt. into the plural in *smote* xviii 17, xxii 23, *ros(e)* v 6, xviii 12, xxvi 30 etc., *wote(n)* vii 40, x 28.

O. E. *stiȝan* has pt. sg. *steyȝ* Eph. iv 9, 10, *steghe* Acts ii 34, part. *steghne* Acts x 4 (see Bj. p. 62 note); weak is *y-styed* (part.) 1 Cor. ii 9; similarly *schyned* (pt. sg.) Acts xii 7 beside *vmschone* ib. xxii 6, xxvi 13, *wryed* (pt. sg.) Prol. 13. 29 but part. *y-wrye* Prol. 13. 16.

O. E. *riȝpan*, *riopan* appears as *repe(n)* (inf.) Gal. vi 7, 8, *y-repe* (p. p.) Jam. v 4.

O. E. *spīwan*, or possibly the weak *spīwian*, *spēowian*, is represented by *spewyngē* Jude 13.

§ 70. Class II. O. E. *bēodan* (cf. *biddan* § 73): pt. sg. *forbede* Prol. 1. 9, 15. 21, *forbed* ib. 3. 29, 15. 20, 2 Pet. ii 16, *bed* Prol. 15. 18, *forbedde* Prol. 3. 19, Acts xxvii 43; part. *forboden* Prol. 15. 24, 26, 28, 30, 32, *boden* Acts xvi 24, xxiii 31. O. E. *cēosan*: pt. sg. *che(e)s* Prol. 8. 18, 10. 31, 1 Cor. i 27, 28, Acts i 2, once *chesed* Acts xiii 17; pt. pl. *ches* Acts vi 5, once *chesed* xv 22; part. *y-chosen* 1 Pet. ii 4, Rom. viii 33, *chosen* Acts xv 7, i 24, *chose* Jude 1. O. E. *ȝēotan*: inf. *ȝete* Acts ii 17, *ȝote* ib. ii 18, part. *ȝote* Jude 11, *ȝette* Acts i 18, *ȝotted* Acts ii 33, x 45.

O. E. *būzan*, *flēon*, *lēozan*, *lēosan* have weak forms only: *bowden* (pt. pl.) Acts vi 8, *fledde* (pt. sg.) Acts i 18 (part.) xxvii 30, *lyed* (part.) Acts v 4, *lese* (inf.) Prol. 2. 33, for *lostē* (pt. s.) Jude 5, *y-lost* (part.) Prol. 2. 34 etc. See Bülbring, Q. F. 63 p. 90 f.

§ 71. Class III. pl. prs. *hurneþ* 1 Pet. iv 4, pt. sg. *bigan(ne)* Acts i 2, xi 4, *dronk* Prol. 13. 10, *dranke* Acts ix 9, *bonde* Acts xxi 11, *braste* Acts i 18, *fonde* Acts x 27, *ranne* Acts viii 30; pt. pl. *bygonne* Jam. ii 12, *founden* 1 Pet. ii 10, *founden* Mt. ii 11, *ronne* Gal. v 7, *songen* Prol. 11. 35, *koneþ* Rom. viii 26. The Acts have the Northern levelling in favour of the ablaut of the sg. prt.: *þei biganne* ii 4, xxvii 2, *dranke* x 41, *faughte* xxiii 9, *fonde* v 22, 23, vii 11, *ran* vi 12, but once *runnen* v 16; the participle regularly *y-bounde* 1 Cor. vii 39, Col. iv 3, *bownden* Acts ix 2, *dronken* Eph. v 18, 1 Cor. xi 21, *drunken* Acts ii 15, *founden* Mt. ii 8, Acts iv 13 etc., *y-ȝolde* 3 John 12, *y-holpe* 2 Cor. vi 2, *hulpun* (!) Acts xxvi 22, *y-molten* Prol. 11. 21, *y-ronne* Phil. ii 16, *y-sprongen* 1 Thes. i 8, *wonnen* Acts ii 41, xxvii 21; weak is *worþed* Acts v 36.

O. E. *-breȝdan* has a weak participle *obrayded* 1 Pet. iv 14.

§ 72. Class IV. Only O. E. *beran*, *brecan*, *cuman* are fully represented: pt. sg. *bare* Mt. i 25, Acts xxvi 10, *brake* 1 Cor. xi 24, *com* 1 John v 20, Eph. iv 10 etc., *kome* Acts ii 6 etc., but *breke* Prol. 12. 1, Acts xx 11, *bere* Acts xv 8, xxvii 15, *ber* Heb. xi 4 (see Morsb. § 96 p. 131);—pt. pl. *breken* Prol. 10. 27, *bere* 3 John 6, Acts xxvii 2, *schere* Acts xiv 13, *komen* ib. iv 26, but with Northern levelling *bare* Acts iv 33, v 6, *brake* Acts ii 46;—part. *y-boren* 1 John v 19 etc., *bore* Prol. 10. 14, Mt. i 16, 20, ii 1, 2, 4, *borne* Acts ii 8, iii 2, *y-broken* Prol. 13. 8, *broken* Acts ii 24, Prol. 16. 22, 7, *y-come(n)* 1 John ii 18,

Heb. viii 6 etc., *comen* Acts xiv 26, 2 John 7 etc., *vndernomyn* Tit. i 11, *-nome(n)* Eph. v 13, Jam. ii 9, *y-stolen* Eph. iv 28.

The prs. plur. of *sculan* is generally *schuleþ* Rom. viii 13 etc., *schulen* Jude 18, *schul* Acts iii 20, vii 7, 3 John 14, but *schal* Acts xxviii 28, 26, i 8, ii 17, 37, iii 22, iv 15; Matthew has *schal* 14 times, *schule* once.

§ 73. Class V. O. E. *biddan*: *bydde* (1 sg.) 1 Cor. xi 17, *bidde* (inf.) Acts xxv 3, *biddande* ib. xiii 16.—pt. sg. *bade* Prol. 10. 23, Acts x 42, xx 1, xxiv 23, xxvii 43, *bad* Prol. 13. 16, Mt. iv 6, *bede* Prol. 1. 5, 4. 19, 9. 18, 22, 11. 6, 12. 1, 3, cf. *bēodan* § 70, Morsb. § 96 p. 131.—pt. pl. *beden* Prol. 10. 21, *bade* Acts xv 25; part. *y-bede(n)* Prol. 10. 26, 1 Thes. iv 11, *forbeden* Prol. 3. 2, *biden* Acts xviii 2. O. E. *ȝiefan* has pt. sg. in the Acts *gafe* ii 4, vii 5, 8, 10, xii 23, xiii 21 etc., in S² S³ no instances, in S¹ *ȝef* Jam. v 18, Rom. viii 32, 1 Cor. iii 2, Eph. iv 8, v 2, 25 etc. throughout; once *ȝaf* Prol. 3. 11; the pt. pl. is in the Acts *gafe* i 26, xvii 21, xxvii 15 etc., in Jude 4 *ȝaf*, the Prologue has *ȝefen* 13. 21, elsewhere no instances; part. Acts *gifen* iii 14, *vmgyuen* xxviii 20, Matthew *ȝeue* v 27, S² no instance, in S¹ *y-ȝeuen* 1 John v 20, iv 13, iii 24 etc., *forȝeuen* 1 John ii 12, Jam. v 15, once irreg. *forȝouen* Eph. iv 32.

O. E. *etan*: pt. sg. *ete* Prol. 3. 10, 11, 21, 23, Acts x 14, xx 11 etc., *eteste* Acts xi 3, pt. pl. *eten* 2 Thes. iii 8, part. *eten* Acts xxvii 38.

O. E. *-ȝietan* has in the pt. sg. *gate* Mt. i 1—16, pt. pl. *geten* Heb. xi 33, part. *bygete(n)* Mt. i 25, 1 Pet. i 3, 1 John iv 9, v 1 etc., *forȝeten* Jam. i 24, irreg. *goten* Acts xiii 33, xxii 28.

O. E. *licȝan*: pt. sg. *laye* Acts xx 10, part. *lyne* Acts ix 33, *ouerlyne* x 38, *leyen* Prol. 16. 33.

O. E. *seon* has pt. sg. *saw(e)* in Matthew iii 16, iv 16, 18, 21, the Acts have *sawe* iii 3, ii 31, vii 55, viii 39, ix 8, 41, x 3, 11, xii 3, xiii 36, 37, xvii 16, *se* xxviii 15; in S² no instance, elsewhere *seyȝ* Prol. 3. 9, 6. 18, 11. 16, 34, Heb. xi 5, *sey* 1 John iii 6, *sauȝ* Prol. 8. 17, 29; pt. pl. in the Acts *sawe* i 11, iv 13, vi 15, ix 7, 35, xvi 40, *see(n)* xvi 19, xxi 27, 32, 29, xxii 9, xxvii 27, *se* xxviii 4, *seghe* xiv 10, xxviii 6. Matthew has *sawe* ii 2, 9, S² no instance, S¹ has *seyen* Prol. 3. 12, 11. 27, Heb. xi 23, *syen* Heb. iii 9 (O. Kent. *seȝon*); part. Acts *sene* (O. E. adj. *ȝesēne*) iv 20, viii 18, ix 27, xi 13, xvi 10; in S¹ *y-seye(n)* 1 John i 2, 3, Phil. iii 4, Jam. v 11, 1 Pet. i 8, Rom. viii 24, 1 Cor. ii 9, Col. i 16 etc., *y-sey(n)* 1 John iv 12, 14; Phil. i 30, Prol. 10. 13 etc., *y-sene* once 1 John iii 2; Matthew has *sey* v 28,

seyn vi 1, 5; in S² no instances (for pt. sg. *seon* see Bülbring, Q. F. 63 p. 67 ff.).

O. E. *majan* has pt. sg. *may* 1 Cor. ii 14 etc., exceptionally *mowe* Phil. iii 11, 12; pt. pl. *mowe(n)* Prol. 6. 3, 12. 27, Rom. viii 8 etc., *muye* Acts iv 12.

O. E. *sittan*: pt. sg. *sate* Acts xxv 6, 17, *sete* Acts xviii 11, xx 9; *sete* Prol. 16. 26, pt. pl. Acts *sat* ii 3, *sate* xxvi 30, *satte* vi 15, *sete* xiii 14, xvi 13, part. *y-sete* Prol. 16. 27.

O. E. *sprecan*, *specan*: pt. sg. *spake* Acts vi 10, *spak* 1 Cor. xiii 11, *speke* Acts xviii 27, xix 8, xxi 40, xxii 9, pt. pl. *spake(n)* Acts iii 24, iv 1, 21, 31, *speke* Acts xvi 13, xix 6, part. (irreg.) (*y-*)*spoke(n)* throughout: Acts iii 21, Heb. xii 5, Jude 15, 17 etc.

O. E. *wrekan* has a weak pt. sg. *wreked* Acts vii 24.

§ 74. Class VI. inf. *slen* Prol. 11. 31, 12. 4, *slee* Acts v 33, ix 29; pt. sg. *drowe* Acts viii 3, 13, *schoke* Acts xviii 6, *slouȝ* 1 John iii 11, 12 etc., *slow* Prol. 14. 20, Mt. ii 16, *toke* Acts i 9 etc., *forsoke* Jude 6, *swor* Heb. iii 11, 18, *mot(e)* Prol. 7. 24, 9. 29, 1 John ii 6, 1 Cor. vii 36, Heb. vii 12; pt. pl. *drowe* Acts ix 8, *lowghne* Acts ii 13, *slowe* Acts ii 23, iii 15, *slowen* Prol. 12. 5, *forsoken* Prol. 2. 24, *stoden* Acts i 10, iv 1, *toke* Acts i 16, *moten* 1 John iv 11, part. *y-drawen* 2 Cor. vi 11, 13, *forsaken* Prol. 7. 23, 5. 9, *y-schape* Eph. iv. 24, but weak *y-schaped* Col. iii 10, *schaken* Acts xxvii 18, *y-slawe(n)* 1 Pet. iii 18, Jam. v 6, Rom. viii 36, 2 Cor. vi 9 etc., but in the Acts *slayne* v 36, xxiii 12, 14, *wiȝtenden* Acts vii 51, *-stande* Acts xxviii 22, *taken* Acts i 2, 2 John 4 etc. The following participles have passed into Class IV: (*y-*)*hofen* 2 Thes. ii 4, 1 Tim. iii 6, *y-swore(n)* Heb. iv 3, vii 21, *sworne* Acts ii 30.

O. E. *weaxan*, *wascan* appear as reduplicated verbs: pt. sg. *wesche* Acts xvi 33, *wexe* Acts v 14, vi 1, 7, vii 17, ix 37, xix 20, once *waxed* 1 Pet. i 25, part. (*y-*)*wasche(n)* Acts ix 37, 1 Cor. vi 11, 1 Tim. v 10, Prol. 16. 29, *waxen* Acts vi 7, *oover-waxe* 1 Cor. vii 36.

§ 75. Class VII. Reduplicated verbs.

O. E. *dr̄ðan* *hōn r̄ðan*, *wēpan*, *sl̄ðpan* have developed only weak forms: pt. sg. *dradde* Heb. xi 23, *honged* Acts i 18, *slepped* Acts xiii 36, pt. pl. *dredde* Acts v 26, *wepped* Acts ix 39, part. *redde* Acts xv 31, *y-rad* Heb. ix 19, *y-slept* 1 Thes. iv 14; similarly *wealcan* e.g. *y-walked* 1 Pet. iv 3.

O. E. *bēatan*: pt. sg. *betty* Acts xxii 19, part. *beten* Acts xvi 22, 23.

O. E. *feallan* has regularly developed forms in the Acts, cf. i 26, iv 5, iii 10, Matthew has pt. pl. *felden* ii 11; noteworthy are pt. sg. opt. *fulle* 1 Pet. iv 12, pt. pl. *fullen* Heb. xi 30.

O. E. *fōn* : inf. *vnderfonge* 3 John 8, pt. sg. *vnderfong* 2 Pet. i 17, pt. pl. and part. *fonge(n)* 1 Thes. ii 13, 1 John v 9, ii 27.

O. E. *hātan*. The Acts have pres. *bihetynge* (sb.) i 4, ii 33, 39; pt. sg. *highte* xiii 32, xvii 7, *biheghte* xiii 23, *bihette* vii 5, pass. *hatte* ix 10, 43, xii 13; part. *hette* ii 39; in Prol. and Epistles prs. *byhotynge* 2 Pet. ii 19, *byhoteb* Heb. xii 26, 1 Tim. ii 10, pt. sg. *byhyzte* Prol. i. 12, 9. 20, part. *byhoten* Prol. 9. 19, 10. 8, Jam. i 12, 1 John ii 25.

O. E. *lætan* : pt. sg. *lette* Prol. 13. 20, *lyte* Mt. iii 15, part. *y-let* Prol. 6. 1. The Acts have pres. *late* (imper.) xvi 35, xix 38, pt. pl. *lete(n)* ix 25, xvii 10, part. *laten* iv 23, x 11, xvi 35, xxvi 32, xi 5, xxviii 18.

O. E. *þrāwan* : once irreg. pt. sg. *þrowz* Eph. iv 8, elsewhere regular forms. Regular are pt. sg. *blewe* Acts xxvii 13, xxviii 13, *biheld* Acts i 22 etc., *knewe* Acts i 24 etc., *lepe* Acts xix 16, part. *y-blowe* 1 Cor. xiii 4, *y-holden* Rom. vii 6 etc., *to-hewe* Heb. xi 37, *y-knowe* 1 John iv 2, *y-sowe(n)* Jam. i 21, iii 18.

2. Weak Verbs (t. Br. §§ 161—183, Urk. pp. 132 ff., 143 ff.).

§ 76. The O. E. suffixal *i* appears by analogy in all forms of O. E. *herian* : *heryeþ* (sg.) Prol. 5. 10, *heryen* (inf.) Prol. 11. 11, 13. 19, *herynge* Prol. 11. 2, Heb. xiii 15, *heryenges* 1 Pet. iv 3, *heryed* (pt. pl.) Prol. 11. 23, (part.) 2 Thes. ii 4, *heryeden* (pt. pl.) Prol. 12. 14; it is further retained in *wonyed* (pt. sg.) Prol. 2. 32 (*louyeris* 1 Pet. iii 8), *schonye* (imp. sg.) 1 Tim. v 11, 2 Tim. ii 23, *schonye* (imp. sg.) ib. ii 16, Tit. iii 10 etc., *erþe-tylynge* 1 Cor. iii 9 (-*tylyer(e)* Jam. v 7, 2 Tim. ii 6); note further *stonyed* (part.) Acts xxii 17 (see t. Br. § 174), *waries* (prs. sg.) ib. xxiii 4, *waryande* ib. xix. 9 (O. E. *wyrian*, *wierþan*; t. Br. § 48 v), *synge* (prs. sg.) Jam. v 13, *sunge* (imp. pl.) Eph. iv 26, *sungeþ* (prs. pl.) 1 Pet. ii 20. For *targeþ* (sg. prs.) 2 Pet. iii 9, *tarynge* Gal. v 26, see t. Br. § 48 v.

§ 77. O. E. *habban* appears frequently with geminated forms in S¹ : *habbe* (inf.) Prol. 47. 25, *habbeþ* (prs. pl.) 1 John i 1, ii 13, 14, 18, 20, iii 11, 16 etc., 1 Cor. iii 5, vi 2, Phil. iv 9, Col. i 14, Heb. x 19 etc. For geminated forms of O. E. *secþan*, *bycþan*, *licþan*, *lecþan* see § 50.

§ 78. O. E. *clipian*, *cleopian* has occasional strong forms: *clep* (pt. sg.) Prol. 1. 20, 3. 15, *clepen* (pt. pl.) Prol. 4. 8, 9.

§ 79. Double ending occurs in pt. sg. *graunteded* Prol. 1. 9.

3. *Flexional Endings* (t. Br. §§ 184—196, Urk. p. 133 ff.).

§ 80. 1 *sg. ind.* *knowe* Prol. 14. 15, *sugge* 1 Cor. i 12, *loue* 2 John 1, 3 John 1, *hauue* 2 John 4, Acts iii 6, *prey* Prol. 14. 16, 1 Cor. i 10, *gife* Acts iii 6, *wole* Prol. 7. 30. 2 *sg. ind.* In the Acts -es, -s, rarely -este: *haues* v 4, xxii 15, xxv 12, *stondes* vii 33, *gos*, *kepes* xxi 24, cf. further xxii 16, 28, xxiii 3, 4, xxv 10, xxvi 3, 27, 28, but *haueste* i 24, xxiii 11; in S -(e)st: *byddest* Prol. 12. 19, *hast* Prol. 6. 20, 7. 2, *dost* 3 John 5 etc. The pret.-presents have -t, -st: *wost* Prol. 5. 3, 2 Tim. i 15, *mayst* Mt. v 36, *most* Prol. 7. 26, *myȝt* Prol. 7. 2, 13. 5, *schalt(e)* Acts ii 27, 28, xi 14, Rom. vii 8, but no ending in *schal* Acts ii 27, xvi 31, Jam. ii 11, *can* Acts xxviii 22, *may* ib. xxiv 11. 3 *sg. ind.* The Acts have -es: *heres* iii 23, *haues* ii 39, v 32 etc.; the remaining parts -eþ: *sekeþ* Mt. ii 13, *ȝefeþ* Rom. viii 16; once *brekes* Heb. x 28; syncopated forms: *syt* Heb. i 3, *halt* Col. ii 19. 1, 2, 3 *sg. subj.* *þou passe* Prol. 14. 17, *be* ib. 6. 23, *huyde* ib. 6. 22, *speke* Acts xxvi 1, *here* ib. 3, *enymen* *sugge* 1 Cor. i 15, *be* ib. vii 34.

§ 81. *Plural pres. ind. and subj.* The Acts have -e(n), in both moods, occasionally uninflected monosyllables: *dwellen* i 19, ii 9, 14, *ben* i 21, ii 7, 13, 32, iii 15, 25, *speken* ii 7, *wonduren* iii 12, *sayne* vii 1, *trowe* ii 15, *here* ii 33, *see* ii 33, iii 16, *do* vii 51, v 38; subj. *be* v 39, iii 19, *abstene* xv 29, *ben* xvi 36.

The ending -(e)s is rare: *bigynnes* in heading p. 123, note 1, *haues* xv 24, *bihoues* iv 12, *has* xxi 23.

Matthew has as a rule -e(n), or no ending in monosyllabic or contracted verbs in both moods, -(e)þ 6 x; 2 John -e(n) 6 x, -eþ once, subj. -e twice, no ending once; 3 John -e 4 x, no ending once, -(e)þ 3 x; Jude -(e)þ 12 x, -e(n) or no ending 9 x.

In S¹ the plural ind. ends in -(e)þ, the shorter form in -e or without ending prevailing in monosyllabics or when the pronoun follows the verb: *lofþ*, *bylefþ*, *seþ* 1 Pet. i 8, *beþ* Heb. xi 13, Phil. iii 15, *habbeþ* 1 Pet. i 10 etc., *hafþ* Heb. xii 1, 4 (but always *han* 1 Pet. i 10, ii 3, Rom. vi 17, Heb. xiii 2 etc.), *deme ȝe*, *be ȝe* Jam. i 4, *se* Rom. viii 25.

The pl. subj. in *-e*, *-en* or occasionally without ending in monosyllabic verbs: *ben* 1 Pet. i 15 etc., *knowe* 2 Pet. iii 17, *synne* 1 John ii 1, *be* 1 Pet. iii 14.

§ 82. *Imperative plural.* Ending: in the Acts *-(e)s*, occasionally *-e* when the pers. pronoun follows: *heres & vnderstondes* iv 8, *bes, dos* iii 19, *here ȝhe* ii 22; in Matthew *-e* or no ending: *telle ȝee* ii 8, cf. iii 3, 9, iv 19, v 17, 44, *goo ȝe* ii 8, *do ȝe* iv 17, v 44, iii 8; 2 John: *takeþ* 8, *wyte ȝe* 9, *wyle ȝe* 10, *sey* 10; in 3 John no instance; Jude: *be* 2, *hauþ* 17, *-e* 4 times. In the remaining parts the ending is the same as that of the 3 pl. ind.: *beþ* 1 Pet. i 13, *y-hereþ* Jam. ii 5, *loue ȝe* 1 Pet. i 22, *go ȝe* Rom. xii 10, Heb. xiii 13, *y-seo ȝe* 1 Cor. i 26.

§ 83. *Infinitive.* The Acts, S² and S³ have *-e* or no ending in monosyllabic verbs: *wryte* 2 John 12, 3 John 13, Jude 3, *abide* Acts i 4, *leue, take, drede* Mt. i 20, *be* 2 John 2, Mt. ii 4, Acts i 8, ii 17 etc., *do* Acts i 1 etc. In S¹ *-en* is more frequent than *-e*, forms without ending being rare: *ben* 1 Pet. ii 6, iv 18, 2 Pet. ii 1, 2, 9, *don* 2 Pet. ii 6, *welewen* Jam. i 11, *make* 2 Pet. i 8, *do* 2 Pet. i 10, *be* 1 Cor. vii 26, 2 Pet. i 11 etc.

§ 84. *Pres. participle.* The Acts have *-ande*: *lifande* i 3, *tell-ande* xv 3 etc., exceptionally *-inge* in *stondinge* v 23, xi 13, *plesinge* vii 20, vi 5; S has *-ynge* (*-eng(e)*) throughout: *rysynge* Mt. ii 14, *berynge* 1 Pet. i 9, *goynge* 2 John 4, *abydynge* Jude 21, *preyenge* 1 Thes. iii 10.

§ 85. 2 sg. *pret. ind.* : *ete* Prol. 3. 18, 29, *ȝefe* ib. 3. 20, *were* ib. 3. 18, *knewe* ib. 12. 21, *eteste* Acts xi 3, *saideste* ib. iv 25, *ȝodeste* ib. xi 3.

§ 86. *Plural preterite.* The Acts have *-e* or no ending, occasionally *-en* in both strong and weak verbs: *gafe* i 26, *sat* ii 3, *woren* ii 44, *saide, herde* ii 37, *loked* i 10, *saiden, wondurden* ii 7; Matthew has 14 times *-e*, 4 × *-en*, 3 × no ending; 2–3 John: 3 × *-e*, once *-en*; Jude: 4 × *-en*, once *-e*, 4 × no ending; S¹ has *-en*, occasionally *-e*, so mostly when the pers. pronoun follows: *weren* Prol. 1. 20, Rom. vi 20, 1 Cor. i 13, 28 etc., *schulden* Rom. vii 4, 5, Heb. iii 11, *schulde we* Rom. vi 1, 2.

§ 87. *Past participle.* The Acts have *-en*, *-n(e)*, *gifen* xvii 16, *drunken* ii 15, *wonnen* ii 41, *borne* ii 8, iii 2, *sworne* ii 30, *steghne* x 4, *gone* xvii 1, *ben* xix 21; Matthew has *-e* 14 ×, *-en* 4 ×, *-n(e)* 2 ×, no ending once; 2 John *-en* 5 ×, *-e* 2 ×, 3 John *-e* 2 ×, Jude *en* 5 ×,

-e 4 x, -n once: *bore* Mt. i 20, ii 1, 2, 4, *sey* Mt. v 28, *knowen* 2 John 1, *come* 2 John 7, Jude 4, *don(e)* Jude 3, Mt. i 22; in S¹ -en (-n) prevails, -e is far less frequent, occasionally no ending in monosyllabics; the prefix *y-* is with a few exceptions regular in uncompounded verbs: *y-wryten* Prol. 11. 34, 1 Pet. i 16 etc., *y-bore* 1 Pet. i 23, 1 John v 9, 10, *ydon* Jam. iv 14, *be* Prol. 1. 4, *y-be* 1 Thes. ii 7, *do* Prol. 10. 14, *go* Prol. 11. 25, *y-sey* 1 John iv 12, *holden* Prol. 6. 23, *broken* Prol. 8. 9.

4. Anomala.

§ 88. O. E. *wesan*, *bēon*. 1 sg. pres. ind. *am* in S and the Acts: Mt. iii 17, Acts vii 33 etc.—2 sg. *art* in S, Jam. ii 11, Mt. v 25 etc., in the Acts *erte* ix 5, xxii 8 etc., once *arte* xxi 38; 3 sg. *is* in S, *es* in the Acts i 7, 11, 12 etc.—prs. plur. in S, *beþ* Jam. ii 9, Rom. xiii 1 etc.; in the Acts *be(n)* v 25, vii 16 etc., once *are* iv 24.—pt. pl. *were(n)* in S, 1 Pet. ii 10, 25 etc.; in the Acts *wore(n)* i 6, ii 1 etc. more frequent than *were(n)* ii 41, 44 etc.

§ 89. O. E. (ȝe-)ȝode. The forms *ȝede(n)*, *ȝode(n)* (see for instances § 28) do not occur in S¹.

§ 90. For forms of O. E. *willan* see § 33.

THE DIALECTS.

§ 91. *The Acts.* The verbal inflexions clearly point to a North Midland dialect: 2, 3 sing. pres. ind. in -(e)s § 80, pres. pl. ind. in -e(n) § 81, imp. pl. in -es (-e) § 82, pres. part. in -ande § 84, cf. Morsb. § 7. It is not easy to distinguish between the East and West Midland dialects, but the following characteristics seem to indicate the East as a home for our text: (a) the *a* before nasals in *man*, *can* etc. § 2, Morsb. §§ 7, 91; (b) the forms *wore(n)*, *or* § 10, *bore* § 9 which are principally found in works belonging to this locality, see references § 10, but cf. Dibelius, *John Capgrave und die englische Schriftsprache*, Diss. Berlin, 1895, p. 25; (c) the prevalence of *e* in unaccented end syllables (-es, -ed, -et), e.g. *scheded*, *argumentes* i 3, *tymes*, *falles* i 7, *londes*, *amonges* ii 45 etc., rarely the Western -us, -ud: *crokud* iii 2, *fastud* x 30, *almes-dedis* x 31, *callud* x 32; (d) the pres. part. in -ande is mostly found in the West, but it occurs also frequently in the Norfolk Gilds (Schultz, p. 36 ff.), in Capgrave's works and occasionally in the Paston Letters and other Eastern documents (cf. Dibelius, *Anglia*, xxiv p. 255 § 301 a).

The Acts may therefore be placed with a fair amount of certainty in the Northern parts of the East Midlands.

From the following indications it seems probable, however, that they were transcribed from a still more Northern original : (a) the remaining Northern *a* in *takens* and possibly in *sande*, *lande*, *vnderstande* etc. § 2 b (but cf. Morsb. § 90) ; (b) the plurals *breþer*, *childer*, *hende* § 56, the pronouns *þai* § 63, *þaire*, *þeire* § 64, the frequent Northern levelling in the pret. of strong verbs §§ 69—74, the occasional pres. pl. ind. in -(e)s § 81 ; (c) the Northern character of the vocabulary : *bus* ix 7, *vmþoghten* v 24, *vmschone* xxii 6, xxvi 13, *vmgyuen* xxviii 20, *aylastande* xiii 46, 48, *brodde* xxvi 14, *sterne(s)* vii 43, xxvii 19, *gartte* xvi 15, cf. xxvi 11, xxviii 19, *þeþen* xxvii 4, 12, xxviii 13, *bigge* (inf.) xv 16, *incalled* (part.) xv 17, *vpraise* xv 16 etc.

Some additional traces of this more Northern dialect are retained in MSS. S, P, D : *whas* (D) ix 11, x 6, xi 28, *whulke* (S, D) xxiii 21, *þeyres* (S, P, D) xxi 6, *þat eer?* (S, P, D) *þat es* (C) i 17.

§ 92. As regards MS. S we have to distinguish between 2 and 3 John, Jude (S²) and Matthew (S³) on the one hand, the Prologue and remaining Epistles (S¹) on the other. S¹ is Southern in character, as can be seen from the verbal flexion : (a) 2, 3 sing. pres. ind. in -(e)st, -(e)þ § 80, (b) pres. plur. ind. in -(e)þ § 81, (c) pres. part. in -*ynge* § 84, (d) occasional syncopated present forms *syt*, *halt* § 80, (e) occasional suffixal -*y*- in the second class of weak verbs § 76, (f) frequent levelling in favour of the ablaut of the plural in the preterite of the fourth and fifth class of strong verbs §§ 72, 73 (Morsb. § 9 a).

It has further principally Western characteristics : (a) O. E. *y*, *ý* is partly retained, written *u*, *uy* § 8. 1 ; (b) O. E. *ȝ* is regularly *uy* § 15 ; (c) O. E. *æ* appears as *e* occasionally in the preterite *wes* § 3 a ; (d) O. E. *a* before single nasal remains § 2, whereas the Middle-South has *o* (Morsb. § 93) ; (e) the forms *segge*, *sugge* belong to the South-West (Morsb. § 109. 4).

But there are also a few indications of the Kentish or South-Eastern dialect : (a) occasional *o* before *nk* in *þonke*, *þonkynges*, *dronk* § 2 b (Morsb. § 94) ; (b) not unfrequent *e*-forms for O. E. *y*, *ý* : *gren*, *lether*, *efel* etc. § 8 b, c (Morsb. §§ 9 b, 132) ; (c) occasional *a > e* before nasal + cons. § 4 (Morsb. § 108, anm. 1. 1).

It is evident from the above that the text of S¹ does not present an absolutely pure dialect ; its chief character is, however, shown to

þe iniurye of wycked men, 1 John i 1 quod vidimus oculis nostris *and wiþ oure eyzen save* S¹ þat we habbeþ...y-seyen wiþ oure yȝen, ib. 2 quæ... apparuit nobis þat...*to us appered* S¹ & haþ appered to ous, iii 13 si odit vos mundus *if þe worlde ȝow hate* S¹ þouȝ þe worlde hate ȝou, cf. ib. iii 1, 9 etc.

§ 105. Occasionally a Latin accusative with infinitive or participial construction is retained, e.g.

2 Pet. iii 9 nolens aliquos perire *nul none men perysche*.

Acts i 9 videntibus illis *hem seande*, ii 24 solutis doloribus inferni þo *paynes of helle loused ande broken*, v 3 mentiri te þow *forto lyghe* (nom. c. inf.) LV that thou lye.

2 John 7 qui...confitentur Jesum Christum venisse in carnem þat... *knowlecheþ J. C. in flesch haue come*, ib. 12 spero me futurum apud vos *y suppose me come to ȝow*.

§ 106. *Additions.* Our text contains a considerable portion of matter foreign to the Latin original and added partly by the translators, partly by subsequent correctors and scribes.

These additions may be divided into three classes:—(1) *alternative readings* standing parenthetically or introduced by *or* which by subsequent scribes was often changed to *nor*, *ne*, or *and*, (2) *explanatory glosses* introduced by *that is* or *as who seie*, (3) *expletives* added by the translator in order to fill out the terse Latin expression, or to make his rendering clearer or more idiomatic.

§ 107. S¹ is comparatively free from these elements. Class (2) is not represented at all, and class (1) but sparingly: 1 Peter has, for instance, only two alternative readings, viz. v 3 ex animo = of ȝoure wylle of ȝoure soule, iii 3 circundatio auri = enuyronyng aboute of gold oþer an-oþer cloþinge. This latter is, however, doubtful, since it may translate 'aut indumenti' in the following phrase: 'aut indumenti vestimentorum cultus.' 2 Peter has one instance, ii 5 a bedel & a foregoere = præconem; James has six, i 1 hele *and gretynge*, ib. 6 in feiþ & trust (doubtful), iii 17 (doubtful), v 10, 11 (twice); Romans, 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Colossians no instances; 1 John, 1 Corinthians, Ephesians, 2 Thessalonians one respectively, Philip-pians, 1 Thessalonians two instances each, Hebrews and Titus three.

Class (3), on the other hand, is largely made up by instances from S¹, the translator being evidently bent upon making his version readable and idiomatic even at the risk of being thought inaccurate. The possessive pronouns *his*, *hure*, *oure*, *ȝoure* he adds freely, e.g.

oure Lord 1 Cor. vi 13, 14, xi 11, Eph. iv 1, v 22 etc., *ȝoure* Fader 1 Pet. i 17 etc., *hure* myȝt Jam. ii 6,—werkes ib. 25, *his* flesch 1 Pet. iv 1, *oure* Lord & *oure* Safyour 2 Pet. iii 2.

Similarly words like *wel*, *God*, *Goddes*, *Christ* etc. in order to elucidate the sense, e.g.

Goddes son 1 John v 12, Heb. v 8, *God* saip Heb. viii 8 (twice), 9, *ejus=of God* 1 John iii 23, iv 12, *Holy Spiryt* ib. ii 20, *knowyng wel* 1 Tim. i 9, *wyte ȝe wel* Jam. i 19.

According to current phraseology he renders 'ecclesia' by *holy churche*, e.g. Eph. v 23, 24, 25, Col. i 18, 24.

A number of other additions, mostly due to his striving after clearness and good sense, can be recorded throughout S¹ :—

1 Tim. i 9 þer is no lawe y-set to a ryȝtful *man* bote to vnryȝtful *men*... & to wikked *men*, & to synful *men*, & to cursed *men*..., ib. 10—11 & what-efer elles þat þer be, þat be aȝeyn hol techynge of þe euangely...þe whuche *euangely* is y-take to me, 1 Cor vii 29 þilke þat habbeþ wylfes...as þouȝ þei ne hadden none *wylfes*, Heb. iii 18 þei schulden noȝt entren in-to his reste...þei ne myȝte not entren in-to his reste, similarly iv 6, Heb. v 3 offren for hym-self & his synnes, as for þe pepel & *hure synnes*, Heb. vii 13 an-ȝoper kynrede, of þe whuche *kynrede*, ib. 14 y-boren of þe *kynrede* of Juda, Jam. i 9, 24 passe forþ *his weye*, ib. iii 15 erþelyche *wysdom* & a bestysch *wysdom* & þe defeles *wysdom*, 2 Cor. vi 9 ȝet be ȝe-as þilke þat beþ vnknowe, 1 Pet. i 6 in þe laste tyme; in þe whyche *tyme* ȝe schuleþ ioyen, ib. 12 To whuche *prophetes* it wes y-told, 1 John ii 25 byhoten ȝow þat he wole ȝeuȝ ȝow an eferlastynge lyf, Rom. v 19 many *men* beþ y-maad synful *men*, so by þe boxumnesse of on *man* many *men* beþ y-maad ryȝtful *men*, ib. vi 5 rysyng aȝeyn *from deþ to lyf*, ib. viii 11 arered up *from deþ to lyfe* (twice), ib. 17 ȝif it is so þat we suffreþ, ib. xiii 1 soget to poweres þat beþ hyȝere þan *heo*, 1 Cor. vii 31 wiþouten bysynesse of þe *worlde*, ib. 39 heo is delyfered *from þe lawe of hure housbonde*, ib. xi 19 þer ben heresyes a-mong ȝow, þat þilke þat beþ apprefed *men among ȝow*, ib. xiii 2 mefen hulles *from hure places* (?), Eph. iv 17 y sey ȝow, & wytnesse to ȝow, Heb. ii. 3 þe whuche *hele*, ib. iii 6 ȝef it so be þat we holden.

If unable to find a suitable expression the translator of S¹ uses circumlocution, e.g.

1 Pet. i 3, v. 4 immarcescibilem=þat may noȝt welewe, Jam. iii 4 dirigentis=he...þat is gouernour of þe schypp, 1 Pet. ii 18 dyscolis=to þilke þat beþ wykked, Eph. vi 4 in disciplina et correptione Domini=in þe techynge of oure Lord & amende hem of here defautes, 2 Thes. iii 8 gratis =of no mannes ȝefynge, 1 Tim. v 23 frequentes tuas infirmitates=þi seknesses þat þou art y-woned to haue, 2 Tim. i 12 depositum meum=þat tresour þat he haþ y-take me to kepe.

§ 108. In 2—3 John and Jude the additions to the original Latin are as follows:—

2 John 4 oure Fader, 7 *He þat soþly is noȝt a-knowe Jesu Crist haue comen in flesch*, 8 ȝoure fulle mede, 9 his lore, 10 bryngeþ not wiþ hym—12 y wolde not ȝryte hem—by lettere *ne by sendyng*—speke with ȝow, 13 ȝoure chosen.

D on the contrary scarcely uses any other expressions than *sōþly* (*forsoþe*) to render these words. In Jude *sōþly* translates *autem, vero, enim, quidem* and occurs 12 times; Matthew i 18—25 has *sōþly* (*forsoþe*) 8 times in as many verses, Mt. iii 14 times in 17 verses; the Acts have in chap. i *forsoþe*: *sōþly* = 4 : 2, in chap. ii = 1 : 10 etc., James i = 2 : 13, 1 Pet. ii = 0 : 10.

charissime, -i.

S¹ has the adjective regularly in the superlative, e.g. *my dereste* *breþeren* 1 John ii 7, iii 2, 21, iv 1, 7, 11, 2 Pet. iii 14, Phil. ii 12, iv 1, similarly *dereste, leueste* 1 Pet. ii 11, iv 12, 2 Pet. iii 1, 15, Eph. v 1, vi 21, 1 Thes. ii 8, 2 Tim. i 2, once only 'my *dere* *frendes*' 2 Pet. iii 8.

D again has always the adjective in the positive: *dere* *frend* etc. 3 John 1, 2, 5, 11, Jude 3, 20, Acts xv 25, 1 Pet. ii 11, iv 12, 2 Pet. iii 1, 8, 14, 15, 1 John ii 7, iii 2, 21, iv 1, 7, 11; once the adj. is omitted: *my breþeren* Jude 17.

Similarly *dilectissimi* Heb. vi 9, Jam. i 16, 19, ii 5.

commoneo, moneo.

S¹ *warne* 2 Pet. i 12, Col. iii 16, 1 Thes. v 13, 2 Tim. ii 14.

D *moneste* Acts xx 31, *amoneste* Jude 5, cf. 1 John iii 19; twice D misreads *u* for *n* and translates *meue* 2 Pet. i 12, *moue* 3 John 10.

credere.

S¹ *bylefen* throughout (*leue* once 1 John iv 1).

D *trowe* throughout (*knowe* once Acts ix 26, *hope* once ib. xv 11; no instance in Matthew).

efundere.

S¹ *y-sched* Tit. iii 6.

D *ȝete, ȝote oute* Jude 11, Acts ii 17, 18, 33, x 45.

gens, -tes.

S¹ renders this word characteristically by *mysbylefed* (*men*): 1 Pet. iv 3, 1 Cor. i 23, v 1, xii 2, Eph. iv 17, Col. i 27, 1 Thes. ii 16, 1 Tim. ii 7, iii 16, 2 Tim. i 11, also Prologue 14. 31, 47. 18, *folke* 1 Thes. iv 5, 1 Pet. ii 12.

D *gentyles* 1 Pet. ii 12, 3 John 7, Acts vii 45, ix 29, xi 1, 18, xiv 15, *folke* Mt. iv 15, Acts iv 25, 27, vii 7, ix 15, xxiv 10, *nacyons* 25 x in the Acts.

justitia.

S¹ *riȝtfulnesse* throughout (37 x), also in Prol. 15. 11, cf. 6. 27, 15. 13.

D *riȝtwisenes* throughout (11 x).

libertas.

S¹ *fredom* Jam. i 25, ii 12, 1 Pet. ii 16, 2 Pet. ii 19, Rom. viii 21, Gal. v 13, cf. Prol. 15. 6.

D *frenesse* Jam. i 25, ii 12, 1 Pet. ii 16, 2 Pet. ii 19.

resurgo, surgo, resurrectio (a mortuis).

Characteristic of S¹ is the addition of the phrase *from dep to lyfe* to *ryse, aryse* etc., e.g. 1 Pet. i 3, iii 21, Rom. vi 4, 5, 9, vii 4, viii 34, Phil

iii 10, 11, Col. ii 12, 1 Thes. iv 13, 2 Tim. ii 8, Heb. xi 35 ; the phrase is omitted 1 Thes. iv 15, Heb. xi 35 ; in Heb. vi 2 ‘resurrectio mortuorum’ = ‘arysynge aȝeyn of dede men.’

D never adds the phrase *from deþ to lyfe*, e.g. 1 Pet. i 3, Acts i 22, ii 31, iv 2, 33, x 41, xvii 3, 18, 32, xxiii 6, 8, xxiv 15, 21, xxvi 23.

seduco.

S¹ *bygyle* Jam. i 26, 1 John i 8, ii 26, iii 7, Rom. vii 11, 1 Cor. iii 18, Gal. vi 3, Eph. v 6, Col. ii 18, 2 Thes. ii 3, 1 Tim. ii 14.

D *disseyue* Jam. i 26, 1 John i 8, ii 26, iii 7, Acts viii 9, cf. Mt. v 38.

seductor.

S¹ *gylore* 2 Cor. vi 8, 2 Tim. iii 13, Tit. i 10.

D *dysceyuere* 2 John 7 (twice).

veritas.

S¹ *trewþe* throughout.

D *soþfastnesse* 27 times, *trewþe* once in 3 John 12, *verite* once Acts xxii 3 ; no instance in Matthew.

These instances could be multiplied *ad infinitum*, but taken in conjunction with the dialectical and other differences between S¹ and the remaining parts of our text (§§ 103, 107, 117, 119) they suffice to prove that S¹ is an independent translation.

§ 96. 2—3 John and Jude (S²) are as we know common property to two sets of Catholic Epistles, those of S¹ and D. It may be surmised that they form the regular continuation of one of these. S¹ may, however, be eliminated at once, since it has been shown to differ entirely both in dialect and translation from the remaining parts (§§ 93, 95). There remain the Catholic Epistles of D, and as a matter of fact they agree in dialect with S² (§ 93 p. xiv), and further in vocabulary since all the words (except *forfendeþ* § 93) characteristic of S² and unknown to or unused by the translator of S¹ occur in the Epistles of D as well, e.g.

a-knowe 1 John ii 23 (3 x), iv 2, 15, *soþfastnesse* Jam. i 18, iii 14, v 19, 2 Pet. i 12, ii 2 etc., *soþely* Jam. i 6, 9, 10, 11, 13 etc., *vñfiled* Jam. i 27, *vñflynge* 1 Pet. iii 4, *fyled* 2 Pet. ii 22, *flynge*s 2 Pet. ii 20, *lore* 2 Pet. ii 2 (gloss), *ȝede* Jam. i 24, *ȝoden* 2 Pet. ii 15 etc.

They agree further in the rendering of certain Latin words and phrases, see § 95 under *charissime*, *veritas*, *seduco*, *seductor* etc., in the characteristic order of words in dependent sentences § 104, and finally in the low standard of accuracy of translation, which falls far below that of S¹, see §§ 108, 116, 119. S² may therefore safely be considered as an integral part of the Catholic Epistles of D.

§ 97. With regard to the relationship between the Catholic Epistles of D on the one side and the Acts on the other the evidence is mainly in favour of their being the work of the same hand. The North Midland dialect-forms remaining in D (p. xiv) are similar to those found in the Acts of MS. C (§ 91) and point to the same geographical home for the two texts. From § 95 it will also be seen that they mostly agree in the rendering of the Latin test-words given. Remarkable and convincing is for instance the constant use of the positive to render the Latin *charissime, -i* (*dilectissime, -i*), as opposed to the superlative found in S¹ and also in the two Wycliffite Versions. It seems unlikely that two men should have been affected by the same idiosyncrasy on this one point.

Characteristic of both is further the not unfrequent rendering of Lat. *omnis* 'every' by *alle*, a comparatively rare usage which according to Einenkel is a peculiarity of the North rather than the South¹. It is also unknown to the Southern text of S¹. The following cases appear certain examples: 1 Pet. ii 13, iii 15 (?), 1 John iii 4, 9, v 1, 4, Jam. i 17 (twice), Acts ii 5, 21, x 35 etc.

In S¹, on the contrary, *omnis* is almost universally rendered by *euerich*, e.g. Jam. i 2, 17, 21, iii 16, 1 Pet. i 24, ii 1, 13, iii 15 etc.

Common to both texts is further the frequent inversion of the ordinary prose order of words in dependent sentences § 104, and a certain tendency to use alliterative phrases § 121.

Concerning the vocabulary it may be noted that most of the words characteristic of the Epistles of D but unknown to S¹ (§§ 93, 96) are found in the Acts, e.g. *oknowe* ix 14, 21, *filed* ii 31, *sobefastenes* x 34, xxvi 25, *sobely* i 7, 20, ii 5, 12, 13 etc., *zede*, *zode* § 28.

Finally the text of the Acts and the Epistles of D are equally vitiated by a number of alternative readings, glosses and other interpolations which are practically unknown in S¹ (§§ 108, 109, and p. 209 ff.).

In fact it may be concluded with the greatest probability that the Catholic Epistles of D and the Acts are the work of the same translator.

§ 98. With regard to the opening chapters of the Gospel of St Matthew which occur in our text the simplicity of language and constructions offers but little scope for the characteristic blunders of

¹ *Anglia*, xxvii 1, p. 39 (1903).

a translator and consequently but few means of establishing a connection with the preceding parts. In general the arguments used in the preceding paragraph to prove the close relationship between the Epistles of D and the Acts hold good for Matthew. Like these texts it is Midland with a few remaining traces of a more Northerly dialect, especially in MS. D (§ 93); in the Latin test-words given in § 96 it will be seen that Matthew agrees with the other parts of D whenever the word happens to occur, cf. *autem, justitia*; it agrees with the Acts in the rendering of *scriba* by *wyse men* Mt. ii 4, v 20, Acts iv 5, vi 12 (once *scribe* Acts xix 35), as opposed to *makere of the lawe* in S¹, 1 Cor. i 20, cf. Jam. iv 12; of *projicere* by *caste* Mt. v 29, 30, cf. Acts xxii 23, xxvii 19 etc., of *exceptus* by *outetake(n)* Mt. v 32, Acts xxvi 29 etc.

Like the Acts and the Epistles of D, Matthew has a number of glosses and other additions to the text § 110.

On the whole there is no reason to assume that the translation of Matthew was done anywhere but in the same part of the country as the Acts and the Epistles of D, or by any other than the same man; there is at all events nothing in the vocabulary or general mode of rendering the Latin that contradicts this statement.

§ 99. We may now pass on to a brief survey of the respective merits and demerits of our translations and when possible draw a comparison with the great versions of the same period, the so-called Earlier and Later Wycliffite Versions (= EV and LV).

§ 100. *Vocabulary.* The number of French loanwords¹ is smaller in our text than in the corresponding parts of the Wycliffite Versions. As an instance I give the foreign element in James ii:—

S ¹	D	EV	LV
		accepcioun*	„
1 feij*		„	„
persones*	„	„	„
		glorie*	„
2 cumpayne		couent*	cumpany
		entre* (2 x)	entrith*
pore*	„	habit*	„
	symple		
3 pore*	„	„	„
		cleer*	„
4	iustises	.	

¹ By French loanwords I understand here nouns, adjectives, adverbs and verbs of French, Latin, Greek or Celtic origin.

S ¹	D	EV	LV
5 pore*	iustises	cleer*	entrith*
ryche	"	"	"
feij*	"	"	"
heyres*	"	"	"
6 pore*	"	"	"
ryche	"	"	"
	power	"	"
		despisid	"
		oppresen*	"
7 blaspheme*	"	"	"
8 parformeþ		"	"
scripturis*		"	"
9 personnes*	"	"	"
	accepte*	reproved	"
trespassoures	"	"	"
	blamyd		
10 offendeb*	trespaseþ	offende*	,, -ith
11 lecherrye (2 x)	"	"	"
trespasour	"	"	"
12	dowte	parfyte	
13 mercy (3 x)	"	"	"
14 propheteþ	profyte	"	"
feij* (2 x)	"	"	"
sauen*	"	"	"
15	sustynaunce		
16 profyteþ	pees*	"	"
		necessarie*	"
17 feij*	profyte	"	"
18 feij* (3 x)	"	"	"
19	deueles	"	"
		tremblen	"
20 veyn	"	"	"
feij*	"	"	"
21 y-iustifyed*		"	"
offrynge*	"	"	"
auter*	"	"	"
22 feij* (2 x)	"	"	"
23 scripture*	"	"	"
24 y-iustifyed*		iustified	"
feij*	"	"	"
25 y-iustifyed*		iustifyed	"
		receuyngne	resseyuede
messyngeres	messageres	"	messangeres
26 spiryt*		"	"
feij*	"	"	"

For the sake of comparison I give the respective numbers in the following chapters :—

	S ¹	D	EV	LV
Jam. i	58	56	64	62
1 Pet. ii	65	65	80	75
2 John		22	24	24
3 John		24	24	23
Jude		79	87	84
Acts i		38	44	46
, ii		80	89	85
Matth. i		11	18	15
, ii		39	37	41
, iii		27	30	27
, iv		37	43	41
		478	540	523

§ 101. Since our text is a version of the Latin Vulgate it is only natural that a translator should have been largely influenced in his choice of words by the original before him and that he should have thought it an easy and convenient plan to adopt the word which most closely resembled the Latin form. These more or less etymological renderings are frequent in our text; in James ii, for instance (see above § 100), every word marked with an asterisk is etymologically connected with the word it translates, the numbers being as follows: S¹ 31—D 27—EV 40—LV 38.

In the other chapters quoted above these cognate renderings are as follows :—

	S ¹	D	EV	LV
James i	37	38	44	39
1 Pet. ii	39	36	49	45
2-3 John		19	22	21
Jude		44	53	47
Acts i		21	24	23
, ii		57	69	61
Matth. i		7	14	11
, ii		24	24	24
, iii		20	20	22
, iv		26	34	31
		292	353	324

From these numbers it will be seen that in this respect also our text compares favourably with the Wyclifite Versions.

The following are additional instances of the influence of the Latin source upon the vocabulary of the translators:—

doctor = *doctoures* Acts xiii 1, 1 Tim. i 7, but *techeres* 1 Cor. xii 28, 29, Eph. iv 11 etc.;—*doctrina* = *doctrine* Acts xiii 12, xvii 19, 1 Tim. iv 1, 6, 13, 16 etc., beside the more usual *techinge* Acts ii 42, v 28, Rom. vi 17, xii 7 etc., and *lore* 2 John 9, 10;—*gentilis* = *gentyles* Acts xiv 5, xvii 4, 12 etc., but *panyme* ib. xvi 1, 3, *þo folke* ib. xx 21;—*imperium* = *empyre* 1 Tim. vi 16, Heb. ii 14, 1 Pet. v 11, but *gret lordschupe* Jude 25, *power of comaundynge* Tit. ii 15, 1 Pet. iv 11, *comaundynge* 1 Cor. vii 6, 1 Tim. i 1;—*ira* = *ire* Acts xix 28, James i 19 (D), elsewhere *wrappe*;—*justificare* = *iustifye* in S¹ and the Acts but in the Epistles of D make *ryȝtwyse* Jam. ii 21, 24, 25;—*offendiculum* = *offendikel* Acts xxiv 16 etc.

§ 102. In other cases alliteration or assonance with the Latin word seems to have determined the translators' choice of expression, e.g.

inpositio manuum = *puttynge in of þe honden* 1 Tim. iv 14, Heb. vi 2, 2 Tim. i 6, cf. Acts viii 17, 18, 19; *posuit in sua potestate* = *putte in his power* Acts i 7, cf. Acts ii 35, iv 3, 35, v 18, 1 Thes. iii 3, Mt. v 14, 15; *animam... posuit* = *putte his soule*, *animas ponere* = *putten oure soules* 1 John iii 16, Prol. 7. 16, 17, cf. Ælfric Hom. ii 318 *sealde hine sylfne*—*syllanus sylfe*; *restitues restore* Acts i 6; *restitutionis restorynge* ib. iii 21; *cognominatus his kouþe-name es* ib. i 23—LV *was named*; *mirabantur merueilde* LV *wondriden* Acts ii 12, cf. Acts ii 7, Jude 16; *scabellum schamel* LV *stool* Acts ii 35; *annumeratus anoumburde* LV *noumbrid* Acts i 26; *regnum rewme* LV *kingdom* Mt. v 3, 10 etc.

§ 103. The influence of the Latin source on the *syntax* is comparatively slight in S¹, since the translator is extraordinarily careful to render his original according to the sense of the passage and the English idiom. But there are of course exceptions. In the treatment of the Latin tenses, for instance, he sometimes deviates from the current usage. Characteristic is the frequent rendering of the Latin *perfectum* by the perfect indefinite where the Later Wycliffite Version uses the preterite, e.g.

		S ¹	LV
1 Pet. i 3	<i>regeneravit</i>	haþ bygeten...aȝeyn	<i>bigat aȝen</i>
” 12	<i>evangelizaverunt</i>	haueþ y-preched	<i>prechiden</i>
” 15	<i>vocavit</i>	haþ ycleped	<i>clepid</i>
” 21	<i>dedit</i>	haþ y-ȝeuen	<i>ȝaf</i>
” ii 7	<i>reprobaverunt</i>	han reproaud	<i>repreuyden</i>
” 9	<i>vocavit</i>	haþ ycleped	<i>clepide</i>
” iv 3	<i>ambulaverunt</i>	habbeþ y-walked	<i>walkiden</i>

Cf. further 2 Pet. i 3, 4, ii 1 (twice), 22, iii 2, 4, Rom. vi 17, viii 30 (5 x), 32, Heb. ii 2 etc.

In the Acts, on the contrary, the Latin perfectum is usually rendered by the preterite, the perfect indefinite being comparatively rare and mostly found in direct speech. In the first chapter for instance 21 preterites are used but only 3 perfects (4, 7, 16). In chapter two the numbers are 15 : 4, in chapter three 17 : 2 etc.

In 2 John there are 2 preterites (7, 12) and 5 perfects (1, 4, 4, 5, 6 (doubtful)), in 3 John = 3 : 0, in Jude = 12 : 2.

In Matthew i the Latin perfectum is rendered 46 times by the preterite, in chap. ii 22 times, no perfect forms occur at all.

§ 104. The most characteristic syntactical feature of 2—3 John, Jude and the Acts is their not unfrequent retention of the Old English order of words in dependent sentences (Sweet, *NEGr.* § 1776). They differ in this respect both from S¹ and the Later Wycliffite Version, which exhibit the ordinary modern mid-verb position in dependent sentences. In some cases this end-position of the verb in the above parts of our text may be due to slavish adherence to the Latin, e.g.

2 John 6 ut...in eo ambuletis þat ȝe in hym schulde go LV walke ȝe in hym, 3 John 3 sicut tu in veritate ambulas as þou in soþfastnesse gost LV as thou walkist in treuthe, Jude 15 quibus impie egerunt þe whuche wykkedly þei wrouȝte LV bi whiche thei diden wickedli, Acts i 21 qui nobiscum sunt congregati þat ben wiþ vs gadurde togider LV that ben gaderid togidere with vs.

In most cases, however, it is evidently the translator's own expression, e.g.

2 John 1 qui cognoverunt veritatem þat soþfastnesse han knownen LV that knownen treuthe, 2 quæ permanet in nobis þat in ȝou drelleþ LV that dwellith in ȝou, 7 Jesum Christum venisse in carnem *J. C. in flesch hauet come* LV that J. C. hath come in fleisch, Jude 15 quæ locuti sunt contra Deum þat...aȝeyns God hauet spoken LV han spoke aȝens God, Acts ii 24 teneri illum ab eo þat helle hym schulde holde LV that he were holdun of it, ib. 30 de fructu lumbi ejus þat of þo frute þat oute of hym schulde kome LV that of the fruyt of his leende, iv 21 quod factum fuerat þat bi hem was done LV that was done, vi 15 qui sedebant in concilio þat in þo konseyl satte LV that seten in the counsel etc.

The same peculiarity may be observed in the Catholic Epistles of D, e.g.

Jam. iv 14 quid erit in crastino *what to morwe schal falle* S¹ what schal fallen a-morwe, v 4 quæ fraudata est a vobis þe whuche fro hem ȝe hauet wiþholden S¹ þat ȝe hauet bygyled hem of, 2 Pet. ii 7 oppressum a nefandorum injuria þat wiþ þe wickede was ouerlyen S¹ and oppressed of

be South-Western, the deviating forms being either due to the scribes or indicative of a Kentish original, see p. xvii.

§ 93. S^2 and S^3 are Midland in character, though many Southern forms have been introduced by the scribe of S or preceding copyists. The following are the chief differences between S^2 S^3 on the one hand and S^1 on the other: (1) O. E. *y*, *ȝ* are as a rule *i*-sounds in S^2 S^3 , except in *whuche*, *churche*, in S^1 *u*, *uy* § 8. 2; (2) O. E. *ȝ* > *i* (*ȝ*) in S^3 , in S^2 once *ȝ*, once *uy*, S^1 regularly *uy* § 15; (3) O. E. *ālc* 'omnis' > *eche*, in S^1 (*efer*)*iche*, rarely (*efer*)*eche* § 10; (4) O. E. *-lic* > *-ly*, in S^1 *-lyche* § 36, similarly O. E. *ic* > *y*, in S^1 *ych* (*y*) § 63; (5) the pronouns *þer*, *þise* do not occur in S^1 §§ 64, 65; (6) in the pres. plur. ind. the ending *-(e)n*, *-(e)* is more frequent than *-(e)þ*, the proportions being in S^2 = 20 : 16, in S^3 = 40 (six of which are probl. subj.: v 11, 46, vi 4, 5) : 6, whereas *-(e)þ* is the rule in S^1 § 81; (7) the inf. ends in *-(e)*, in S^1 *-en* is more frequent than *-e* § 83; (8) in S^1 the prefix *y-* is regular in the past part. of uncompounded verbs, it does not occur in S^2 S^3 § 87; (9) the Northern levelling in the preterite of strong verbs is found occasionally in S^2 S^3 , e.g. *sawe* (pl.) twice, *schal* (pl.) 14 x : *schule* once in S^3 , *ȝaf* (pl.) Jude 4 §§ 72, 73; in S^1 no instances.

A more Northern home for Matthew (S^3) is indicated by the twice occurring *whas* iii 11, 12 in MS. D, the forms *sekeþ* ii 13, *aske* vi 8, further by the vocabulary: *callyd* (pt. sg.) ii. 7, *gretynge* ii 18, *þen* (<*þeþen*) iv 21, *outetake* v 32 etc.; the same was probably the case with S^2 , as can be seen from the many Northern forms and words remaining in D, see p. xiv.

S^2 again differs from S^1 not only in dialect, as has been shown above, but also in vocabulary. The following words in S^2 do not occur in S^1 : *a-knowe* 2 John 7, *sopfastnesse* ib. 1, 2, 3, 4, 3 John 1, 3, 4 etc., *forfendeþ* 3 John 10, *lore* 2 John 9, 10, *vnyfled* Jude 24, *ȝede(n)* §§ 28, 89, *soplly* 'enim, autem' 2 John 6, 7, 3 John 7, Jude 4, 8 etc. Cf. chap. iv. §§ 96, 97.

S^2 differs from S^3 in being less pronounced Midland in dialect, see above the proportion of *-en* : *-eþ* in the pres. plur. ind.

§ 94. To sum up, it has been shown above that the dialect of our text is in no way homogeneous, the bulk of it, viz. the Prologue, James, Peter, 1 John and the Pauline Epistles belonging to the South-West of England, whereas the original from which the Acts were copied and probably 2—3 John, Jude and Matthew as well must have been written down in the North or the Northernmost part of the Midlands.

CHAPTER IV.

THE TRANSLATION.

IN the preceding chapter it was shown how our text fell into certain groups exhibiting marked dialectical differences.

It would therefore seem a natural conclusion to draw that the connection between these dialectically varying parts is somewhat loose, perhaps limited to the fact of their having once been copied into the same volume. In the present chapter an attempt will be made to determine how far these dialectical variations correspond to differences in the mode of rendering the Latin text.

§ 95. With regard to S¹ the question is easily settled. It suffices to show how uniformly and characteristically it differs from the remaining parts in the rendering of certain Latin words and phrases. For the sake of comparison I add the corresponding forms from the Catholic Epistles of MS. D, and for the sake of brevity use D to denote whatever in our text is not S¹.

accipere personas, acceptio, acceptor personarum.

S¹ *vnderfonge* *mennes persones, -yngē of* *mennes persones* Jam. ii 1, 9, 1 Pet. i 17, Col. iii 25, Ephes. vi 9.

D *outetaker of parsons* Acts x 34, Jam. ii 1, *rewarde-takyngē* 1 Pet. i 17, *accepte* Jam. ii 9.

ambulare.

S¹ *walken* Rom. vi 4, viii 1, 4, xiii 13, 1 Cor. iii 3, vii 17 etc. throughout.

D *go (zode)* Acts iii 6, 8, 12, xiv 9, xxi 24, 1 John ii 6, 11, 2 John 4, 6, 3 John 3, 4, *wende* Acts ix 31, xiv 7, Mt. iv 18, *walke* 2 Pet. ii 10, 1 John i 6, 7, 2 John 6, Jude 16, *wandre* Jude 18.

autem, enim.

S¹ renders these words in different ways, but never by *soþely*, *forsoþe* (once *soþlyche* 'vere' 1 John ii 5), e.g. *and* 1 John i 7, ii 2, v 3, 1 Pet. ii 25 etc., *bote* 1 John ii 5, 11, 17, 1 Pet. ii 7, 9, 20, 23, *for* (enim) 1 John iv 20, 1 Pet. ii 21 etc., they are left untranslated 1 John ii 2, iv 18, 1 Pet. ii 10 etc.

3 John 1, 2 dere *frend*, 2 *my preyere*, 5 *My dere frend, oure breþeren*, 6 *holy chirche*, 11 *My dere broþer*, 12 of alle *goode men*...we bere *wytnesse of hym*, 14 *Pees be—oure frendes*.

Jude 3 *stryue azeyn synne*, 4 *deceyuable men*—þe grace of oure Lord *Jesu Crist & ȝaf hem vnto lecherye*, 5 *oure Lord Jesus*, 6 *his princehed & his comaundementes*, 8 *God here Lord* (dominationem), *his*, 12 *þese it beþ þat...þeþ defouled*—vnfruitful...þat no *fruyt bereþ*—twyes deede *þei ben*, 14 *his pou sandis*, 15 alle *yuel*—harde *wordes*, 17 *my breþeren* (charissimi), 19 *Holy Gost*, 20 *My dere breþeren*—house...& *grounde ȝou*.

Of all these additions only 2 John 12 and Jude 6, 12, 20 can be looked upon as alternative readings, the others are more or less needless interpolations belonging to class (3).

§ 109. The text of the Acts is corrupted by an endless number of glosses and alternative readings, whereas the expletives and intercalated matter generally is far less frequent than in S¹ and S². In the first chapter there are for instance seven alternative readings, viz. i 2, 4, 4, 7, 8, 18, 25, three glosses i 13, 17, 18, but only the following expletives:—i 8 *fro abouen vnto ȝowe*, 11 *saide vnto hem*—*righte as ȝhe saue hym ascende*, 13 *þer cynacle*, 15 *þat was þer*, 16 *ȝhe men ande my breþer*, 21 *oure Lord*, 24 *schewe vs*. In the second chapter there are thirteen alternative readings, six glosses, and expletives as follows:—ii 5 *wore þat tyme*, 6 *grete multitude*, 7 *speken vpon þis wise*, 17, 25, 34 *oure Lord*, 24 *þat helle*, 29 *ȝhe men*, 30 *wiste wele—trewe oþe*, 34 *Oure Lord*, 37 *Leue men*, 41 *wonnen vnto God*, 44 *þer þinges*.

Like S¹ the Acts generally render ‘ecclesia’ by *holy chirche*, e.g. v 11, viii 1, 3, ix 31, xii 1, 5, xiv 26, xv 41. Cf. further *saynte Peter ix 39, saynte John x 37*.

The following may give some further idea of the interpolations in the Acts:—

Acts iii 15 *raysed fro deþe vnto life*, ib. 26 *turne hym from þo way of his wikkednes*, iv 7 *ymyddes hem alle*, v 15 *laide hem...in þo felde*, vi 5 *trewe in þo faiþe*, viii 15 *hem þat wore turned*, ib. 18 *gifen vnto hem*, ib. 22 *wikked þoghte*, ib. 24 *alle þise*, ix 18 *slyme as hit wore þo skales of a fische*, xii 18 *þo knyghtes þat hym kepped*, xiii 12 *trowed in God*, ib. 20 *domes-men to rewle hem*, ib. 21 *a kenge to be þer gouernoure*.

§ 110. Matthew agrees with the Acts in having a fair amount of extraneous matter introduced into the text, though owing to the simplicity of the language there was less scope for the zealous pen of the commentator or scribe. They managed, however, to insert five

alternative readings, viz. i 18, 23, ii 13, iii 1, 3, 15; eight glosses, i 25, ii 6, 22, 23, iii 9, iv 25, v 24, 38, and a fair number of expletives, as can be seen from the instances in the first and second chapters:—

i 17 *þeþ* fourtene, 18 in *hire* wombe, 20 *þenkynge*...*for-to leue his wyf-oure* Lord, 22 *seyenge on þis wyse*, 23 *hire*—God is with us, 24 *his* sleep, 25 *Marye* his *wyfe*.

ii 3 *in herte*, 9 *þese þre kynges*—*þe kyng Heroud*—wente *þer weye*, 13 *his* sleep, 14 *þan Joseph* *rysynge*, 16 *sende in-to Betlem*—*þat were of two zeer*, 18 *þei were noȝt quic*, 19 *oure* Lord, 21 & *Joseph* *roos*, 22 & *Joseph* *was amonestyd in his sleep by an aungel* how he *schulde*.

§ 111. In respect of additions our text compares unfavourably with the Wycliffite Versions, which strictly adhere to the Latin, the Earlier Version slavishly, the Later with more deference to the English idiom. The EV has certainly a number of alternative readings but they are as a rule carefully distinguished from the text¹.

§ 112. The text has further been vitiated by a number of *omissions* for which not only the translator may have been answerable but also, and probably to a large extent, each subsequent scribe, e.g.

Jam. i 5 *et dabitur ei*, 23 *vultum nativitatis suæ*—*hymselfen*, ii 16 *illis*, *Ite in pace*, iv 1 *militant* (= *þeþ*), 1 Cor. i 11 *de vobis fratres mei*, *ab eis qui sunt Chloes*, Acts i 12 *vocatur*...*sabbati habens iter*, ii 29 *audenter*, iii 2 *bajulabatur*.

For further examples see the notes.

§ 113. Under the heading of omission may be counted the predilection shown by the translator of S¹ for rendering two synonymous or nearly synonymous expressions by one alone, e.g.

1 Pet. ii 8 *lapis*...*et petra a ston*, ib. 19 *sustinet*...*patiens suffrep*, 2 Pet. iii 7 *repositi sunt*...*reservati y-kept*, Jam. i 17 *datum*...*donum ȝeft*, Eph. iv 16 *compactum et connexum y-knyt to-geder*, Phil. iv 1 *charissimi et desideratissimi dereste*, Heb. viii 11 *docebit*...*dicens schal*...*seye*, ib. 13 *antiquatur et senescit waxeþ old*, ib. xiii 5 *deseram neque derelinquam Y nul*...*lefe*, Titus iii 9 *contentiones et pugnas stryfes*.

§ 114. Our version is marred by a considerable number of *mistranslations* which in some cases are clearly due to the ignorance or carelessness of the respective translators, in others again may possibly result from corruptions or differences of readings in the Latin text.

¹ *Wycl. Bible*, i xvi ff.

§ 115. The translator of the Acts is the greatest sinner in this respect. He renders 'Sosipater Pyrrhi' as *Sosy þo fadire of Pirry* xx 4, queen 'Bernice' or 'Beronicē' has been transformed into *men of Baronye* xxv 13, 23, xxvi 30, from the phrase 'venimus contra Chium' he coins the place-name *Contrachye* xx 15. His knowledge of classical mythology must have been somewhat scanty for 'whatte man es þat,' he says, 'þat knowes noghte þo cytee of Ephesie worshippar of þo grete Diane, ande of *Jouys hire childe*?' the Latin being... 'cultricem esse magnæ Dianæ, Jovisque prolis' xix 35.

Again, 'Blastus the king's chamberlain' appears as *Persuaso-blasto*, the Latin having 'et persuaso Blasto, qui erat super cubiculum regis' xii 20, and to Philippi he furnishes a second name 'Philyppis, þo whiche es þe firste of þo contree of Macedonye, þo cyte of Coleyne' (Vulg. xvi 12 Philippos, quæ est prima partis Macedoniæ civitas, colonia). For further instances of these absurd renderings see ii 3, v 16, xii 20, xvii 17, xxiii 32, xxviii 11.

§ 116. 2—3 John and Jude are not without their share of mis-translations, not a very surprising fact if we consider that they were in all likelihood rendered by the translator of the Acts. In 2 John 12, for instance, 'per chartam et atramentum' is translated *by lettere*, in the following verse 'filii sororis tuæ electæ' by *ȝoure chosen þi suster douȝter*. In 3 John 13 'per atramentum et calamum' is rendered *with lettere*, in Jude 1 'dilectis' by *chose*, which, however, may be a misreading (delectis), in verse 6 'angelos' by *aungel*, in 7 'finitimæ civitates' is given as *þe cytee of Fynytyme* like 'civitas, colonia' by 'þo cyte of Coleyne' in Acts xvi 12.

§ 117. The translator of S¹ occasionally goes wrong, but he commits no such blatant errors as those recorded in the Acts, e.g.

1 Pet. i 11 scrutantes in quod vel quale tempus significaret in eis Spiritus Christi þat telleþ as þe Spiryt of Crist haþ y-sygnfyed to hem þis tyme, v 9 eamdem passionem...vestrae fraternitati fieri þat he doþ in þe same wyse to ȝoure broþerhede, 2 Pet. ii 22 reversus ad suum vomitum, haþ y-turned...azeyn forto caste, 1 John iii 4 Omnis qui facit peccatum, et iniquitatem facit; et peccatum est iniquitas *And eueriche man þat doþ synne & wikkednesse: he is boþe synne & wykkednesse*, Eph. iv 8 captivam duxit captivitatem þrowȝ awey wrecchednesse, Heb. ii 9 ut gratia Dei... gustaret mortem þat þe grace of God...schulde tuse þe deþ.

¹ Cf. note p. 234.

§ 118. On a faulty original or differences of readings the following instances may depend :—

1 Pet. ii 24 Sanati estis *we beþ y-heled*, iii 22 efficemur *þe weren y-mad*,
 1 John ii 27 docuit *ich hauē y-tauȝt*, Rom. vii 4 fructificemus *þe schulden*
make fruyt, ib. 5 fructificarent *we schulden make oure fruyt*, Acts ii 26
lætatum maked brode v 14 credentium *of hem þat preyde*, v 21 adveniens...
princeps whanne þo prince harde þis, vii 2 moraretur *he schulde dye*, xvii 4
crediderunt ioyed, xxvi 23 passibilis *possibul*.

The translators sometimes err on the side of too great literalness whereby the sense of the passage is spoilt, this being especially the case in the Acts :—

xxvii 3 Humane autem tractans Julius Paulum *and Julye tre[t]ed*
Poule manly LV and Julius tretyde curteisly Poul, xxviii 1 Barbari...
præstabant...humanitatem nobis þo barbarise schewed...manhede vnto vs
 LV the hethene men diden to vs...curtesie, i 3 per dies quadraginta
bi fourty days LV om. *bi*.

§ 119. Generally speaking the translation of S¹ is of far greater merit than the remaining parts of our text. From the Prologue (pp. 4. 27, 8. 2 ff.) it can be inferred that the translator of S¹—the brother superior—was a man of some learning, and he certainly renders the Latin with clearness and idiomatic ease. In this respect his translation may be said to rank with the Later Wycliffite Version and consequently much higher than the verbal almost gloss-like rendering of the Earlier. The following instances taken at random may exemplify this statement :—

HEBREWS IX.

S ¹	EV	LV
19 For whanne þat eferich comaundement of þe lawe was y-rad of Moyses to al þe peple, he toke gotes blod & calfes blod, wiþ water & red wolle & ysope & spreynde þe bok & al þe peple, & sayde, 20 Þis is þe blod of þe testament þat God haþ y-send to ȝow.	19 Forsoth ech maundement of the lawe radd of Moyses to al the peple, he takyng the blood of calues, and of buckis of geet, with watir, and reed wolle, and ysope, spreyngde and the ilke book and al the peple, seyng, 20 This is the blood of the testament, that God comaundide to ȝou.	19 For whanne ech maundement of the lawe was red of Moyses to al the puple, he took the blood of calues, and of buckis of geet, with watir, and reed wolle, and ysope, and bispreynde bothe thilke book and al the puple, and seide, 20 This is the blood of the testament, that God comaundide to ȝou.

JAMES III.

1 And my breþeren, ne wylne þe noþt to ben y-mad many maystres, wytynge þat þe takeþ þe gretttere dom. 2 For we offendeþ in many þinges euerychone. & who þat offendiþ in non word, he is a parfyt man, & he may wiþ a brydul ledē al þe body aboue. 3 For we putte brydeles in-to horses mouþes to maken hem assente to ous, and we bereþ aboue al hure body. 4 And grete schyppes þat beþ y-meued wiþ gretywandes, þei beþ y-turned aboue wiþ a lytul gouernynge, whydur þat he wole þat is gouernour of þe schypp.

1 My britheren, nyle þe be maad many maystirs, witynge for þe taken the more doom. 2 Sotheli alle we offenden in many thingis. If ony man offendith not in word, this is a parfijt man; forsothe he mai with a bridel lede aboue al the bodi. 3 Forsothe if we putten to horsis bridles in-to mouthis, for to consente to vs, and we beren *ther with* aboue al the body of hem. 4 And lo! schippis, whanne thei ben grete, and ben dryuun of stronge wijnidis, sotheli thei ben born aboue of a litel gouernayle, where the bire of a man dressinge shal wole.

Noteworthy are the 3rd and 4th verses above of the Early Version, which are scarcely intelligible.

1 CORINTHIANS XIII.

S¹

1 ȝef þat y speke wiþ mennes tunges oþer wiþ aungeles tunges, & y ne hafe noþt charyte, y am y-mad as bras þat souneþ, oþer a cymbal þat souneþ. 2 & ȝef y haue eueriche prophecy, and knowe alle pruyetees, & ȝif y haue euery cunynge & euery feip, so þat y mowe mefen hulles from hure places, ȝif y ne hafe no charite, y ne am noþt. 3 And ȝif y

EV

1 If I speke with tungis of men and aungels, sothli I haue not charite, I am maad as bras sownynge, or a symbal tynkyng. 2 And if I schal haue prophe-sye, and haue knowun alle mysteries, and al kunnynge *or science*, and if I schal haue al feith, so that I bere ouere hillis *fro o place to another*, forsoth if I shal not haue charite,

LV

1 If Y speke with tungis of men and of aungels, and Y haue not charite, Y am maad as bras sownynge, or a symbal tynkyng. 2 And if Y haue prophecie, and knowe alle mysteries, and al kunnynge, and if Y haue al feith, so that Y meue hillis fro her place, and Y haue not charite, Y am nouȝt. 3 And if Y departe alle my goodis in to the

S¹

dele al my catel in-to
pore mennes lyfode, &
zefe my body to brenne,
& y ne hafe no charite,
it profytep me no þing.

EV

I am noȝt. 3 And if I
schal departe alle my
goodis into metis of
pore men, and if I schal
bytake my body, so that
I brenne, forsothe if I
schal not haue charite,
it profitith to me no
thing.

LV

metis of pore men, and
yf Y bitake my bodi,
so that Y brenne, and
if Y haue not charite,
it profitith to me no
thing.

§ 120. For 2—3 John, Jude, the Acts and Matthew we cannot claim a very distinguished scholar as translator. To judge from his many and often ludicrous mistranslations, misunderstandings and other inaccuracies, he was evidently remarkable for zeal rather than knowledge (see §§ 108—116). In spite of all its faults, however, his translation is a far more readable production than the Earlier Wycliffite Version, though it cannot like S¹ be said to attain the standard of Purvey's more polished and idiomatic revision. The following passages may serve as examples:—

ACTS v.

C.

6 Thanne ȝonge men ros vppe,
ande bare hym away ande biried
hym. 7 Efterworde, as hit were þo
space of þre hours, hise wife enterd
inne, ande wiste not what was done.
8 Ande sojely Peter ansuered vnto
hire, Say me, þow womman, solde
ȝe þo felde of þat price? And sche
saide, ȝe, of þat price. 9 Ande
sojely Peter saide vnto hire, Wharto
þoghte ȝe hit accordande to ȝowe
forto tempte þo Holygoste of God?
Loo, þo fete of hem þat biried þine
howsbande at þo dore, ande schal
bere forþe þe.

EV

6 Forsoth ȝonge men rysinge
moudyn hym awey, and berynge
out birieden. 7 Forsothe ther was
maad as the space of thre houris,
and the wyf of him not knowyng
that thing that was don, entride yn.
8 Forsothe Petre answeride to hir,
Womman, seye to me, if ȝe solden
the feeld for so moche? And she
seide, ȝe, so moche. 9 Forsoth
Petre seide to hir, What sothli cam
toidere to ȝou, or acordide, for to
tempte the spirit of the Lord? Lo!
the feet of hem that han biried
thin hosebonde at the dore, and thei
schulen bere thee out.

xvii 21.

Ande þo men of Athenys & oper
comelynges þat dwelled þer, gafe
per entente vnto noghte elles bot
forto say or forto here summe newe
þinge.

Sothli alle men of Athenis and
comelingis, herborid men, ȝauen tent
to noon oþir thing, no but oþir
for to seye, oþir for to heere, ony
thing of newe.

xix 1.

Ande hit bifelle, whanne Apollo
was at Corynthy, that Poule had
gon þo ouer contrees, ande kome
vnto Ephesum ; ande he fonde
summe of þo disciples.

xxvi 28, 29.

Ande þo kenge Agrippa saide
vnto Poule, In lytel þou makes a
skille þat I am Cristen. Ande
Poule saide, I ȝerne bifore God in
lytel and in myche, noghte onely
þe, bot also alle þat heren me
todaye, forto be made suche as I
am, outetaken þise bondes.

Forsoth it is don, whanne
Apollo was at Corinthe, that the
hijer partis gon, Poul cam to
Ephesi, and fond summe of dis-
ciplis.

Sothli Agrippa seide to Poul,
In litil thing thou councelist me
for to be maad a cristen man. And
Poul, I desyre anentis God, and in
litil and in greet, not onoly thee,
but and alle these that heeren to
day, for to be maad suche what
manere and I am, out takun thes
bondis.

§ 121. Remarkable are some slight traces of alliteration which occur in the Acts and more especially in the Catholic Epistles of MS. D.

Acts ii 30 et sciret *ande wiste wele*, ib. 24 teneri illum ab eo þat *helle hym schulde holde*, xiii 7 prudente *wure... & wys*, xx 31 vigilate *bes ware ande waker*, ib. 34 scitis *ȝhe wote wele*, xxiii 20 certius inquisituri sint *þei wolde wyte more wyte:ly*.

Jam. iv 8 appropinquate *neyȝep ny*, ib. 10 Humiliamini *make ȝow meke*, v 5 Epulati estis *Fat fedde ȝee beþ*, ib. 8 appropinquavit *schal come ny nyȝte*, 2 Pet. ii 17 caligo tenebrarum *dymnes of derkenes*.

1 Pet. i 18 corruptilibus *þat soone wyle ruste & rote*, ib. paternæ of *ȝoure formere fadres*, iii 8 misericordes, modesti, humiles *merciful, mylde & meke*, v 2 turpis lucri *wordly wynnynge*, 2 Pet. ii 20 refugientes coinquinationes *feleþ þe fyllynges*, 1 John ii 2 *trewe trouþe*, iii 19 suadebimus *make meke*, 2 Pet. ii 10 audaces *bolde þei be*.

§ 122. In Matthew, owing to the straightforward simplicity of the language, there is not much difference between our text and the Wycliffite Versions :—

MATTHEW II.

S³

1 Herfore whan Iesus was bore
in Bethlem of þe Iewery in þe dayes
of kyng Heroude, loo, þe kynges
come fro þe est to Ierusalem,
2 seyenge, Where is he þat is bore
þe kyng of Iewys ? soþly we sawe
a sterre of hym in þe est, & we come
to wurschupe hym.

EV

Therfore when Jhesus was born
in Bethlem of Juda, in the days of
kyng Herode, loo ! kyngis or wijs
men camen fro the eest to Jerusa-
lem, 2 sayinge, Wher is he, that is
borun kyng of Jewis ? forsothe we
han seyn his sterre in the este, and
we comen for to wirshipe hym.

Soply he Ion had clopinge of þe
heer of camels, & a gyrdil of a skyn
aboute his lendes; soply his mete
was hony-sokkles & hony of þe
wode. Þan wente out to hym
Ierusalem, & al þe Iewry, & al þe
cuntrey aboute Iurdane; & þei
were baptyzed of hym in Iordan,
schryuynge here synnys.

And this Joon hadde clothing of
camels heeris, and a girdil of skynne
aboute his leendis; and his mete
was hony-soukis, and hony of the
wode. Thanne Jerusalem wente
out to hym, and al Judee, and al
the cuntre aboute Jordan; and
thei weren waischun of hym in
Jordan, and knowlechiden her
synnes.

§ 123. *Summary.* The collection of Biblical books printed in this volume is orthodox in origin (pp. xix, xxiv). It falls into two parts. The first, including the Prologue, Peter, James, 1 John and the Pauline Epistles (= S¹), has come down to us in a dialect with chiefly South-Western characteristics (§ 92); there is reason to believe that it was translated by a man belonging to Kent or the South-Eastern counties (§ 92 p. xvii), and that it formed the original collection.

The second part comprises additions made from a Midland version, which seems to have originated in the North or the North-East Midlands (§ 91 p. xiv). Of this version the Catholic Epistles, the Acts and the first six chapters of St Matthew have come down to us, mostly in southerned transcripts, the Acts fortunately also in a dialect closer to the original (§ 91). They appear to be the work of one translator (§§ 97, 98). 2—3 John, Jude, the Acts and Matthew were borrowed for the monk's collection of Biblical books.

In respect of accuracy of translation our text is inferior to the so-called Wyclifite Versions (§§ 106—118); with regard to clearness of expression and idiomatic use of English both surpass the Earlier Version, our Southern text (S¹) in this respect being quite on an equality with the Later Version (§§ 119, 120).

PROLOGUE

God¹ made mankynde² aftur his owne ymage & lyknesse, & put hym in paradys þat was a lond of blysse, & ȝef³ hym þat lond to haue y-woned þer-ynne euer more & neuer to han be ded, so þat he were buxom to hym & dyde what he bede hym and kepte trewliche⁴ his heste as he was 5 y-holde by pure kynde. For man ne⁵ hadde no þing of hymself, bote al þinge þat he hadde it was of Goddis ȝefynge, boþe his owne beynge & his wonynge; and al þynge þat hym neded God graunteded hym, & forbede hym no þing, but þat he ne schulde noȝt eten of a tre þat was a-mydd⁶ 10 paradys, þat was y-cleped⁷ a tre of knowyng boþe good & yuel. For God byhyȝte hym in certeyn, þat what day he ete of þis tre he schulde be deed; & of alle þe oþer trees of paradys God ȝef hym leue to ete. And for man ne schulde not ben alone in þis blysse, he made of man a womman, to 15 ben his helpe, & to ben parsener of þis blysse, & seyde he[o]⁸ schulde ben his wyf. God made also þe kynde angelis, & putte hem in þe blisse of henene. & a-mong hem he made on, more wys, bryȝtere, & fayrere, & more of myȝt þan his felowes weren, & clep hym Lucyfer (þat is⁹ to seye, a berere 20 of lyȝt)¹⁰. Bot whan þis Lucyfer was maad in al⁹ þis nobeleye & in blisse, he byheld hym-self so fayr, so myȝty, & so wys,

¹ The names *Maria*, *Jesus*, *Johannes* stand at the head of the MSS; fol. 1 S. P. ² *yn* nearly obliterated, S. ³ ȝaf P. ⁴ *trewlich.* on erasure, in darker ink, S.

⁵ *was* follows, crossed out in red ink, P. ⁶ illegible, P. ⁷ *eped* illegible, P. ⁸ *she* with *sh* on erasure, S. ⁹ om. P. ¹⁰ the gloss added at the bottom of the page, P.

& ne þoȝte not how his God had y-maad hym so of noȝt, to
 ben in al þat blisse¹ in þe degré of² a seruaunt, to wor-
 schypen his God as a trewe seruaunt schulde; & of his
 fayrnesse he fel in-to a prýde, & sayde in his þouȝt, Y wole
 5 sette my sege in þe norþ, & y³ wole⁴ be lyche hym þat is
 heyzest in heuene. & many angeles þat weren in heuene
 assenteden to þis þouȝt of prýde þat Lucyfer had conceyued.
 & þo³ God schewed hym what he was, and by whom he was
 y-maad of noȝt, & þo Lucyfer knew hym-self & knew his
 10 trespasses þat he³ hadde y-don aȝeyn his God, he fel a-down
 fro þis blisse of heuene in-to þe deppeste⁵ sorowe & peyne of
 helle, þat was a dispeyr of forȝeuennesse of his synne þat
 he hadde y-don aȝeyns his God. & alle þilke angelis þat
 assenteden to hym fellyn down fro þe blisse of heuene in-to
 15 þe peynes of helle. Bote noȝt alle ylyche⁶ depe: for þilke
 þat weren heyzest in blyss, aftur þe doyng of hure trespass,
 þei weren deppest in peyne. For al hure wysdom, hure
 myȝt, & hure bryȝtuesse, þat encresed hure blisse, aftur þei
 hadden y-synned, encresed hure peyne: & þe grettest peyne
 20 þat þei hadden was dispeyr of forȝeuennesse of hure synne.
 For whan þei knewen how God hadde y-maad hem of noȝt, in
 so parfyt kynde as þei weren y-maad, & y-putte hem in
 blisse to hauen eueremore y-dwelld þerynne, & þei of hure
 25 owne þouȝtes vnkyndeliche forsoken⁷ hure God, & wor-
 schupeden anoþer as god þat God hade y-maad of⁸ noȝt, þei
 fallen in-to sorowe for þis trespasses, & þouȝten hure trespasses so
 gret þat hem þoȝte God ne myȝte not forȝeu hem hure
 trespasses. & so þei fallen in-to dispeyr of forȝeuennesse, & þat⁹
 30 dispeyr is þe depe pitt of helle, in þe whuche lyþ Lucyfer &
 many oþere of his felawes þat fallen wiþ hym from heuene.
 And þo Lucyfer was y-falle from blisse in-to peyne, he had
 enuye to mankynde þat wonyed in paradys, & þoȝte he
 wolde make man lese þe blyss of paradys, as he³ for his
 35 prýde had y-lost þe blyss of heuene. And so he made hym-
 self in þe lyknesse of an edder, & come to þe womman þat was

¹ fol. 1^b S. ² fol. 1^b P. ³ om. P. ⁴ changed to *wolde* by a later

hand, S. *wele* P. ⁵ followed by *pet of helle*, crossed out. P. ⁶ *a lyche* P.

⁷ fol. 2 S.

⁸ fol. 2 P.

⁹ added above the line, P.

more frele, more unkunnynge þan was man, and axed hure why God had forbeden hem þat þei ne schulde noȝt ete of alle þe tren þat weren in paradys. & þe womman answered, & seyde, 'We eteþ of þe tren þat beþ in paradys, bote of þe tre þat is a-mydde paradys we ne eteþ noȝt, lest we dyen.' ⁵ þo seyde þe serpent, 'Nay, dye schul ȝe noȝt, for God wot wel þat what day ȝe eten þer-of, ȝoure yen schulen ben opened, & ȝe schulen ben as goddis, knowynge boþe good & yuel.' & þo þe womman seyð; þat it was a good tre to eten of, &¹ fayr in seynge & lykyng to þe syȝt. & heo ete ¹⁰ þer-of, & ȝaf hure housbonde þer-of; & he ete þer-of also. & þo hure yen were opened & þei seyen hem-self naked; & for schame þei maden hem breches² of leues to huyden³ wiþ hure membres; & þei wenten⁴ to huyden hem in paradys from þe syȝt of God. & þo God clep Adam & axed hym ¹⁵ where he was; & Adam seyde, 'Lord, for þat y was naked y hudde me from þi syȝt.' & God seyde to hym, 'Who schewed þe þat þou were naked? bote for þou ete of þe tre þat y forbedde þe þat þou ne schuldest ete þer-of.' & þo seyde Adam, 'þe womman þat þou ȝefe me to my felaw ȝef⁵ me ²⁰ of þe tre, & y⁶ ete þer-of.' And God seyde to þe womman, 'Why dudest þou þus?' & heo⁷ seyde, 'þe edder bygyled me, & y ete þer-of.' & God seyde to þe serpent, 'For þou hast y-do þus, þou art a-cursed a-mong alle þe beestes of þe erþe.' & God seyde to þe womman, 'Y wole multiplye þi ²⁵ greuaunces & þi⁸ conceyfynge, & in sorow þou schalt⁹ bryngे forþ chyldren, & vnder mannes power þou schalt ben, & he schal be þi lord.' & God seyde to Adam, 'For þou herde þi wyf & ete of þe tre þat y forbed⁹ þe, acursed be þe erþe in þi werk: in traueyle þou schalt eten of þe erþe alle þe dayes of ³⁰ þi lyf. Breres & þornes þe erþe schal bryngē þe forþ, and þou schalt eten herbes of þe erþe. In swot þou schalt ete þi bred, forto þou come aȝeyn in-to þe lond þat þou art y-take out of: for pouder þou art, & in-to¹⁰ pouder þou schalt be turned a-ȝeyn.' þo God cloþed Adam and¹¹ Eue in cloþinge of ³⁵

¹ & a P. ² fol. 2^b P. ³ heden hem P. ⁴ fol. 2^b S. ⁵ ȝaf P.

⁶ om. P. ⁷ ȝe P. ⁸ ben & he schal be þi lord follows, crossed out, P.

⁹ forbad P. ¹⁰ þe follows, P. ¹¹ fol. 3 P.

beestes skynnes, & seyde, 'Lo, Adam is y-maad as on of us, knowynge boþe good & yuel: and þerfore loke ȝe now lest he take of þe tre of lyf & ete & lyue euere more.' & þo God putt hym out of þe blisse of paradys to worchen in 5 þe erþe, & sette¹ to-fore paradys Cherubyn wiþ a brennenge swerd in his hond to kepe þe tre of lyf. & þo Adam knew his wyf, & heo² conceyued and brouȝte forþ a chyld þat þei clepen³ Caym. And aftur hym he brouȝte forþ an oþer⁴ chyld, & hym ȝei clepen³ Abel: & so in proces of tyme þer 10 comen of Adam & of his wyf mucþe⁵ pupel in þe worlde. Bote ȝei drowen to wykkednesse, & leueden goodnesse. & God, seyng⁶ þat man had drawen⁷ hym to wykkednesse in þe lond of blisse, & also in þe worlde þat was a lond of trauayle & of peyne, seyde hym a-þouȝt þat he had y-mad man. & 15 for hure synne he þouȝte to take vengaunce on hem⁸, & maken an ende of mankynde. & so he sende a gret flod, & dreynte þe worlde & alle þe men þat weren in þe worlde, safe Noe & his wyf & his þre sones & hure wifes, þat weren safed in Noees schyp þat God bede⁹ hym maken er þan þe flod 20 come. & þo God seyȝ þe frelenesse of man, he by-hyȝte¹⁰ þat he ne wolde noȝt take such vengaunce no more on man by flodes of watir; & in tokene of pees by-twene hym & man, he putte his reyn-bowe in þe cloudes of heuene, & þe streng toward þe erþe in tokene of pees bytwen hym & man. For 25 by-fore þat¹¹ flod was þer neuere reynbowe y-seyȝe.

"Seþþe euerych man¹² is y-holde by Cristis lawe of charite to louen his broþer as hym-selfe, ȝe, þat han of Godes grace more knowynge þan we han þat beþ lewed & vn-kunnynge, beþ y-holde to techen us þinges þat beþ nedeful 30 to þe hele of¹³ oure soules; þat is to seye, what þing is plesyng to God, & what displeseþ hym also. & y preye ȝow purcharite to techen us lewed men trewlyche þe soþe aftur oure axyngē."

"Broþer, y knowe wel þat y am holde by Cristis lawe 35 to parforne þyn axyngē; bote naþeles we beþ now so fer

¹ fol. 3 S. ² ȝhe P. ³ clepeden P. ⁴ noþer P. ⁵ mochel P. ⁶ ng in paler ink on erasure, S. ⁷ y drawen P. ⁸ him P. ⁹ bad P. ¹⁰ fol. 3^b P. ¹¹ lord follows, crossed out, P. ¹² mam P. ¹³ fol. 3^b S.

y-fallen a-wey from Cristis lawe, þat ȝif¹ y wolde answere to þyn axynges y mooste in cas vnderfonge þe deþ. & þou wost wel þat a man is y-holden to kepe² his lyf as longe as he may. & parawnter it is spedful to holden oure pes a whyle forto³ þat God foucheþ saf þat his wille be y-knowe: 5 for now þe worlde is ful of wykkednesse, & men han⁴ more desyr to lyfen in hure fleschlyche lustes in synne þan to plesen God in forsakyng synne. & y seye þis in certeyn, þat þe¹ comunte of þe worlde haþ forsaken God & his hestes & heryeþ false goddes. & þat is to al mankynde a gret matere 10 of sorowe: to sen þe grete loue þat God haþ y-schewed to mankynde, & to sen on owre syde how lytel we loueþ hym aȝeynard."

"[L]efe⁵ broþer, y trowe ful wel þat þe worlde lyfeþ in muche wykkednesse of synne. Bote y trowe þat many men, ȝef 15 þei knewen how þei myȝten plesen hure God, þei ne wolde not spare for drede of no man. ne for loue nouþer, to don þing þat were to his plesynge. And y trowe þat oure God be so good & so mercyful⁶, þat, ȝif we knowlechen to hym oure synnes, and forþynketh oure trespasses, & ben in ful wille to 20 offenden hym no more, þan oure hope is þat he wole forȝeuuen us oure trespasses ȝif we axen mercy. For so he seyde⁷ by Ezechyel þe prophete, & also by⁸ Dauyd in þe Sauter, & by Jeremyc also; & Crist seyde also, þat he ne wolde⁹ noȝt a synful mannes deþ, bote þat he be turned from¹⁰ his synne 25 and lyfe. And oure hope is þat euere more his grace is redy to hem þat axeþ his grace, & putteþ in hym al hure¹¹ trust. And¹² y trowe þat he wolde, þat men wisten how þei shulden plesen hym. For he sende his sone þat was his wysdom adown in-to þe world¹³, to techen mankynde how þei schulden 30 plesen his Fadur. Bote y trowe, for men weren to wordlyche, þei ne hadde¹⁴ no safer in his techynge; & y trowe ful wel þat for men han y-trust more in hure owne¹⁵ wysdom þan in

¹ om. P. ² to kepe in the margin, first corrector's hand, S. ³ tyl P.

⁴ fol. 4 P. ⁵ The rubric in S is an I. ⁶ fol. 4 S.

⁷ de nearly effaced, S. ⁸ be P. ⁹ de on erasure, S. wele P. ¹⁰ fro P.

¹¹ oure P. ¹² fol. 4^b P. ¹³ word P. ¹⁴ hedde P. ¹⁵ In paler ink in the margin, S. om. P.

Godes wysdom, þerfore God haþ y-let hem so longe y-worþe,
 þat we beþ þoroþ hure wysdom y-fallen into synne: þat we
 mowen knowe wel þat mannes wysdom ne is bote folye.
 For y trowe þat verrey wysdom be to drede God, and verrey
 5 vnderstondynge to gon awey from synne, & so seiþ Iob.
 Bote he seiþ þat þis wysdom ne is noȝt y-founde in þe lond
 of men þat [l]yf[e]þ¹ softelyche. & y trowe þat [ȝ]if [w]e²
 turne to God in al oure herte, þanne he w[o]l³ be [y]-founde[n]⁴
 of us, as he seyþ by Ieremye his prophete. [And y]⁵ byleue
 10 wel þat for loue þat he haþ to m[an]kynde⁶ he wole bryngue
 us out of þis myschef⁷ of synne, ȝif we desyref it wiþ ful herte
 & trewe. Ne we ne schuleþ not drede þe multitude of oure
 enemyes, ne hure myȝt, ne hure wysdom, ȝif oure God wole
 ben oure helpe: For he is myȝty wiþ-outen ende; his wysdom
 15 is endeles; his⁸ loue & his mercy is euermore redy to hem
 þat clepeþ hym to⁹ sokour in hure tribulacyoun. & so we
 oure-selfe beþ þe enchesoun of þe meschef þat we beþ y-fallen
 ynne. And ȝif he seyȝ¹⁰ us desyren helpe, he ne wolde noȝt
 faylen us at oure gret nede. & broþer, be þou syker þat þe
 20 k[n]owyng¹¹ þat þou hast of þe meschefes of þe worlde¹²
 is onlyche of Godes grace & noȝt of þi desyryng. & y rede
 þou¹³ ne huyde it noȝt from ous, þat fayn wolden y-knownen¹⁴
 hem & amende oure lyfing¹⁵, lest þou be holden a false seruaunt
 to God in þe day of dome, for huydynge of þi lordes tresour
 25 þat þou schuldest chaffare wiþ to encrese þi lordes tresoure.
 & who þat is false in lytel, who¹⁶ wole¹⁷ taken him¹⁸ þing þat is
 of grettere valew? & God, þat is a ryȝtful lorde, wole þrowen
 his vnprofytabel seruautes in þe day of hure acontes in his
 derke presoun of helle, whan his profytabel seruautes, þat
 30 han encresed þe goodes þat þei hadde to kepe, schulen ben

¹ yſy filled in by a later hand; the top of the l is still visible, S. lyueþ P. ² yf ye filled in by a later hand, S. ȝif we P. ³ wil in a later hand, S. wel P. ⁴ þe founder in the same late hand, S. y founden with y added later, P. ⁵ d (effaced) þat filled in by the same late hand, S. and y P. ⁶ mkynde filled in, S. mankynde P. ⁷ fol. 4^b S.
⁸ fol. 5 P. ⁹ to his P. ¹⁰ seiþ P. ¹¹ word P. ¹² þat þu P.
¹³ it i knownen with the 2^d i added above the line, P. ¹⁴ ig on erasure, S. lyfes P. ¹⁵ crossed out in red ink, P. ¹⁶ wele he P. ¹⁷ inserted in a later hand, S. om. P.

y-put in more worschupful offyces¹ in þe blisse of heuene. & how myȝt þou seye þat þou art in charite, þat hast plente of Goddes goodes in þi kepynge, & sest us þat beþ þi breþeren in perel of deþ of soule for defaute of suche goodes & þou closest þyn inwardnesse from us? ȝpink², þat³ þouȝ þou departe wiþ us of þi⁴ tresour, þou schalt raþere wynne þan lese. & þer ne is non so coueytous a man of þe worldes goodes, þat he ne wolde bleþelyche zeuen his goodes to nedy men, ȝif he hopede to wynne in his ȝefyng; ne þou ne schuldest noȝt spare for drede of þi deþ, to tellen us a trewþe to bryng us out⁵ of 10 meschef of þe deþ of oure soule. For in [þe]⁶ olde testament þe children of Israel putten hem-self in perele of deþ to bryng hure breþeren out of bodylych mescheses. Oure Lord God also put hym-self in perel of deþ, & vnderfong þe deþ, to bryng us þat were his seruautes out of meschef of synne: 15 & ȝef oure Lord putte his soule for his serfautes, it is skylful þat on broþer putte his soule for his breþeren: For þat axeþ þe⁷ lawe of charite þat Crist tauȝte here on erþe, boþe in word & dede. & ȝpink how Crist seiþ, þat who þat loueþ his sadur, his moder, his wyf, oþer his owne lyf abouen 20 hym, he ne is noȝt worþi to hym: & who þat loueþ his lyf in þis worlde, he schal lesyn his lyf. & siþþe þou seyst þat þe pepel haþ forsaken God & his hestes, and worschuþeþ false goddes, it mot foilewe nedlyche þat God is muche [v]n-worschuped⁸: & þanne ȝif þou lofest God ofer alle oþere þinges, þou 25 most ben aboute to encresen his worschuþeþ in⁹ drawynge þi breþeren from synne, & techynge hem how þei schulen plesse God in kepynge his hestes¹⁰. & broþer, y preye þe for þe loue þat þou schuldest haue to God & to þi breþeren, þat þou answere trewelyche to þinges þat y wole axen þe to hele of 30 my soule & of oþer mennes soules þat beþ lewedere þan þou art. & ȝif þou ne wylt noȝt, oure hope is þat God wole enformen ous by sum oþer trewe seruaunt of his; & we preyeþ hym to deme þe ryȝt, bytwene ous & þe¹¹ in þe dredeful day of dome, bote ȝif þou trewelyche answere to oure axynges.” 35

¹ offys P. ² nearly effaced, S. ȝping P. ³ fol. 5 S. ⁴ fol. 5^b P.

⁵ om. P. ⁶ þe P. ⁷ þe altered from þat, P. ⁸ on on erasure, S. vnworscheped P. ⁹ fol. 6 P. ¹⁰ fol. 5^b S. ¹¹ om. P.

“Broþer, þou hast a-gast me sumwhat wiþ þyn argumentys. For þouȝ þou ne hafe noȝt y-ben a-mong clerkes at scole, þi skelis þat þou makest beþ y-founded in loue þat is a-bofe resoun þat clerkes vseþ in scole: & per-fore it is hard for me 5 to aȝeynstonde þyn¹ skelys & þyn axynges. For þe argument of loue meuyd God to make þe worlde of noȝt, & man astur his owne lyknesse, & to putten hym in paradys, to hauen y-woned þere in blysse euere wiþ-outen ende, so þat man wolde kepen h[is]² hestes. & whan man had broken þe heste 10 of his God þorow þe temptacyoun of þe defel, he was worþi by þe argument of resoun to hafe y-lost his cuntray euere wiþ-outen ende³ for so gret a trespass. Bote lofe made an argument for man, & put hym out of⁴ his cuntray vnder þe power of þe defel, in þe worlde, to chasten hym for his trespass, 15 & asturward to bryng hym⁵ out of þe defeles þraldom in-to his owne cuntray. Aȝeyn þis was a strong argument of lofe: & so God at⁴ þe⁶ tyme þat he sauȝ man ben⁷ ful⁴ fer y-falle into þe deueles þraldom, he ches hym a pepel þat weren Israelis children, to techen hem how þei schulden comen 20 aȝeyn to hure cuntray þat was hure kynde herytage, out of þe þraldom þat þei weren fallen in þorouȝ synne. Bote for as muche as man was þat tyme vnkunnynge, vnmyȝty also⁸, & þe defel was fel & myȝty⁸ þat hadde man in his þraldom, God tauȝte man a lessoun to drede hym ouer alle oþere þinges & 25 forsaken alle false goddes. & for þese children of Israel schulde parfytlyche knownen hure lessoun, he suffred hem ben in gret þraldom vnder Pharaao þat was kyng of Egypt. & þo þei cryeden to God þat he schulde brynge hem out of þraldom; & he for loue herde hure crienge, [&]⁹ sauȝ hure tribulacyoun, 30 and sende Moyses his serfaunt & Aaron his broþer to brynge hem out of Egypt toward hure owne cuntray. & for þei schulden knowe þat þer ne was no God bote he, he harded Pharaoes herte þat was kyng of Egypt, þat he ne wolde¹⁰ not delyferen his pepel out of his þraldom bote by myȝt & 35 strengþe. & so God dude wondres & merueylys in Egypt

¹ þe P. ² hes in the margin, 1st corrector, S. his P. ³ fol. 6^b P.

⁴ om. P. ⁵ fol. 6 S. ⁶ þat P. ⁷ yben P. ⁸ also...myȝty added at the bottom of the page. P. ⁹ in S. & P. ¹⁰ fol. 7 P.

by-fore Pharao, þat non oþer god ne myȝte do to schewen his myȝt; & afterward he ladde hem out of Egypt by a wyldernessee, & bede¹ hem þei ne schulde noȝt dreden² hure enemyes: For he wolde fyȝte for hem aȝeyn hure enemyes. & so Pharao was wroȝt þat þe children of Israel were passed out of 5 his seruyse, & toke his [h]oste³, & pursuede Godes pepel in-to desert to hafe y-brouȝt hem aȝeyn in-to Egypt. & þo God lad his puple ofer þe see wiþ-outen schyp, for he made hem a weye in þe see, & made þe watyr in boþe half of hem stonden upryȝt as walles: & þei passeden ofer drye. & 10 Pharao come after hem þe same weye, & was⁴ adreynt in þe see & al his ost wiþ hym."

"And þo he ladde hem in⁵ desert, & ȝaf hem a lawe by Moyses his seruaunt; & he wrote hym-selfe ten hestes of his lawe in twey tables of ston, in tokenyng þat his puples 15 hertes were þat tyme hard as stony. Þis lawe was a lawe of drede, to techen hem dreden hym ofer alle oþere þinges; & he⁶ bede¹ hem kepen his lawe whan þei comen in-to hure cuntray þat he hade by-hoten⁷ sumtyme, for he fonde hym a trewe serfaunt. & ȝef⁶ þei kepten his hestes, he byhyȝte hem 20 þat alle hure enemyes on eferych syde schulden drede hem & be serfautes to hem. He bede¹ hem þat þei schulden not dredre þe power of hure enemyes, for he hym-self wolde fyȝte fore hem & ben chefenteyn of hure ost. & so God lade hem in-to þe lond of byhest. Þus þoroȝ an argument of loue God 25 almyȝty þoroȝ hys myȝt delyferyd his pepel out of bodylyche þraldom, & brouȝte hem in-to a plenteuous cuntray of alle þynge þat hem neded to hure bodylyche lyfode. And⁸ so nedilyche y þat am his serfaunt & þi broþer mot graunte þyn argument of loue, & parforme þyn axynges by my power: 30 For þi loue haþ ouercome my resoun. & þerfore axe nouȝe⁹ what þou wylt."

"Broþer, y þanke ȝou of ȝoure goode wylle, and God contynue ȝou þerynne¹⁰ & encrece ȝoure connynge to answere

¹ bad P.

² fol. 6^b S.

³ h erased before the o, S. *hoste* P.

⁴ he was P.

⁵ into P.

⁶ om. P.

⁷ fol. 7^b P.

⁸ fol. 7 S.

⁹ nouȝ P.

¹⁰ you therein repeated in the margin in a xvith century hand, S.

to myn axynges. & seþþe þe han of ȝoure owne fre wylle
 y-tolde me of þis olde testament, how God brouȝte his pepel
 out of þraldom, I pray ȝow þat þe telle me what manere lawe
 he ȝef¹ pepel to plesen hym by, & whom he ordeyned to
 5 techen his pepel þe lawe, and wheþer þe pupel kepten his
 lawe whylys þei weren in wyldernes, oþer non duden. And
 telle me also hou² longe þei lyfeden in wyldernes er þan
 he broȝte hem in-to þe lond þat he hadde byhoten hem.”
 “Suster³, God lad his pupel bysydes þe hul⁴ of Synay þat
 10 is in desert bytwene Egypt & hure owne contray, & þere he
 made þe pepel dwellen⁵ bysydes þe hul. & he toke to hym
 in-to þe hul Moyses, his seruaunt, and seyde þis⁶, ‘þou schalt
 seye to þe children of Israel, ȝe ȝou-selfen han y-sey what y⁷
 ha[u]e⁸ do to men of Egipt, & how⁹ y haue bore ȝou up on
 15 egles wynges, & y-take¹⁰ ȝou to my-self; & ȝef ȝe kepeu myn
 hestes, ȝe schullen ben my pupel of alle puples.’ þes¹¹
 wordes¹² Moyses spak to þe pepel; & þei answerden þat þei¹³
 wolden do alle þinges¹⁴ [þat God bad hem do]¹⁵. & God seyde,
 ȝif þei wolden ben his¹⁶ pepel & kepen his¹⁶ hestes, he wolde
 20 ben hure God and bryng hem to hure contray: and¹⁷ þe
 pupel assenteden, & seyden þat þei wolden. Bote þei beden
 God þat he wolde speke to hem by Moyses his serfaunt, what
 were his wylle, and þei wolden don alle þinge þat he¹⁸ bade
 hem. For þei seyden, ȝef God speke to hem, þei ne myȝte
 25 noȝt lyfe for þe dredfulnesse of his speche wolle maken hem
 dye. ȝo Moyses wroot hure lawe, as God had y-beden hym,
 hou ȝei schulden lyfen eferichone wiþ oþer; & ȝif þei breken
 þe¹⁹ lawe, he ordeyned domes to demen hem aftur þe²⁰
 quantyte of hure trespass. God also hadde y-chosen hym þe
 30 kynrede of Leui to ben his serfautes in þe tabernacle boþe
 nyȝt & day: & of þat kynrede he chees hym Aaron & his

¹ ȝaf P. ² fol. 8 S. ³ underlined in P. ⁴ u changed into y
 by a later hand, S. ⁵ to dwellen P. ⁶ to þis P. to erased in S.

⁷ on erasure, S. ⁸ have in the margin, 1st corrector, S. ⁹ in the margin,
 with caret to mark insertion, S. ¹⁰ take P. ¹¹ e on erasure, S. þus P.

¹² wördes expunged; ðr looks as if inserted later, S. when in paler ink in
 the margin, P. ¹³ in the margin, 1st corr. S. ¹⁴ s on erasure, S.
 þinge P. ¹⁵ Thus in P. om. S. ¹⁶ is P. ¹⁷ fol. 7^b S.

¹⁸ in the margin, 1st corr. S. ¹⁹ fol. 8^b P. ²⁰ here P.

children to ben his prestes in þe tabernacle, to offren sacrifices to herynge¹ of hure God, & also for þe peples synne. & þuse children of Leui, & princypallyche þe prestes, weren ordeyned to teche þe pepel þe cerymonyes of Godes lawe; & whan Moyses had y-tauȝt þe pepel þe domes of Godes lawe, God bede² hym come in-to þe hul aȝeyn to hym, & he wolde ȝefen hym two tables of ston & his lawe & his maundementes þat he schulde teche þe children of Israel. & Moyses wente up into þe hul, & was þere fourty dayes & fourty nyȝtys; & lerned Godes lawe; & lerned how he schulde 10 make a tabernacle to heryen ynne hure God, and how þe prestes schulden ben a-rayed whan þei schulden do³ sacryfyce to hure God, and how⁴ þei schulden be[n]⁵ y-maad prestes; also what manere auter þei schulden don³ onne hure sacryfyce.”

15

“And whan þe pepel seyȝ þat Moyses was longe⁶ in þe hul, þei comen to Aaron his broþer & seyden, ‘Ryse up, & make to ous goddus þat gon by-fore ous; for we ne weteþ noȝt what is byfalle to Moyses þat brouȝte us out of Egypt.’ ȝo Aaron toke gold & þrew it in-to þe fuyr; & whan it was 20 y-molten⁷, þei casten it in-to a forme & maden þer-offe þe lyknes of a calf. & ȝo þei seyden, ‘þis is þi God, Israel, þat broȝte þe out of Egypt’; & heryed þis calf as for hure God. ȝo seyde God to Moyses, ‘Go doun, for þi peple haþ y-synned, & beþ go from þe weye þat þou tauȝtest hem. For 25 þei han y-maad hem a calf to hure god, & to hym þei don sacryfyce & seyen, Israel, þis beþ þi goddus þat broȝte þe⁸ out of Egypt. Suffre me þat y take vengaunce up-on hem in þis desert.’ ȝo Moyses preyede to God þat he ne toke non⁸ suche veniaunce on his pepel, lest þe men of Egypt wolden 30 seye þat he³ had y-lad hem in-to hulles to slen hem þere and distruye hem. & so God was y-plesed by Moyses preyere; & Moyses wente adoun wiþ þe tables in his honde þat God had y-wryten in his ten hestes. & whan he seyȝ how þe pepel songen & maden muche myrþe byfore þe calf 35 of go[l]d⁹, for wraȝþe he þrew þe¹⁰ two tables out of his hond

¹ herynge P. ² bad P. ³ om. P. ⁴ fol. 8 S. ⁵ n effaced, S. ben P. ⁶ fol. 9 P. ⁷ molten P. ⁸ no P. ⁹ god S. P. ¹⁰ fol. 8^b S.

& breke hem. & þo Moyses¹ bede² þat þilke þat weren on Godes half schulden ben y-ioyned to hym: & so³ children of Leuy comen⁴ to hym. & Moyses bede² hem gurde⁵ hem wiþ hure swerdes, & gon þoroȝ-out here breþeren, & slen alle 5 þilke þat þei metten wiþ. & so þei duden, & slowen of hure breþeren ^Mxxiiii⁶. & þo seyde Moyses, 'þe han halewed ȝoure honde to day in sleynge ȝoure breþeren.' And þo Moyses wente to God to preyen hym for his pepel: and preyed God, oþer þat he schulde forȝesen þe pepel hure trespass, oþer elles 10 do hym out of þe boek þat he had writhen⁷ hym ynne. & God seyde, 'Who þat doþ synne, ych wole don hym oute of my boke; &⁸ in þe day of veniaunce ich wole visyte þis synne of my pepel'; & so God slowȝ many of his pepel for þei heryeden þis calf. þo God bed² Moyses þat he schulde take 15 þe pepel & leden hem to þe lond þat he had byhoten hem: & he seyde, 'Y nul noȝt goon⁹ wiþ þe, for y se wel þat þis pepel is of an hard hed, lest y destruye hem in þe weye þyderward.' þo þe pupel made muche sorowe, & Moyses seyde to God, 'Lord, þou byddest me þat y schulde leden 20 hennes þi puple, & þou tellest me noȝt whom¹⁰ þou wolt¹¹ sende wiþ me; & þou saydest þat þou knewe me by name, & þat ich had y-founde¹² grace byfore þe: Lord, ȝif ich haue founde grace to-for þe, schewe me þi face, & byholde þi pepel.' & God seyde to Moyses, 'My¹³ face schal gon byfore 25 þe, & ich wole ȝefe þe reste.' & þo seyde¹⁴ Moyses, 'ȝif þou þi-self ne wolt not gon by-foren ous, ne lede þou us not hennes. For how mowe we y-knowe þat we han yfounde grace byfore þe, bote ȝif þou walke wiþ ous in oure weye?' þo seyde God to Moyses, 'Ich wole don þat þou desyrest, For 30 þou hast y-founde grace to-fore¹⁵ me.' þo¹⁶ seyde Moyses, 'ȝif ich haue yfounde grace by-fore [þ]e¹⁶, schewe me þi blisse.'

¹ oys nearly effaced, S.

² bad P.

³ Followed by þe; fol. 9b P.

⁴ en nearly obliterated, S.

⁵ gerde with e dotted out between r and d, P.

⁶ 3000 in the margin in a modern hand, S; Vulg. Exodxxxii.

⁷ 28 viginti tria millia. ⁸ ywritten P. ⁹ om. P. ¹⁰ he nel followed by nolde (crossed out in red) nat gon followed by om (struck out in red), P.

In S n in goon is added by a later hand. ¹¹ wost P.

¹² founde P. ¹³ fol. 10 P. ¹⁴ fol. 9 S. ¹⁵ byfore P. ¹⁶ þo seyde

Moyses...byfore þe om. P. S has ȝif added above the line and me for þe.

& þo seyde God, 'þer¹ may no man y-se me & lyfen ; bote þou schalt stonden up-on a ston, & when þat my blysse passeþ by þe, ich wole putte þe in þe hole of þe ston, & þere ich wole kepe þe forto þat ich passe forþ ; & þere þou schalt y-sen þe hynder part of me, bote my face þou myȝt noȝt sen. & after- 5 ward make þe twey stones lyche þe oþer þat beþ ybroken, and ich wole wryten in hem þat was y-wryten in þe oþer tables þat beþ y-broken.' & so Moyses dude, & wende up aȝeyn in-to þe hul, & was þere fourty dayes & fourty nyȝtes : & he ne ete no bred n[e]² dronk no watyr. & in þe stones he wrot wordes of 10 þe forward þat was by-twene God & his pepel : & þese weren þe tables of testymonye of Goddes testament. & when he come doun to þe pepel, he tolde hem þe wordes þat God hade y-spoke to hym ; bote þer come a lyȝt outh of his³ face in forme of tweyn hornes, þat þe pepel was a-gast to speke 15 wiþ hym, bote ȝef⁴ his face were y-wrye. ȝo Moyses bad þe pepel brynge gold, & syluer⁵, & tymber, & oþer þinges þat⁶ weren nedful to makynge of þe tabernakel, þat þei schulden heryen ynne hure God ; & also to maken þe arke of þe bond þat was bytwene God & man in þe whiche he lette⁷ legge þe 20 twey tables of his lawe. & so þe pepel ȝefen wylfullyche to þe makynge of þe tabernakel al þinge þat byhofed þer-to. & þilke þat God ȝef⁸ wytt to worchen, eferych man of hem wroȝte to make þe tabernakele aftur Moyses ordynance, & maken⁹ it complet¹⁰. & when it was y-mad wiþ al his aparayl, 25 a cloud kefered þe tabernakele wiþouten-forþ, & þe blysse of God fulled þe tabernakel wiþ-ynne-forþ. And when þe tabernakel was y-niefed, þe cloud mefed hym þer-wiþ ; & when it stod stille, [þe cloude stod stille]¹¹ þer-wiþ & wryed it by daye ; & a-nyȝt a pyler of fuyr was abofe þe tabernakele. & 30 so þe chyldren of Israel myȝten by daye y-wyte where þe tabernakele were by syȝt of þe cloud, & by nyȝt by syȝt of þe

¹ þat P.² no S. P.³ fol. 10^b P.⁴ Followed by

him crossed out in red, P.

⁵ syluer (crossed out in red) precedes, P.⁶ fol. 9^b S.⁷ leet P.⁸ ȝaf P.⁹ maken has d inserted in a late hand after k (expunged), S. ¹⁰ com on erasure, S. ¹¹ P; omitted in S, but with a caret to mark omission and an erasure in the margin opposite.

fuyr. And onlyche Aaron & his chyldren weren ordeyned to¹ ben prestes in þis tabernacle to don sacrifice to hure God; þe oþer children of Leuy serfeden in þe tabernacle to þe prestes, & kepten þe goodes þat weren in þe tabernacle. & 5 when þe chyldren of Israel wolde remewen from on place to anoþer² place, þanne þe chyldren of Leuy mosten take a-doun þe tabernacle, & kepe þe partyes þer-of in hure warde. & whan þei weren goyng to-ward a place þat þei wolden abyden ate, þanne summe of þe children of Leuy schulde 10 bere þe arke byforen³ hem forte⁴ þei comen to þat place, & þanne þei schulden reren up þe tabernacle aȝeyn. & þe children of Leuy schulden lygge in þe foure sydes of þe tabernacle to kepen it boþe by nyȝt & by day."

"Broþer, þe ten hestes of Goddes lawe þat he wrot in þe 15 tables of ston y knowe sumwhat, y þanke God, bote y ne⁵ knowe noȝt þe domes of his lawe; & þerfore y prey þe er þan þou passe eny ferþere, telle me⁶ summe of his domes." "Suster, þe grete dom of his lawe was⁷ þat such harm as a man dude to his broþer suche harm he schulde⁸ suffre hym-selfe: 20 as ȝef he slow his broþer, he schulde ben y-slawe; ȝef he maymed his broþer, he schulde⁹ haue þe same maym; ȝef he brende his broþer, he schulde be brend in þe selfe wyse; ȝef a man forsake¹⁰ his God, oþer cursed his God, oþer made hym eny mawmete¹¹ in lyknesse of his God & worschuped¹² þat; he 25 schulde be ded. Also, who þat cursed¹³ his fader oþer his moder schulde be ded; & who þat brekeþ þe halyday þat was y-cleped þe sabat schulde be ded; & who þat brekeþ spoushod, oþer man, oþer womman, schulde be ded; & who þat lye wiþ a beste, oþer man, or¹⁴ womman, schulde be ded; 30 and who þat dude þe sunne of Sodomites schulde be ded.

Who þat stele his¹⁵ broþer & solde hym to oþer mysbylefed men in-to þraldom and seruyse schulde be ded; & who þat steleþ his broþeres catel, he schulde noȝt be ded, bote he¹⁶ schulde ȝelden his broþer his catel aȝeyn, oþer as muche

¹ fol. 11 P. ² noþer P. ³ fol. 10 S. ⁴ tyl P. ⁵ om. P.

⁶ me me P. ⁷ whas. P. ⁸ he schulde corrected from þei schulen, S. þei schullen P. ⁹ schulden S. P. ¹⁰ fol. 11^b P. ¹¹ underlined in S.

¹² worschupeþ P. ¹³ curseþ P. ¹⁴ oþer P. ¹⁵ on erasure, S. ¹⁶ fol. 10^b S.

þer-fore, & a quantyte more ofer, as þe double, oþer treble, oþer foure syþe so myche. & ȝef he haue noȝt wher-of to make good for his trespass, he schal be sold. & ȝef on broþer bouȝte his broþer to ben his serfaunt & his þral, he schulde hafe hym to serfaunt sixe ȝer, & þe sefeþe ȝer he schulde lete his broþer 5 gon out of his seruyse in fredom ȝef he wolde. & ȝef his broþer lyked¹ wel his seruyse, & nolde noȝt departen from his broþer² þanne he schulde ben his seruaunt for euere. But naþeles his broþer ne schulde nouȝt putten in-to gret þraldom³, but do by hym as by an huyrynge-man. & ȝef a man hade y-trespassed 10 aȝeyn þe lawe, men schulde don hym þe ryȝtfulnesse of þe lawe, & ne sparen him noȝt, were he pore oþer riche. & many oþer syche domes God ȝef⁴ to reulen riȝtfullyche his pepel."

"Broþer, þou seydest þat God ȝef⁴ his pepel cerymonyes 15 as wel as hestes & domes: y preye þe, telle me what manere cerymonyes he ordeyned."

"Suster, God bed his pepel þat þei schulde ben holy & clene for he hymselfe was holy & clene, & þerfore he forbed⁵ his pepel alle vnclene mctes. Of fleschmetes 20 he forbede⁵ hem alle þilke beestes þat hadden hure fet departed a two partyes oþer mo⁶, bote ȝef þei chewed hure code; & so swyn, & cattes, & houndes, & suche oþer bestes 25 weren forboden as for vnclene bestes. Oxen⁷, hertes, schep, & get & suche þei⁸ schulden eten⁹, for þei weren clene bestes. Alle þilke bestes þat han hol fet weren forboden, as hors, & chameyles, for þei beþ vnclene¹⁰. Of fisches alle þilke þat ne hadde noȝt fynnes ne scales weren forboden, for þei weren vnclene; oþer fysches þei myȝten ete. Of bryddes þilke þat lyfeden by¹¹ rafeyn weren forboden, as gripes, and egles, & 30 gledes & suche oþere; & alle volatyles¹² þat wenten on foure fet weren¹³ vnclene & forboden. Also alle þilke bestes þat crepeþ on þe erþe weren forboden for hure vncleanness. & who þat touched¹⁴ eny of þese vnclene bestes whan þei weren

¹ lykeþ P.

² inserted above the line in a later hand, S. om. P.

³ fol. 12 P.

⁴ ȝaf P.

⁵ forbade P.

⁶ fol. 11 S.

⁷ ox on erasure, S.

⁸ other inserted above the line in a later hand, S.

⁹ -ten on erasure, S.

¹⁰ cl on erasure, S.

¹¹ lyfeden by added above the line, P.

¹² folatlyyes P.

¹³ fol. 12^b P.

¹⁴ toucheþ P.

[d]ede¹, he schulde be vnclene forte² efen; & þanne he schulde waschen his cloþes, & so he schulde be clensed. & what vessel³ touche suche careynes of vnclene bestes wiþynne-forþ, oþer cloþes, oþer eny such oþer þing, it schal ben 5 vnclene forte² efen; & afterward it schal be clensed with water, & þanne is⁴ it clene, bote ȝef it be an erþen vessel: for it schal be broken whan eny vnclene þing haþ y-be þer-ynne. Also alle manere stondyng watres in cisternes oþer in puttes weren vnclene; also alle manere flesch þat 10 water weren þrownen on was vnclene. & who þat touched⁵ þe careyn of a clene best þat dyed⁶ in sum seknesse, he schulde ben vnclene forte² efen; and⁷ who þat eteþ of such a⁸ careyne, or bereþ it oþer⁹ eny þing þer-of. Þese beþ þe cerymonyes of vnclene metes þat maden men vnclene. 15 Eferich man þat was leprous was vnclene, & schulde by dom of prestes ben y-putt oute of þe cumpayne of his breþeren þat weren clene. & whan he were hol & clene of his lepre, he schulde schewe hym to þe prest¹⁰, & þe prest schulde offren to God a sacryfyce for his clensynge. What man toucheþ a 20 leprous man is vnclene; what vessel oþer cloþinge þat a leprous man toucheþ it is vnclene; & ȝef it be an erþen vessel þat he toucheþ it schal¹¹ be broken. A man also þat þorouȝ seknesse haþ a flux of his kynde passynge from hym is vnclene forte¹² he be hol of his seknesse; & al þe tyme of 25 his seknesse, who þat touched⁵ hym schulde ben vnclene forto¹² efen; & also who þat touched⁵ his bed, oþer sete þer he hade¹³ y-sete, schulde ben vnclene forto¹² efen. & ȝef he were hol of his seknesse, he schulde tellen vii¹⁴ dayes from þe tyme 30 of his clansynge; & whan he had y-waschen al his body & his cloþes in hurnyng¹⁵ water, þe eyȝeteþe day he schulde come to þe prest, & he schulde offren for hym a sacryfyce to God & preye for hym to God. Also boþe men & wymmen aftur þat þei haden leyen to-gedere, þei schulden ben vnclene

¹ clede expunged in S. with clofed in the margin in a later hand. clede P. Cf. *Vulgata*, Levit. xi. 31 Qui tetigerit morticina eorum, immundus erit usque ad vesperum. ² tyl P. ³ v on erasure, S. ⁴ is on erasure, S.

⁵ toucheþ P. ⁶ dyeþ P. ⁷ fol. 11^b S. ⁸ om. P. ⁹ orþer P. ¹⁰ fol. 13 P. ¹¹ sal P. ¹² til P. ¹³ e had on erasure, S. ¹⁴ seuen P.

¹⁵ hurnyng¹⁵ expunged with renȝyng in the margin, 1st corrector, S. rennyng inserted in P.

forto¹ efen ; & þanne² þei schulden waschen hure cloþes & hure bodyes, & so þei schulden ben mad clene. A wymman þat hade purgacioun eferich moneþ aftur þe day of hure purgacioun, he³ schulde be holden vnclene sefen dayes afturward; & who þat lye wiþ hure wiþ-ynne þat tyme⁵ schulde ben vnclene forto¹ efen ; & who þat touched⁴ hure bed⁵ also, & þe⁶ vesseles þat heo⁸ touched⁴ wiþ-ynne þat tyme, schulde ben vnclene. A womman þat hade⁷ flux of blod aftur hure kyndelyche purgacioun in þe moneþ was vnclene ; & who þat touched⁴ hure oþer hure bed schulde ben vnclene¹⁰ forto¹ efen. & aftur þe⁶ cessyng of hure flux heo⁸ schulde counte sefen dayes, & þe eiȝteþe day heo⁸ schulde come to þe prest, & he schulde offre for hure a sacrifice to God, & preye for hure. A womman þat hadde y-boren a chyld, ȝef it were a knafe-chylde⁸, sefen dayes he³ schulde ben vnclene, þe¹⁵ eyȝtþe day heo⁸ schulde circumsyden⁹ hure chyld, and þritty dayes schulden passen er þan he³ schulde come in-to þe seyntewarye, oþer touchen eny halewed þing. ȝef it were a mayde-chyld þat were y-boren, þe womman schulde ben vnclene two wykes, & LX^{ti}¹⁰ dayes & sixe heo⁸ schulde ben in²⁰ hure purgacyoun; & aftur þese dayes heo⁸ schulde come to þe prest, & he schulde offren to God a sacrifice & prey for hure. ȝese beþ þe cerymonyes of clene men & vnclene & wymmen also. ȝei haden also cerymonyes of halydayes: for¹¹ þe sixe dayes of þe wyke ȝei myȝten werche, & þe vii¹² day ȝei²⁵ schulden ben in reste ; boþe þe housbonde and his wif & his children & his serfauntes¹³ and his bestes and straungeres also. For whan God maked þe world, sixe dayes he wrouȝte, and þe sefeþe¹² day he was in reste. And who þat wroȝte⁶ þe halyday, he schulde ben y-stoned to þe deþ. ȝe furste moneþ of³⁰ þe ȝer, ȝe fourtenþe day of þe moneþ, Pase¹⁴ of God, ȝe efetyd (þat is to seye, ȝe passyng¹⁵ of God¹⁶): & on ȝe morewen ȝei schulden maken a solempnyte of þerf¹⁷ bred ; and ȝis day ȝei schulden resten from alle bodylyche werkes. And sefen dayes

¹ tyl P. ² fol. 12 S. ³ ȝe P. ⁴ toucheþ P. ⁵ fol. 13^b P.

⁶ om. P. ⁷ hadde a P. ⁸ knafe underlined in S, with man in the margin in a late hand. ⁹ circumsisen P. ¹⁰ sixti P. ¹¹ fol. 12^b S.

¹² seuenþe P. ¹³ fol. 14 P. ¹⁴ Cf. *Vulgata*, Levit. xxiii. 5, Phase Domini est. ¹⁵ ss on erasure, S. ¹⁶ God has g on erasure, S. ¹⁷ þerw P.

þei schulden eten þerf¹ bred. And þe sefeþe² day schulde
be holy as þe furste. Þis God ordeyneþ for³ þei⁴ schulden
hafen in muynde how in þe furste⁵ moneþ of⁶

I. PETER⁷.

Suster⁸, þre apostoles þat weren most prufe wiþ Crist,
Petur & Iames & Ion, wryteþ pysteles to þe pepel how þei
schulen lyue; & Peter seiþ on þis wyse,

1 3 Y-blessed be God, þe Fader⁹ of oure Lord Iesu Crist, þat
of his grete mercy haþ bygeten ȝow aȝeyn in-to on hope by þe
4 arysyng from deþ to lyfe of Iesu Crist, & in-to an herytage
incorrũptible, vndefouled, þat may noȝt welewe, þat is y-kept
5 in hefne in ȝow, þat beþ y-kept in þe vertu of God by feiþ
6 in-to hele þat is redy to ben y-schewed in þe laste tyme; in
þe whyche tyme ȝe schuleþ ioyen. And now ȝef it behoueþ
7 to sorewe to-gedere a luytel in dyuerse temptacyones, þat
þe preuynge of ȝowre feiþ be more precyous þan gold þat is
y-prefed in þe fuyr, & be y-founde¹⁰ in-to preysyng & ioye &
8 worschupe in þe reuelacyoun of Iesu Crist: whom ȝe lofeþ,
þat ȝe ne hafeþ noȝt y-seye: in whom ȝe bylefeþ, þat ȝe seþ
noȝt; but whan ȝe seþ hym, ȝe schuleþ ioyen in a gladnesse þat
9 may noȝt ben y-told, y-gloryfyed, & berynge þe ende of ȝoure
10 feiþ, þe hele of ȝoure soules. Of þe whiche hele prophetes
han y-souȝt & y-serched, þat han y-prophecyed of þe grace
11 þat is to comen in ȝow: þat telleþ as þe spiryt of Crist haþ
y-sygnfyed to hem þis tyme, furst tellynge þe suffrynges
12 of Crist, & siȝþe his¹¹ blisses þat comeþ aftur. To whiche
prophetes it wes¹² y-told, þat þei ne schulde noȝt to hem-

¹ þerw P. ² seuenþe P. ³ r on erasure, S. ⁴ þei on erasure, S.

⁵ e on erasure, S. ⁶ The rest of the page is blank in S and P.

⁷ fol. 13 Running heading: *Petri i (ii)*. *C^m 1^m* in the margin; below it

I Peter c i in a modern hand which has marked the chapters as far as

I John i, S. fol. 14^b P. ⁸ uster on erasure, S. ⁹ fa in margin with

caret to mark insertion, S. ¹⁰ y- om. P. ¹¹ fol. 15 P. ¹² e in

wes is blurred, S. *was* P.

selfe, bote to ȝow, mynystre þilke þinges þat beþ now y-told to ȝow by hem¹ þat haueþ y-preched ȝow in þe Holy Gost. þat² is³ y-send from hefne; in whom þe aungeles of hefne desyreþ to byholde. & þerfore cutteþ up þe lendedes of ȝoure 13 þouȝt, & beþ sober in alle þinges, & parfyt, & hope ȝe in þat grace þat is y-prefed to ȝow in þe reuelacyoun of Iesu Crist; as chyldren of obeyence, noȝt ylyche þe desyres of ȝoure 14 vnkunnyngnesse herbyfore⁴, bote y-lyche hym þat haþ ycleped 15 ȝow þat is holy, þat ȝe ben holy in eueriche conuersacyoun; for it is y-wryten, ȝe schuleþ ben holy, for ych am holy. 16 And ȝef⁵ ȝe clepeþ hym⁶ ȝoure Fader, þat⁶ demeþ wiþ-outen 17 vndurfongyng of mennes persones⁷, aftur euerych mannes worchynge, haue ȝe þe conuersacyoun in þe tyme of ȝoure wonynge in þis worlde in drede: knowynge þat ȝe beþ noȝt 18 for-bouȝt⁸ wiþ corruptybel þinges, as gold oþer syluer, out of ȝoure ueyn⁹ conuersacyoun of ȝoure fadres tradycyones¹⁰; but þoroȝ þe precyous blod of Crist, þat was as a lomb vnde- 19 fouled, wiþ-outen wem, þat was y-knowe by-fore þe ordeynyng 20 of þe worlde, & y-schewed in þese laste tymes for ȝow: þat 21 þoroȝ hym beþ trewe in¹¹ God þat areryd hym vp from deþ to lyfe, & haþ y-ȝeuen¹² hym an euerlastynge blisse, þat ȝoure byleue & ȝoure hope were in God, makynge ȝoure soules 22 chaste in buxomnesse of charyte & in loue of bryþerhede; & loue ȝe sadlyche to-gydere of a sympel herte: y-bore aȝeyn 23 noȝt of a seed þat is corruptybel, bote in-corruptybel, þorowȝ þe word of þe lyuynge God & dwellynge wiþ-outen¹³ ende. For eferich flesch is gras, &¹⁴ his blisse is þe flour of gras. 24 þe gras waxed¹⁵ drye, & his flour fel adoun: bote Goddes 25 word dwelleþ euermore. And þis¹⁶ is þat word þat is y-prechyd to ȝow¹⁷. & þerfore do ȝee awey euerych wicked- 1 2 nesse & gyle & symulacyons & enuyes¹⁸ & alle manere

¹ e partly erased, S. ² fol. 13 b. ³ om. P. ⁴ noȝt ylyche...
herbyfore in margin, 1st corrector, S. omitted in P. ⁵ Followed by
for (crossed out), S. ⁶ þt on erasure, S. ⁷ es on erasure, S.

⁸ u added above the line, nota in the margin, S. ⁹ ueyn written in
margin by 1st corrector, S. om. P. ¹⁰ on on erasure, S. ¹¹ fol. 15^b P.

¹² y twice repeated. P. ¹³ an e is repeated in the margin, S. ¹⁴ in P.

¹⁵ wexeþ P. ¹⁶ fol. 14. ¹⁷ cm 2^m in margin in early hand, S. ¹⁸ nota
written above ȝow, S. ¹⁸ enuyes P.

2 detractiones, as chyldren þat beþ nou¹ bygeten, resonabel,
 wiþouten gyle², coueyte ȝe mylk þat ȝe growen þere into hele;
 3,4 ȝef ȝe han y-tasted³ þe swetnesse of God: to whom ȝe comeþ,
 to a ston, y-repreuyd of men, bote y-chosen of God & y-
 5 worschupyd; & be ȝe as quyke stones y-buld abouen in-to
 spiryтуal houses, an⁴ holy presthod. And offre ȝe spiryтуal
 6 sacrificyes, acceptabel to God by Iesus Crist. & þerfore
 scripture seiþ, Lo, ich⁵ wole putten in Syon a chef corner-
 ston, precyous & y-chose. And who þat byleueþ in hym ne
 7 schal noȝt ben y-schend. And þerfore to ȝow þat by-leueþ
 8 he is worschupe & an heed-ston of þe corner, bote to hem þat
 byleueþ noȝt, & buyldynge han reproud þis ston, he is a ston
 9 of offence & of sclaudre, to þilke þat offendip his word
 & byleueþ noȝt in hym, in whom þei beþ y-sett. Bote ȝe beþ
 10 a kynde y-chose, a kynglyche presthode and holy folk, a pepel
 of adquysicyoun, þat ȝe schewen openlyche his vertues þat
 haþ⁶ ycleped ȝow out of darknesse in-to his wondurful lyȝt;
 & þilke þat weren no pepel, now þei beþ Goddes pepel⁷; &
 þilke þat founden no mercy, now þei habbeþ y-founde mercy.

11 My leueste frendes, y pray ȝow as straungeris & pyl
 grymes, to abstene ȝou from⁸ fleschlyche desyres, þat fyȝteþ
 12 aȝeyn þe soule; hauyng ȝoure⁹ conuersacyoun good among
 folk; þat, in as myche as men spekeþ yuel of ȝou as of yuel-
 doeris, þei gloryfyen God in þe day of visitacyoun, byholdynge
 13 in ȝoure goode werkes. & be ȝe soget to euerych creature of
 14 man, for⁸ God¹⁰: to þe kyng, as to hym þat is abouen; to
 dukes, as to hem þat beþ ysend from hym in-to veniaunce
 15 of¹¹ wykked doeris & preysynge of goode men. For so it is þe
 wille of God, þat in ȝoure wel-doyng ȝe maken þe vnkunnyng-
 16 nesse of vnwyse men waxe doumbe; & be ȝe fre, noȝt hauyng
 17 þe fredom of wykkednesse, bote as Goddes seruauntes. Wors-
 schupe ȝe alle men, & loue ȝe breþerhede. Drediþ ȝe God¹²,

¹ After nou erasure of two letters, probably þe, the þ being faintly visible, S.

² an e is repeated in the margin, S. ³ y- om. P. ⁴ and P. ⁵ fol. 16 P.

⁶ om. P. ⁷ and þilke þat...Goddes pepel in a contemporary hand

in the margin with a caret to mark insertion, P. ⁸ an e is written in

the margin, S. ⁹ fol. 14^b S. ¹⁰ The d is added above the line, S. ¹¹ fol.

16^b P. ¹² drediþ ȝe god in the margin, 1st corrector's hand, S. om. P.

& worschupe þe þe kyng. & be þe sogetis in alle drede to 18 lordes, noȝt onlyche to þilke þat beþ goode & softe, bote also to þilke þat beþ wykked. & þis is a¹ grace, ȝef eny man¹⁹ suffreþ any dysese vnriȝtfullyche for þe knowynge of God. Bote what grace is it, ȝef ȝe sungeþ² & suffreþ betynges? [but 20 if ȝe, doyng wel, pacientliche suffreþ]³, þis is a¹ grace to-fore God. For in þis ȝe beþ y-cleped: for Crist suffredre for ous, 21 leuynge to ȝou ensaumple, þat ȝe swen his steppis: þat dide 22 non synne, ne non gyle was y-founde in his⁴ mouþ: & whan 23 men cursed⁵ hym, he ne cursed⁵ noȝt aȝeyn; & whan he suffred, he ne þreted no man, bote he toke hymselfe to þilke þat demed hym vnriȝtfulliche; & he bar oure synnes in his⁶ 24 body on þe tre; & þoroȝ his blood we beþ y-heled⁶. & ȝe 25 weren scheep erreden, bote now ȝe beþ y-turned to a schep-herde & a byschop of ȝoure soules.

And⁷ [also] ben wymmen sogetis to hire housbondes, þat i **3** þilke þat byleueþ noȝt to þe word ben y-wonne wiþ-outen⁸ word by wymmennes conuersacioun; byholdynge a chaste 2 conuersacioun in drede⁹, þouȝ þer were noȝt wiþouten-forþ 3 araynge of þe heres of hure hed, ne enuyronyng¹⁰ aboute of guld, oþer an-oþer cloþinge, ne apparayl of cloþes. Bote 4 þat þe man of þe herte þat is y-hud be wiþ-outen corrupcioun, of a softe spiryt in reste, þat is ryche in þe syȝt of God. For 5 so sumtyme holy wymmen, hopynge in God, arayed hem-selfe, beyng solettes to hure housbondes: as Sara was 6 buxom to Abraham, clepynge hym hure lord: whos douȝtren ȝe beþ, wel doyng and dredynge non affray. Men also 7 duellen to-gydere with wymmen, & aftur hure cunyng departyng to hem worschupe, as to a wommanlyche vessel þat is more febel þan ȝe beþ, as to hem þat beþ heires wiþ ȝow of þe grace of lyf; þat ȝoure preyeres ne ben noȝt ylet. & be ȝe in feiþ euerychone of on soule, suffryng togydere, 8

¹ om. P. ² synnyþ P. ³ but if ȝe doyng wel pacientliche suffreþ in the margin, P. om. S. ⁴ m (crossed through) follows, S. ⁵ curseþ P. ⁶ y followed by turned (crossed out), P. ⁷ C^m 3^m in an early hand in the margin, S. And also P. ⁸ fol. 15 S. fol. 17 P. ⁹ drede followed by as (expunged), S. ¹⁰ serklynge P. In S serklenge is written in the margin, 1st corrector's hand.

9 louyeris of breþerhed, mercyful, noȝt wroþ¹, & humel²: noȝt
 ȝeldynge yfel for yfel, ne cursynge for cursynge: bote bles-
 synge aȝeynward; for in þat ȝe beþ y-cleped, þat ȝe owen þe
 10 blesynge of herytage. For who þat wole loue lyf, & y-sen-
 goode dayes, chaste³ he his tunge from yfel, & his lippis þat
 11 þei speken no gyle: & bowe he a-wey from yfel, & do he
 12 good; & seche he pes & swe pes. • For þe yzen of God⁴ beþ
 13 on riȝtful men, & his erys to here preyeres; bote þe sterne
 14 semblaunt of God is on hem þat doþ yfel. And who is it⁵
 15 þat may noye ȝow, ȝef ȝe beþ goode foleweres? & ȝef ȝe
 suffreþ eny þing for riȝtfulnessse, þanne ȝe schuleþ ben blessed.
 Bote ne⁶ drede ȝe noȝt þe drede of hem, þat ȝe be noȝt
 16 afrayed; bote halewe ȝe oure Lord Crist in ȝoure hertys;
 & be ȝe redy euermore to ȝeuен a resoun to euerich man þat
 17 axeþ ȝow of þe feiþ & of þe hope þat is in ȝow; & haue
 a good consyence in softnesse & in drede, þat þilke þat
 18 bakbyteþ ȝow ben confounded, þat chalangeþ ȝoure good
 conuersacyoun in Crist. For it is beter, ȝif it be Goddis
 19 wille, þat ȝe suffren doynges wel þan doynges yuel. For Crist
 haþ ones y-dyed for oure synnes, he þat is riȝtful for us
 vnriȝtful, þat he wolde offren us to God; y-slawen in flesch
 20 & y-mad lyfynge in spiryt; in þe whuche spiryt he com &
 preached to hem þat weren in prisoun, þat weren vnbyleuyng
 sumtime, when þei abyden þe pacyence of God in þe dayes of
 Noe, when þe schyp was y-mad, in þe whuche schip a fewe,
 21 as eiȝte soules, weren y-saued by water. & nouþ⁷ in þe same
 manere baptysme makeþ men saf, noȝt þe doynges a-wey of þe
 fylþe of þe flesch, bote þe axynge of a good consyence in
 God, by þe arysynge from deþ to⁸ lyfe [of] oure Lord Iesu
 22 Crist, þat is in þe⁹ riȝtsyde of God, swolewyng deþ, þat ȝe
 weren y-mad heyres of an eferlastynge lyf; & he is gon
 to hefne, & haþ y-mad sogettis to hym aungeles and po-
 testates and vertutes¹⁰.

4. 1. And¹¹ þerfore ȝif Crist haþ y-suffred in his flesch, be ȝe

¹ roþ on erasure, S. ² humel om. with meke written in margin, P.

³ wiþholde in a later hand, P. ⁴ fol. 17^b P. ⁵ om. P. ⁶ fol. 15 b.

⁷ nou P. þ on erasure, S. ⁸ fol. 18 P. ⁹ om. P. ¹⁰ vertutes P.

¹¹ C^m 4^m in the margin in an early hand, S.

y-armed in þe same þouȝt; for he þat suffred in flesch lefte alle manere synnes; For as muche as þe remnaunt þat lyfeþ 2 in flesch, aftur þis tyme lyue aftur þe wylle¹ of God & noȝt aftur mennes lustes. For þe tyme þat² is passed suffyceþ 3 to maken an ende of þe wylle of mys-byleued men, þat habbeþ y-walked in hure lecherryes, & in lustes of wyn-drynynges, & etynge, & drynynges out of mesure, & vnleffel heryenges of maumetes: in whom þei beþ nowþe 4 astonyed & wondreþ þat we ne hurneþ³ noȝt in-to þe same confusyoun of lecherrye, blasphemynge oure God; bote þei 5 schuleþ zelden a resoun to hym þat is redy for-to demen boþe quyke & dede. & þerfore it haþ ben⁴ y-preched to hem þat 6 beþ dede, þat⁵ þei ben y-demded aftur men in flesch, & lyfen aftur God in spiryt. & þe ende of alle þinges comeþ nyȝ: & 7 þerfore be ȝe wyse, and⁶ wake ȝe in preȝeres; & to-fore alle 8 þinges haue ȝe contynuel charyte in ȝow, eferychone to oþer; For charite heleþ þe mul[ti]tude⁷ of synnes. &⁸ herborewe 9 ȝe eferychone oþer wiþ-outen grucchyng; & eferich man as 10 he haþ vnderfonge grace, mynystre he þat grace to oþer, as goode dyspensatores of many maner grace of God; & who 11 þat spekeþ, speke he as þe wordes of God; & who þat mynystreþ as of þe vertue þat God mynystreþ: þat in alle þinges God be y-worschuped þoroȝ oure Lord Iesu Crist, to whom is⁹ blisse & power of comaundyng, world wiþ-outen 12 ende. My leueste breþeren, ne be ȝe noȝt pilgrymes in þe grete hete þat is y-don to ȝow þoroȝ temptacyones, as þouȝ ȝer fulle any newe þing to ȝow: bote comune ȝe to Cristes 13 suffrynges, & be ȝe glade þat ȝe ben glade & ioyen in þe reuelacion of þe blysse of oure Lord Iesu Crist. And ȝef ȝe 14 beþ obrayded for his name, þanne ȝe schulleþ ben y-blessed; For þe Spiryt of hym þat is of þe worschupe of þe blysse & of þe vertue of God schal resten up-on ȝow. Bote¹⁰ no man 15 of ȝow suffre as a man-sleer, oþer a þef, oþer a curser, oþer as he þat¹¹ desyreþ oþer mennes goodes: bote who þat suffreþ as 16 a Cristene man, be he noȝt aschamed, bote gloryfye he God

¹ þe wylle twice repeated, S. P. In S. the first þe wille is expunged.

² fol. 16 S. ³ turneþ with t on erasure, P. ⁴ y ben P. ⁵ and P.

⁶ an e written in the margin, S. ⁷ ti left out in S. ⁸ fol. 18^b P.

⁹ his P. ¹⁰ fol. 16^b S. ¹¹ om. P.

17 þoroȝ a riȝtful name. For it is tyme þat þe dom bygynne
 from Godes hous: & ȝef þe bygynnynge be at ȝow, what ende
 18 schal be of hem þat byleueþ noȝt to þe euangelye? & ȝef þe
 riȝtful man¹ schal vnneþis ben y-safed, where schuleþ þe
 19 wycked men & þe synful man apperen? & þerfore þese þat
 suffrey aftur þe wylle of God, to a trew makere þei takeþ
 5 1 hure soules to kepe in goode deedis. And² y preye þilke þat
 beþ eldere men among ȝow, y, þat am a wytnesse of þe
 suffrynges of Crist, & a comuner of his blisse þat schal be
 2 schewed her-aftur, þat ȝe feden³ Goddes flok⁴ þat is in ȝow,
 takynge kepe to hem, noȝt y-constreyned bote wilfullyche,
 3 aftur God; ne for no foulwynnyng, bote wilfullyche; &
 noȝt as hauynge lordschype in⁵ clergye, bote in forme of
 4 a⁶ flok⁴ þat is y-mad of ȝoure wylle, of ȝoure soule; þat whan
 he þat is prince of schepherdes appereþ, ȝe vnderfongen
 5 a coroune of blysse þat may noȝt welewe. Also, ȝe ȝonge-
 lynges, be ȝe sogettes to ȝoure eldren. & eferich man schewe
 humelnesse to oþer: for God aȝeynstondeþ proude men, &
 6 ȝefþ grace to humel men. & þerfore humel ȝe ȝow vnder þe
 myȝty hond of God, þat he arere ȝow an hyȝ in þe tyme of
 7 vysytacyoun; & þrowe ȝe al ȝoure bysynesse in hym, for he
 8 haþ þe charg of ȝouw. And be ȝe sober, & wake ȝe, for
 ȝoure aduersarye⁷ þe deuel goþ aboute as a lyoun rampaund,
 9 sechynge⁸ whom he may deouore: whom aȝeynstonde ȝe
 strong in feiþ, knowynge þat he doþ in þe same wyse to
 10 ȝoure broþerhede þat is in þe worlde. Bote God of eferiche
 grace, þat haþ y-cleped ȝow into an⁹ eferlastynge blesse⁹ þat
 habbeþ y-suffred a luytel¹⁰, he schal make ȝow parfyt, & con-
 11 ferme ȝow, & stable ȝou to hym by blysse & empyre from
 world to worlde.

II. PETER.

1 1 Symon¹¹ Peter, Iesu Cristes seruaunt & apostel, to þilke
 þat haueþ euene feiþ wiþ ous, [in]¹² þe⁶ riȝtfulnessesse of oure God,

1 fol. 19 P. 2 C^m 5^m in an early hand, S. 3 feden repeated in
 the margin, 1st corrector, S. 4 folk P. 5 & P. 6 om. P.

7 fol. 17 S. 8 fol. 19^b P. 9 blysse P. 10 u expunged, S.

11 C^m 1^m in margin in an early hand, S. 12 P. & S.

& oure Sauyour Iesu Crist: Grace & pes be fulfillyd to ȝou 2
 in þe knowyng of oure Lord Iesu Crist. How alle þinges 3
 beþ y-graunted to us, to lif & to pyte, of þe vertue of his god-
 hede, þoroþ þe knowyng of hym þat haþ y-cleped ous þoroþ 4
 his owene blisse & his vertue; by whom he haþ y-graunted ous
 grete byhestes & precyouse; þat we ben y-maad by hym
 felawes of þe kynde of þe godhede, fleynge þe corrupcyoun
 þat is in þe worlde. And ȝe wiþ al ȝoure bysynesse mynystreþ 5
 in ȝoure feiþ vertu, in vertu connynge¹, in connynge¹ absty- 6
 nence, in abstynence pacyence, in pacyence pyte, in pyte loue 7
 of bryþerhed², in³ loue of bryþerhede charyte. And ȝef þese 8
 þinges ben in ȝow, þei ne schuleþ noȝt make ȝow veyn ne
 wiþ-outen fruyt⁴ in þe knowyng of oure Lord Iesu Crist.
 And he þat haþ noȝt þese þinges, he is blynd, and gropynge 9
 wiþ his hond, & forȝeteþ þe purgacyoun of his olde synnes.
 And þerfore, breþeren, be ȝe aboute to⁵ maken ȝoure clepynge 10
 & ȝoure chesynge certeyn by ȝoure goode werkes: & doyng
 þese þynges ȝe schulleþ do no synne: & so þer schal be 11
 i-mynystred⁶ to ȝow plentynouslyche an entre in-to þe euer-
 lastynge kyngdom of oure Lord & oure Sauyour Iesu Crist.
 Wharfore ich wole by-gynne to warne ȝow of þese þinges, þat 12
 knoweþ & beþ y-confermed in þis present trewþe. For y 13
 deme þat it is ryȝtful, as longe as ich am in þis tabernakel, to
 arere ȝow up in warnynge; For ich am certeyn þat þe doyng 14
 awey of my tabernakel is nyȝ, as oure Lord Iesu Crist haþ
 y-sygnfyed to me. And ich wole ȝeue my dylygence to haue 15
 ȝow fele syþes after my deþ þat ȝe maken mynde of þese
 þinges. For we ne haueþ noȝt y-folewed vnwyse fables & 16
 y-mad ȝow knownen þe vertue of oure Lord, bote we weren
 y-mad by-holderes of his gretnesse. For he vnderfong of 17
 God þe Fader worschyp & blisse, of a voys þat slod a-doun to
 hym from þe grete blisse⁷ of þe Fadur & seyde, þis is my
 leue sone, in whom ich am y-plesed⁸; y-here⁹ ȝe hym. And 18
 þis voys we herden come from heuene, when we weren wiþ
 hym in þe holy hul¹⁰. & we han a more syker word of 19

¹ comyng P. nota in the margin, S. ² bryþerhede P. ³ & P.

⁴ fol. 20 P. ⁵ fol. 17^b S. ⁶ the i inserted later above the line, S.

⁷ e in the margin, S. ⁸ wel y plesed P. ⁹ y om. P. ¹⁰ fol. 20^b P.

prophecye, to whom ȝef ȝe takeþ kepe to, ȝe doþ wel, as to a lyȝt þat brenneþ in a dark place, forte¹ þe² day bygynne to 20 schyne, & þe day-sterre aryse up in ȝoure hertes. And furst vnderstonde ȝe, þat eueriche prophecye of scripture ne is 21 noȝt y-mad in his owene interpretacyoun: For prophecye ne is noȝt y-brouȝt of a mannes³ owene wylle: bote holy men han y-spoke as þe Holy Spiryt of God hath enspyred hem.

2 1 And⁴ þer han ben her byfore false prophetys in þe pepel, as þer schulen ben her-after a-mong ȝow maystres of lesynges, þat schuleþ bryngen in sectes⁵ of perdycyoun, & forsakynge⁶ hure Lord þat haþ y-bouȝt hem, & bryngynge an hasty per-2 dicyoun to hem-selfen. & many schul swe her lecheryes, by 3 whom þe weye of trewþe schal ben blasphemed. And þei schuleþ chaffaren of ȝow wiþ feyned⁷ wordis in here couetyse: bote hure dom ne cesseþ noȝt, ne hure perdycyoun ne slepeþ 4 noȝt. For ȝef God ne sparyd not aungelis þat synneden, bote þrew hem doun in-to helle, & toke hem to ben y-turmentyd 5 & y-kept to þe dom; And ȝef he ne spared not þe orygynal worlde⁸ & kept Noe þe eyȝteþe man, þat was a bedel & a fore-goere of ryȝtfulness, & broȝte a gret flod in-to þe 6 worlde of wycked men; & ȝef he ouer-turned þe cytees of Sodom & Gomor⁹, & turned hem in-to axen¹⁰, & dampned, & putte hem þe ensampel of hem þat schulden don wyck-7 edlyche; & delyuered Loth þat was a ryȝtful man and oppressed of þe iniurye of wycked men & of hure lecherous 8 conuersacioun: for boþe in byholdynge and in herynge he was ryȝtful, wonynge among hem þat from day to day þoroȝ 9 hure wycked werkes turmenteden a ryȝtful soule. & God can delyueren goode men out of temptacioun, & kepen wycked men in-to þe day of dom, to ben y-turmented in 10 peynes; & raþere hem þat walkeþ aftur þe flesch in couetyse of vñclanness¹¹, & despiseþ þe lordschupe; bodylyche ple- 11 synge to hem-selfe ne dredeþ noȝt to bryngen in sectes blasphemynge God, wher þat aungeles, þat beþ grettore in

¹ til P.² om. P.³ fol. 18 S.⁴ C^m 2^m precedes in an

early hand, S.

⁵ sectes

repeated in margin, 1st corrector's hand, S.

⁶ forsaken P.⁷ fined P.⁸ word P.⁹ fol. 21 P.¹⁰ aschen P.¹¹ fol. 18^b S.

strengþe & in vertue, ne bereþ noȝt þe bittur dom þat is aȝeyn hem. And þese beþ as vnresonabel bestes, kyndelyche 12 in-to takynge & in-to deþ, blasphemynge in þinges þat þei knoweþ noȝt, in hure corrupcyoun þei schulen peryschen, vnderfongyng 13 þe mede of vnryȝtfulnesse. Þese weneþ þat lustes ben delyces¹ of day², & beþ fulsylled wiþ þe delyces of wem of defoulynge, & doþ lecherrye wiþ ȝow in hure lecherryes; and haueþ yen³ ful of avoutrye, & of gult þat 14 may noȝt cessen; deceyfynge soules vnstabel⁴; habbeþ hure herte y-stered to coueytysse; children of cursynge; & leuyng 15 þe⁵ ryȝte weye han y-erred & han⁶ y-swed⁷ þe weye of Baalam & Boozor, þat loued þe mede of wyckednesse; bote he had 16 a doumbe beste þat was vnder ȝok a mendement of his wodnesse, spekyng in mannys voys, þat forbed þe vnkun-nyngnesse of þe prophete. Þese beþ welles wiþouten water, 17 & cloudes y-dryfen a-boute wiþ whirlynge wyndes, to whom þe dymschyp of derknesse is y-kept to. & spekyng in 18 pruyde of vanyte bygyleþ in þe desyres of þe lecherrye of hure flesch þilke þat fleþ a luytel weye from hem; & þei haueþ hure conuersacyoun in error, byhotynge to hem 19 fredom & beþ hem-selfen seruauntis of corrupcyoun. For of whom a man is ofercome, his serfaunt he is. For ȝef men 20 flen þe defoulynge of þe world in þe knowyng of oure Lord Iesu Crist, & afterward medlen wiþ þe same þinges, & ben ofercomen of hem, hure⁸ later doynges beþ worse þan þe raþer. For it were beter to hem noȝt for-to knowe þe weye 21 of ryȝtfulnes, þan, after þe knowyng, turnen hem aȝeynward from þe holy commaundement þat is y-take to hem. And to 22 hem falleþ þe seyenge of þe trewe⁹ prouerbe, þe hound¹⁰ haþ y-turned hym aȝeyn forto caste, & þe sowe is y-wasche in þe gaseyn of fen.

And¹¹ lo, my leueste frendes, y write to ȝow þis¹² seconde 1 3 epystel¹³ to stere ȝow in-to warnynge to a cler þouȝt¹⁴, þat ȝe 2

¹ delytes P.

² in later hand on erasure, S.

³ þan P.

⁴ & vnstabel S. P.

⁵ fol. 21^b P.

⁶ om. P.

⁷ y, om. P.

⁸ fol. 19 S.

⁹ trewþe P.

¹⁰ u inserted above the line, S.

¹¹ Cm 3^m in the margin

in an early hand, S.

¹² þe P.

¹³ fol. 22 P.

¹⁴ u added above line in darker ink, S.

han mynde of þilke wordes þat ich haue y-sayd ȝow of holy prophetes & apostoles, of þe holy comaundementis of oure 3 Lord & oure Safyour. And knowe ȝe¹ furst, þat þer schuleþ comen men in þe laste dayes in deceyt gylours, walkynge 4 after hure owene couey[ti]se², & seyenge, Where is þe byheste oþer þe³ comynge of hym? For, seþþe þat oure fadres habbeþ y-slept, alle þinges abydeþ styll from þe bygynnyng 5 of creatures. Bote to þilke þat han þis wyl it is y-hud from hem, For hefne was sumtyme, and erþe, of watyr & abydynge 6 þoroȝ watyr by þe word of God. By whom þe world was ȝo 7 y-clensed & perysched by watyr. Bote hefnes þat beþ now⁴, & þe erþe, þoroȝ þe same word beþ y-kept to fuyr in-to þe day 8 of dome, & of perdycyoun of wycked men. Bote naþeles, my dere frendes⁵, þis on þing ne be noȝt y-hud from ȝow, þat on day is to-fore God as a þousande ȝeres⁶, & a þousande ȝeer⁷ 9 as on day. And God ne targeþ noȝt his byheste as summe men weneþ; bote doþ pacyentlyche for ȝow, & nul none men⁸ perysche, Bote þat alle men ben y-turnyd aȝeyn to penaunce. 10 And þe day of oure Lord schal comen as a þef; in þe whuche day hefne schal passen in a gret hastynesse, & þe elementes schuleþ ben vnbounde þoroȝ hete⁹, &¹⁰ þe erþe & al þe werkes 11 þat beþ þer-ynne¹¹ schuleþ ben y-brand. And seþþe alle þese þinges schuleþ ben vndon, Whyche byhoueþ it þat we ben in 12 holy conuersacyones & pytees, abydynge & hyȝenge in þe comynge of oure Lord, þoroȝ whom brennyng hefnes schuleþ ben vndon, & þe elementys schuleþ roten þoroȝ þe hete of þe¹² 13 fuyr? & we abydeþ newe hefnes & a newe erþe & his 14 byhestes, in þe whuche riȝtfulnesse woneþ ynne. And þerfore, my dereste breþeren, be ȝe abydynge wiþ-outen wem and 15 vndefouled, & schape ȝe ȝow to ben y-founden in pes. & deme þat þe longe a-bodynge of oure Lord Iesu Crist is¹³ hele, as oure dereste broþer Poule, aftyr þe wysdom þat was 16 y-grauntyd hym, wrot to ȝou; as he haþ y-don in his oþer

¹ we P. ² coueyse S. coueytise P. ³ þo P. ⁴ erasure of two letters after the *w*, S. ⁵ Opposite verse 8 an *e* and *nota* in the margin, S. ⁶ ȝer P. ⁷ & a þousande ȝeer om. P. ⁸ fol. 19^b S. ⁹ inserted in a later hand, P. ¹⁰ fol. 22^b P. ¹¹ þer in margin, 1st corrector's hand, S. ¹² þat P. ¹³ deprafeþ is written in the margin in the 1st corrector's hand, S.

pysteles; in whom he spekeþ many harde þinges to vnder-
stonden, þe whuche vnstabel men & vntauȝt deprafeþ, as þei
doþ oþer scriptures, to hure owne dampnacyoun. And þer-¹⁷
fore, my breþeren, seþþe ȝe knowe þese þinges byfore, keþþ
ȝow-selfe, þat ȝe ben noȝt y-lad in þe errour of vn-wyse men,
& fallen awey þoroȝ ȝoure owene infirmyte. Bote waxe ȝe in¹⁸
þe knowynge & in þe grace of oure¹ Lord Iesu Crist oure
Sauyour; to hym be blysse now & efermore her-aftur.
De[o]² gracias?

JAMES³.

James⁴ þat is a seruaunt of oure Lord & oure God¹ 1
Iesu Crist, to þe twelue kynredes þat beþ in dyspersyon,
hele and gretynge. Breþeren, trowe ȝe þat it be eferych²
gladnesse whan ȝe falleþ in-to dyuerse temptacyons,
knowynge þat þe prefynge of ȝoure feiþ worcheþ pacyence.³
And pacyence haþ a⁴ parfyt werk, þat ȝe ben parfyt & hol,⁴
faylynge in no þing. And who-efere of ȝou nedeþ wysdom,⁵
axe he of God, þat graunteþ eferich man plentyuouslyche and
obbraydeþ no man. & axe he in feiþ & trust, doutynge no⁶
þing: For he þat douteþ is lyche to þe flod of þe see⁶ þat is
y-mefed & y-boren aboute of þe wynd. And þerfore þilke⁷
man ne trowe noȝt þat he schal vnderfonge any þing of God;
A man þat is doubel in soule, he is vnstabel in alle his weyes.⁸
And an humel broþer ioye he in hys hyȝenesse, & a ryche⁹,¹⁰
man⁷ in his lowenesse: For as þe flour of þe gras he schal
passe forþ his weye. For þe sunne haþ y-rysen up wiþ hete,¹¹
& haþ y-druyed⁸ þe heþ; & his flour is y-fallen a-down, & his
fayrnesse is y-perysched: so a ryche man schal welewen in
his iourneyes. þat man is y-blessed þat suffreþ temptacyoun:¹²
for whanne he is y-prefed, he schal vnderfonge⁹ a coroune of
lyf, þat God haþ byhoten to þilke þat loueþ hym. & no man¹³

¹ ȝoure P. ² deu with *u* in darker ink on erasure, S. ³ Heading:
Jacobus in a later hand on fol. 20, subsequently *Ja-cobi* on facing pages,
with the second stroke of *u* and the *s* erased. S. ⁴ C^m 1^m in an early hand, S.
fol. 23 P. ⁵ om. P. ⁶ an *e* in the margin, S. ⁷ ryche man repeated in
margin, 1st corrector, S. ⁸ uyed on erasure, S. ⁹ ydreyed P. ¹⁰ fol. 23^b P.

seye whan he is y-temptyd, þat he is y-tempted¹ of God: for God ne is no temptour of wyckednesse, For he ne tempteþ no
 14 man: bote eferiche man is i-tempted² þoroþ sterynge &
 15 drawynge of his owne coueytyse. & after whan þat mannes
 coueytyse haþ y-conseyued, he bryngeþ forþ³ synne: & whan
 16 þe synne is y-don, it bygeteþ deþ. & þerfore, my leueste
 17 bryþeren, ne erre ȝe noȝt. Eferich ȝeft þat is best & parfyt
 is from abouen, comyng adoun from þe Fader of lyȝtes, at
 whom ne is non⁵ chaungyng, ne ouer-schadewynge of re-
 18 wardynge. For wylfullyche he haþ bygeten ous þoroþ þe
 word of trewþe, þat we ben sum bygynnyng of his creature.
 19 & wyte ȝe⁶ wel, my dereste breþeren, eferich man be swyft
 20 forte heren & slow for-to speken & slow to wraþþe: For
 a mannes wraþþe ne worcheþ noȝt þe ryȝtfulnesse of God.
 21 & þerfore caste ȝe awey from ȝow eferych vncleynnesse &
 plente of wyckednesse, & in goodnesse vnderfonge ȝe þe word
 22 þat is y-sowe to ȝow, þat may saue ȝoure soules. Bote be ȝe
 doeres of þe word, and noȝt onlyche hereris, bygylng ȝow-
 23 selfe. For who þat is an herer of þe word, & noȝt a⁷ doere,
 þerafter he schal be lyckned to a man þat byholdeþ hym-
 24 selfen in a myrour: for⁸ he haþ byholden hymself, & wente
 forþ his weye, and anon he haþ forȝeten whyche he was.
 25 Bote he þat byholdeþ in þe lawe of parfyt fredom, & duelleþ
 þerynne, & ne is noȝt y-mad a forȝetful herer, bote a doere of
 26 þe werk, he is y-blessyd in his doyng. & who þat troweþ
 hym-selfe a relygyous man, & refreyneþ noȝt his tunge bote
 27 bygyleþ his owne herte, his relygyoun is veyn. A clene
 relygyoun & wiþ-outen wem to-fore God & þe Fader þis⁹
 is, to vysyten faderles chyldren and moderles, & wydewes
 in hure trybulacyoun, & to kepen¹⁰ hym-self wiþ-outen wem
 from þis worlde.

2 **i** And¹¹ my dere breþeren, ne haue ȝe noȝt þe feiþ of þe
 blysse of oure Lord Iesu Crist in vnderfongyng of mennes

¹ þat he is y-tempted in margin in 1st corrector's hand, S. om. P.

² i added above line by a later hand, S. om. P. ³ fol. 20^b S.

⁴ te on erasure, S. ⁵ no P. ⁶ an e in the margin, S. ⁷ om. P.

⁸ fol. 24 P. ⁹ þis written above þat (crossed out), P. ¹⁰ fol. 21 S.

¹¹ C^m 2^m in the margin in an early hand, S.

persones. For ȝef þer come in-to ȝoure cumpayne a man in 2 fayr cloþyng, hauyng a gold ryng¹ on his hond, & a pore man also in a foul cloþinge; þanne ȝef ȝe² byholdeþ in hym 3 þat is³ wel cloþed⁴, & seye, Sytte þou here wel; & seyn to þe pore man, Stonde þou þere, oþer sytte vnder þe stol of my fet; ne deme ȝe noȝt þanne among ȝow-selfe, & be ȝe noȝt 4 y-mad domes-mén of wykkede þoȝtes? Y-hereþ, my dereste 5 frendes; ne ches noȝt God pore men in þis worlde, & ryche men in feiþ, & heyres of þe kyngdom, þat God haþ⁵ by-hoten to þilke þat loueþ hym? & ȝe haueþ vnworschuped þe pore 6 man. & ne doþ noȝt þese ryche⁶ men þoroȝ hure myȝt þruste ȝou adoun? & þei draweþ ȝou to domes. & ne doþ noȝt þei 7 blaspheme þe goode name þat is y-cleped⁷ on ȝow? And so 8 ȝef ȝe parformeþ þe kynglyche lawe, after scripturis, þou schalt loue [þy nexte neiȝeboure]⁸, þann do ȝe wel; & ȝef ȝe 9 vnderfongeþ mennes persones, ȝe doþ synne, & beþ vndername of þe lawe as trespassoures. & who þat keþeþ al þe lawe, & 10 offendeþ in on þing, he is y-mad gulty of al þe lawe. For he 11 þat seyde, ȝow schal do no lecherye, seyde also, ȝow schalt not sleep. & ȝef ȝow dost no lecherye, bote sleest, ȝow art y-mad a trespassour of þe lawe. So speke ȝe, & so do ȝe, as⁹ 12 þouȝ ȝe bygonne to ben y-demded by þe lawe of fredom. For 13 to hym þat doþ no mercy þer is a dom wiþ-outen mercy: for mercy heueþ vp an hyȝ dom. And my¹⁰ breþeren, what pro- 14 phyteþ it, ȝef a man sayþ þat he haþ feiþ, & ne haþ noȝt werkes¹¹? wheþer his feiþ mowe sauuen hym? And ȝef a 15 broþer oþer a³ suster be naked, oþer haue nede to hure eferyche dayes lyflode, & on of ȝow seye, Be ȝe y-warmed⁷, 16 oþer. Be ȝe fultillyd; & ne ȝefe hem noȝt þat is nedeful to þe body, what profyteþ it? Ryȝt so feiþ, ȝef he ne haue none 17 werkes, he is deed in hym-selfen. Bote sum man seyþ¹², ȝow¹³ 18 hast feiþ, & ich haue werkes: schewe me þi feiþ wiþouten werkes, & ich wole of my werkes schewe be my feiþ. ȝow 19

¹ gold ryng repeated in margin, 1st corrector, S. ² he P. ³ om. P.

⁴ ycloþed P. ⁵ fol. 24^b P. ⁶ an e in the margin, S. ⁷ y om. P.

⁸ þy nexte neiȝeboure P. In S þi neȝbour as thy self on erasure in a later hand. ⁹ fol. 21^b S. ¹⁰ my leue, P. ¹¹ an e and nota in the margin, S. ¹² syþ P. ¹³ fol. 25 P.

20 byleuest þat þer ne is bote on God, & þow dost wel: & fendes
 byleueþ & quakeþ for drede. Bote wolt þou y-wyte, þow
 21 veyn man, þat feiþ is ded wiþ-outen werkus? Abraham
 oure fader ne was noȝt he y-iustyfyed¹ of his werkes, offrynge
 22 Ysaac his sone up-on þe auter? Ne seest þou þanne, þat
 feiþ helped² his werkes, & of werkes feiþ was y-broȝt to an
 23 ende; & þe scripture was fulfilled þat seyde, Abraham
 byleued to his God, & it was y-holde to hym for ryȝtfulnesse;
 24 & he was y-cleped Godes frend. Ne seo ȝe not þanne þat a
 25 man is y-iustyfyed of his werkes, & noȝt of feiþ alone? Also
 Raab þe hore ne was noȝt heo y-iustyfyed of hure werkes,
 vnderfongyng Goddes messyngeres, & letynge hem gon out
 26 an oþer weye? & ryȝt as þe body is deed wiþ-outen spiryt, so
 feiþ is ded with-outen werkes.

3 1 And³ my breþeren, ne wylne ȝe noȝt to ben y-mad many
 2 maystres, wytyng ȝat ȝe takeþ þe grettene dom. For we
 offendeþ in many þinges euerychone. & who ȝat offendip in
 3 non word, he is a parfyt man, & he may wiþ a brydul leden
 al þe body aboute. For we putte brydeles⁴ in-to⁵ horses
 mouþes⁶ to maken hem assente to ous, and we bereþ aboute
 4 al hure body. And grete schyppes ȝat beþ y-meued wiþ
 grete wyndes, þei beþ y-turned aboute wiþ a lytul gouernyng,
 5 whydur ȝat he wole ȝat is gouernour of þe schypp. And so
 þe tongue is a lytul membre, bote he arereþ up grete þinges.
 6 And lo, how lytul a fuyr wole brennen up a gret wode! &
 þe tongue is fuyr & uniuersyte of wikkednesse; & þe tongue is
 y-set in oure membres, ȝat defouleþ al þe body; & heo is
 7 y-tend of þe fuyr of helle, & tendeþ þe wheol of⁷ oure
 natyuyte. For eferich kynde of bestes, of bryddes, of eddres,
 8 & of alle oþer, beþ y-temed of mankynde, bote þe tongue no
 man may temen; for it is a wicked þing, & wiþ-outen reste,
 9 & ful of dedlyche venom. In þe tongue we blesseþ⁸ God þe
 Fader; & in hure we curseþ men, ȝat beþ y-mad after þe
 10 ymage of God: of þe same mouþ passeþ forþ blesseyng &

¹ y om. P.

² helpeþ P.

³ fol. 22. C^m 3^m in the margin, S.

⁴ brydeles repeated in margin, 1st corrector's hand, S. ⁵ fol. 25^b P.

⁶ the two first strokes of *m* on erasure, S. ⁷ of added above line in a later hand. An *e* in the margin, S. ⁸ blessed P.

cursynge. My breþeren, it byhoueþ noȝt þat it be y-don þus. Wheþer þer sprynge out of hol a¹ welle þat welleþ boþe 11 suete watyr & bytter watyr? & my breþeren, wheþer a 12 fyge-tre mowe brynge forþ grapes, oþer a vyne fyges? so salt water may maken no fresch watyr². Who is a wys man & a 13 wel y-tauȝt³ man a-mong ȝow? schewe he of his good conuer- sacyoun his worchyng in goodnesse of wysdom. & ȝe⁴ 14 haueþ⁵ bytter hate & struynges⁶ in⁷ ȝoure hertes, ne ioye ȝe noȝt to ben lyerys aȝeyn trewþe. For þis wysdom ne 15 comeþ not doun from a-boue, bote it is an erþelyche wysdom, & a⁸ bestysch wysdom, & þe⁹ defeles wysdom. For þer is 16 hate & struyng⁹, þer is vnstabelnesse & eferych schrewyd¹⁰ werk. Bote þe wysdom þat is of a-bouen heo is furst chaste, 17 & seþþe discret, & temperat, pesybel, and bleþelyche wole be conseyled, & assentyng to goode þinges, ful of mercy & of goode fruytys, demyng wiþoute symulacyoun. & þe fruyt of 18 ryȝtfulness is y-sowen in pees to þilke þat doþ pees.

And¹¹ of whennes beþ þe batayles & þe struynges þat beþ a-mong ȝow? ne beþ þei noȝt of ȝoure coueytyses þat beþ in ȝoure membres? ȝe coueyteþ, & ȝe ne haueþ noȝt: ȝe sleþ¹², & 2 ȝe hateþ, & ȝe mowe noȝt geten: ȝe struyueþ¹³ & ȝe werreþ; ȝe ne haueþ noȝt, for ȝe ne axeþ noȝt. ȝe axeþ, & ȝe ne vnder- 3 fongeþ noȝt, for ȝe axeþ in yuel manere, as ȝe scheweþ openlyche in ȝoure coueytynges. ȝe spousbrekeres, ne knowe 4 ȝe noȝt þat þe frendschype of þis world¹⁴ is enemy to God? & þerfore, who euere þat wol ben frend of þis world, he schal ben y-mad Goddes enemy. What wene ȝe? ȝat scripture 5 seye in veyn, þat þe spiryt þat is in ȝow coueyteþ¹⁵ to enuye. Bote he ȝeueþ þe more grace. & þerfore he say¹⁶, God aȝeyn- 6 stondeþ proude men, & ȝeueþ grace to humel men. & þerfore 7 be ȝe suget to God; & aȝeynstonde ȝe þe deuel, & he schal fleen a-wey from ȝow. Come ȝe nyȝ to God, & he wole 8 neyȝleche to ȝow: ȝe synful men, make ȝe clene ȝoure honden;

¹ of a P, of in margin, 1st corr. S. ² fol. 22^b S. ³ a crossed through, S. ⁴ on erasure, S. he P. ⁵ fol. 26 P. ⁶ streynynge P. ⁷ of P. ⁸ om. P. ⁹ streyneyng P. ¹⁰ schrede P. ¹¹ C^m 4^m in the margin, early hand, S. ¹² ȝe sleþ repeated in margin, 1st corr. S. ¹³ streyneþ P. ¹⁴ word P. ¹⁵ fol. 26^b P. ¹⁶ fol. 23 S.

9 & ȝe þat beþ of doubel soule, make ȝe cleue ȝoure hertes. Be ȝe sory, & make ȝe waymentacion: & be ȝoure lawȝwynge y-turnyd in-to sorewyng, & ȝoure ioye in-to drerynesse¹.
 10 & be ȝe y-humeled in þe syȝt of oure Lord, & he wole arere ȝou
 11 vp yn tyme of trybulacion². And my breþeren, ne bakbyte
 ȝe noȝt eferychone to oþer: for who þat bakbyteþ his broþer,
 oþer demeþ his broþer³, he bakbyteþ þe lawe, & demeþ þe
 lawe: & ȝef þou demest þe lawe, þou ne art not a doer of þe
 12 lawe, bote a domes-man. And þer is on þat is makere of þe
 lawe & domes-man, þat may boþe sauен & distroye: & what
 13 art þou þat demest þi nexte neyȝebore? And lo, now ȝe
 seye⁴, We schuleþ gon to day oþer to morewe in-to þat cyte,
 & þere we woleþ abyden a ȝer, & chaffaren, & wynne muche:
 14 & ȝe ne wyteþ noȝt what schal fallen a-morewe. For what is
 ȝoure lyf? A breþ þat scheweþ hym-seluen a lytel whyles, &
 15 soone þer-aftur it is ydon. & þer-fore seye ȝe, ȝef God wole,
 16 &, ȝef we lyfeþ⁵, we woleþ don þis oþer þat. Bote now ȝe
 17 ioyeþ in ȝoure pruydes, & eferich such ioye is wikked. And
 þerfore who þat can do wel, & doþ noȝt wel, it is synne to
 hym.

5 And⁶ ȝe riche men⁷, wepe ȝe & make ȝe sorewe in þe
 2 wrecchydnessys þat schuleþ come to ȝow her-after. ȝoure
 rychesse beþ y-roted, & ȝoure cloþes beþ⁸ y-eten of mowþes⁹.
 3 ȝoure gold and ȝoure seluer is y-rousted; & þe roust of hem
 schal ben in wytnesse to ȝow & ete ȝoure flesch as fuyr. ȝe
 4 tresoureþ to ȝow-self wraþþe in þe laste dayes. & þe mede of
 ȝoure werk-men þat han y-repe ȝoure kyndomes, þat ȝe haueþ
 bygyled hem of, cryeþ an hiȝ: & hure crynge haþ y-entred¹⁰
 5 in-to þe eres of oure Lord of Sabaoth. ȝe habbeþ y-mad
 festes up-on þe erþe, & ȝe habbeþ y-noresched ȝoure hertes in
 6 lecheryes in þe day of slauȝt. ȝe han y-broȝt forþ &
 7 y-slauen þe ryȝtful man, & he ne aȝeynstondeþ ȝow noȝt. &¹¹
 þerfore, briþeren, be ȝe pacyent to þe comynge of God. For

¹ dreynesse P. ² yn tyme of trybulacion in margin, 1st corr. S. om. P.

³ his broþer om. P. ⁴ ȝe seye on erasure. Nota in the margin S.

⁵ fol. 27 P. ⁶ Cm 5^m in the margin, early hand, S. ⁷ ryche men
repeated in the margin, 1st corrector, S. ⁸ fol. 23^b S. ⁹ mowþes P.

¹⁰ y om. P. ¹¹ fferia 4^a in pale ink in margin, S.

lo, an erþe-tylyere abydeþ þe precyous fruyt of þe erþe, & suffreþ pacyentlyche, forte he vnderfonge schoures þat perteneþ to þe tyme, & efetydes schoures. & be ȝe pacyent, & ȝe confermeþ ȝoure hertes, for þe comyng of God wol neyȝlachen. And¹ breþeren, ne make ȝe noȝt waymentacyoun to-gedere, 9 þat ȝe ben noȝt y-demed: for lo, þe domes-man abydeþ to-fore þe ȝate. & briþeren, take ȝe ensampel of an efel yssew, 10 & of longe² abydynge, & of pacyence, & of trafayl, of prophetes þat han y-spoken in þe name of oure Lord. & þei han 11 y-seyd, þat þei beþ y-blessed þat habeþ y-suffred & abyde. And ȝe habbeþ y-herd þe suffrynge & þe abydynge of Iob, & ȝe han y-seye þe ende of oure Lord: for he is merciful & doþ mercy³. And to-fore alle þinges, my dereste briþeren, ne 12 swere ȝe noȝt by hefne, ne by erþe, ne be non oþer oþ: bote be⁴ ȝoure word ȝe, ȝe, & nay, nay; þat ȝe ne falle noȝt vnder dom. ȝef any of ȝow is sory, preye he⁵, & synge he⁶ wiþ an 13 efene soule. And ȝef eny man is seek a-mong ȝow, brynge ȝe 14 in prestes of þe churche, & preyen þei up-on hym, & anoynteþ hym wiþ oyle in þe name of oure Lord: & þe 15 preyere of byleue schal sauie þe sek man, and oure Lord wole maken hym lyȝtere of his sekenesse; & ȝef he is in synnes, þei schuleþ ben forȝeuȝ hym. And þerfore knowleche ȝe 16 ȝoure synnes eferychone to oþer, & preye ȝe for oþer, þat ȝe ben y-saued. For muche worþ is a bysy preyere of a⁷ riȝtful man. Helye was a man lyche to ȝow, & he preyed þat it 17 schulde noȝt reyne upon þe erþe; & it reyned⁸ noȝt þre ȝer & sixe moneþes. Eftsones he preyed; & hefne ȝef his reyn, & 18 þe erþe his fruyt. My briþeren, ȝif eny of ȝow erre from 19 trewþe, & eny man turne hym aȝeyn; he schal vnderstonde, 20 þat who þat makeþ a synful man turnen hym from þe error of his weye, he schal sauuen his soule from deþ, & keuereþ þe multytude of synnes. Deo graciæs.

¹ fol. 27^b P.² a longe P.³ nota in the margin, S.⁴ fol. 24, Heading Johannis, S.⁵ ȝe P.⁶ forȝen P. nota in the

margin, S.

⁷ om. P.⁸ fol. 28 P.

I. JOHN.

1 þat¹ þing þat was from þe bygynnyng, þat we habbeþ
 y-herd, & y-seyen wiþ oure yȝen, & byholden, [and]² oure
2 honden habbeþ y-touched of þe word of lyf, & þe lyf was
 openlyche y-schewed, & we han y-seyen it, & we bereþ
 wytnesse þer-of, & we scheweþ to ȝow an eferlastynge lyf þat
3 was at þe Fader, & haþ appered to ous; & þat þing þat we
 habbeþ y-seye and y-herd we scheweþ to ȝow, þat ȝe han
 feloschype wiþ us³: & þat þe felauschype be wiþ þe Fader &
4 Iesu Crist his sone. And we wryteþ þese þinges to ȝow, þat
5 ȝe ioyen, & þat ȝoure ioye be ful. & þis is oure tellynge þat
 we han yherd of hym & þat we scheweþ to ȝow: for God is
6 lyȝt, & in hym ne beþ no derknesse. And ȝef we seye þat we
 han feloschype wiþ hym, & walkeþ in derknesse, we lyeþ, &
7 doþ no trewþe: & ȝef we walkeþ in lyȝt, as he is in liȝt, we
 han felowschupe⁴ to-gydere, & þe blood of Iesu Crist his sone
8 clansyþ ous of eferich synne. & ȝef we seye þat we ne haueþ
 no synne, we bygyleþ ous-selfe, & trewþe ne is noȝt in⁵ ous.
9 ȝef we knowlecheþ oure synnes, he is trewe⁶ and ryȝtful to
 forȝeuen ous oure synnes, & to clensen ous of euerich wikked-
10 nesse⁷. & ȝef we seye þat we ne haueþ noȝt y-synned, we
 makeþ hym a gabber, & his word ne is noȝt dwellynge in
2 ous. My⁸ smale chyldren, þese þynges y wryte to ȝou, þat ȝe⁹
 synne noȝt. And ȝef þat eny man synneþ, we haueþ an
2 aduoket to-fore þe Fadur, Iesu Crist þat is riȝtful: & he is
 þe forȝeuenesse of oure synnes; noȝt onlyche for ouren, bote
3 for al þe worldes. And in þis we¹⁰ wryteþ wel þat we¹⁰ haueþ
4 y-knownen hym, ȝef we keþeþ his hestes. Who þat seiþ þat
 he knoweþ God, and¹¹ keþeþ noȝt his hestes, he is a lyer, &
5 trewþe ne is noȝt in hym. Bote who þat keþeþ his word,
 soþlyche, in hym is þe charyte of God parfyt. & in þis we
6 knoweþ þat we beþ in hym: & who þat seiþ þat he dwelleþ

¹ pistola 1^a in the margin, P. ion, C^m 1^m in an early hand in the margin, S. ² in S.P. ³ fol. 24^b; the facing pages are headed *Jo-hannis* throughout, S. ⁴ fol. 28^b P. ⁵ wiþ P. ⁶ trewþe P.

⁷ First *k* on erasure, S. ⁸ No division in the mss. ⁹ om. P. ¹⁰ ȝe P.

¹¹ e in the margin, S.

in hym, he mote walken as he walked. My dereste breþeren, 7
 y ne wryte noȝt to ȝou a newe comaundement, bote an old
 comaundement þat¹ ȝe hadden from þe bygynnyng: þe olde
 comaundement is² þe word þat ȝe haueþ y-herd. & y write 8
 to ȝow a newe comaundement, þat is trewe boþe in hym & in
 ȝow; for derknesse beþ now y-passed, & verrey lyȝt schyneþ
 nowþe. Who þat seiþ þat he is in lyȝt, & hateþ his broþer, 9
 he is zet in darknesse. & who þat loueþ his broþer dwelleþ 10
 in lyȝt, & in hym is no sclaundre. Bote who þat hateþ his 11
 broþur he is in darknesse, & walkeþ in darknesse, & he ne
 wot noȝt whyderward he goþ, for derknesse haþ y-blend his
 ȝzen.

My³ smale chyldren, y wryte to ȝow, for ȝoure synnes 12
 beþ forȝeuен to ȝou in þe name of Crist. Y wryte⁴ to ȝow, 13
 fadres, for ȝe habbeþ y-knownen hym þat is from þe
 bygynnynge. Y wryte to ȝow, ȝonglynges, for ȝe habbeþ
 ouercome hym þat is wykked. Y wryte to ȝou, ȝonge
 chyldren, for ȝe habbeþ y-knowe þe Fader. Y wryte to ȝou, 14
 fadres, for ȝe habbeþ y-knownen hym þat is from þe bygyn-
 nyng. Y wryte to ȝou, ȝonge men, for ȝe beþ stronge, & þe
 word of God dwelleþ in ȝow, & ȝe habbeþ ouercome hym þat
 is wykked. And ne⁵ loue ȝe noȝt þe world, ne þynges þat beþ 15
 in þe world. For who þat loueþ þe world, þe charyte of þe
 Fader ne⁶ is noȝt in hym. For al þinge þat is in þe worlde, 16
 oþer it is coueytyse of ȝzen, oþer coueytyse of þe flesch, oþer
 pryde of lyuyng, þat ne⁷ beþ noȝt of þe Fader, bote of þe
 world. & þe⁸ world schal passe, & his coueytyse: bote who 17
 þat doþ þe wylle of God he dwelleþ efere-more. My smale 18
 chyldren, now is þe laste hour; &⁹ ȝe habbeþ y-herd þat
 Antecrist is y-come, & now þer beþ y-mad¹⁰ many Antecristes;
 & þerfore we wytþ þat þis is þe laste houre. From ous þei 19
 passeden, bote þei ne were noȝt of ous; for ȝef þei hadden
 y-ben of ous, þei wolden haue dwelled styllie wiþ ous: bote in
 þis it is openlyche y-schewed þat þei beþ noȝt of ous. Bote 20

1 fol. 25 S.

2 fol. 29 P.

3 C^m 2^m in the margin, S.

4 ry on

erasure, S.

5 ne

expunged, S.

6 ne

expunged, S.

fol. 29^b P.

7 ne expunged, S.

8 om. P.

9 as in the margin, marked to be inserted

before ȝe,

1st corrector's hand, S.

om. P.

10 fol. 25^b S.

3e habbeþ an-oyntynge of þe Holy Spiryt, & knoweþ alle
 21 þinges. Y ne haue noȝt y-wryte to ȝou as to hem þat knoweþ
 noȝt þe trewþe, bote as to hem þat knoweþ þe trewþe, & for
 22 þat eueryche lesyng ne is noȝt of trewþe. Who is a lyer, bote
 he þat seiþ þat Iesu ne is noȝt Crist? He is Antecrist, þat
 23 denyeþ boþe þe Fader & þe Sone. For who þat denyeþ þe
 Sone, he ne¹ haþ noȝt þe Fader; & who þat knowlecheþ þe
 24 Sone, he haþ þe Fader. & leteþ þat dwelle stille in ȝow þat
 ȝe habbeþ y-herd from þe bygynnynge, ȝe schuleu dwelle boþe
 25 in þe² Sone & in þe Fader. & þis is þe byheste þat he haþ
 byhoten ȝow, þat³ he wol ȝeuen ȝow an eferlastynge lyf.
 26 þese þinges ich haue⁴ y-wryte to ȝow, of þilke þat bygyleþ⁵
 27 ȝow. & þilke anoyntyng ȝat ȝe han vnderfongen of hym
 dwelle styll in ȝow, & ȝe ne haueþ no nede þat any man
 teche ȝow; bote riȝt as þe anoyntyng of hym techeþ ȝou in
 alle þinges, & it is trewe, & no lesynge, & riȝt so as ich haue
 28 y-tauȝt ȝow, dwelle ȝe in hym. And now, my smale children,
 dwelle ȝe in hym; þat, whan he appereþ, we han a trust, &
 29 þat we ne⁶ ben noȝt y-schend of hym in⁷ his comynge. & as
 ȝe wyteþ þat he is ryȝtful, so wyte ȝe wel þat he þat doþ
 ryȝtfulness is y-boren of hym.

3 And⁸ y-se ȝe, what charyte þe Fader haþ yȝeuen ous, þat
 we ben y-cleped Goddes sones, & ben Goddes sones. & þer-
 fore þe world ne knoweþ noȝt ous⁹, for he ne knewe noȝt hym.
 2 My dereste breþeren, now we beþ Goddes children, bote it is
 noȝt ȝet y-sene what we schuleþ ben. For we wyteþ wel,
 whan þat he appereþ we schuleþ be lyche to hym; for we
 3 schuleþ y-sen hym riȝt as he is: & euerych man þat haþ þis
 4 hope haleweþ hym-selfe, riȝt as he is holy. And euriche⁹
 man þat doþ synne & wikkednesse: he is boþe synne &
 5 wykkednesse. & ȝe wyteþ þat he appered to don a-wey
 6 synne; & in hym ne is no synne. & who þat dwelleþ in hym
 ne synneþ noȝt: & who þat synneþ¹⁰ ne knoweþ noȝt God,
 7 ne sey noȝt God. My smale chyldren, no man bygyle ȝow:
 8 who þat doþ ryȝtfulness is ryȝtful, as he is ryȝtful⁹: & who þat

¹ ne expunged, S. ² om. P. ³ & þat P. ⁴ fol. 30 P. ⁵ byleueþ P.
 nota in the margin, S. ⁶ ne dotted out in black ink, S. ⁷ fol. 26 S.
⁸ C^m 3^m in the margin, S. ⁹ an e in the margin, S. ¹⁰ fol. 30^b P.

doþ synne he is of þe deuel; for from þe bygynnyng he deuel synueþ. And in þis appered Godes Sone, to vndon þe werkes of þe deuel. And euerich man þat is y-boren of God 9 ne¹ doþ no synne, for þe seed of God dwelleþ in hym: & he ne may noȝt synne, for he is y-boren of God¹. And in þis beþ 10 openlyche y-schewed boþe Goddes chyldren & þe deueles children: euerich man þat is noȝt riȝtful ne is noȝt of God, ne he þat loueþ noȝt his² broþer. For þis is þe tellynge þat ȝe 11 habbeþ y-herd³ from þe bygynnyng, þat ȝe⁴ louen to-gydere: noȝt as Caym þat was wykked & slouȝ his broþer. And 12 herfore he slouȝ hym, for his werkes weren wykked, & his broþeres werkes weren goode. And⁵ ne wondre ȝe noȝt þouȝ þe 13 world hate ȝou. For we wyteþ þat we beþ y-translated from 14 deþ to lyf, for þat we loueþ oure breþeren. Who þat loueþ noȝt he duelleþ in deþ. Euerich man þat hateþ his broþer he 15 is a mansleer: & ȝe wyteþ þat euerich mansleer ne haþ noȝt an euerlastynge lyf dwellynge in hym. & in þis we habbeþ 16 y-knowe þe charite of God, for he putte his soule for ous: & we oweþ to putten oure soules for oure breþeren. Who⁶ þat 17 haþ þe substaunce of þis world, & seþ his broþer haue nede: ȝef he closeþ⁶ his in-wardnesse from his broþer, how dwelleþ 18 þe charite of God in hym? My lytul chyldren, ne loue we 19 noȝt in word, ne in tonge; bote in werk & in trewþe. In þis 20 we⁷ knoweþ þat we beþ of⁸ trewþe, & in his syȝt we scheweþ 21 oure hertes; for ȝef oure herte⁹ vndernymeþ ous, God, þat is 22 more þan oure herte, he knoweþ alle þinges. My dereste 23 breþeren, ȝef oure¹⁰ herte vndernymeþ ous not¹¹, we han a 24 truste in God; and what-euere we axeþ of hym, we schuleþ vnderfongen of hym, for þat we kepeþ his hestes, & doþ þilke ȝinges þat beþ plesynge to-foren hym. & þis is þe comaundement of God, þat we byleuen in þe name of his sone Iesu Crist, & þat we louen togydere, as he haþ y-ȝesen¹² ous a comaundement. & who þat kepeþ his comaundementys

¹ ne doþ no synne...y boren of God om. P. ² is P. ³ fol. 26^b S.

⁴ we P. ⁵ an e in the margin, S. ⁶ fol. 31 P. ⁷ ȝe P. ⁸ of of P.

⁹ herte repeated in the margin, 1st corrector, S. ¹⁰ ȝoure P. ¹¹ not in the margin, 1st corrector's hand, S. ¹² fol. 27 S.

dwelleþ in hym, & he in hym. & in þis we knoweþ þat he dwelleþ in ous, for þe spiryt þat he haþ y-zeuen ous.

4 My¹ dereste breþeren, ne leue ȝe noȝt euerych spiryt², bote prefetþ þe spirytes, wheþer þei ben of God: for many false 2 prophetes beþ y-gon in-to þe worlde. In þis þe spiryt of God is y-knowe: euerych spiryt þat knowlecheþ þat Iesu Crist 3 come³ into flesch he is of God: & euerych spiryt þat vndoþ Crist ne is noȝt of God: & þis is Antecrist, of⁴ whom ȝe han 4 y-herd þat he schal come; & now he is in þe world. Bote my smale chyldren, ȝe beþ of God, & ȝe han ouercome hym: 5 for he þat is in ȝow is gretter þan he þat is in þe world. Þei beþ of þis worlde, & þerfore þei spekeþ of þe⁵ world, & þe 6 world y-hereþ hem. Bote we beþ of God: & who þat knoweþ God y-hereþ ous; & who þat is noȝt of God he ne hereþ ous noȝt. In þis we han y-knowe þe spiryt of trewþe, & þe spiryt 7 of errour. My dereste breþeren, loue we to-gydere: for charyte is of God; & euerych man þat loueþ is y-boren of 8 God, & knoweþ God. Pilke þat loueþ noȝt ne knoweþ noȝt 9 God; for God is charyte. In þis appered þe charyte of God in ous: for God sende his one⁶ bygeten sone in-to þis world, 10 þat we lyfen by hym. In þis is charyte, noȝt as þouȝ we haden y-loued God, bote for he loued ous furst, & sende his 11 sunne to ben forȝeuenesse of oure⁷ synnes. My dereste breþeren, ȝef God loued ous, þanne moten we louen to- 12 gydere. No man haþ y-sey God: ȝef we loueþ to-gydere, 13 God is in ous, & þe charyte of God is parfyt in ous. In þis we knoweþ þat we dwelleþ in hym, for he haþ y-zeuen ous of 14 his Spyryt; & we han y-seyn & bereþ wytnesse, þat þe Fader 15 haþ y-send his sone Sauyour of þe world. Who-euere þat knowlecheþ þat⁸ Iesu is Goddes sone, God dwelleþ in hym, & 16 he in God. And we han y-knowe & byleueþ þe charite þat God haþ in ous. God is charite; & who þat duelleþ in charyte 17 dwelleþ in God, & God in hym. In þis is charite parfyt in ous, þat we han trust in þe day of dome; for ryȝt as he is we 18 beþ in þis world. Drede ne is noȝt in charyte: bote parfyt

¹ C^m iv^m in the margin, S. ² spiryt repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

³ om. P. ⁴ fol. 31^b P. ⁵ an e in the margin, S. ⁶ owne P.

⁷ fol. 27^b S. ⁸ fol. 32 P.

charyte putteþ avey drede, for drede haþ peyne; & he þat dredeþ ne is noȝt parfyt in charite. And we loueþ God, for 19 he loued¹ ous raþer. ȝef eny man seiþ, þat he loueþ God, & 20 hateþ his broþer, he is a lyere: for he þat loueþ noȝt his broþer þat he seþ, how may he² loue God þat he seþ noȝt? & þis³ comaundement we han of God, þat he þat loueþ God 21 loue also his broþer.

Euerich⁴ man þat byleueþ þat Iesu Crist is, he is y-boren of God: & euerich man þat loueþ hym þat haþ bygeten loueþ hym þat is y-boren of God. In þis we knoweþ þat we loueþ hem þat beþ y-boren of God, when þat we loueþ God, & keþeþ his hestes. & þis is þe charyte of God, þat we kepen ȝis his comaundementes: & his comaundementes ne beþ noȝt heuy. For euerych þing⁵ þat is y-boren of God ouercomeþ þe 4 world: & þis is þe victorye þat ouercomeþ þe world, oure feiþ. & who ouercomeþ þe world, bote he⁶ þat byleueþ þat Iesu is 5 Goddes sone? ȝes comeþ by þe watyr & þe blod of Iesu 6 Crist; noȝt onlyche in watyr, bote in watyr & in blod. & þe⁷ spiryt bereþ wytnesse þat Crist is trewþe. For þer beþ þre 7 þat ȝeueþ wytnesse in hefne, þe Fader, & þe Sone, & þe Holy Spiryt: & ȝese þre beþ on. & þer beþ þre ȝat ȝeueþ 8 wytnesse in erþe, þe Spyrit, & blod, & watyr: & ȝese þre beþ on. & ȝef we han vnderfonge þe wytnesse of 9 men, þe wytnesse of God is muche gretter; & þis is þe wytnesse of God, þat is gretter, for he haþ y-bore wytnesse of his owene Sone. Who þat byleueþ in þe Sone, 10 he haþ þe wytnesse of God in hym-self: who þat byleueþ noȝt in þe Sone, he makeþ God a gabber; for he haþ y-bore wytnesse of his Sone. & þis is þe wytnesse, for God haþ 11 y-ȝeuuen ous an euerlastynge lyf, & þis lyf is in his Sone. Who þat haþ Goddes Sone haþ lyf; and who þat haþ noȝt 12 Goddes Sone ne haþ noȝt lyf⁸. ȝese þinges y wryte to ȝow, 13 þat ȝe knownen þat ȝe han an euerlastynge lyf, ȝe þat byleueþ in þe name of Goddes Sone. & þis is þe trust þat we han to 14

¹ loueþ P. ² he in the margin, S. ³ ȝes P. ⁴ C^m 5^m in the margin, S. ⁵ fol. 28 S. In P. man has been erased before þyng. ⁶ fol. 32^b P. ⁷ þo P. ⁸ and who þat haþ noȝt goddes sone ne haþ noȝt lyf omitted in P.

God, for whateuere we axeþ hym, we schuleþ vnderfongen it
 15 after his wylle, & he wole y-heren ous: & we¹ wyteþ wel þat
 he hereþ ous what-euere we axen hym, for we han oure
 16 axinges þat² we axeþ of hym. Who þat knoweþ his broþer³
 synne a synne noȝt to þe deþ, preye he, & þer schal ben
 y-graunted lyf to hym þat synneþ noȝt to þe deþ. & þer is
 17 synne to þe deþ: for þat y seye, no man preye. Euerich
 wykkednesse is synne, & þer is synne þat is noȝt to þe deþ.
 18 We knoweþ wel þat euerych man þat is y-boren of God ne
 synneþ noȝt; bote þe bygetyng of God kepeþ hym, & he þat
 19 is wykked ne⁴ schal noȝt touchen hym. And we knoweþ wel
 þat we beþ y-boren of God, & þat al þe world is y-set in hym
 20 þat is wykked. & we knoweþ þat⁵ Goddes [sone] com & haþ
 y-zeuen ous a wytt þat we knownen⁶ verrey God, & þat we
 ben in his verrey Sone. Þis is⁴ verrey God, & an euer-
 21 lastynge lyf. My smale children, kepe ȝe ȝow from mawmetes
 & symulacris. Here⁶ endeþ þe furste part of Johnys⁷
 pystelys, and ȝe secounde part bygynneþ.

II. JOHN.

þe⁸ eldere to a chosen lady & to here chyldren, þe whiche
 y loue in soþfastnesse; & not y alone, bote alle þat soþfast-
 2 nesse han knownen⁹; for þe soþfastnes þat in ȝou dwelleþ, &
 3 wiþ ous schal be wiþ-outen end. Wiþ ȝou b[e]¹⁰ grace, &
 mercy, & pees of God þe Fader, & of Iesu Crist, þe Sone of þe
 4 Fader, in soþfastnesse & charyte. Ych am wel gladud, for y
 haue founde of þi chyldren goynge in soþfastnes¹¹, as we haue
 5 taken comaundement of oure Fadur. And now, dame, y
 preye þe, not as wrytyng to þe a newe comaundement, but
 þat we haue had fro þe bygynnyng, þat eche of ous¹² loue
 6 oþer. & þat is charyte, þat we walken after his comaunde-
 mentys¹³. Þis is soþly þe comaundement, þat ryȝt as ȝe haue

¹ om. P.² fol. 33 P.³ fol. 28^b. Heading: Johannis ii. S.⁴ om. P.⁵ þat goddes...we knownen omitted, P.⁶ Here endeþ...

bygynneþ in red ink, P.

⁷ jonyes P.⁸ 2^a epistola in the margin of P.MS. D begins here fol. 77^b.⁹ y knownen P.¹⁰ by S.D., be P.¹¹ fol. 33^b P.¹² fol. 29.

Heading: Johannis iii. S.

¹³ de om. P.

fro þe bygynnyng, þat ȝe in hym schulde goo¹. For² many ȝ dysceyueres ȝeden forþ in-to þe world, þat ne knowlecheþ noȝt Iesu Crist in flesch haue come³. He þat soþly is noȝt a-knowe Iesu Crist haue comen in flesch, he is a disceyuere & Antecrist. Takeþ good heede to ȝow-selfe⁴, þat ȝe lese⁵ ȝ noȝt þat ȝe han wroȝt, but þat ȝe take ȝoure fulle mede. Wyte ȝe, þat eche þat goþ awey & dwelleþ not in þe lore of Crist, he⁶ haþ not God: who-so dwelleþ in his lore, he haþ boþe þe Fader & þe Sone. Who-so comeþ⁷ vnto ȝow, & io bryngeþ not wiþ hym þis⁸ lore⁹, ne wyle ȝe¹⁰ not resceyue hym in ȝoure hous¹¹, ne sey not heyl vnto hym: he þat¹² seiþ heyl ȝ to¹³ hym, he comuneþ with his wikked werkes¹⁴. Lo, y haue warned ȝow byfore, þat in þe day of oure¹⁵ Lord ȝe be noȝt confounded. Many þinges y haue to wryte vnto ȝow, bote y ȝ wolde not wryte hem by lettere ne by sendyng: for y suppose me come to ȝow, and speke with ȝow mouþ to mouþ, þat ȝoure ioye be full. Per greteþ þe wel ȝoure chosen þi ȝ suster douȝter. Þe¹⁶ grace of God be with þe. Amen.

III. JOHN.

þe¹⁷ eldere to dere frend Gayo¹⁸, þe whiche y loue in soþfastnes. Dere frend, of alle þinge y¹⁹ make my preyere in ȝ prosperity þat þou entre & wel-fare²⁰ as þi soule welfareþ. Gretly y am maked ful glad of breþeren þat comeþ & bere ȝ wytnes of²¹ þi soþfastnesse, as þou in soþfastnesse gost. More 4 grace haue y noȝt of þise, þan þat y here þat my sones go in soþfastnesse of charyte. My dere frend, feiþfully þou dost 5 what-so þou dost in oure breþeren, (þat is, anentys oure

¹ þat is, beyng him a-knowe in fulfillynge of his wille follows underlined, D.

² fol. 78 D. ³ þat is, þat he be verrey god & man follows underlined, D.

⁴ ȝoure selfe D. ⁵ lose D. ⁶ he (dotted out) precedes, S. ⁷ not (erased)

follows, D. ⁸ his D. ⁹ þat wile not lerne & fulfille it follows underlined

in red, D. ¹⁰ om. D. ¹¹ Followed by: þat is, receyue him not

underlined, D. ¹² For he þat D. has whoso soþly. ¹³ vnto D.

¹⁴ þat is assentip & is party of hem follows underlined, D. ¹⁵ ȝoure P.

¹⁶ fol. 34 S. ¹⁷ epistola 3a, C^m 1 P. ¹⁸ fren gayod P. ¹⁹ fol. 78^b D.

²⁰ welfare crossed through, D. ²¹ fol. 29^b. Heading: Johannys in

later hand, S.

6 breþeren) & þat in pylgrymes, þat bere wytnesse of þi charyte
 in þe syȝt of holy churche: þe whuche worþily þou ledest to
 7 God þoroȝ þi goode dede. Soþly for his name þei ȝede forþ,
 8 takynge no þing of gentyles. And þerfore suche we schulde
 9 vnderfonge, þat we beþ helperes to soþfastnesse¹. Y had
 wȝyte peraunter to þe churche: bote he, Diotropes, þat loueþ
 10 to bere prelacye in hem, ne resceyued not ȝow. þerfore, ȝef
 y come, y schal moue his werkes þat he doþ with wykked
 wordes, iangelynge in ȝow: & as þese þinges suffyce not to
 hym, ne he resceyued breþeren, & þei þat resceyueþ hem he
 11 forfendeþ, & putteþ hem out of churche. My dere broþer, ne
 be þou not folewere² of³ yuel, but þat þat⁴ good is. Who-so
 doþ wel, he is of God: who-so doþ yuele, he seþ not God⁵.
 12 To Demetrio wytnesse is y-ȝolde of alle goode men, & of
 trewþe: & we bere wytnesse of hym; & þou hast knowe þat
 13 oure wytnesse is trewe⁶. Many þinges y haue to wryte to þe,
 14 bote with lettere y wolde not sende it; For y trowe hastily to
 se þe, & mouþ to mouþ we schul speke. Pees be vn-to þe.
 ȝi frendes grete þe wel, & grete þou wel oure frendes by
 name. Here⁷ endeþ þe pylstel⁸ of Ion. Here⁹ bygynneþ þe
 pylstel of Iude.

JUDE.

Iudas, þe seruaunt of Iesu Crist, soþly¹⁰ Iames broþer, to
 hem þat beþ chose in God þe Fader, &¹¹ kept & cleped of
 2 Iesu Crist; mercy vnto ȝow & pees & charite be fulfylled.
 3 Dere frende¹² al¹³ bysynesse y haue don to wryte to¹⁴ ȝow of
 ȝoure comune hele: y haue nede to wryte vnto ȝou;
 preyng¹⁵ stalworþely to stryue aȝeyn synne in upholdynge of
 4 þe feiþ þat [was] on[es]¹⁶ taken to þe seyntes. Soþly þer beþ

¹ et cetera follows in D, which omits verses 9 and 10.² folweres D.³ fol. 34^b P.⁴ at D.⁵ seiþ nouȝt of God etc.

Verse 12 om. D.

⁶ trewþe P.⁷ Here endeþ...of Jude in red, P.D.⁸ pistelis D.⁹ fol. 30. Heading: Jude in a later hand, S.¹⁰ soþly expunged, S. om. P.¹¹ fol. 79 D.¹² frendes D.¹³ After al erasure of $\frac{3}{4}$ inch, S. al my D.¹⁴ vnto D.¹⁵ preyng in the margin, 1st corrector, S. om. D.¹⁶ In S.

onse with se on erasure. P has oweþ (crossed through) with only added above the line. onus D.

come¹ deceyuable men vnder ȝou², þe whiche weren sumtyme wryten byfore in þis dome of wykked³, ouer-puttynge þe grace of oure Lord Iesu Crist, & ȝaf hem vnto lecherrye⁴; & only hym þat hadde lordschupe & oure Lord Iesu Crist þei denied. Y wole a-moneste ȝou, one[s]⁵ knowyng alle ȝinges; for oure⁶ Lord⁷ Iesus saued þe peple of þe lond of Egypte, þe secounde tyme hem þat trowed not he loste⁸. þe 6 aungel soþly þat kepte not his princehede & his comaundementes⁹), bote forsoke his hous¹⁰, in þe grete dome of God, with euerlastynge bondys vnder derkenesse he locked hym. On þe same wyse þei synned in fornycacyoun, as dyde Sodom 7 & Gomorre & þe cytee of¹¹ fynytyme; & after oþer flesch þei ȝeden awey¹²; þei beþ ensample to suffre peyne of euerlastynge fuyr. On þe¹³ same wyse þei þat soþly þer flesch 8 defouled, despysynge God here Lord, & soþly his mageste þei blasphe[me]¹⁴. Whan Mychael þe archaungel, disputynge 9 wiþ þe deuel, fel at stryf of Moyses body, he durste¹⁵ not putte up-on hym þe dome of blasphemye¹⁶, bote seyde, God ouercome þe¹⁷. Soþly¹⁸ what-so-euere þei¹⁹ knoweþ not¹⁹ þei blasphemē: soþly what-so-euere²⁰ kyndely, as vnresonable bestes knoweþ²¹, in þise dedes þei beþ corrumped²².

Wo to hem þat ȝeden in þe weye of Caym, & with errour 11 of Balaam beþ ȝote oute þoroȝ mede²³, and þoroȝ þe ȝeyn-

¹ sumtyme, crossed out, follows, S. schul come sum tyme D. ² D adds: as þei were religiouse & hadde take þe feiþ underlined. ³ þat is, þorow prophetis it was tolde & wryte þat suche wikked schulde come as I it vndurstonde follows underlined, D.

⁴ þat is, þei lefte þe grace of god & ȝaf hem to lecherrye & oþer lustus underlined, D. ⁵ P.D; one changed into onse by a later hand, S. ⁶ fol. 35 P. ⁷ louerd D. ⁸ þat is, suffered hem to be lost follows underlined, D. ⁹ & his comawndementis underlined in D.

¹⁰ hous euesynge D. ¹¹ om. D. An e in the margin, S. Cf. Vulgate: et finitimae civitates. ¹² þat is, aftur wommans flesche & mannys follows underlined on fol. 79^b, D. ¹³ om. P. ¹⁴ P; me left out, S.

¹⁵ fol. 30^b S. ¹⁶ blaspheme in D, followed by þat is, ȝeue þe dome of blaspheme underlined. ¹⁷ or comaunde þe added underlined, D. ¹⁸ soþly þei D. ¹⁹ D. reads þei be þat knoweþ not Crist. ²⁰ who so euere D.

²¹ knoweth not. Then underlined, þat is, whoso doþ his synne as þe bestus done, & leueþ þe doyng of man, & wile not knowe it, D. ²² Followed by

þat is (underlined) defouled, D. Cm ii in the margin, P. ²³ þat is, haue assentyd to erroure for mede follows underlined, D.

12 seyenge of Chore þei peryscheden¹. þese it beþ þat in here
 metis beþ defouled, in feestynge, fedyng² hem-selue with-
 oute drede: cloudes with-outen watyr, þat with wyndes beþ
 bore aboute; vnfruytful heruest trees þat no fruyt bereþ,
 13 twyes deede þei ben, & drawen up by þe rootes; þe flobes of
 þe woode³ see, spewynge here confusyoun; errynge⁴ sterres,
 to⁵ þe whuche þe storme of derkenesse⁶ is kept with-outen
 14 ende. Of þese prophecyede þe seueþe⁷ fro Adam, Ennoch,
 & seyde, Ecce⁸ Dominus venit in sanctis milibus suis etc.
 Lo, oure Lord schal come in his þousandys of his seyntes,
 15 for-to make dome aȝeyn alle yuel⁹, & forto aresoun¹⁰ alle
 wykked of alle þe dedis of here wykkednesse þe whuche
 16 men & wykked aȝeyns God¹¹ haue spoken. þese beþ
 gruccheres¹², pleynners¹², þat walken aftur here desyres, &
 here mouþ spekeþ pryd, merueylynge persones by cause of
 17 wynnyng¹³. ȝe soþly, my breþeren, haueþ mynde of wordes¹⁴,
 þat beþ byfore spoken of þe posteles¹⁵ of oure Lord Iesu Crist;
 18 þe¹⁶ whuche seyde to ȝow, þat in þe laste tyme schulen come
 bygylours, wandrynge after þer desyres in [wykkednesse]¹⁷.
 19 þes ben þei þat departen hem-self best[ys]ch¹⁸, & han not þe
 20 Holy Gost. ȝe soþly, my dere breþeren, house ȝoure-selfen.
 &¹⁹ grounde ȝou holyly of verrey feiþ, preyenge in þe Holy
 21 Gost, kepynge ȝoure-seluen in þe loue of God, abydynge þe
 22 mercy of oure Lord Iesu Crist in-te euerlastynge lyf. & hem
 23 soþly þat be demed blame ȝe; sauē hem²⁰ forsoþe, rauyschynge
 hem oute of fyre; hauynge mercy to oþere in drede hatynge²¹
 24 þat foule cote²² þe whuche is fleschly. Soþly to hym þat is

¹ þat is, þorow þe same ȝeynseyinge perischid þei follows underlined, D.
² fol. 35^b P. ³ om. D. ⁴ fol. 80 D. ⁵ þorow D. ⁶ derkenesses D.

⁷ seuenþe D. ⁸ ecce...etc. in red ink, P. Underlined, D. An e in the margin, S. ⁹ reson D. ¹⁰ u in wrouȝte inserted above the line, S.

¹¹ him D. ¹² playntful of querelys D. Vulgate: murmuratores querulosi.

¹³ þat is, preysyng & worschupynge mennys persones for hauynge, follows underlined, D. ¹⁴ þese wordis D. ¹⁵ apostelus D. ¹⁶ fol. 31 S.

¹⁷ P. in uikdenes in the margin, 1st corrector's hand, S. not in goode
 religioun D. Cf. Vulg. in impietatis. ¹⁸ bestlech with lech on
 erasure in a later hand, S. bestelych P. bestialis D. ¹⁹ fol. 36 P.

²⁰ fol. 80^b D. ²¹ hatynge (crossed through) precedes, D. ²² cyte D.

myȝty to kepe ȝou with-outen synne & for-to ordeyne ȝow by-fore þe syȝt of his glorye, vnsyled in ioye in þe comynge of oure Lord Iesu Crist, only to God oure Sauyour by Iesu ²⁵ Crist, to oure Lord b[e]¹ glorye & worschupe & gret lord-schupe & power byfore al þe worlde & now in alle þe worldes. Amen².

“Suster, þus han Cristes princypal apostolus Petur and Iames & Ion & Iude y-wryten to þe pepel, to techen hem how þei schulden lyuen vertuouslyche, in forsakynge þe lykynges of þe worlde & þe lykynges of þe flesch, as Crist techeþ in þe gospel.” “Broþer, y seo wel þat þese apostoles ⁵ techeþ þe pepel as Crist techeþ in þe gospel, bote neþeles, broþer, þese apostelys weren y-ordeynyd to techen þe chyldren of Israel & þe Iewes, & we beþ noȝt of þe chyldren of Israel, for oure auncetres weren³ heþen men þat weren y-turned to byleuen in Crist by Poul þe apostel; & þerfore y preye þe⁴, ¹⁰ telle me what manere he tauȝte men to lyue, when he hade y-turned hem from here fals byleue. For sum men seyn þat Crist and his oþer apostoles tauȝten hure parfyt techynge to þe chyldren of Israel, þat God hade rafþer y-tauȝt by Moyses & oþer prophetes; & þei seyn þat it is y-nouȝ for ous to ¹⁵ byleuen in Crist, & ben y-folewed, & þanne we schulleþ ben y-saued. & þerfore, broþer, y preye þe þat þou telle me wheþer þat Poule, þat wes a postel of mys-beleued men, tauȝte hem eny þing ellys þan to byleuen in Crist, & ben y-folewed in his name.” “Suster⁵, þou schalt vnderstonde þat ²⁰ Poule wryteþ many epystoles to dyuerse men þat he turned to þe byleue, how þei schulen byleuen, & how þei schulleþ lyuen; bote y ne may noȝt at þis tyme wryte to þe alle his pystoles as þei stondeþ; bote naþeles, zef it be Goddus wylle, þou schalt habbe hem heraftur. Bote suster, þu schalt vnder- ²⁵ stonden þat seynt Poule techeþ þre þinges in his pystoles: on þing is þat þei byleuen in Iesu Crist, þat is Goddes sone & sauyour of mankynde, þat come to sauue synful men, þoroȝ grace & þoroȝ mercy, þat byleueþ in hym; & so Seynt Poule

¹ by S.P.D.

² MS. D ends here.

³ fol. 36^b P.

⁴ fol. 31^b S.

⁵ sustester S.

techeþ þe pepel þat it is noȝt nedful for cristen men to kepe
 þe poyntes¹ of þe olde lawe, as summe Iewes seyden in his
 tyme to þe pepel, þat þei ne myȝte noȝt ben y-iustifyed of
 hure synnes in byleuynge in Crist, bote ȝef þei kepten
 5 Moyses lawe, as circumsysyoun and suche oþer poyntes of þe
 lawe. Bote seynt Poule techeþ² in his pystele þat no man
 was y-iustifyed of his synne by þe lawe. Bote Crist in his
 comyng haþ y-geten men forȝeuenesse of hure synnes of his
 fader; & so alle þilke men han forȝ[e]fnesse of hure synnes
 10 þat byleueþ in³ Iesu Crist, & so men beþ y-iustifyed of hure
 synnes, þoroȝ grace in byleuynge in Crist, & noȝt þoroȝ
 kepyng þe werkes of þe lawe. For seynt Poule seyþ þat þe
 lawe ne was but a schadewe, þat broȝte no man to per-
 feccyoun. þe þridde þing þat Poule techeþ is how men
 15 schulleþ forsake synne in kepyng Cristes lawe of charite,
 & of þis poynt, suster⁴, þoroȝ Goddes grace ich wole telle þe
 what he seiþ in his pisteles, & of þe oþer poyntes when ich
 haue gretter leyser wiþ þe grace of God⁵."

ROMANS.

5 19 Seynt⁶ Poule wryteþ to þe Romaynes⁷, & seiþ, Ryȝt as [by]⁸
 þe vnboxumnesse of on man many men beþ y-maad synful
 men, so by þe boxumnesse of on man many men beþ y-maad
 20 riȝtful men. & þe lawe entred in, þat sinne⁹ were in plente¹⁰;
 but þere as sunne was in plente, grace was in more plente:
 21 þat, riȝt as sunne regned in-to deþ, so grace schulde regne
 þorowȝ riȝtfulnessse in-to an euerelastyng lyf, by Iesu Crist
 6 1 oure Lord. What þanne schulde we seye¹¹? Schulle we ȝet
 2 dwelle stille in sunne, þat grace be plenteuous? God forbede.
 For we þat beþ dede to sunne, how schulde we ȝit dwelle
 3 stille in sunne? Bryþeren, wheþer ȝe ne knowe noȝt þat

¹ fol. 37 P.² fol. 32 S.³ on P.⁴ suster nearly effaced, S.⁵ The rest of the page and the whole of fol. 32^b are blank, S. ⁶ fol. 37^b P; fol. 33 S, with heading *romaynes* in the first corrector's hand. ⁷ *romanyes* P.⁸ *by* inserted above the line, P. ⁹ summe P. ¹⁰ n expunged, S.¹¹ *What...seye* underlined with *Rom. 6* written in a late hand in the margin, S.

whuche of ous beþ y-baptized in Crist we beþ y-baptized in his deþ? For we beþ y-beryed to-gedere wiþ hym þorowȝ 4 þaptysme in-to deþ: þat ryȝt as Crist a-ros up from deþ to lyf þorowȝ þe blisse of his Fader, ryȝt so walke we in a newe manere of lyfynge. And ȝif we beþ y-plaunted to-geder & 5 i-mad to þe lyknesse of his deþ, we schuleþ ben also to-geder in þe lyknesse of his rysyng aȝeyn from deþ to lyf: knowynge 6 þis¹ þing, þat oure olde man is cruceyfyed, þat þe body of sunne be destroyed, þat her-aftur we ne serue noȝt to sunne; for he þat dyed is y-iustified from sunne. & ȝif we beþ dede 7,8 wiþ Crist, we byleueþ þat we schulleþ lyuen also wiþ² hym; knowynge þat Crist þat aros up from deþ to lyf ne dyeþ noȝt 9 nowþe; ne deþ schal neuere her-after haue lordschupe up-on hym. For þat he dyed ones, he dyed to sunne: but þat he io lyueþ, he lyueþ to God. & so trowe ȝe, þat ȝe ȝowself been 11 dede to sunne & lyuynge to God in oure³ Lord Iesu Crist. & þerfore ne⁴ regne þere no sunne in ȝoure dedlyche body, 12 þat ȝe ben boxum to his coueytynges; & ne ȝeue ȝe noȝt 13 ȝoure membris to ben armer of wikkednesse to sunne; but ȝeþ ȝow-selfen to God as lyuynge men of dede men, & ȝoure membrys armer of riȝtfulnesse to God. For sunne ne schal 14 noȝt haue lordschupe in ȝow her-aftur: for ȝe beþ noȝt vnder lawe, but vnder grace. What þanne? Schulle we don 15 sunne, for we beþ noȝt vnder lawe but vnder grace? God forbede. Wheþer ȝe ne knoweþ noȝt, þat to hym þat ȝe ȝeþ 16 ȝow-selfen to ben seruautes, to ben buxum to hym, his seruautes ȝe beþ to whom ȝe beþ boxum; wheþer it be of sunne to deþ, oþer of boxumnesse to riȝtfulnesse. & I þonke 17 God, þat ȝe habbeþ y-ben seruautes of sunne, but nowþe ȝe han obeysched of herte in-to þat forme of techynge, þat ȝe beþ now y-take to; & ȝe beþ y-maad fre of sunne & 18 seruauntis of riȝtfulnesse. Y seye⁵ þing þat parteyneþ to man 19 for þe infirmitate of ȝoure flesche: for riȝt as ȝe han y-ȝefen ȝoure membres for-to serfen to⁶ vncleanness & to wickednesse in-to sunne: so ȝeueþ ȝe nowþe ȝowre membres for-to seruen to riȝtfulnesse in-to holynes. For whanne ȝe weren seruauntis 20

¹ þis twice S.P. ² fol. 38 P. ³ ȝoure P. ⁴ fol. 33^b Heading:
Romanes in a late hand throughout, S. ⁵ seyen S.P. ⁶ fol. 38^b P.

21 of sunne, þe weren fre of riȝtfulnesse. What fruyt had ȝe
 þanne in þilke þinges, in þe whuche þinges ȝe beþ aschamed
 22 nowþe? for þe ende of hem is deþ. But nowþe ȝe beþ
 y-maad fre of sunne, and seruautes to God, & ȝe han ȝoure
 23 fruyt holynesse, & þe ende þerof an euerlastynge lyf. For þe
 mede of sunne is deþ; but þe grace of God is an euerlastynge
 lyf in Iesu Crist oure Lord.

7 1 Wheþer¹ ȝe ne knoweþ noȝt, breþeren, for to þilke þat
 knoweþ þe lawe y speke, for as longe as a man lyfeþ
 2 þe lawe haþ lordschupe on hym. For a womman þat is
 vnder here housbonde whyles þat hure housbonde lyfeþ heo²
 is y-bounde to þe lawe; but ȝif hure housbonde be deed, he
 3 is delyuered from þe lawe of hure housbonde. þanne, whyles
 hure housbonde lyfeþ, he schal be cleped a spousebrekere
 ȝif he be wiþ an oþer man: bote ȝif hure housbonde be
 ded, heo is delyfered from þe lawe of hure housbonde, þat
 heo² ne³ be noȝt y-cleped a spousebrekere, þauȝ heo² be wiþ
 4 an oþer man. & so, breþeren, ȝe beþ y-maad ded to þe lawe
 by þe body of Crist; þat ȝe ben of anoþer þat ros up from
 5 deþ to lyfe, þat ȝe schulden make⁴ fruyt to God. For whan
 we weren in þe flesch, þe passyones of sunnes, þat weren
 6 þoroȝ þe lawe, wroȝten in oure membres þat we schulden
 make oure fruyt to [deþ]⁵. Bote we beþ now vnbouneden
 from þe lawe of deþ in whom we weren y-holden, so þat
 7 we serfen in þe neweschupe of þe spyryt, & noȝt in þe
 oldenesse of þe letter. What schulle we seye þanne? þe
 lawe is sunne? God forbede. But y⁶ knewe no sunne bote
 þoroȝ þe lawe: for y knew noȝt coueytyse, bote for as muche
 8 as þe lawe sayde, þou ne schalt not coueyte: & so in takynge
 an occasyon by þe comaundement of þe lawe, sunne haþ
 y-wroȝt in me eferiche couetyse: for wiþ-outen lawe sunne
 9 was ded. & ych lefed sumtyme wiþ-outen lawe: bote
 whanne⁷ þat þe comaundement of þe lawe was y-come, sunne
 10 lyfed aȝeyn, bote ich was ded; & so þe comaundement, þat
 11 was y-founde to lyf, it was to þe deþ: for in takynge an

¹ fol. 34 S.

² ȝe P.

³ om. P.

⁴ fol. 39 P.

⁵ om. S.P.

⁶ we crossed through and y added above the line, P.

⁷ bote whanne

crossed through, P.

occasyon¹ sunne þorowȝ þe comaundement bygyled me, & þoroȝ it slouȝ me. & so ȝit þe lawe is holy, & þe comaundement holy, & riȝtful, & good. What þanne, þat þing þat was 13 good to me it was y-maad deþ? God forbede. But sunne, þat² it seme s[u]nne, þorowȝ þat þing þat was] good wroȝte deþ to me: þat [sunne] be [y-]made [sunge] abo[u]e maner² þoroȝ þe comaundement. & we knoweþ þat þe lawe is 14 spyrytual³: & ich fleschlyche [&]⁴ sold⁵ vndur sunne. For þat 15 þing þat ich worche, y ne vnderstonde noȝt: for þat þing þat is good & þat ich haue wille to⁶, þat y ne do noȝt; bote þat þing þat is yfel & þat ich haue y-hated, þat ich do. And ȝif 16 ich do þat þing þat y wole noȝt do, ich assente to þe lawe þat he[o]ȝ⁷ is⁸ good. Bote now y ne worche it noȝt, bote þe 17 sunne þat dwelleþ in me. For I wot wel þat it dwelleþ noȝt 18 in me, þat is to seye, in my flesche, þat þing þat is good: & so wille falleþ to me, bote y ne fynde noȝt to parfome þat þyng þat is good. For þat good þat ich wolde, y ne do noȝt: 19 bote þat efel þat y nolde noȝt⁹, þat y do. & ȝif y do þat þing 20 þat y nole noȝt, y ne worche noȝt⁹ þat¹⁰, bote þe¹¹ sunne þat dwelleþ in me. & þerfore y fynde a lawe to me þat wol do 21 good, for efyl falleþ to me¹². & ich haue delyt to þe lawe of 22 good aftur myn in-ward man: bote y seo an oþer lawe in my 23 membres, þat aȝeynstondeneþ þe lawe of my þoȝt, & makeþ me y-take in þe lawe of sunne þat is in my membres. & who 24 schal delyuere me þat am an vncely man from þe body of þis deþ? þe grace of God þoroȝ oure Lord Iesu Crist. & þerfore 25 ich my-selfe serfe in my þouȝt to þe lawe of God; & in my flesche to þe lawe of sunne.

And¹³ þerfore þer ne is¹⁴ no þing of dampnacyon to þese þat 1 8 beþ in Iesu Crist, þat walkeþ noȝt after þe flesche. For þe 2

¹ fol. 34^b S. ² þat it seme synne, þoru goode haþ wrouȝt to me deþ, þat synne be made synnyng abowe maner in a later hand on erasure, S. þat schulde seme sunne þorw þat þing þat was good wroȝte deþ to me þat me be y maad sunge abowe maner sunne P. Cf. *Vulg.* ut fiat supra modum peccans peccatum per mandatum. ³ fol. 39^b P. ⁴ & P; am in a later hand on erasure, S. ⁵ y sold P. ⁶ do P. ⁷ her with r in late hand on erasure, S. heo P. ⁸ of god (crossed out) follows, P. ⁹ nat þat y do... worche nat in the lower margin, P. ¹⁰ nauȝt þat P. ¹¹ þat P.

¹² men P. In S the mark of shortening on e erased. ¹³ fol. 40 P, fol. 35 S.

¹⁴ e is on erasure, S.

lawe of þe spiryt of lyf in Crist haþ delyfered me from þe
 3 lawe of sunne & of deþ. For þat þat was inpossyble to þe
 lawe, in þe whuche þing man was y-maad sek þoroþ þe flesche,
 God sende his Sone in þe lykenesse of þe flesche of sunne, &
 4 of sunne he dampned sunne in flesch: þat þe iustifyenge of
 þe lawe were fulfulled in ous, þat walkeþ noȝt aftur þe flesch,
 5 bote aftur þe spiryt. For þilke þat beþ¹ aftur þe flesch
 safereþ þilke þinges þat beþ of þe flesch; but þilke þat beþ
 6 aftur þe spiryt feleþ þilke þinges þat beþ of þe spiryt. For þe
 wisdom of þe flesch is deþ; bote þe wysdom of þe spiryt is lyf
 7 & pes: for þe wysdom of þe flesch is enemye to God: for
 þe lawe of God heo ne is noȝt soget, ne may not ben soget:
 8,9 & þilke þat beþ in þe flesch ne mowe not plese God. & ȝe ne
 beþ noȝt in þe flesch bote in þe spiryt, ȝif þat þe Spiryt of God
 dwelleþ in ȝow. & who þat haþ noȝt þe spiryt of Crist, he ne
 10 is noȝt of hym. & ȝif þat Crist is in ȝow, þanne is þe body
 11 deed for sunne; but þe spiryt lyueþ for iustificacyoun. And
 ȝif² þe Spiryte of hym þat a-rered up Iesu Crist from deþ to
 lyfe dwelle in ȝow, he þat arered up Iesu Crist from deþ to
 lyfe schal quykene ȝoure dedlyche bodyes for his Spiryt þat
 12 dwelleþ in ȝow. & þerfore, breþeren, we beþ dettoures, noȝt
 13 to þe flesch, þat we lyfen aftur þe flesch. For ȝif ȝe lyfþ
 aftur þe flesch ȝe schuleþ deyzen; bote ȝef ȝe sleþ þe werkes
 14 of þe flesch þorowþ þe spiryt, ȝe schuleþ lyfen. For who-
 euere beþ y-maad þorowþ þe spiryt of God, þei beþ Godes
 15 chyldren. For ȝe ne hafeþ noȝt vnderfongen þe spiryt of³
 þraldom eftsones in drede; bote ȝe haueþ vnderfongen þe
 spirit of þe bygetyng of children, in þe whuche spirit we
 16 crieþ to God oure Fadur. For þat Spirit ȝefeþ witnesse to
 17 oure spirit, þat we beþ Godes children: and ȝef we beþ
 children & eyres, we beþ eyres of God, & eyres wiþ Crist; ȝif
 it is so þat we suffreþ to-gedere, þat we ben y-gloryfyed
 18 to-gydere. & I trowe þat þe suffrynges of þis tyme ne beþ
 noȝt worþi to þe blisse þat schal be schewed in ous her-aftur.
 19 For þe abydyng of creature abydeþ þe schewenge of Goddis
 20 children. For eferich creature is soget to vanyte, noȝt wil-
 fullyche, bote for hym⁴ þat haþ y-maad hure soget in hope:

¹ an e in the margin, S.

² fol. 40^b P.

³ fol. 35^b S.

⁴ fol. 41 P.

For þat creature schal be delifered from þe þraldom of 21
 corruptyoun in-to þe fredom of þe blisse of Godes chyldren.
 & we knoweþ þat eferech creature makeþ waymentacyoun 22
 nowþe. Noȝt onlyche heo, bote we also, þat habbeþ þe furste- 23
 fruytes of þe Spirit, we makeþ waymentacioun wiþ-ynne
 ous-self, abydyng þe bygetynge of Godes children, & þe
 for-buggynge of oure body. & þorow hope¹ we beþ y-safed: 24
 For hope þat is y-seye ne is non hope: for þat þing þat
 a man seþ he ne hopeþ noȝt. & ȝif we hope þing þat we 25
 se noȝt, þoroȝ pacyence we abydeþ þat þyng. & þe Spirit 26
 also helpeþ oure infirmyte: for we ne koneþ noȝt preyen as
 it byhoseþ; but þe Spiryt preyeþ for ous þoroȝ sykynges þat
 mowe noȝt ben y-told; and he þat sercheþ hertes knoweþ 27
 what þe Spirit desyreþ, þat þoroȝ God preyeþ for seyntes. & 28
 we knoweþ þat to þilke þat lofeþ God alle þinges worcheþ
 to-gedere in-to good, to þese men þat beþ aftur hure purpos
 y-cleped holy men. For² þilke he knew by-fore & ordeyned 29
 by-fore to ben y-confermed to þe ymage of his Sone, þat he be
 þe furste bygete sone in many breþeren: & þilke þat he 30
 ordeyned by-fore, þilke he haþ y-cleped: & þilke þat he haþ
 y-cleped, þilke he haþ y-iustyfyed³: & þilke þat he haþ
 y-iustifyed, þilke he haþ y-magnyfyed. What schulde we seye 31
 þanne⁴? ȝif God is wiþ ous, who is aȝeyns ous? & he ne 32
 spared⁵ noȝt his owne Sone, bote ȝef hym for alle ous, & how
 ne he⁶ haþ noȝt y-zeuen ous alle þinges wiþ hym? & who 33
 schal accusen aȝeyn hem þat beþ y-chosen of God? God þat
 iustifyeþ⁷; who is he þat schal demen? Iesu Crist þat dyed, 34
 & ros al-so from deþ to lyfe, & is on þe riȝtsyde of God, &
 preyeþ also for ous. Who schal þanne departen ous from þe 35
 charite of Crist? tribulacyoun, oþer angwysch, oþer hunger,
 oþer persecucyoun, oþer nakedschep, oþer pereyle, oþer swerd?
 As it is wryten, For þe we beþ y-slawe al day; & me⁸ weneþ 36
 þat we ben scheep of sleynge. But in alle þese þinges we 37
 ofercomeþ for hym þat lofed ous. & ich am certeyn, þat 38
 nowþer deþ, ne lyf, ne angeles, ne princypaltees, ne vertues,
 ne þinges þat beþ nowþe, ne þinges þat schulleþ ben her-

¹ þe hope P. ² fol. 36 S. ³ y- om. S. fol. 41^b P. ⁴ þanne seye P.

⁵ spareþ P. ⁶ he ne P. ⁷ iustyfyed P. ⁸ men P.

39 aftur, ne strengþe, ne hyzenesse, ne depnesse¹, ne non oþer creature, may departen ous from þe charite of God, þat is in oure Lord Iesu Crist.

12 1 I preyze ȝow, breþeren, by þe mercy of God, þat ȝee ȝefen ȝoure bodyes a sacrifice, lyfynge & holy, & plesynge to God, 2 & ȝoure seruyse resonabel. & ne be ȝe noȝt conformed² to þis world: bote be ȝe y-schaped a-ȝeyn in þe worschup of ȝowre wyt, þat ȝe knownen³ whiche be þe wille of God, þat is 3 good & wel plesynge & parfite. & I seye, þoroȝ þe grace of God þat is y-ȝefe me, to alle þilke þat beþ among ȝow, þat ȝe ne safereþ no more þan it byhofeþ ȝow to saferen; bote þat ȝe saferen to sobernesse, & eferych man as God haþ departed 4 to hym þe mesure of bylefe. For ryȝt as we han in on body many membres, & ȝet alle þe⁴ membres ne habbeþ noȝt on 5 doyng: riȝt so we beþ on body in Crist⁵, & eferichone of ous 6 membres of oþer. & we þat han dyuerse ȝiftes after þe grace þat is y-ȝeue to ous, as prophecye aftur þe resoun of þe feiþ; 7 oþer seruyse in serfynge; oþer he þat techeþ, in techynge; 8 he þat warneþ, in warnynge; he þat ȝeldeþ, in sympelnesse; he þat is byfore, in bysynesse; he þat a-reweþ an oþer, in 9 gladnesse. B[e]c⁶ þer lofe wiþowten feynynge. & hate ȝe 10 efel, & draweþ ȝow to goode. & lofe ȝe to-geder, & hafe ȝe charite of breþerhede; & go ȝe byfore worschupynge eferich- 11 one oþer; noȝt slowe in bysynesse; feruent in spirit; serfynge 12 oure Lord; ioyenge in hope; suffrynge in tribulacyoun; 13 bysy to preyere; comunyng to þe nedynesse of holy men; & 14 folewe⁷ ȝe herborewyng. Blesse ȝe to þilke þat purseweþ 15 ȝow; blesse ȝe, & ne curse ȝe noȝt⁸. Ioye ȝe wiþ hem þat 16 ioyeþ; & wepe ȝe wiþ hem þat wepeþ. & fele ȝe to-gedere in-to þe same ȝinge, noȝt saferynge hyȝe ȝinges, but assentyng to humel ȝinges. & ne wilne ȝe noȝt to ben wyse men to- 17 fore ȝow-self; noȝt ȝeldynge to eny man efel for efel, but bysyng ȝe to don goode ȝinges noȝt onlyche to-fore God, but 18 also to-foren alle men; noȝt defendynge ȝow-selfe, bote ȝefe ȝe place to wraþþe: for it is y-wryten, God saiþ⁹, to me þe

¹ es on erasure, S. ² fol. 42 P. ³ fol. 36^b S. ⁴ For alle þe P has many. ⁵ on body in Crist repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁶ by S.P.

⁷ fo on erasure, S.

⁸ fol. 42^b P.

⁹ fol. 37 S.

veniaunce; & ych wole zelden aȝeyn. & ȝif þyn enemy be 20
an-hungred, fede hym; &¹ ȝif he be a-þrust², ȝef hym drynke:
For doyng þese þinges þou schalt gedere to-geder coles of
fuyr up-on his hed. Ne be þou ofercome of efel, bote in 21
goode ofercome þou efel.

Euerich³ soule be soget⁴ to poweres þat beþ hyȝere þan 1 13
heo: for þer ne is no power bote of God; & þilke þinges þat
beþ, of God þei beþ y-ordeyned. And þerfore who þat a-ȝeyn- 2
stondeþ geteþ dampnacyoun to hemselfen. For princes ne 3
beþ noȝt to drede of goode werkes, bote of efel werkes. &
ȝif þou wolt noȝt drede a power, do good, & þou schalt haue
preysynge þer-of. For he is Godes serfaunt to þe in good. 4
& ȝif þou dost efel, þan drede þou: for wiþ-outen enchesoun
he ne bereþ noȝt⁵ his swerd: for he is Goddes serfaunt,
wracchful in wraþþe to þilke þat doþ efel. & þerfore algates 5
be ȝe sogettes, noȝt onlyche for wraþþe, bote also for con-
ciense. For þerfore ȝe zeueþ trybut; for þei beþ Goddes 6
serfautes, serfynge for þis þing. & þerfore ȝelde ȝe to alle 7
men ȝoure dettes: to hym þat ȝe schuleþ drede, dred; & to hym þat ȝe
oweþ worschup, worschup⁶. Ne owe ȝe no þing to no man, 8
bote þat ȝe lofen to-gedere: for he þat lofeþ his neyȝe-
bore fulfulleþ þe lawe. For, þou ne schalt noȝt breke 9
spoushod, þou ne scha[ll]t noȝt sleen, þou ne schalt noȝt stele,
þou ne schalt seye no fals wyttnesse, þou ne schalt noȝt
coueyte þi neyȝebore good, &⁷ ȝif þer be eny oþer comaunde-
ment, it is y-vnderstonde in þis word, þou schalt loue þi 10
nexte⁸ neyȝebore as þi-selfe. þe loue of a mannes nexte⁸
neyȝebore ne worcheþ non euel: an þerfore⁹ þe fulnesse of þe
lawe is loue. & knowe ȝe þis tyme, for it is now tyme to 11
rysen up from sleep: for oure hele is ner now þan we wenden
þat it were. þe nyȝt is passed, & þe day wole neyȝlyche: & 12
þerfore þrowe we a-wey werkes of derkenesse¹⁰, & be we cloþed

¹ & om. P.

² a þurst P.

³ Rom. 13 chap. in a late hand, S.

⁴ be soget repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁵ fol. 43 P. ⁶ dominica
quarta post octavam epiphanie in the margin in a xvi century hand, S.

⁷ fol. 37^b. Heading: *Corynthes* in a late hand throughout the epistles, S.

⁸ nexte expunged, S. ⁹ þer on erasure, S. ¹⁰ fol. 43^b P.

13 wiþ armer of lyȝt. & walke we honestlyche as in day-tyme,
noȝt in etynge out of mesure, ne in dronkenesse, ne in
kouchynges abedde, ne in vnclannessse, ne in struyng, ne in
14 hatynge. Bote be ȝe y-cloþed wiþ oure Lord Iesu¹. ȝus,
suster, seynt Poule wryteþ to þe Romaynes², how þei schuleþ
lyuen þat bylueþ in Crist.

I. CORINTHIANS.

1 10 And³ to þe Corynthes he wryteþ, & seiþ, Breþeren, y prey
ȝow by þe name of oure Lord Iesu Crist, þat ȝe suggen on
þing, & þat þer ben none dyuysyones among ȝow; bote be ȝe
11 parfyt in on wyt & in on cunnyng. For it is y-tolde me þat
12 þer beþ struynges among ȝow. & y ne sugge bote þat, þat
euerichone of ȝow saiþ, Ich am of Poule; & ych am of
13 Apollo⁴; & ich am of Petur; & ich am of Crist. ȝanne is
Crist departed? Wheþer Poule were y-don on þe cros for
ȝow? oþer wheþer ȝe weren⁵ y-baptized in þe name of Poule?
14 & y þonke God þat y ne haue noȝt y-baptized none of ȝow,
15 bote Crispen & Gayen; lest eny man sugge, þat ȝe ben
16 y-baptized in my name. Safe ich baptized⁶ Stephanies
houshold, & y ne knewe no mo þat ych haue y-baptized.
17 For Crist ne⁷ sende noȝt me for to baptize, bote for-to preche
þe gospel: noȝt in þe wysdom of wordes, þat þe cros of Crist
18 ne be noȝt y-voyded⁸ a-wey. For þe word of þe cros to þilke
þat perescheþ⁹ is foly; bote to þilke þat beþ y-safed, as to
19 ous, it is þe vertu of God. For it is y-wryten, Ych wole
dystruye¹⁰ þe wysdom of wyse men, & ych wole reprefe þe
20 redynesse of redy men. Where¹¹ is þe wyse man? where¹²
þe makere of þe lawe? where þe getere¹³ of þe worlde¹⁴? ne
21 haþ noȝt God mad þe wysdom of þis world folye? & for þat
þe world in wysdom ne knew not God þorowȝ wysdom, it wes

¹ crist follows, P.² romanyes P.³ Corynthes in the margin,

1st corr. S.

⁴ y am of apollo repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.⁵ weren ȝe P.⁶ fol. 38 S.⁷ om. P.⁸ fol. 44 P.⁹ percheþ P.

An e in the margin, S.

¹⁰ dystroye repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.¹¹ Wheþer P.¹² were P.¹³ gretere P.¹⁴ worde P.

plesynge to God by foly of prechynge maken hem saf þat byleueþ. For Iewes secheþ sygnes, & Grekes secheþ wysdom: ²² bote we precheþ Crist þat is y-crucyfyed, þat is sclaundre¹ to ²³ þe Iewes, & foly to oþer mysbylefed men; bote to þilke þat ²⁴ beþ y-cleped, boþe Iewes & Grekes, we precheþ Crist þe wysdom of God, and þe vertue of God. For þat þat is folye ²⁵ of God it is wiser þan men; &² þat is febel of God is strengere þan man. &, bryþeren, y-seo³ þe ȝoure clepynge, for ²⁶ nouþer mony⁴ wyse men aftur þe flesch, ne mony myȝty men, ne mony nobel men: bote þilke þinges þat beþ foly of þe ²⁷ worlde God ches, to confounde wyse men; & febel þinges of þe worlde God ches, to confounde stronge þinges; & þilke ²⁸ þinges þat weren noȝt nobel, but dispised of þe worlde, God chees, and⁵ þilke þinges⁶ þat beþ noȝt, to distruye þilke þinges þat beþ: þat eferich flesch ne reioysche hym noȝt ²⁹ in his siȝt. Bote of hym ȝe beþ in Iesu Crist, þat is y-mad ³⁰ wysdom to ous of God, & riȝtfulnesse, & holynesse, & forbuggyng: þat, as it is y-wryte, He þat ioyeþ. ioye he in ³¹ God.

And⁷, bryþeren, whan þat ich com to ȝow, y ne come noȝt ¹ **2** yn hyȝenesse of wordis ne of wysdom, schewenge to ȝow þe wyȝenesse of Crist. For ich demed þat y ne knewe no þing ² a-mong ȝow, bote Iesu Crist y-crucifyed. And ich wes ³ a-mong ȝow in infirmyte, & in gret drede, & in quakynge. & my word & my predicacioun ne wes noȝt in semynge ⁴ wordis⁸ of mannes wysdom, bote in schewynge of þe spiryt & of vertu: þat ȝoure feiþ ne be noȝt in mannes wysdom, bote ⁵ in þe vertu of God. & we spekeþ wysdom a-mong parfyty ⁶ men: bote non wysdom of þis worlde, ne of þe princys of þis world þat beþ destroyed: bote we spekeþ þe wysdom of God ⁷ in mysterie þat is y-hud, þe whuche wysdom God ordeynyd byfor þe worldes to oure ioye: þe whuche wysdom non of þe ⁸ princes of þis worlde knew: for ȝif þei hadden y-knowe, þei nolde nefer haue crucyfyed þe Lord of blysse: but as it is ⁹

¹ An e in the margin, S.

² om. P.

³ Before seo erasure of y.

The right half of o erased, S.

⁴ o in mony corrected from e, S.

⁵ fol. 38^b S.

⁶ fol. 44^b P.

⁷ ii^o in a late hand in the margin, S.

⁸ wordis repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

y-wryten, þat þe eyze ne haþ noȝt y-seye, ne þe ere ne haþ noȝt y-herd, ne haþ noȝt y-styed up in-to mannes herte, þat 10 God haþ¹ y-ordeyned to þilke þat lofeþ hym. Bote to ous God haþ y-schewed² hit by his Spiryt: for þe Spiryt sercheþ 11 alle þinges, ȝe, & þe depe þinges of God. For what man knoweþ þilke þinges þat beþ of men, bote þe spiryt of man, þat is in hym? so þilke þinges þat beþ of God no man 12 knoweþ, bote þe Spiryt of God. & we ne hafeþ noȝt vnder- fongen þe spiryt of þis worlde, bote þe spiryt þat is of God; 13 þat we knownen þilke þinges þat beþ y-graunted to ous of God; þe whuche þinges we ne spekeþ noȝt in vntauȝt wordes of mannes wysdom, bote in þe techynge of þe Spiryt, tellynge 14 to spirytual men spirytual þinges: bote þe bestyck³ man ne parcyfeþ noȝt þilke þinges þat beþ of þe Spiryt: for þei ne beþ but folye to hym, & he ne may noȝt vnderstonden, for 15 he is⁴ examyned spirytualyche. Bote þe spirytual man demeþ alle þinges, & he ne is noȝt y-demēd of no man. For 16 it is y-wryten, Who⁵ haþ y-knowe þe wyt of oure Lord, bote þe Spiryt of oure Lord, þat haþ enformed hym? & we habbeþ þe wyt & þe vnderstandynge of Crist.

3 1 And, bryþeren, y ne myȝte noȝt herbyfore speke to ȝow as to spirytual men, bote as to fleschlyche men, & as to smale 2 children in Crist. Ich ȝef ȝow mylk⁶ to drynke, & noȝt mete; for þat tyme ȝe ne myȝte noȝt, ne ȝit now⁷, ȝe ne mowe noȝt; 3 for ȝit⁸ ȝe beþ fleschlyche: for whyles þer beþ⁹ enuye¹⁰ & struynge a-mong ȝow, ne be ȝe noȝt fleschlyche, & walkeþ 4 after þe flesch? For whyles þat on saiþ, Ich am of Poul; & 5 an oþer, Ich am of Apollo; ne be ȝe noȝt men? & what þanne is Apollo? & what is Poul? His serfautes in whom ȝe habbeþ byleued, & to eferich man as God haþ y-grauntyd¹¹. 6 Y plaunted, & Apollo moysted; bote oure Lord ȝefþ þe 7 waxynge. & þerfore nouþer he þat plaunted is ouȝt, ne he 8 þat moysted; bote he þat ȝefþ þe waxynge is God. Bote he

¹ fol. 45 P. ² fol. 39 S. ³ e in the margin S. ⁴ ded goslech

in the margin, 1st corr. S. ded soþlyche follows, P. Cf. Vulg. quia spiritu- aliter examinatur. ⁵ who þat P. ⁶ mylk repeated in marg. 1st corr. S.

⁷ After the w erasure of two letters, probably þe, S. ⁸ fol. 45^b P.

⁹ fol. 39^b S. ¹⁰ enmye P. ¹¹ y erased and expunged before grauntyd, S.

þat plaunteþ & he þat moysteþ beþ on ; & eferich man schal vnderfongen his mede astur his trauayl. & we beþ Goddes ⁹ helperes, & ȝe beþ Goddes erþe-tylynge, & Goddes buyldyng. And astur þe grace of God þat is y-granted to me, as ¹⁰ a wys buyldere ich hafe y-sett a foundement; bote an oþer buldeþ abofe. Bote loke eferych man how he buyldeþ a-bofe. For no man may setten¹ anoþer foundement þan þat þat is ¹¹ y-set, þat is Iesu Crist. & who-efer þat buyldeþ abofe þis ¹² foundement gold, oþer selfer, oþer precyous stones, treo², oþer heym³, oþer stubbel; eferich mannes werke schal ben openliche ¹³ y-schewed; & þe day of oure Lord schal declaren it, for in fuyr it schal be schewed; & fuyr schal prefen whuch mannes werk. For whos werk þat is y-buylde a-bofe & dwelleþ styll, ¹⁴ it schal vndurfongen his mede. Bote whos werk branneþ ¹⁵ a-wey⁴, he schal suffre harmynge: bote he schal be safed; bote þat schal ben as þoroȝ fuyr. Ne knowe ȝe noȝt þat ȝe ¹⁶ beþ Goddes temple, & þe Spiryt of God⁵ dwelleþ in ȝow? & who-efer þat defouleþ þe temple of God, God wole de- ¹⁷ struyen⁶ hym: for ȝe beþ þe holy temple of God. No man ¹⁸ bygyle ȝow: ȝef þer seme eny man amonȝ ȝow a wys man in þis world, be he y-maad a fool, þat he be a wys man. For þe ¹⁹ wysdom of þis world is folye byfore God. For it is y-wryten, Ich wole take wyse men in hure folye: & eftsones, God ²⁰ knoweþ þat þe þouȝtes of wyse men beþ veyn. & þerfore no ²¹ man reioyesche hym-selfen a-mong men. For alle þinges beþ ȝouren; wheþer hit be Poul, oþer Apollo, oþer Petur, oþer þis ²² worlde, oþer lyf⁷, oþer deþ, oþer þinges þat beþ nouȝe, oþer þinges þat schuleþ comen heraftur; for alle þinges beþ ȝouren; & ȝe beþ of Crist, & Crist is of God. ²³

Bote þer is y-herd fornycacyoun a-mong ȝow, & such ¹ **5** fornycacyoun as ne is noȝt a-mong mysbylefed men, in so muche þat summe of ȝow hafe his fadur wyf. & ȝe beþ ² y-blowe wiþ pruyde, & ȝe ne hafþ y-mad no sorow, þat he be don a-wey from þe myddel of ȝow, þat haþ⁸ y-do þis dede. & ³ ich, þat am absent in body & present in spiryt, hafe y-demded

¹ *setten* repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

² *o* nearly erased, S.

³ om. P.

⁴ fol. 46 P.

⁵ fol. 40 S.

⁶ *e* in the margin, S.

⁷ *þe lyf* P.

4 as present¹ þilke þat haþ y-don so, in þe nome of oure Lord
 Iesu Crist, whan ȝe beþ y-gedered to-gedere in my spiryt, wiþ
 5 þe vertu of oure Lord Iesu, to take þilke man to Satanas in
 slauȝt of his flesch, þat þe spiryt be saf in þe day of oure
 6 Lord Iesu Crist. ȝoure ioyyng ne is noȝt good. Ne² knowe
 7 ȝe noȝt þat a lytel sowrdowȝ³ schendeþ al-to-geder? þerfore
 make ȝe clene ȝoure olde sowrdowȝ, þat ȝe ben a newe
 8 spryngenge to-gedere, as ȝe beþ þerf. For Crist is y-offred,
 oure astur-lomb⁴: & þerfore ete we, not in þe olde sowrdowȝ,
 ne in sowrdowȝ of malyce, ne of wykkednes, bote in þerfnes of
 9 clernes & of trewþe. Y wrot to ȝow in an epystel þat ȝe ne
 10 medle noȝt wiþ lecchoures, ne wiþ none lecchoures of þis
 world, ne wiþ coueytous men, ne wiþ rafeneres, ne wiþ hem
 þat serfeþ mawmetes; for wharto schulde ȝe elles haue y-gon
 11 out from þe world: & now yeh hafe y-wryte to ȝou þat ȝe ne
 medle noȝt wiþ hem; & ȝif he þat is y-cleped a broþer of ȝow
 is a lecchour, oþer a coueytous man, oþer serfyng to maw-
 metis, oþer a myssegger, oþer dronkelew man, oþer a rafeyner;
 12 ne ete ȝe noȝt⁵ wiþ such a manere man. & what is þat to me
 for-to demen of þilke þinges þat beþ wiþouten-forþ? Ne
 13 deme ȝe noȝt of⁶ þilke þinges þat beþ wiþinne-forþ? For
 þilke⁷ þat beþ outen-forþ God schal deme. Doþ a-wey þat
 6 1 þing þat is efel from ȝow-selfen. And dar þer any of ȝow, þat
 haþ any þing a-ȝeyn oþer, ben y-demded to-fore wikked men
 2 & noȝt to-fore goode men? Wheþer ȝe ne knowen noȝt þat
 goode men habbeþ to demen þis word? & ȝif þis world schal
 ben y-deined in ȝow, be ȝe noȝt worþi to demen þe leste
 3 þinges? Ne knowe ȝe noȝt þat we schulleþ demen angeles?
 4 How muche more þanne wordlyche þinges. & þerfore ȝif ȝe
 habbeþ wordlyche domes⁸ a-mong ȝow, þilke þat beþ y-leſt
 5 worþi a-mong ȝou, ordeyneþ hem for to demen⁹. To ȝoure
 schame y sugge it. Is þer no wys man of ȝow þat may
 6 demen by-twene hym & his broþer, bote on broþer st[r]yueþ
 7 in dom wiþ his broþer, & þis is a-mong mysbylefed men?

¹ fol. 46^b P. ² fol. 40^b S. ³ dowȝ repeated in the margin, 1st corr. (?) S.

⁴ after lamb P. ⁵ ne ete ȝe noȝt repeated in the margin, 1st corr. (?) S.

⁶ of inserted above the line, S. ⁷ fol. 47 P. ⁸ fol. 41 S. ⁹ For for
 to demen P. has to comen.

& now algates þer is sunne a-mong ȝow, þat ȝe han domes a-mong ȝou. Why ne suffre ȝe noȝt raþere wrong? Why ne suffre ȝe noȝt raþer gylynge? Bote ȝe doþ wrong in gyle also 8 to ȝoure bryþeren. Wheþer ȝe knowe noȝt þat wykked men 9 ne schuleþ noȝt haue þe kyngdom of heuene? Ne erre ȝe¹ noȝt: for nouþer lechhoures, ne þilke þat serfeþ false goddis, ne spouse-brekeres, ne sodomites, ne þefes, ne coueytous 10 men, ne dronken men, ne glotones, ne curseres, ne rafeneres, ne schulleþ not owe² þe kyngdom of God. And ȝe weren 11 suche: ȝe³, bote ȝe beþ now y-wasche, & ȝe beþ y-halewed, & beþ y-iustyfyed in þe name of oure Lord Iesu Crist, & in þe Spiryt of oure God. Alle þinges beþ lefful to me, bote alle 12 þinges ne beþ noȝt spedful to me. Alle þynges ben lefful to me, bote y ne schal noȝt ben ybrouȝt⁴ aȝeyn vnder no mannes power⁵. Mete to þe wombe, & wombe to þe mete: & God 13 wole distruye boþe þe body & þe mete. & þe body ne is noȝt to fornycacyoun, bote to oure Lord: & oure Lord to þe body. & God haþ rered up oure Lord, & he wole areren us 14 up by his verteu. And ne knowe ȝe noȝt þat ȝoure bodyes 15 beþ membres of Crist? schal⁶ me take þanne Cristis membres, & make hem þe membres of an hore? God forbede. Ne knowe ȝe noȝt þat he þat draweþ hym to an hore 16 ys y-mad on body wiþ hure? For he seyde, þei schulleþ ben⁷ tweyn in on flesch. Bote þilke þat draweþ to God beþ 17 on spirit. Fle ȝe fornycacyoun. Eferech synne þat a man 18 doþ it is wiþ-outen þe body, bote he þat doþ fornycacyoun synneþ in-to his body. Wheþer ȝe ne knowe noȝt þat ȝoure 19 membres beþ þe temple of þe Holy Gost, þat is in ȝou, whom ȝe han of God? &⁸ ȝe ne beþ noȝt ȝoure owne; for ȝe beþ 20 y-boȝt for a gret prys: & þerfore glorifye ȝe God & bere ȝe hym in ȝoure body.

And þo ilke þinges þat ȝe wryten to me, þat it is good 1 **7** for a man þat he ne touche no womman. Bote, for fornycacioun, eferich man hafe his⁹ wyf, & eferiche womman hure

¹ ne erre ȝe repeated in the margin, 1st corr. (?) S.

² fol. 47^b P.

³ om. P.

⁴ y om. P.

⁵ e in the margin, S.

⁶ fol. 41^b S.

⁷ ben (expunged) follows, S.

⁸ fol. 48 P.

⁹ his in a later hand above the line, S. a P.

3 housbonde¹. & þe housbonde ȝelde his dette to his wyf; &
 4 þe womman also to hure housbonde. þe womman ne haþ no²
 power of hure owne body, bote þe housbonde haþ: ne þe
 housbonde ne haþ no power of his owne body, bote þe
 5 womman haþ. Ne bygyle ȝe noȝt to-gedere, but it be to²
 a certeyn tyme of ȝoure boþe assent, þat ȝe ben occupyed in
 preyng, & afturward turne ȝe aȝeyn to þe same doyng, þat
 6 þe defel ne tempete ȝow noȝt for ȝoure *in-contynence*. Bote
 þese þinges y sugge to ȝow ȝefyng ȝou lefe, & noȝt comaun-
 7 dynge. For ich wole þat alle men ben as ich myselfe. Bote
 eferyche man haþ a propre ȝifte of³ God, on man so, & an
 8 oþer man so. & y seye to þilke þat beþ vn-weddyd & to
 wydewes, It is good for hem to ben so, ȝif þei dwellen stille
 9 as ych do. Bote ȝif þei⁴ mowe noȝt ben *contynent*, ben þei
 y-wedded: yt is betur to ben y-wedded þan to ben y-brent.
 10 Bote to þilke þat beþ ywedded⁵ to-gedere ych comaunde,
 & not ych, bote oure Lord, þat þe wyf ne⁶ departe hure
 11 noȝt from hure housbonde, & ȝif heo doþ⁷, dwelle [heo]⁸
 stille vn-wedded, oþer elles turne heo aȝeyn to hure hous-
 12 bonde, & þe housbonde ne lefe noȝt his wyf. To oþer men y
 seye, & not oure Lord, A man þat haþ a mysbyletyd wyf &
 heo⁹ assenteþ to dwelle stille wiþ hym, ne lefe he noȝt hure.
 13 & þe womman þat haþ a¹⁰ mysbylefed man to housbonde þat
 assenteþ to dwelle wiþ hure, ne lefe heo⁹ noȝt hure housbonde.
 14 For a mysbylefed man is y-maad holy þoroȝ a feyþful
 womman, & a mysbyleued womman is y-mad holy þorowȝ
 a feyþful man: oþer elles ȝoure children weren vnclene; bote
 15 now þei beþ holy. & ȝif þilke þat is mysbylefed goþ a-wey,
 go he a-wey: for in suche nouþer broþer ne suster is soget to
 16 þraldam: bote in pes God haþ y-cleped us. & þerfore ȝif þe
 womman knoweþ þat heo schal safen hure housbonde, oþer þe
 17 man knoweþ þat he schal safen his wyf: ryȝt as God haþ
 departed to eferych man, & as God haþ y-cleped eferich man,
 18 so walke he as y teche in alle¹¹ churches. He þat is circum-

¹ *husbond* repeated in the margin, S.

² om. P.

³ fol. 42 S.

⁴ fol. 48^b P.

⁵ *y weddeþ* P.

⁶ *ne be* P.

⁷ þ erased after the o, S.

doþ P.

⁸ *sche* inserted in later hand on erasure, S.

he P.

⁹ *ȝe* P.

¹⁰ *haþ a* in the margin with caret to mark insertion, S.

¹¹ fol. 42^b S.

sidid¹ & is y-cleped, ne brynge he noȝt to þe prepucye. & he þat is y-cleped in þe prepucye, ne be he noȝt y-circumsydid. For circumscycyoun is noȝt, ne þe prepucye nouȝter; bote þe 19 kepynges of þe comaundementis of God. & eferiche man in 20 þe clepynge þat he is ycleped, duelle he stille to-fore God. ȝif þou art a serfaunt þat art y-cleped, ne charge þou noȝt; 21 but ȝif þou myȝt be mad fre, vse it þe more. For he þat is 22 y-cleped in oure Lord, he is oure lordes serfaunt & is freman; also he þat is a fre man & y-cleped, he is Cristis serfaunt. ȝe beþ y-boȝt þorowȝ prys; ne wilne ȝe noȝt to ben y-mad 23 mennes serfauntes. & eferiche man in þat þing þat he is 24 y-cleped broȝter, in þat dwelle he stille to-fore God. Of 25 maydenes y ne hafe non commaundement: bote a counseyl ych ȝefe as he þat haþ y-had mercy of God, þat y be trewe. For y trowe þat it be good for þe nede þat is nouȝte, & þat it 26 is good to a man for-to be so. Bote ȝif þou art y-bouneden to 27 þi wyf, ne seche þou noȝt to ben vnbouneden. ȝif þou art vnbouneden, ne wilne þou noȝt to sechen a wyf. & ȝif þou 28 takest þe a wyf, þou ne synnest noȝt; & ȝif a mayde be y-wedded, heo ne synneþ nouȝter. Naȝeles suche schulleþ hauie tribulacyoun of hure flesch: bote y spare ȝow. & 29 bryþeren, y sey to ȝow þese þinges, tyme is schort; an oþer is, þilke þat² habbeþ wyes³, ben þei, as þouȝ þei ne hadden none wyes; & þilke þat wepeþ, as þilke þat wepeþ noȝt; & þilke ȝoȝt⁴ ioyeþ, as þilke⁴ þat ioyeþ noȝt; & þilke þat buggeþ, as þilke þat oweþ noȝt; & þilke þat vseþ þis worlde, as þouȝ ȝei ne vsed it noȝt: for þe fygure of þis worlde passeþ forþ. & ych wole þat ȝe ben wiþ-outen bysynesse of þe worlde. 32 He þat haþ no wyf þenkeþ whuche þinges beþ of God, &⁵ how he schal plese God⁶: but he þat haþ a wyf is bisy aboute 33 þinges þat beþ of þe worlde, & how he schal plese⁶ his wyf, & so he is departed. & a womman þat is a mayden & vnbouneden þinkeþ whuche þinges beþ of God, & þat heo be holy in body & in spiryt: but heo þat is y-wedded þynkeþ þinges þat beþ of þe worlde, & how heo schal plesen hure housbonde.

¹ fol. 49 P. ² fol. 43 S. ³ fol. 49^b P. ⁴ After þilke erasure
 of four letters. An e in the margin, S. ⁵ om. P. ⁶ God but...schal
 plese inserted later, P.

35 But þese þinges y sey to ȝow for ȝoure profyte; noȝt þat y þrowe to ȝow a gren, but for þat þing þat is honest, & þat it¹ ȝefe ȝow myȝt to knowe wiþ-outen lattyng to bysechen
 36 oure Lord. & he þat troweþ þat me holdeþ hym an efel man
 for his mayde, þat heo² is ouer-waxe, & it mote be so: þat he
 haþ wylle to don do he; for þouȝ he be wedded, heo ne
 37 synneþ noȝt. & he þat haþ sadlyche y-stabled in his herte,
 noȝt hafynge nede, but power of his wylle, & haþ y-demded in
 38 his herte to kepen³ his mayde, he doþ wel. & he þat maryeþ
 his mayde doþ wel also; & he doþ⁴ betere⁵ þat maryeþ hure
 39 noȝt. Also longe as a wommannes housbonde lyfeþ, heo⁶ is
 y-bounde to þe lawe; bote ȝif hure housbonde dye, heo⁶ is
 delyfered from þe lawe of hure housbonde: be heo y-wedded
 40 to whom heo⁶ wole, bote onlyche in God. Bote heo⁷ is muche
 more betere ȝef heo⁷ dwelle stille so, aftur my counseyl: & y
 trowe þat ych haue þe Spiryt of God.

11 1,2 Be⁸ ȝe my foleweres, as ych am Cristis folewere. And
 my bryþeren, y preyse⁹ ȝow, for in alle þinges ȝe hafeþ mynde
 of me; & riȝt so as ych ȝefe ȝou my comaundementis, so ȝe
 3 holdeþ hem. And ych wole þat ȝe knownen, þat þe hed of
 eferych womman is a man; & þe hed of eferich man is Crist;
 4 & þe hed of Crist is God. Eferich man þat preyeyþ oþer
 5 prophecyeþ wiþ a kefered hed, he defouleþ his hed. Bote
 eferech womman þat preyeyþ oþer prophecyeþ wiþ hed¹⁰ un-
 heled, defouleþ hure hed: for it is al on as þouȝ he¹¹ were
 6 balled. For ȝif a womman be noȝt y-kefered, be heo
 y-dodded: & ȝif it be foul for a womman to ben y-dodded
 7 oþer balled, wrye heo hure hed. But a man ne schal noȝt
 wrye his hed, for he is þe ymage & þe ioye of God: & þe
 8 womman is þe ioye of a man. For þe man ne is noȝt of
 9 womman, bote þe womman is of man: for man ne¹² is noȝt
 10 y-mad for þe womman, bote þe womman for þe man: &
 þerfore þe womman schal haue an¹³ helyng on hure hed, for
 11 angeles. Naþeles nouþer man wiþ-oute womman, ne womman

¹ ȝe P. ² heo in the margin with caret to mark insertion, S. ȝe P.

³ First e inserted above the line, S. ⁴ fol. 50 P. ⁵ fol. 43^b S. ⁶ ȝe P.

⁷ ȝe P. ⁸ fini C vii; C x in the margin, P. ⁹ preyey P. ¹⁰ þe hed P.

¹¹ it P. ¹² fol. 50^b P. ¹³ fol. 44 S.

wiþ-outen man in oure Lord. For riȝt as womman is man, 12
 riȝt so man is þorowȝ womman; & alle þei beþ of God.
 Deme ȝe ȝow-selfe: wheþer it byseme a womman vnkefered 13
 to preyen to God? ȝe kynde of hem techeþ ȝow: & ȝif 14
 a man norsche his her, it is schenschype to hym; bote ȝif 15
 a womman norsche hure her, it is worschupe for hure: for
 heres beþ y-ȝeuen to hure for hure keferynge. And ȝif þer 16
 be any of ȝow a stryfer, we ne hafeþ no suche custom, ne
 Goddes churche nouþer. & þese þinges y bydde ȝow, noȝt 17
 preysyng¹, þat ȝe comeþ to-gedere in þe churche. Ich heere 18
 þat þer be dissensyones a-mong ȝow, and a party y trowe it.
 For it byhoseþ þat þer ben heresyes a-mong ȝow, þat þilke 19
 þat beþ apprefed men a-mong ȝow ben openlyche y-schewed.
 And þerfore whan ȝe comeþ to-gedere in-to on, now it falleþ 20
 noȝt for ȝow to eten oure Lordes soper²: for eferich man 21
 takeþ byfore his soper for-to eten; & on is an-hungred, & an³
 oþer is dronken. Wheþer ȝe ne hafeþ none houses to eten in 22
 & drynken in⁴? oþer ȝe dispiseþ Godes churche, & schendeþ
 þilke þat haueþ none houses? What schal⁵ ich seye to ȝow?
 Ich preyse ȝow, bote in þis ich preyse ȝow noȝt. And ich 23
 hafe vnderfongen of oure Lord þat ich hafe y-take to ȝow:
 for oure Lord Iesus in þat nyȝt þat he was y-take⁶ toke bred;
 & dude þankynges to God, & brake it, & seyde, Take ȝe, 24
 & ete ȝe: þis is my body þat schal be take for ȝou: makeþ
 þis in mynde of me. Also aftur þat he had souped⁷ he toke 25
 þe cuppe, & seyde, þis cuppe is a newe testament in my
 blod: makeþ þis, as ofte as ȝe drynkeþ, in mynde of me.
 For as ofte syþes as ȝe eteþ þis bred, & drynkeþ þis cuppe, 26
 ȝe schulen schewen þe deþ of oure Lord forto⁸ þat he come.
 & so who-euere þat eteþ þis bred or drynkeþ þe cuppe of 27
 oure Lord vnworþylyche⁹, he schal be gulty of oure Lordes
 body & his blood. And þerfore prefe a man hym-selfe, & 28
 so ete he of þis bred, & drynke he of þis cuppe. For he⁹ þat 29
 eteþ & drynkeþ vnworþiliche, eteþ & drynkeþ dom to hym-
 selfe, noȝt demyng¹⁰ oure Lordes body. & among ȝow þer 30

¹ in pr. P. ² sakernent added in the margin, 1st corr. S. ³ om. P.

⁴ & P. ⁵ fol. 51 P. ⁶ nota in the margin; fol. 44^b S. ⁷ y souped P.

⁸ tyl P. ⁹ vn inserted above the line, S.

31 beþ many seke & many febel, & many beþ aslepe. & ȝif we demen ous-selfe, þanne ne schulde we noȝt ben y-demed.
 32 But whyles þat we beþ y-demed of oure Lord¹, we beþ
 33 a-mendyd, þat we ne be noȝt y-dampned wiþ þis world. And þerfore, breþeren, whan ȝe comeþ for-to eten, abyde ȝe to-
 34 gydere eferichone oþer. & ȝif þat any man be an-hungred, ete he at home, þat ȝe ne come noȝt to-gedere in-to dom.
 Oþer þinges y wole ordeyne whanne þat y come my-selfen.

12 1 Of spirytual þinges, my breþeren, y ne wole noȝt þat ȝe
 2 ben vnknowynge. For ȝe wytþ wel þat whyls ȝe weren
 mysbyleued, as ȝee weren y-lad, ȝe wenten to dombe maw-
 3 metes. And² þerfore y certefye ȝow, þat no man spekyng in
 þe spiryt of God seiþ, A-cursed Iesu; & no man may seye,
 4 Oure Lord Iesus, bote it be in þe Holy Spiryt. And þer ben
 5 dyuerse graces, bote it is al on Spiryt. And þer ben dyuerse
 6 seruynges, bote it is al on Lord. And þer ben dyuerse
 manere werchynges, bote it is on God, þat worcheþ alle
 7 þinges in alle þinges. & to eferich man þer is y-graunted
 8 a schewynge of þe spiryt to profyte. To on man³ þer is
 y-graunted speche of wysdom þoroȝ þe Spiryt; to anoþer man
 9 speche of kunnynge þoroȝ þe same Spiryt; to anoþer man
 feiþ in þe same Spiryt; to an-oþer man⁴ grace of helynge
 10 men; to an-oþer man werchyng of vertues; to an-oþer pro-
 phecye; to an-oþer discrecyoun of spirytes: to an-oþer dyuerse
 11 kyndes of langages; to an-oþer interpretacyoun of wordis: and
 alle þese þinges wercheþ on Spiryt, departyng to dyuerse men
 12 as he wole hym-self. And ryȝt as þe body is on, & haþ many
 membres, & þouȝ þe membres ben many, ȝit þei beþ alle on
 13 body; riȝt so Crist. For in on spiryt alle we beþ y-baptized
 into on body, boþe Iewes & oþer Gentyles, and serfauntes &
 14 freo men: & alle we haueþ y-drunke of on Spiryt. & þe
 15 body ne is noȝt for on membre, bote many membres. & ȝif
 þe fot seiþ, Y ne am noȝt þe hond, y ne am noȝt of þe body;
 16 ȝet he is ner-þe-latere of þe body. & ȝif þe ere seiþ, For y ne
 am noȝt þe yȝe, y ne am noȝt of þe body; he ne is nefer-þe-
 17 latere of þe body. ȝef al þe body were yȝe⁵, where were þe

¹ fol. 51^b P.

² fol. 45 S.

³ to on man repeated in the margin, 1st corr. Below it *peuyte* in a xvith century hand, S.

⁴ fol. 52 P.

⁵ fol. 45^b S.

herynge? & ȝif al were herynge, where were smellynge? Bote now God haþ y-set þe membres eferychone of hem in þe 18 body, as he wole hym-selfen. & ȝif alle þe membres weren on 19 membre, where were þe body? Bote now þe membres beþ 20 many, bote þe body ne is but on. And þe yȝe ne may not 21 seye to þe hond, Me nedeþ noȝt þyne workus¹: ne þe hed to þe feet, ȝe ne beþ noȝt nedeful to me. Bote þilke membres of 22 þe body þat semeþ most febel, þei² beþ most nedful: & þilke 23 membres þat semeþ us most vnnobel of þe body, aboute hem we doþ most worschupe; & þilke membres þat beþ most in-honest, to hem we doþ most honestee; for oure honeste 24 membres ne haueþ nede of no þing: bote God haþ y-tempred þe body, ȝefynge to hym þat fayled ouȝt þe more worschupe; þat þer be no debate in þe body, bote þat³ alle þe membres 25 ben bysy eferichone for oþer. And ȝif any membre suffre any 26 þing, suffren alle þe membres to-gedere; oþer ȝif on membre ioye, ioyen alle þe membres to-gedere. & ȝe beþ Cristis body, 27 & membres of a membre. And God haþ y-put in his churche, 28 furst sum men apostoles, in þe secunde place prophetes, in⁴ þe þridde techeres, seþþe vertues, seþþe graces of helynge men, helpynge, gouernynges, dyuerse kyndes of langages, interpretacyons of wordys. Wheþer⁵ alle ben apostoles? oþer alle 29 prophetes? oþer alle techeres? oþer alle vertues? wheþer 30 alle men han grace to hele men? wheþer alle men speken dyuerse⁶ langages? wheþer alle men maken interpretacyoun of wordys? Folewe ȝe þe betre ȝiftes of grace. & ȝit y wole 31 schewe ȝow a more excellent weye.

ȝef⁷ þat y speke wiþ mennes tungenes oþer wiþ aungeles: **13** tungenes, & y ne hafe noȝt charyte⁸, y am y-mad as bras þat sounþ, oþer a cymbal þat sounþ. & ȝef y haue eueriche 2 prophecye, and knowe alle pruyetees, & ȝif y haue euery cunnyng & euery feiþ, so þat y mowe mefen hulles from hure places, ȝif y ne hafe no charite, y ne am noȝt. And ȝif y dele 3 al my catel in-to pore mennes lyfode, & ȝefe my body to brenne, & y ne hafe no charite, it profyteþ me no þing.

¹ fol. 52^b P.² þat P.³ om. P.⁴ & in P.⁵ fol. 46 S.⁶ fol. 53 P.⁷ The rubric in P is a Z.⁸ charyte repeated in the

margin, 1st corr. S.

4 Charite is pacyent & benygne; charite ne hateþ no man,
 5 ne doþ not wykkedlyche, ne is not y-blowe wiþ pruyde; he
 ne¹ is not coueytous, he ne secheþ noȝt his owne þinges, he ne
 6 is noȝt y-wraþþed, he ne þenkeþ non yuel, ne ioyeþ noȝt up-on
 7 wykkednesse, bote ioyeþ to trewþe; alle þinges he suffreþ,
 alle þinges he byleueþ, alle þinges he hopeþ, alle þinges he
 8 abydeþ. Charite ne falleþ nefer a-wey: wheþer þat pro-
 pheþces schuleþ ben voydyd a-wey², oþer langages schulen³
 9 cessen, oþer cunnynge schal be destroyed. For a party we
 10 knoweþ, & a party we propheþceþ. Bote whanne þat comeþ
 11 þat is parfyþ, þanne it schal ben voyded þat þinge þat ne is
 bote a party. Whan y was a lytel chylde, I spak as a lytel
 chyld, & y þouȝte as a lytel child, & y safered as a lytel chyld:
 bote whenne y was man, y voyded a-wey þilke þinges þat
 12 weren of childhode. We seþ now þorowȝ a myrour in derk-
 nesse, bote þanne we schulen sen face to face. Now y knowe
 a partye, bote þanne y schal knowe ryȝt as y am y-knowe
 13 my-selfe. & now dwelleþ þes þinges, feiþ, hope, & charite;
 bote þe grettest of þese is charyte.

II. CORINTHIANS.

6 1 And⁴, breþeren, helpynge ȝow we bysecheþ þat ȝe ne
 2 resceyfeþ noȝt þe grace of God in veyn; for he haþ y-sayd,
 In an acceptabel tyme y haue y-herd⁵ þe, & in þe day of hele
 y haue y-holpe⁶ þe; and lo, now is an acceptabel tyme, and a
 3 day of hele. & ȝefe ȝe non offencyoun to no man, þat ȝoure
 4 seruyse ne be not y-blamed; bote in alle þinges ȝefe we ous-
 seluen as Goddes serfautes, in myche pacyence, in tribu-
 5 lacyones, in nedyschepe, in angwysch, in woundynges, in
 prisonynges, in bytrayynges, in wakynges⁶, in trauayles, in
 6 fastynges, in chastyte, in kunnynge, in louge abydynge, in
 7 softnesse, in þe Holy Gost, in charite⁷ noȝt y-feyned, in word
 of trewþe, in þe uertu of God; þorowȝ þe armer of riȝtfulnesse
 8 on þe riȝtsyde & on þe lyftsyde, þoroȝ worschupe & vnnobel-
 nesse, þoroȝ diffamynge & good loos; as gylores, bote as men

¹ om. P.² fol. 46^b S.³ fol. 53^b P.⁴ No heading in the mss.⁵ y om. F.⁶ fol. 54 P.⁷ fol. 47 S.

þat beþ trewe; & þouȝ ȝe ben y-knowe, ȝet be ȝe as þilke þat 9
 beþ vnknowe; as þilke þat dyeþ, & lo, we lyfeþ; as þilke þat
 beþ y-chasted, & nouȝt y-slawe; as þilke þat beþ drery, bote 10
 efermore ioyenge; as þilke þat beþ nedy, bote makyngh many
 men ryche; as þilke þat hafeþ noȝt, bote oweþ alle þinges.
 Oure mouȝ is opned to ȝow, ȝe Corynthes, oure herte is 11
 y-drawn a-brood. Ne be ȝe noȝt y-angwysched in ous, bote 12
 be ȝe y-angwysched in ȝoure owne in-wardnesse. & hafynge 13
 þe same remuneracyoun, as to my chyldren y seye, Be ȝe
 y-drawn abrood. Ne lede ȝe noȝt wiȝ mysbylefed men: 14
 for what a-cord is þer bytwene riȝtfulnesse¹ & wykkednesse?
 oþer what felowschupe bytwene lyȝt & derknesse? Oþer 15
 what a-cord by-twene Crist & þe defel? oþer what party haþ
 a welbyleued man wiȝ a mysbyleued man? Oþer what 16
 assent bytwene þe temple of God & wiȝ mawmetes? For ȝe
 beþ þe temple of lyfynge God²; as God seiȝ hym-selfen, Y
 wole dwellen in hem, & y³ wole wonen a-mong hem; & y
 wole ben hure God, & þei schuleþ be my pepel. Wherfore 17
 God seyþ, Goo ȝe a-wey from þe myddel of hem, & be ȝe
 departyd from⁴ hem, & ne touche ȝe non vnclene þing; and y
 wole resceyue ȝou, & y³ wole be ȝoure Fadur, & ȝe schulen be 18
 my sones & my douȝteren. Sustur, in þis manere seynt Poule
 wryteþ to þe Corynthes.

GALATIANS.

And⁵ to Galathes he wryteþ, & seyþ, Lo, y Poule seye to 2 5
 ȝow, þat ȝef ȝe beþ circumcyded, Crist profyteþ ȝow no þing.
 For y bere wytnesse eftsones to euerich man þat circumcydeþ 3
 hym-selfen, þat he⁶ is dettour to don al þe lawe. & ȝe beþ 4
 y-voyded a-wey from Crist, for ȝe þat beþ y-iustyfyed in þe
 lawe, ȝe beþ y-fallen a-wey from grace. For ȝe ne abydeþ 5
 noȝt þe hope of riȝtfulnesse þoroȝ þe spiryt of bylefe. & in 6
 Iesu Crist nouþer cyrcumsyson⁶ is ouȝt worþ, ne þe pre-
 pucye nouþer; bote feiȝ þat worcheþ by charite. ȝe ronne 7
 wel; who haþ y-lat ȝou nouþe, þat ȝe ne obeyscheþ ȝou noȝt to

¹ an e in the margin, S.² fol. 54^b P.³ om. P.⁴ fol. 47^b S.⁵ ad Gal. in the margin, S.⁶ cyrcumsyoun P.

8 þe trewþe? Ne assente ȝe to no man in þis, for þis *persuacyoun* (or, *evidence*)¹ ne is noȝt of hym þat haþ y-cleped
 9 ȝow. A² lytel sourdouȝ schendeþ al-to-geder a gret pese.
 10 Bote y truste in ȝow in oure Lord, þat ȝe ne woleþ safere non
 oþer þing: bote he þat affrayeþ ȝou schal bere his dom,
 11 whyche-efer he be. And breþeren, ȝif y³ preche ȝit circum-
 sisyoun, wharto suffre ych ȝet persecucyoun? þanne is þe
 12 sclaudur of þe cros y-voyded awey. & wolde God he were
 13 y-kut awey þat affrayeþ ȝou þus. My breþeren, ȝe beþ
 y-cleped in-to fredom; & ne ȝefe ȝe noȝt ȝoure fredom in-to
 occasyoun of flesch, bote serfe ȝe to-gedere þoroȝ charite of
 14 spiryt. For⁴ eferich lawe is fulfulled in on word, þou schalt
 15 lofe þi⁵ nexte⁶ neyȝeboure as þi-selfe. & ȝef ȝe byteþ &
 gnaweþ to-gedere, byseþ ȝou lest ȝe ben y-wasted awey
 16 eferichone of oþer. &⁷ y sey ȝou in Crist, Walke ȝe in Crist,
 17 & ȝe ne schuleþ noȝt fulfylle þe desyres of þe flesch. For þe
 flesch coueyteþ aȝeyn þe Spiryt, & þe Spiryt a-ȝeyn þe flesch;
 for þese beþ aduersaries eferychone to oþer; þat ȝe do noȝt
 18 al þat ȝe wolleþ. & ȝif ȝe beþ y-lad þoroȝ þe Spiryt, ȝe beþ
 19 not vnder lawe. & þe workes of þi flesch beþ opene, þat
 20 beþ fornycacyoun, vnclenessse, in-contynence, seruyse of
 false goddes, wycche-craftes, enemytees, stryfinges, hatynges,
 21 wraȝþes, chydynges, debates, sectes, enuyes⁸, manslauȝtes,
 dronkenesse, etynge out⁹ of mesure, & oþer þat beþ y-lyche
 þese, þe whiche y sey ȝow by-fore, as y haue y-seyd ȝow.
 For þilke þat doþ suche þinges ne schuleþ noȝt hafe þe
 22 kyngdom of hefene. Bote þe fruyt of þe Spiryt is charyte,
 ioye, pees, pacyence, longe abydynge, benyngnyte, goodnesse,
 23 mansuetude (þat is, myldene[sse])¹⁰, feiþ, softnesse, contynence,
 24 chastite; aȝeyn suche þer ne is no lawe. & þilke þat beþ
 of Crist hafeþ y-crucyfyed hure flesch wiþ vyces and wiþ
 coueytynges.

25, 26 And ȝif we lyfeþ in Spiryt, walke we in Spiryt. Ne be
 we noȝt y-mad coueytous of veyn glorye, taryynge eferychone

¹ or *evidence* in the margin, 1st corr. S., or *euydence* precedes *persuacyoun* in P. ² fol. 55 P. ³ ich P. ⁴ fol. 48 S. ⁵ þei P.

⁶ expunged, S. ⁷ *Dominica xiiii post trinitatem* in the margin in a *xvith* century hand, S. ⁸ *ennoyes* P. ⁹ fol. 55^b P. ¹⁰ *þat is myldenesse...* in the margin, 1st corr. S. *þat is myldenesse* follows *mansuetude*, P.

oþer, & hafyng enuye eferichone to oþer. And breþeren, þef 1 **8**
 any man¹ be y-occupyed in any trespass, þe þat beþ spirytual,
 enformeþ such a man in þe spiryt of softnesse; byholdynge
 þi-selfe lest þat þou be y-temptyd. On of ȝow bere oþeres 2
 burþenes, & so ȝe schuleþ fulfullen Cristes lawe. For who 3
 þat weneþ þat he be any þing, whan þat he ne is noȝt, he
 bygyleþ hym-selfe. Bote eueryche man prefe his owne werk, 4
 & so he schal ioyen in an-oþer man, & noȝt in hym-selfen.
 For eferych man schal bere his owne burþene. And he þat 5,6
 is y-tauȝt, comune he to hym þat techeþ in alle goode þinges.
 Ne erre ȝe noȝt, for² God ne wole noȝt ben y-scorned: for 7
 þilke þinges þat a man soweþ³, þilke þinges he schal repen.
 For he þat soweþ in his flesch, of his flesch he schal repe 8
 corrupecyoun; bote he þat soweþ in his spiryt, of his spiryt he
 schal repe an eferlastynge lyf. And ne fayle we noȝt doyng 9
 þing þat is good. And þerfore whyle we haueþ tyme, do we 10
 good to alle men, bote most to þilke þat beþ homlyche to þe
 bylefe. & loke ȝe what manere letteres y wrot to ȝow [wiȝ] 11
 myn owne hond. Alle þilke þat woleþ plesen in flesch, þei 12
 constreyneþ ȝow to ben circumcyded; onlyche for þei ne
 wolde noȝt suffre þe persecucyoun of Cristis cros. & nouþer 13
 þei þat circumcydeþ keþeþ þe lawe; bote þei wolden þat ȝe
 weren circumcyded, for þei wolden ioyen in ȝoure flesch.
 Bote God forbede þat y ioye bote in þe cros of oure Lord 14
 Iesu Crist⁴, þoroȝ whom þe world is y-crucyfyed to me, & y to
 þe worlde. For in Iesu Crist nouþer circumcysisoun is⁵ ouȝt 15
 worþ, ne þe prepucye nouþer, bote a newe creature. & whyche- 16
 efer þat han y-folewed þis reule, pees & mercy be on hem &
 up-on þe⁶ Israel of God. Aftur þis tyme no man be greuous 17
 to me: for y bere þe markes of þe woundes of Iesu Crist.

EPHESIANS.

To⁷ þe Epheses, suster, he wryteþ, & sayþ, Y þat am 1 **4**
 y-bounden⁸ in oure Lord, pray ȝou þat ȝe walken worþilyche

¹ fol. 48^b S. ² fol. 56 P. ³ þt a man soweþ repeated in the margin,
 1st corr. S. ⁴ e in the margin, S. ⁵ fol. 49 S. ⁶ om. P.

⁷ Heading: *Epheses 4C* in the original scribe's hand, S. ⁸ fol. 56^b P.

2 in þe clepynge þat ȝe beþ y-cleped, wiþ al humelnesse & mansuetude, wiþ pacyence, berynge up eferichone oþer in charite;
 3 & be ȝe bysy to kepe þe vnyte of Spiryt in þe bond of pees.
 4 On body, & on spiryt, as ȝe beþ y-cleped in on hope of ȝoure
 5,6 clepynge; on Lord, on feiþ, on baptysme, on God & Fader¹
 of alle þinges, & abofen alle þinges, & by alle þinges, & in ous
 7 alle. And to eferich of ȝou is y-graunted grace aftur þe
 8 mesure of þe ȝefyng of Crist. Wherfore he seiþ, He þat
 styeþ up an hyȝ þrowȝ awey wrecchednesse, & ȝef ziftes to men.
 9 And what is þat, þat he steyȝ up an hyȝ, bote þat he come
 10 doun first in-to þe neþer partyes of þe erþe? & he þat com
 doun is he þat steyȝ up a-bofen alle liefenes to fulfullen alle
 11 þinges. & he ordeynede summe men apostoles; & summe²
 prophetes; & summe euangelistes; & oþer schepherdes &
 12 techeres in-to þe ende of þe worldes; & in-to þe werke of
 13 mynstryng in-to þe buyldynge of þe body of Cryst: forto³
 þat we comen alle to-gedere in vnyte of feiþ, & of þe knowyng
 of Godes Sone, in-to a parfyt man⁴, in-to þe mesure of þe age
 14 of þe fulnesse of Crist. þat we ne ben noȝt nouȝe smale
 children, fletynge abrood, ne ben noȝt y-boren aboute with
 eferich wynd of techynge, in þe wykkednesse of men, in gyle,
 15 to þe deceyt of⁵ error; bote do we trewþe in charite, & waxe
 16 we in hym þoroȝ alle þinges, þat is oure hed, Crist; of whom
 al þe body is y-knyt to-geder by eferich myȝt of mynstryng,
 þoroȝ worchyng in mesure of eferich membre, þat makeþ þe
 waxyng of þe body in þe buyldynge of hym in charyte.
 17 And þerfore y sey ȝow, & wytnesse to ȝow in oure Lord, þat ȝe
 ne walkeþ noȝt nouȝe as mysbylefed men, þat walkeþ in
 18 vanyte of hure wyt, hauynge a derke vnderstondynge y-mad
 darke þoroȝ darknesse, & beþ alyened from þe wey of God,
 þoroȝ þe vnkunnyngenesse þat is in hem, for þe blyndenesse
 19 of hure hertes; and þei dispeyryng han y-taken hem-selfen
 to vncianness, in worchyng of eferiche vncianness in-to
 20, 21 couetyse. Bote ȝe ne haueþ not so y-lernyd Crist; & ȝif ȝe
 han y-herd hym, & beþ y-tauȝt in hym, as trewþe is in Iesu:

¹ on fader P. ² The first two strokes of the second *m* effaced, S.

³ Tyl P. ⁴ fol. 49^b. Heading: *Epheses* in a late hand throughout, S.

⁵ fol. 57 P.

do ȝe a-wey ȝoure olde conuersacyoun, & þe olde man þat 22
 is corrupt þoroȝ þe desyres of error; & be ȝe renewed in þe 23
 spyryt of ȝoure þouȝt, & cloþeþ ȝow wiþ a newe man, þat is 24
 y-schape [þ]orouȝ¹ God in ryȝtfulnesse & in holynesse of
 trewþe. Wherfore, do ȝe a-wey lesynge, & speke ȝe trewþe 25
 eferych man wiþ his neyȝbore: for we beþ eferychone²
 membres to oþer. Be ȝe wroþ, & ne sunge ȝe noȝt: ne þe 26
 sonne go noȝt a-doun vp-on ȝoure wraȝþe: ne ȝefe ȝe noȝt 27
 stude³ to þe defel. He þat haþ y-stolen here byfore, ne stele 28
 he noȝt nouþe: bote trauayle he more, worchynge wiþ his
 honden þat þing þat is good, & he haue wher-of to ȝefen⁴ to
 hym þat haþ nede. Ne passe þer non euel word out of ȝoure 29
 mouþ, bote ȝif þer is any good word to edefyng of þe feiþ,
 þat ȝefe grace to hem þat hereþ. & ne sorowe ȝe noȝt þe ȝoȝt 30
 holy Spiryt of God, in whom ȝe beþ y-marked in þe day of
 redempcyoun. Eferych bitternesse, & wraȝþe, & indygna- 31
 cyoun, & crynge, & blasphemye, be don a-wey from ȝou, &
 eferyche malice: & be ȝe benygne eferychone to oþer, & 32
 merciful, & forȝefynge eferychone oþer, as God haþ forȝouen
 ȝou in Crist.

And þerfore be ȝe foloweres of God, as his dereste children; 1 5
 & walke ȝe in lofe, as Crist haþ y-lofed ous, & ȝef hym-selfen 2
 for ous, an offryng & a sacryfye to God in a swet smellyng
 of softnesse. And fornycacyoun, ne non oþer vnclannessse, ne 3
 couetyse, ne be noȝt y-nemyd⁵ among ȝou, as it bysemeþ noȝt
 goode men; ne non fylþe, ne folye speche, ne harlotrye, þat 4
 ne parteneþ noȝt to þe þing: bote raȝere þankynges to God.
 For þis wyte ȝe wel & vnderstondeþ it, þat eferych lechhour⁶, 5
 oþer⁷ an vnclene man, oþer a coueytous⁸ man, þat is þe
 seruyce of false goddes, ne haþ non erytage in þe kyngdom of
 Crist & of God. No man bygyle ȝou wiþ⁹ weyn wordes: 6
 for herfore þe wraȝþe of God com in-to þe children of mys-
 trust. & þerfore ne be ȝe noȝt y-mad partyneres of hem; 7
 for ȝe weren derknesse sumtyme, bote ȝe beþ now lyȝt in 8

¹ P; ȝorouȝ S. ² fol. 50 S. ³ fol. 57^b P. ⁴ ȝefen repeated in the
 margin, 1st corr. S. ⁵ nemyd on erasure in a later hand, S. y dampned P.

Vulg. nominetur. ⁶ harlotrye repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

⁷ fol. 50^b S. ⁸ fol. 58 P. ⁹ wiþ in the margin, 1st corr. S.

9 oure Lord ; & walke ȝe as¹ children of lyȝt. For þe fruyt of
 10 lyȝt is in eferych goodnesse & ryȝtfulnesse & treuþe. & prefe
 11 ȝe what þing is wel plesynge to God : & ne comune ȝe noȝt to
 12 þe vnfruytful² werkes of darknesse, bote raþere vndernymeþ
 13 hem ; for þilke þinges þat beþ y-don of hem in prifete it is
 14 foul forto speke. & alle þilke þinges þat beþ vndernomen of
 15 lyȝt, beþ openliche y-schewed : & al þynge þat is y-schewed
 16 openlyche is lyȝt. & þerfore he sayþ, Aryse up, þat slepest,
 17 & rys³ þou up from deþ, and Crist wole schyne on þe. And
 18 þerfore, bryþeren, loke ȝe how wyslyche ȝe walken, noȝt as
 19 vnwyse men, bote as wyse men ; for bugge ȝe tyme, for þese
 20 dayes beþ yuele. & þerfore ne be ȝe noȝt y-maad vn-redy
 21 men, bote vnderstondynge whiche be þe wylle of God. And
 22 ne be ȝe noȝt y-maad dronken þoroȝ wyn⁴, in whom is
 23 lecherye, bote be ȝe fulfylled wiþ þe Holy Gost ; spekyng
 24 to ȝou-selfen in psalmes & in ympnys &⁵ in sprytyual songes,
 25 syngynge in ȝoure hertes, & doyng ȝankynge to oure⁶ Lord
 26 efer more for alle men in þe name of oure Lord Iesu Cryst
 27 to God þe Fader ; beyng soget eferych man to oþer in þe
 28 drede of Crist. Wymmen also ben sogettes to hure hous-
 29 bondes as to oure Lord. For a man is þe hed of a womman,
 30 as Crist is hed of holy churche, & he is þe safeour of þe body
 of holy chu[r]che. & ryȝt as holy churche is soget to Crist, so
 ben wymmen⁷ sogetes to hire housbondes in alle þinges.
 31 And ȝe housbondes, lofe ȝe ȝoure wyes, as Crist lofed⁸ holy
 32 churche, & ȝef hym-self for hure ; to maken hure holy,
 33 makyng hure clene þoroȝ þe waschynge of water in þe word
 34 of lyf, þat he maked hure gloryous to hym-selfen, hafynge no
 35 wem, ne non ryfelynge, (þat is, no sen)⁹, ne non suche oþer
 36 þing : bote þat he be holy & wiþouten wem. & so men
 37 schulleþ lofen hure wyes ryȝt as hure owne bodyes. & who
 38 þat lofeþ his wyf lofeþ hym-selfen : for þer ne is no man þat
 39 hateþ his owne flesch ; bote norscheþ it & kepeþ it, as Crist
 40 doþ holy churche ; for we beþ þe membres of his body, of

¹ a P. ² vnriȝtful P. ³ arys P. ⁴ hym with the downstroke
 of the h visible, the rest erased, P. ⁵ fol. 58^b P. ⁶ fol. 51 S.

⁷ wymmen repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁸ loueþ, P. ⁹ þt is no
 sen in the margin, 1st corr. S.

his flesch, & of his bonys. Wherfore a man schal lefen his ³¹ fader & his moder, & drawen hym to his wyf; & þei schulleþ ben tweyn in¹ on flesch. þis sacrament is gret; and y seye ³² in Crist & in holy churche. þat eferych of ȝou lofe his wyf ³³ as hym-selfen, & drede þe wyf hure housbonde.

And, ȝe children, be ȝe buxom to ȝoure eldren: for þat is ¹ **6** ryȝtful. Worschupe þi fader & þi moder, þat is on of þe ² furste comaundementes² in þe byheste, þat it be weel to þe, & ³ þat þou be longe lyfyng on þe erþe. And, ȝe faderes, ne ⁴ stere ȝe noȝt ȝoure children to wraȝþe: bote norsche ȝe hem in þe techynge of oure Lord, & amende hem of here defautes. Serfauntes³, be ȝe boxum to ȝoure fleschlyche lordes, wiþ ⁵ drede & wiþ quakyng, in sympelnesse of ȝoure herte, ryȝt as to Crist; noȝt serfyng to þe [yȝe], as for-to plesen men, bote ⁶ as Cristes serfauntes, doyng þe wylle of God wylfullyche, serfyng wiþ a good will as to oure Lord, & noȝt as to men: ⁷ knowynge þat what good dede any man do, he schal vnder- ⁸ fongen it of God, wheþer⁴ he be a serfaunt oþer a fre man. And, ȝe lordes, do ȝe þe same þinges to hem, forȝefynge hem ⁹ þretynge: knowynge þat boþe ȝoure Lord & hure Lord is in hefene, & þer ne is non vnderfongynge of mennes persones⁵ to-fore God. & her-aftur, my breþeren, be ȝe y-comforted in ¹⁰ oure Lord & in þe myȝt of his vertu. & casteþ up ȝou þe ¹¹ armer of God, þat ȝe mown stonden aȝeyn þe aspyes of þe defel. For ȝoure wrastlyng⁶ ne is noȝt a-ȝeyn flesch & blood, ¹² bote aȝeyn princes & potestates, a-ȝeyn þe gouernoures of þe worlde of þis darknesse, a-ȝeyn þe spyrytual armer of wykkenes in hefnelyche þinges. Wharfore take ȝe þe armer of ¹³ God, þat ȝe⁷ mown aȝeyn-stonde in þe luther day, & þat ȝe mowen stonde⁸ parfyt in alle þinges. & þerfore cutteþ up ¹⁴ ȝoure lendeds⁹, & stonde ȝe in trewþe, & cloþeþ ȝou wiþ an haberiouin¹⁰ of riȝtfulnessse, & schoyeþ ȝoure fet in greyþynge ¹⁵ of þe euangelye of pees; and in al þinge, take ȝe þe scheld of ¹⁶ þe feyþ, in þe whiche ȝe mowen quenchen alle þe fuyry

¹ fol. 59 P.² fol. 51^b S.³ serfauntes repeated in the margin,

1st corr. S.

⁴ where P.⁵ fol. 59^b P.⁶ t inserted in a later hand, S.⁷ ȝ nearly effaced, S.⁸ fol. 52 S.⁹ hertes precedes in P.¹⁰ haberiouin repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

17 gafelokes & darter of hym þat is most wykked. & take ȝe
 to ȝow þe helm of hele, & þe swerd of þe Spiryt, þat is Goddes
 18 word: preyng in eferych tyme in spiryt þoroȝ eferych preyere
 & bysechynge, & wakynge in spiryt in eferich bysynes, &
 19 preyng for alle goode men, & for me þat þer be y-ȝefe to me
 speche in¹ openyng of my mouȝt wiȝ trust, to make ȝou
 20 knowe þe mystery of þe euangely. For whom² y vse wors-
 schupfulyche my ligacyon³ (byndynge) in þis chayne, so þat in
 21 hym y dare⁴ speke, þat y schulde speke. And for þat ȝe
 schulden y-knowe, how it is wiȝ me & what y do, alle þinges
 Tyte, my derest broþer & a trewe serfaunt in oure Lord, schal
 22 make ȝou knowe: whom ich hafe y-send⁵ to ȝow for þis
 enchesoun, þat ȝe knownen how it is wiȝ ous to conforte ȝoure
 23 hertes. Pees be to oure breþeren, & charite wiȝ feiȝ of oure
 24 God þe Fader & oure Lord Iesu Crist. þe grace of God be
 wiȝ alle hem þat lofeþ oure Lord Iesu Crist [in] incor-
 [rup]cyoun⁶. Amen.

PHILIPPIANS.

1 27 Suster⁷, to þe Phylpences he wryteþ in þis wyse, Hafe ȝe
 worþilyche ȝoure conuersacyoun onlyche after þe gospel of
 Crist: þat, whanne⁸ ich come & seo ȝou oþer absent yhere of
 28 to-geder to þe feiȝ of þe euangelye; & in no þing be ȝe a-gast
 of ȝoure aduersaryes: þat is to hem an enchesoun of per-
 29 dyeyoun, bote to ous of hele, & þis is of God; for it is
 y-graunted to ȝou, noȝt þat ȝe onlyche byleue in hym bote
 30 þat ȝe suffren also for hym: hauyng þe same fyȝtyng þat
 ȝe han y-seyn in me, [&]⁹ þat ȝe hereþ now of me.

2 1 And¹⁰ þerfore ȝif þer be any comfortynge in Crist, oþer
 eny solace of charyte, oþer eny felawschupe of spiryt, oþer

¹ & P. ² fol. 60 P. ³ i on erasure; *byndynge* in the margin, 1st corr. S.

⁴ a in *dare* blurred, but repeated in the margin with mark of insertion, S.

⁵ y om. P. ⁶ & *incorec-cyoun* with *ec-cy* in a later hand on erasure, S. om. P. *Vulg.* in incorruptione. ⁷ *uster* half erased. Heading of the

chapter: *phylpences* in the 1st corrector's hand, S. ⁸ fol. 52^b. Heading:

Phylpenses in a late hand throughout the epistle, S. ⁹ in S.P.

¹⁰ d in *and* omitted; fol. 60^b P.

[e]ny¹ in-wardnesse of hafyngē mercy & reuþe, fulfylle ȝe my 2
 ioye, þat ȝe saferen on þing, hauynge on charyte, beyngē of
 on soule, & felynge on þing; no þyng þoroȝ stryfynge, ne 3
 þoroȝ veyn glorye, bote in humelnesse deme ȝe eferich man
 sofereyn to oþer; ne no man byholdynge his owene þinges, 4
 bote oþer mennes þinges. And fele ȝe þis þing in ȝou, þat 5
 was in Crist Iesu: þe whuche whenne he was efene wiþ God, 6
 he ne demed it no rafeyn ȝat he were euene wiþ God, bote 7
 he anentysched² hym-selfen, takynge þe forme of a serfaunt,
 & was y-mad³ in þe⁴ lykenesse of men, & y-founden in habyt 8
 as a man; & he humeled hym-selfe, & was y-mad boxum to
 þe deþ, ȝe to þe deþ of þe⁴ cros. Wherfore God arered hym 9
 up, & graunteþe hym a name ȝat is abofen eferich⁵ name;
 ȝat in þe name of Iesu eferiche kne be y-bowed, of hefnelyche 10
 þinges & of erþelyche þinges and of þynges ȝat beþ of helle,
 & eferich tongue knowleche ȝat oure Lord Iesu Crist is in þe 11
 blisse of God þe Fader. And so, my dereste breþeren, as ȝe 12
 hafeþ herd byfore, ben boxum noȝt onlyche in my presence
 bote also in myn absence, so wiþ drede & wiþ quakynge⁶
 worche ȝe ȝoure owene hele. For God is ȝat worcheþ in ȝou 13
 wil⁷ & parformynge, for good wil. & alle þinges do ȝe 14
 wiþ-outen grucchynges & wiþ-outen doutynges; ȝat ȝe ben 15
 wiþ-outen blame, sympel chyldren of God wiþ-outen repreſe
 in þe myddel of a⁸ schrewed nacyoun & a wykked, among
 whom ȝe schyneþ as lanternes in þe worlde, holdynge þe word 16
 of lyf to my blysse in þe day of Crist; for y ne hafe noȝt
 y-ronne in veyn, ne y-trauayled in veyn. & ȝif ȝat ich be 17
 offred abofe þe sacrifice &⁹ þe seruyse of ȝoure feiþ, y ioye,
 & glade to ȝou alle: & ioye ȝe alle also in þe same þing, and 18
 ioye to me.

And her-after, my breþeren, ioye ȝe in oure Lord. To 1 3
 wryte to ȝow it is noȝt hefy to me, bote also nedful for ȝow.
 Y-seo ȝe houndes, y-seo ȝe wykked werkmen, y-seo ȝe circum- 2
 sisyoun. For we beþ circumisycyoun, ȝat serfeþ to God in ȝ
 spiryt, & ioyeþ in Iesu Crist, & hafeþ no trust in oure flesh:

¹ ony with on on erasure, S.

² first n on erasure, S.

³ y om. P.

⁴ þe om. P.

⁵ fol. 53 S.

⁶ fol. 61 P.

⁷ il on erasure, S.

⁸ om. P.

⁹ in P.

4 þouȝ¹ y my-selfe hafe a trust in flesch. & ȝif eny man is
 5 y-seye trusten in flesch: y my-self was y-circumsyded þe
 eyȝteþe day², of þe kynde of Israel, & of þe kynrede of
 Beniamyn, of Hebrewes Hebrew; after þe lawe, a Pharyse;
 6 aftur þe solewyng of þe lawe, pursewyng Goddes churche;
 & aftur þe riȝtfulnesse³ þat is of þe lawe, ich hadde a
 7 conuersacyoun wiþ-outen blame. Bote þilke þinges þat weren
 profytabel & wynnyng to me, for Crist ich hafe y-demēd þat
 8 þei beþ harmful. [Naþeles y demē alle þinges to be harmful]⁴
 for þe gret knowyng of oure Lord Iesu Crist; for whom ich
 hafe y-mad alle þilke þinges harmful, & ich haue y-demēd
 9 hem as dryt, þat ich wynne Crist, & þat ich be y-founden in
 hym, noȝt hafyng my ryȝtfulnesse þat is of þe lawe, bote
 10 þilke þat is of þe feiþ of Iesu Crist, þat is a ryȝtfulnesse of
 feiþ in God: to knowen hym, [&]⁵ þe vertu of his arysyng
 from deþ to lyf, & þe felawschype of his passyones; & ich am
 11 y-mad lyche to his deþ, ȝif y mowe in any manere come to þe
 12 up-rysynge þat is from deþ to lyf. Noȝt þat ich hafe now
 vnderfongen oþer be ȝit parfyt: bot y sewe, ȝif þat y mowe
 in any manere taken hym, in whom ich am take, Iesu Crist⁶.
 13 & breþeren, y ne demē noȝt þat ich hafe y-taken hym ȝet:
 bote on þing þer is, þat y forȝete þilke þinges þat beþ be-
 hynde, & to þilke þinges þat beþ⁷ byfore y strecche out my-
 14 selfe, & pursewe to þe mede þat is y-ordeyned of þe clepyng
 15 of a-bof-n of God in Iesu Crist. & alle we þat beþ parfyt,
 fele we þis same þing, & ȝef ȝe⁸ feleþ eny oþer þing, God haþ⁹
 16 y-schewed þat þing to ous. Bote naþeles, to þat we beþ
 y-come, to solewe on þing, and dwelle we stille in on rewle¹⁰.
 17 And breþeren, be ȝe my soleweres, & aspye ȝe hem þat walkeþ
 18 so, as ȝe han oure forme. For many men walkeþ, as ich
 haue seyd ȝow fele syþes, and now wepyng y seye ȝow,
 19 enemyes of Cristes cros, whos ende is deþ; & hure God is
 hure wombe, & þe blisse of hem is confusyoun, þat safereþ
 20 erþelyche þynges. Bote oure conuersacyoun is in hefne;

¹ þouȝ y...in flesch om. P. ² fol. 53^b S. ³ fol. 61^b P. ⁴ Vulg.

Verumtamen existimo omnia detrimentum esse, left untranslated in S and P.

⁵ in S.P. ⁶ Vulg. sequor autem si quo modo comprehendam in quo et
comprehensus sum a Christo Iesu. ⁷ om. P. ⁸ we P. ⁹ fol. 54 S.

¹⁰ fol. 62 P.

wherfore we abydeþ oure Safyour & oure Lord Iesu Crist : þat schal reformen þe body of oure¹ humelnesse, þat is lyche 21
þe body of his clernesse, after his worchyng, þoroþ whom he
may maken alle þinges sogetes to hym-selfen.

And þerfore, my dereste breþeren, my ioye & my corone, 1 4
stonde ȝe so in oure Lord, my lefeste breþeren. & ioye ȝe in 4
oure Lord efermore : & eftsones y seye, Ioye ȝe. ȝoure soft- 5
nesse be y-knowe to alle men. Oure Lord is nyȝ. Be ȝe no 6
þyng bysy ; bote in eferiche preyere & bysechynge, in doyng
þankynge, ȝoure axynge ben y-knowe to-fore God. And þe 7
pees of God, þat passeþ eferich wytt, kepe ȝoure hertes &
ȝoure vnderstondynges in Iesu Crist. And breþeren, her- 8
after, what-efer þinges þat beþ trewe, & chaste, oþer ryȝtful,
oþer holy, oþer worþi to ben y-lofed, oþer of good loos², what-
efer³ vertu, what-efer preysyng of techynge, þese þinges
þenke ȝe. [And]⁴ þilke þat ȝe habbeþ y-lerned & vnderfongen 9
& y-herd & y-seyn in me, þese þinges do ȝe, & God of pees
schal be wiþ ȝow.

COLOSSIANS.

Suster⁵, to þe Colocenses seynt Poule wryteþ & seiþ, From 9, 1
þe day þat⁶ we han y-herd of ȝow, we ne cesseþ noȝt for-to
preyen & to bysechen God for ȝow, þat ȝe¹ ben fulfylled wiþ
þe knowynge of his wil & eferich wysdom & spirytual vnder-
stondynge, þat ȝe walkeþ worþilyche, plesynge God by alle 10
þinges, & makynge fruyt in eferich good werk, & waxynge in
þe knowynge of God in eferich vertu ; & y-comforted þoroþ þe 11
power of his clernesse, in eferich pacyence & longanymyte
wiþ ioye ; þankynge God þe Fader, þat haþ y-mad ous worþi 12
in-to þe party of þe sort of goode men in lyȝt ; þat haþ 13
delyfered ous from þe power of darknesse, & haþ y-broȝt ous
in-to þe kyngdom of þe Sone of his lofe ; in whom we habbeþ 14
forbuggyng, & forȝefenesse of oure synnes : and he is þe 15
ymage of God þat is in-visybel, & he is þe furste bygeten

¹ om. P. ² fol. 62^b P. ³ fol. 54^b S. ⁴ in S.P. ⁵ *Colocenses* in
the margin, 1st corrector. *Colocenses* in a late hand heads the pages
throughout ; *uster* nearly erased, S. ⁶ þ^t *whan* P.

16 sone of eferych creature. For in hym beþ alle þinges y-mad,
 in hefne & in erþe, boþe þinges þat mowen ben y-seye, &
 invisybel þinges, wheþer it ben thrones oþer¹ lordschypes²
 oþer pryncypatees oþer myȝtes; alle þinges beþ y-maad in
 17 hym, & þoroȝ hym; & he is to-foren alle þinges, and alle
 18 þinges beþ in hym. & he is hed of þe body, of³ holy churche:
 & he is þe bygynnyng, & þe furst bygeten chyld of dede
 19 men; þat he holde þe furste dygnyte among alle þinges. For
 20 it plesed God þat eferich fulnesse dwelled in hym; & þat
 alle þinges weren reconcyled by hym to hym-selfen, makynge
 a pees þoroȝ þe blod of his cros, boþe to þilke þinges þat beþ
 21 in erþe, oþer in hefne. And ȝe, whan ȝe weren sumtyme
 y-alyened & y-mynused in wyt in efel werkes, now he haþ
 22 reconsyled ȝow in þe body of his flesch þoroȝ deþ⁴, to ȝelde ȝow
 23 holy & wiþ-outen wem & wiþ-outen reprefe to-fore hym: so
 ȝif þat ȝee dwelleþ stylle, y-founded in þe feiþ, stabel and
 im-mebel from þe hope of þe euangelye þat ȝe han y-herd,
 þat haþ ben y-preched in alle þe creatures þat beþ vnder
 hefne; of whiche euangelye y Poule am y-mad mynystre,
 24 þat ioye nouþe in my suffrynges for ȝou, & fulfille in
 my flesch þilke þat wanteþ of þe passyones of Crist
 25 for his body, þat is holy churche; of whom ich am
 y-mad mynystre, after þe dispe[n]sacyoun of⁵ God þat
 is y-graunted to me in ȝow, þat y fulfille þe word of God
 26 & þe mysterye þat haþ ben y-hud from worldes & from
 27 kynredes. Bote now it is y-schewed to goode men, to
 whom God wolde y-knowe þe richesse of þe blisse of þis
 sacrament, þat is Crist, in hem þat weren mysbylefed men,
 28 þat is in ȝow hope of blisse: whom we scheweþ, amendynge
 eferich man, & techynge in eferich wysdom, þat we ȝelden
 29 eferich man parfyt in⁶ Iesu Crist; in whom y trauayle,
 fyȝtyng aftur þe worshynge of hym, þat he⁷ worcheþ in me
 in vertu.

2 1 And ich wole þat ȝe wyten what bisynesse ich hafe for
 ȝow, & for hem þat beþ at Laudycye, & alle þilke þat ne
 2 hafeþ noȝt yseye my vysage in flesch; þat hure hertes ben

¹ orþer P.² fol. 63 P.³ fol. 55 S.⁴ þe deþ P.⁵ fol. 63^b P.⁶ fol. 55^b S.⁷ om. P.

y-comforted, & þat þei ben enformed in charite, & in alle þe richnesses of þe fulnesse of vnderstondynge, in knowyng þe mysterie of God þe Fader of Iesu Crist, in whom beþ alle þe 3 tresoures y-hud of wysdom & of connynge. & þis y seye, þat 4 no man bygyle ȝow in hyȝenesse of wordes. For þouȝ ich be 5 absent from ȝow in body, ich am present wiþ ȝow in spiryt, ioyynge & seynge ȝoure order, & þe sadnesse of ȝoure feiþ þat is in Crist. & þerfore¹ ȝef þe han vnderfongen oure Lord Iesu 6 Crist, walke ȝe in hym, y-roted & y-buld in hym, & y-con- 7 fermed² in þe feiþ, as ȝe han y-lerned, beyng plentefous in doyng þankynge to God. And loke ȝe þat no man bygyle 8 ȝow by prophecye & veyn fallas, aftur mennes tradycyones, after þe elementes of þis worlde, & noȝt after Crist: for in 9 hym dwelleþ eferich fulnesse of þe Godhed bodylyche, & ȝe io beþ fulfylled in hym, þat is hed of eferich pryncypate & potestat: in whom ȝe beþ circumsyded þoroȝ circumsyscopyoun, 11 þat ne is noȝt y-maad wiþ honden, in spoyleynge of þe body of flesch, in þe cyreumseysyoun of Iesu Crist; ȝe beþ y-buryed 12 to-gedere wiþ hym þoroȝ baptysme, in whom ȝe han a-rysen up from deþ³ to lyf by þe feiþ of þe worshynge of God, þat a-rered hym up⁴ from deþ to lyfe. And ȝe, whanne ȝe weren 13 dede in ȝoure synnes, & in þe prepucye of ȝoure flesch, he haþ y-mad ȝou lyfe to-gedere wiþ hym, forȝeuenge ȝou ȝoure synnes; & doyng a-wey þe wrytyng of þe decre þat was 14 a-ȝeyn ȝow, & toke it a-wey from ȝow, þat was contrarye to ȝow, hongyng hym on þe cros; and spoyleynge principatees 15 & potestates, ladde ofer trustylyche, ofercomyng hem open- lyche in hym-selfen⁵. And þerfore no man deme ȝow in 16 mete⁶, ne in drynke, ne in party of⁷ þe feste day, oþer of neo-men[y]e⁸, oþer of sabotes: þat beþ a schadewe of þinges 17 þat beþ to comen; bote þe body of Crist. No man bygyle 18 ȝow, þat wole walken in þe humelnesse & in þe relygyoun of angeles, þat he ne haþ noȝt y-seyn, þat is veynlyche y-blowe þoroȝ þe wyt of his flesch, & ne halt noȝt þe hed, of whom al 19

¹ fol. 64 P.² y om. P.³ fol. 56 S.⁴ in the margin, S.⁵ in hym selfen underlined, S. ⁶ in mete repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.⁷ fol. 64^b P. ⁸ neo menþe with o nearly effaced and a cross in the margin to mark error, S. neo mounþe P. Vulg. neomeniæ.

þe body is y-maad & y-wroȝt by [io]yntes¹ & knuttynges, &
 20 groweþ in-to þe wexyng of God. And ȝef ȝe beþ dede wiþ
 Crist from þe elementes of þis worlde, whar-to deme ȝe ȝet as
 21 men þat lyfeþ in þe worlde? Ne² touche ȝe noȝt, ne taste ȝe
 22 noȝt, ne trete ȝe noȝt alle þilke þinges, þat beþ by þe pure vse
 23 of hem in-to deþ, aftur mennes hestes & hure techynges; þat
 haueþ þe resoun of wysdom in supersticyoun & in humel-
 nesse, & noȝt for-to spare þe body, ne in no manere worschupe
 to hele of þe flesch.

3 1 And³ þerfore ȝef ȝe han a-resen up to-gedere wiþ Crist,
 secheþ þilke þinges þat beþ aboven, þere as Crist is syttinge
 2 in þe ryȝt syde of God. And safere⁴ ȝe þilke þinges þat beþ
 3 a-bofen, & noȝt þilke þinges þat beþ up-on þe erþe. For ȝe
 4 ben dede, &⁵ ȝoure lyf is hud wiþ Crist in God. And when
 þat Crist appereþ, ȝoure lyf, þanne schulle⁶ ȝe appere wiþ
 5 hym in blysse. & þerfore mortifye ȝe ȝoure membres þat beþ
 up-on þe erþe, as fornycacyoun, vnclanness, lykyng flesch-
 lyche, efel coueytynge, & coueytyse, þat is seruyse of maw-
 6 metes; for whiche þinges þat wraþþe of God com in-to þe
 7 children of mys-trust & of vnbylefe; in þe [whiche ȝe also]
 8 walkeden sumtyme, whyles þat ȝe lyfeden in hem. Bote do
 ȝe now a-wey from ȝou alle þinges, wraþþe, indygnacyoun,
 malyce, blasphemye⁷, foule wordes ne passe noȝt forþ out of
 9 ȝoure mouȝt: ne lye ȝe noȝt to-gedere, bote spoyleþ ȝow of þe
 10 olde man wiþ his dedes, & cloþeþ ȝow wiþ a newe man, wiþ
 hym þat is renewed in þe knowyng of God aftur þe ymage
 11 of hym þat haþ y-schaped hym: wher ne is noȝt male &
 femal, Iew & Gentyl, circumscysyoun & prepucye, vncouȝe
 man & couȝ man, bonde man & fre man: bote alle þynges in
 12 alle þynges Crist. & þerfore cloþeþ ȝow as holy men &
 derlynges, þat beþ y-chosen of God, þe inwardnesse of mercy,
 13 benygnyte, humelnesse, softnesse, pacyence; supportyng
 eferich man oþer, & forȝefynge eferich man oþer, ȝif eny man
 haþ⁸ eny playnt aȝeyn eny of ȝou; & riȝt as God haþ forȝeuȝ
 14 ȝou, so do ȝe: and aboven alle þese þinges haue ȝe charite,

¹ myntes, probably error for iuyntes, S. ioyntes, P. ² e in the margin, S.

³ fol. 56^b S. ⁴ safere repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

⁵ in P.

⁶ fol. 65 P.

⁷ & bl. P.

⁸ fol. 57 S.

þat¹ is a bond of perfeccioun. & þe pees of Crist ioye in 15
 ȝoure hertes, in þe whuche pes ȝe beþ y-cleped in on body ; &
 be ȝe kynde. þe word of Crist dwelle in ȝow in eferich 16
 wysdom plenteuouslyche, techynge & warnynge ȝow-selfe in
 psalmes², ympnys & spirytual songes, in grace syngynge in
 ȝoure hertes to God. And alle þinge what-efer ȝe don, in 17
 word oþer in dede, alle þinges do ȝe in þe name of oure Lord
 Iesu Crist, doynge³ þankynge to God & to þe Fader þorow
 hym. And ȝe wymmen, be ȝe sogetes to ȝoure housbondes, 18
 as it byhofeþ in oure Lord. And ȝe men, lofe ȝe ȝoure wifes, 19
 & ne be ȝe⁴ not bytter to hem. Chyldren, be ȝe buxom to 20
 ȝoure eldren by alle þinges, for þat is plesynge to God. And 21
 ȝe fadres, ne stere ȝe noȝt ȝoure chyldren to indyngnacyoun,
 þat þey ne be noȝt y-maad of smal soule. And ȝe serfauntes, 22
 be ȝe⁴ buxom to ȝoure fleschlyche lordes by alle þinges, noȝt
 serfynge at þe yȝe, as plesynge to men, bote in sympelnesse
 of herte, dredynge oure Lord : & what-efer ȝe doþ, doþ it 23
 wylfullyche, as to oure Lord God, & noȝt to men ; knowynge 24
 þat of oure Lord ȝe schulleþ vnderfonge a rewardynge of
 herytage : serfe ȝe to Crist þat is God. For he þat doþ 25
 wrong schal receyfen⁵ þat he haþ yuel y-don : & þer ne is non
 vnderfongynge⁶ of mennes personnes to-fore God. And ȝe 1 4
 lordes, þat is efene & riȝtful doþ to ȝoure serfauntes, knowynge
 þat ȝe habbeþ also a Lord in hefene. And⁷ be ȝe in ȝoure 2
 preyeres, & wake ȝe in doynge þankynge to God, preyenge 3
 to-gedere & for ous also, þat God opene to ous þe dore of
 his speche, to speke þe mysterie of Crist, wherfore ich am
 y-bounde ; þat y schewe it openlyche, so as it byhofeþ me 4
 for-to speken. Walke ȝe in wysdom to þilke þat beþ wiþ- 5
 outer-forþ, forbuggyng þe tyme. And ȝoure word in grace 6
 be y-safered wiþ salt, þat ȝe knownen how it byhofeþ ȝow to
 answeren eferich man. And þilke þinges þat beþ aboute 7
 me, Tyte, my broþer schal make ȝow knowe, þat is a trewe
 serfaunt & serfaunt wiþ me in oure Lord : hym ich haue 8
 y-sent to ȝou for þis enchesoun, þat he knowe how it is wiþ
 ȝou & comforthe ȝoure hertes.

¹ fol. 65^b P. ² nota in the margin, S. ³ o on erasure, S. ⁴ om. P.

⁵ fol. 66 P. ⁶ fol. 57^b S. ⁷ lordes & P. lordes in the margin,
 1st corr. S.

I. THESSALONIANS.

And¹ to þe Tessalonycences, suster, he writeþ & seiþ,
 1 2 We þankeþ God efermore for ȝow alle, & we makeþ
 3 muynde of ȝou efermore wiþ-outen styntyng, hafynge muynde
 of þe werk of ȝoure feiþ, & of ȝoure² trafayle, & of ȝoure
 charyte, & of ȝoure abydynge, & of ȝoure hope of oure Lord
 4 Iesu Crist, to-fore God & oure Fader. And knowe ȝe, my
 5 lefe breþeren, ȝoure eleccyoun of God, for oure euangelye ne
 was noȝt to ȝou onlyche in word, bote in vertu, & in þe holy
 Spiryt, & in gret plente, as ȝe wyteþ whyche we weren in ȝou
 6 for ȝou. And ȝe beþ y-maad foleweres of³ ous, & of oure
 Lord, takynge þe word in myche tribulacyoun, wiþ þe ioye of
 7 þe holy Spiryt; þat ȝe beþ y-maad forme to alle þilke þat
 8 bylueþ in Macedonye & in Achaye. For of ȝou Godes
 [word]⁴ is y-sprongen⁵ a-brood, noȝt onlyche in Macedonye &
 in Achaye, bote in-to eferich place ȝoure feiþ þat is in God is
 y-passed forþ; so þat it is noȝt nedful to speke to ȝou no
 9 þing. For þei scheweþ of ous what entre we haden in-to
 ȝow; & how ȝe beþ y-turned to God fro mawmetes, for-to
 10 seruen a verrey God þat lyueþ, & to abyden his Sone from
 heuene, whom he arered up from deþ to lyf, Iesu, þat haþ
 2 1 delyuered ous from wraþþe þat is to comynge. And ȝe ȝou-
 self knoweþ oure entre to ȝou, & þat it ne was noȝt veyn:
 2 bote furst we suffreden enuyes & disheses, as ȝe wyteþ wel,
 among Phylpences, bote we haden trust in oure Lord God
 3 to⁶ speke to ȝou þe euangelye of God in myche bysynesse. &
 oure exortacyoun ne was noȝt of errour, ne of vnclannessse, ne
 4 in gyle: bote as [we] weren y-prefed by-fore God, & as þe
 euangelye was y-take to ous, so we spekeþ; noȝt as plesynge
 5 to men, bote to God þat prefeþ oure hertes. Ne we weren
 noȝt in no tyme in speche of flaterynge, as ȝe wyteþ wel, ne
 6 in⁷ occasyoun of coueytyse, God is wyttnesse; ne sechynge
 7 worschupe of ȝou, ne of non oþer, whan we myȝten hauē y-be

¹ *tessalonycences* in the margin, 1st corr.; repeated as a heading throughout in a late hand, S. ² *oure*, fol. 66^b P. ³ fol. 58 S. ⁴ *word* in a late hand, P. ⁵ *s* added above the line, S. ⁶ fol. 67 P. ⁷ *in no* P. *nota* in the margin, S.

chargeful¹ to ȝou, as Cristes aposteles. Bote we were y-maad as smale children among ȝou², riȝt as a norysche þat nore-scheþ hure chuldrn: so we han desyred ȝou & wolden noȝt 8 onlyche haue y-take to ȝou þe euangelye, bote also oure owne soules, for ȝe weren leuest to ous. And³ breþeren, ȝe haueþ 9 mynde of oure trauayl & of oure werynesse: for day & nyȝt we wroȝten, for we ne wolden greue none of ȝow, ne be chariaunt, and precheden to ȝow þe euangelye of God. & ȝe to beþ wytnesses, & God also, hou holylyche & ryȝtfullyche and wiþ-outen blame we weren to ȝou þat byleueden, as ȝe wyteþ 11 wel, & preyenge eferichone of ȝou as a fader his chyldren, & 12 comfortynge ȝou, & wytnessed to ȝow, þat ȝe walken worþilyche to⁴ God, þat haþ ycleped ȝow in-to his kyngdom & in-to his blisse. & þerfore we þankeþ God wiþ-outen stuntynge⁵, for 13 whanne ȝe hadden vnderfongen of ous þe word of þe herynge of God, ȝe vnderfongen it noȝt as mennes word, bote as þe word of God verreylyche, þat worcheþ in ȝou þat han byleued. For breþeren, ȝe beþ y-mad foleweres of Godes churches þat 14 beþ [in] Iudee in Iesu Crist: for ȝe han y-suffred þe same þinges of oure felowchupes, þat þei habbeþ of Iewes; þat slowen 15 Iesus⁶ þat is God & þe prophetes⁶ also, & ous þei han purswed, & þei ne pleseþ noȝt God, & to alle men þei beþ aduersaryes: forbedynge ous to speke to mysbylefed men þat þei ben 16 y-saued; þat þei fulfullen efermore hure synnes: for þe wraȝþe of God is y-comen on hem to þe ende. And breþeren, 17 we þat ben desolat from ȝou [for a tyme], in m[o]u[þ]⁷ & in byholdynge, & noȝt in herte, hafeþ⁸ muche y-hyȝed to sen ȝoure vysage wiþ muche desyr: & ich wolde haue y-come 18 to ȝou ones & eftsones, bote Sathanas letted me. Whiche is 19 oure hope, oþer oure ioye, oþer þe corone of oure blisse? Ne be ȝe þat noȝt byfore oure Lord Iesu Crist in his comynge? ȝe beþ oure blysse & oure ioye. 20

And⁹ for we myȝten no lengere abyden, it plesed ous to 1 3 lyfen al-one at Athenys: & senden to ȝow Tymothe, oure 2

¹ chargeful repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ² fol. 58^b S.

³ Nota in the margin, S. ⁴ fol. 67^b P. ⁵ stundynge P. ⁶ Jesus... prophetis in late hand on erasure, P. ⁷ many S.P. *Vulg.* desolati a vobis ad tempus horæ. ⁸ fol. 59 S. ⁹ fol. 68 P.

broþer & Goddes seruaunt in þe euangelye of Crist, to con-
 3 ferme ȝow, & to byseche ȝou for ȝoure feiþ; þat noman be
 y-mefed in þese trybulacyons; for ȝe wyteþ ȝow-selfe þat in
 4 þis we beþ y-sett. For whenne we weren wiþ ȝow, we tolden
 ȝou þis byfore, þat we schulden suffre trybulacyones; as it is
 5 y-don, & as ȝe knoweþ. And þerfore y ne abode no lengere,
 bote sende to knowe ȝoure feiþ, lest he þat tempteþ haue
 6 y-tempted ȝou, & oure trauayle be y-mad veyn. Bote now
 when Tymothe comeþ from ȝou to ous, & telleþ ous ȝoure
 7 feiþ & ȝoure charyte, & þat ȝe han good mynde on ous, &
 ȝat ȝe wolden sen ous, as we wolden ȝow. & þerfore, breþeren,
 we beþ ycounforted in ȝow in al oure¹ nede & al oure¹
 8 trybulacyoun þorȝ ȝoure feiþ: for now we lyfeþ, ȝif þat ȝe
 9 stondeþ in oure Lord. & what þankynge mow we ȝelde to
 God for ȝow in al oure ioye, þat we ioyeþ for ȝow to-foren
 10 oure God; preyenge boþe nyȝt & day þat we sen ȝoure
 vysage, & þat we fulfullen þilke þinges þat lakkeþ to ȝoure²
 11 feiþ. Bote God oure Fader, & oure Lord Iesu Crist, dresse
 12 oure weye to-ward ȝow: & God multyplye ȝou & encrece
 ȝoure charyte³ to-gedere, & to alle men, ryȝt as we beþ in
 13 ȝow: to conferme ȝoure hertes wiþ-outen blame in holynesse
 to-fore God oure Fader, in þe comynge of oure God Iesu⁴
 Crist wiþ alle his seyntes.

4 1 And þerfore, breþeren, here-after we preyeþ ȝow and
 bysecheþ ȝou in oure Lord Iesus, þat, ryȝt as ȝe han vnder-
 fongen of ous how it byhoueþ ȝou to walken & to plesen God,
 2 so walke ȝe, þat ȝe wexen more plenteuous. For ȝe knoweþ
 3 whyche hestes ich haue ȝeue ȝow þoroȝ oure Lord Iesus. &
 þis is þe wyl of God, ȝoure holynesse, þat ȝe abstene ȝow from
 4 fornycacion; þat eferech man of ȝow conne⁵ owe his vessel in
 5 holynesse & in worschupe, noȝt in passyoun of lust as folke
 6 þat knoweþ noȝt God; ne no man oferpassa ne bygyle his
 broþer in chaffarynge: for God is wrachful of alle suche men,
 as we han y-sayd ȝou herbyfore, & y-wytnessed it to ȝow.
 7 For God ne haþ noȝt y-cleped ous in-to vnclanness, bote
 8 in-to holynesse. & þerfore who þat dyspyseþ þese þinges, he

¹ ȝoure P.² oure P.³ fol. 68^b P.⁴ Iesu twice, P.⁵ e in the margin, S.

ne dispysēt noȝt man, bote God, þat haȝt y-ȝesen his holy Spiryt in ous. Of charite of breþerhede we ne haueþ no 9
nede to wryte to ȝou: for of God ȝe han y-lerned ȝow-selfe,
how ȝe schulen l[o]ue¹ to-gedere; for [ȝe doþ] þat to alle 10
ȝowre breþeren in al Macedonia. Bote, breþeren², we preyeþ
ȝow³, þat ȝe ben aboute to ben in reste, & þat ȝe don 11
ȝoure werk, & worchen wiþ ȝoure hondes, as we han y-bede
ȝou & y-sayd ȝow her-byfore; þat ȝe walken honestlyche
to hem þat⁴ ben wiþ-outen-forþ, desyryng no þing of no
mannes. Bote, breþeren, we ne woleþ noȝt þat ȝe ben 12
vnkunnynge of hem þat beþ slepyng; þat ȝe ben noȝt drery,
as oþer men, þat habbeþ nou hope. For ȝef we bylefeþ 13
þat Iesu was ded, & þat he ros⁵ up from deeþ to lyfe, so God
schal bryngen þilke þat hafeþ y-sleped by Iesus wiþ hym.
For þis we seggeþ in þe word of God, þat we þat lyfeþ & beþ 14
þe resydue in þe comynge of oure Lord, ne schuleþ noȝt gon
byforen hem þat han y-slept byfore. For oure Lord in his 15
commaundynge, & in þe voyce of an archaungel, & in þe
trompe of God, schal come adown from hefne: & þilke þat
beþ dede in Crist schuleþ rysen⁶ up furst: & siþþe we þat 16
lyfeþ, þat beþ y-laft, schulen ben y-rauysched to-gedere wiþ
hem in clowdes, to mete with Cryst in þe eyr: & so we
schuleþ efermore ben with oure Lord. & þerfore be ȝe 17
y-comforted to-gedere in these wordes.

Bote of þe tymes & of þe momentes, my breþeren, it 1 5
nedeþ noȝt þat y wryte to ȝou. For ȝe wyteþ ȝou-selfe⁷ þat 2
þe day of oure Lord schal come as a þef by nyȝte. For⁸ 3
whanne me seiþ þat þer is pees & sekernesse, þanne schal þer
come a sodayn deþ, as þe sorowȝ of a⁹ womman þat bereþ a
chylde; bote þei ne schuleþ noȝt flen a-wey. Bote, breþeren, 4
ȝe be noȝt in derknesse, þat þilke day take ȝow as a þef: for 5
alle ȝe beþ chyldren of lyȝt, & Goddes chyldren, & ȝe beþ
nouþer of nyȝt, ne of darknessse. And þerfore ne slepe we 6
noȝt, as oþer men, bote wake¹⁰ we & be we sober. For þilke 7

¹ lyue S.P. nota in the margin, S. ² fol. 69 P. ³ Vulg. Rogamus autem vos fratres ut abundetis magis. ⁴ fol. 60 S. ⁵ a ros P. ⁶ risen repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁷ fol. 69^b P. ⁸ e in the margin, S.
⁹ om. P. ¹⁰ fol. 60^b S.

þat slepeþ, þei slepeþ a-nyȝt; & þilke þat beþ dronken, beþ
 8 dronken a-nyȝt; bote we þat beþ of þe day, be we sober, and
 caste we up-on ous an haberioum of feiþ & of charyte, & an
 9 helm þat is hope of hele. For God ne haþ noȝt y-put ous
 in-to wraȝþe, bote in-to getynge of hele þoroȝ oure Lord Iesu
 10 Crist, þat dyed for ous, þat, wheþer we waken oþer slepen, we
 11 lyfen to-gedere wiþ hym. Wherfore be ȝe y-coumforted to
 12 God, & eferich man edyfye oþer, as ȝe doþ. And, breþeren,
 we preyeþ ȝow þat ȝe know hem, þat traunayleþ a-mong ȝow,
 13 & beþ aboven ȝou in oure Lord, & warne ȝou, þat ȝe han hem
 more plenteuouslyche in charite for hure werk; &¹ hauie ȝe
 14 pees wiþ hem. And, breþeren, we preyeþ ȝow þat² ȝe
 a-menden vn-pesyble men, & comforteþ men of smal soule, &
 15 vnderfongeþ seke men, & be ȝe pacyent to alle men. & lokeþ
 þat no man ȝelde to oþer yfel for yfel; bote efermo swe þe
 16 þing þat is good, eferich man to oþer, & to alle men. & ioye
 17, 18 ȝe efermore; & preye ȝe wiþ-oute stuntynge; & in alle þinges
 do ȝe þankynge to God: for þis is Godes wille in Iesu Crist
 19, 20 in³ alle ous. Ne quenche ȝe noȝt þe Spiryt; ne dyspyse ȝe
 21 noȝt prophecyes; prefeþ alle þinges, & holdeþ þat þing þat⁴ is
 22, 23 good; & absteneþ ȝou from al yfel. & he þat is God of pees
 halewe ȝou by alle þinges, þat ȝoure spiryt, ȝoure soule, &
 ȝoure body be y-kept hol wiþ-outen playnt in þe comynge of
 24 oure Lord Iesu Crist. & þe trewe God þat haþ y-cleped ȝou,
 25 he schal don hyt. Breþeren, preye⁵ ȝe for ous.

II. THESSALONIANS.

1 3 And⁶, breþeren, we oweþ to þanke God efermore for ȝou,
 as it is worþi, for efermore ȝoure feiþ waxeþ, & ȝoure charite
 4 waxeþ plenteous of eferichone to oþer; so þat we ous-selfe
 ioyeþ in ȝou in Goddes churches for ȝoure pacyence & ȝoure
 feiþ in alle persecuyons and ȝoure tribulacyounes þat ȝe
 5 suffreþ, in ensample of þe ryȝtful dom of God; þat ȝe ben
 y-had⁷ worþy to⁸ þe kyngdom of God, for whom ȝe suffreþ:
 6 ȝif it be ryȝtful to-fore God to ȝelde trybulacyoun to þilke þat

¹ e in the margin, S.² fol. 70 P.³ & P.⁴ þing þt on

erasure, S.

⁵ fol. 61 S.⁶ An P.⁷ y om. P.⁸ fol. 70^b P.

anuyeþ ȝou, & to ȝow þat haueþ trybulacyoun, reste wiþ ous¹, 7
 in þe reualacyoun of oure Lord Iesu Crist from hefne wiþ þe
 angeles of his vertu, doyng veniaunce in lye of fuyr in hem 8
 þat ne haueþ noȝt y-knowe God, [& þat] ne beþ noȝt buxom to
 þe euangelye of oure Lord Iesu Crist: & þei schulleþ ȝeuen 9
 eferlastynge peynes in deþ from þe face of oure Lord & þe
 blisse of his vertu, whenn þat he comeþ to ben y-gloryfyed 10
 in his seyntes, & to ben wondurful in alle þilke þat han
 byleued, & oure witnesse schal ben y-lefed on ȝou, in þat
 day. & we preyeþ euermore for ȝou, þat God fouche saaf to 11
 clepe ȝou þoroȝ his clepynge, and fulfulle al þe wylle of his
 goodnesse & þe werk of feyþ in verteu; þat þe name of oure 12
 Lord Iesu Crist be y-claryfyed in ȝou, & ȝe wiþ hym þoroȝ þe
 grace of oure Lord Iesu Crist.

Bute breþeren, we preyeþ ȝou by þe comynge of oure 1 **2**
 Lord Iesu Crist, & of oure congregacion in-to² þe same þing,
 þat ȝe ben³ noȝt sone y-mefed from ȝoure wyt, ne þat ȝe ben²
 noȝt afrayed, as þouȝ þe day of oure Lord were y-come, nouȝter
 by epystel, as þoȝ heo were y-send from⁴ ous, ne by spiryt, ne
 by word; ne no man bygyle ȝou in no manere: for bote ȝif ȝ
 þat þer come dissencyoun furst, & he be y-schewed, þat is
 man of sunne & child of perdyoun, þat is aduersary & 4
 y-hofen up a-bofen alle þinge þat is y-cleped God oþer
 heryed, so þat he sytte in þe temple⁵ of God, schewyng hym-
 selfe as þouȝ he were a God. Ne holde ȝe noȝt, þat þese 5
 þynges y sayde to ȝou, whyles þat ich was wiþ ȝou? & þat 6
 wiþholdeþ now ȝe knoweþ, þat he be y-schewed in his tyme.
 For he wercheþ now þe mystery of wykkednesse: onlyche þat 7
 he þat holdeþ now, holde he, forto he⁶ be y-don out of þe
 myddel. And þanne þilke wykked schal ben y-schewed, 8
 whom oure Lord Iesus schal slen wiþ þe spiryt of his mouȝ,
 & schal distroyen hym þoroȝ þe schynynge & þe brytnesse of
 his comynge; hym, whos comynge is þoroȝ þe worshynge of 9
 Sathanas in eferich vertu & sygnes & false wondres, & in 10
 eferych bygylinge of wykkednesse to þilke þat⁷ peryscheþ;

¹ e in the margin, S. ² fol. 61b S. ³ ne ben P. ⁴ fol. 71 P.

⁵ tempele repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁶ he altered from be, S. be P.

⁷ þt inserted above the line in a later hand, S.

for þei ne haueþ noȝt rescveyued þe charite of treuþe þat þei
 weren y-maad saf. & þerfore God schal sende to hem a
 11 worchyng of error, þat þei bylefen to lesyng; & þat alle
 12 þei ben y-demded þat bylefeþ noȝt to þe trewþe, bote as-
 senteden to wykkednesse. Bote we oweþ efermore¹ to
 þanke God for ȝow, þat² beþ y-lofed of God, þat God haþ
 y-chosen ous þe furste fruyt in-to hele in þe³ holynesse of
 13 Spiryt & feiþ of trewþe, in þe whuche God haþ y-cleped ȝou
 by oure⁴ euangelye, in getyng of þe blisse of God & of oure
 14 Lord Iesu Crist. & þerfore, breþeren, stonde ȝe, & holdeþ þe
 15 tradicyones þat ȝe han y-lerned, wheþer it be by word, oþer
 Fader þat lofed ous & haþ y-ȝefen ous an eferlastynge com-
 16 fort & a good hope in grace, conferme ȝoure hertes in eferich
 good werk & good word.

3 1 And breþeren, her-aftur preyeþ for ous, that Goddes word
 2 renne & be y-claryfyed, as it is wiþ ȝou; & þat we ben
 3 delyuered from vncovenabel men & wykkes; for þe feiþ ne is
 noȝt of alle men. Bote God is trewe, þat schal conferme ȝow
 4 & kepe ȝou from ynel. & we trusteþ in ȝow in God, þat ȝe
 5 doþ & schulen don þilke þinges þat we hafeþ y-bede ȝou don.
 6 And oure Lord dresse ȝoure hertes in þe charite of God, & in
 7 þe pacyence of Crist. And breþeren, we chargeþ ȝou in þe
 8 name of oure Lord Iesu Crist, þat ȝe wiþ-drawe ȝou from
 eferich broþer þat walkeþ in-ordynatlyche⁵, & noȝt after þe
 9 tradycyon⁶ þat ȝe han vnderfongen of ous. And ȝe ȝouselfen
 10 wyteþ hou it byhofeþ ȝou to solewen ous; for we ne were not
 11 vnpesybel a-mong ȝow, ne eten noȝt oure bred of no mannes
 12 ȝefynge, bote trauayleden & weren wery boþe nyȝt & day, for
 13 we ne wolden noȝt chargen no man of ȝou: noȝt as þoȝ we
 14 haden y-had no power, bote for we wolden⁷ ȝefen ous-selfe
 15 forme to ȝou, how ȝe schulden solewen ous. For whyles þat
 16 ich was wiþ ȝow, þis y sayde to ȝow, He þat ne wol not
 17 trafaylen, ne ete he noȝt⁸. For we herden þat þer weren
 18 summe a-mong ȝow⁹, þat walkeden in reste, worchyng no

¹ fol. 71^b P.² fol. 62 S.³ om. P.⁴ ȝoure P.⁵ nota in

margin, S.

⁶ fol. 72 P.⁷ fol. 62^b S.⁸ ete he noȝt repeated

in the margin, 1st corr. S.

þing, bote doyngcoryouslylyche hure þinges. And we chargeþ 12
 suche men & bysecheþ hem in oure Lord Iesu Crist, þat þei
 worchen in sylence & eten hure bred. Bote breþerein, ne 13
 fayle ȝe noȝt wel doyngc. And hwo¹ þat ne boweþ noȝt to 14
 oure word by þis epystel, marke ȝe² hym, & ne medleþ noȝt
 wiþ hym, þat he be confounded. Bote ne holde hym not³ as 15
 ȝoure enemy, bote amendeþ hym as ȝoure broþer. And God⁴ 16
 of pees he graunte ȝou pees in eferich place. And God be
 wiþ ȝow alle.

HEBREWS.

And⁴ to þe children of Israel, suster, he wryteþ & saiþ,
 God haþ y-spoken in many maneres sumtyme in⁵ prophetes 1
 to oure fadres, bote al-þer last in þese dayes he haþ y-spoken 2
 to ous in his Sone, whom he haþ y-ordeyned to ben eyr
 of alle þinges, by whom also he made þe worldes; & he is þe 3
 brytnesse of his blisse, & þe fygure of his substaunce, berynge
 alle þinges þoroȝ þe word of his vertu, & makynge þe pur-
 gacyoun of synnes, he syt on þe ryȝt syde of þe mageste an-
 hyȝ in hefne; so muche y-maad betur þan aungeles, in as 4
 muche as he haþ an-heryted a different name to-foren hem.
 For to whuche of þe aungeles haþ God y-sayd in any tyme, 5
 þou art my Sone, to⁶ day ich haue bygeten þe? & eftsones,
 Ich wole be to hym a Fader & he schal be my Sone? And 6
 eftsones whan he bryngeþ his furst bygeten sone in-to þe
 worlde he sayþ, & alle his aungeles heryen hym. & to 7
 aungeles he seiþ, He makeþ his aungeles spirytes & þi ser-
 fauntes lye of þe⁷ fuyr. Bote to þe sone he seyþ, þi throne, 8
 God, is from worlde to worlde; & a ȝerde of equyte þe ȝerde
 of þi kyngdom. þou hast y-lofed riȝtfulness & y-hated 9
 wykkednesse; wher-fore þi God haþ a-noynted þe wiþ oyle of
 gladnesse to-fore þi felawes. &, Lord, in þe⁸ bygynnyng ȝou 10
 foundedest þe erþe, & hefnes beþ þe werkes of þyn honden:

¹ ho P. ² ȝe inserted above the line, S. ³ in margin, 1st corr. S.

⁴ Hebreos in margin, 1st corr.; repeated in a late hand as a heading throughout the epistle, S. ⁵ fol. 72^b P. ⁶ fol. 63 S. ⁷ om. P.

⁸ þi P.

11 þei schuleþ perysche, bote þou schalt efermore¹ duelle styll :
 12 & alle þei schuleþ waxen old as cloþinge ; & as an helynge
 þou schalt chaungen hem, & þei schuleþ ben y-chaunged :
 bote þou art efermore on, & þi ȝeres ne schuleþ noȝt faylen².
 13 Bote to whom of þe aungeles haþ he y-sayd her-byfore, Sitte
 on my ryȝtsyde, for-to þat y putte þin enemyes a stol vnder
 14 þi feet ? Ne beþ noȝt alle þe spirites serfauntes, & y-send
 for-to seruen for hem þat takeþ þe erytage of hele ?

2 1 And þerfore it byþoueþ ous more largelyche³ to kepen
 þilke þinges þat we han y-h[er]ed⁴, lest þat we fleten awey⁵.
 2 For ȝif þat word þat was y-maad by aungeles was ferme &
 stabel, & eferich priuaricacyoun & in-obedyence haþ vnder-
 3 fongen a ryȝtful rewardyng to mede ; how schule we ascape,
 ȝef we⁶ dyspysen⁷ þus gret an hele ? þe whuche hele, whan it
 hade y-take a bygynnyng to ben y-told by oure Lord, of hem
 4 þat herden in ous heo is confermed, God berynge wyttnesse in
 sygnes & wondres, & dyuerse vertues & delynges of þe Holy
 5 Gost, aftur his owene wylle. And God ne made noȝt þe
 worlde þat is to comen, of whom we spekeþ, of soget to
 6 aungeles. Bote on⁷ wittnesseþ in a place & sayþ, What is
 man, þat þou hast mynde of hym ? oþer mannes sone, þat
 7 þou⁸ vysytest hym ? þou hast y-mad hym lytel lasse þan
 aungeles, & þou hast corowned hym wiþ ioye & wiþ wor-
 schupe, & þou hast y-ordeyned hym up-on þe werkes of þin
 8 honden : alle þinges þou hast y-mad soget vnder his fet. &
 in þat it haþ y-mad alle þinges soget to hym, he ne lefed no
 þing þat ne was soget to hym. Bote ȝet we ne seþ noȝt alle
 9 þinges soget to hym. And we seþ hym þat was y-mad luytel
 lasse þan aungeles, Iesus, for þe suffrenge of deþ y-corowned
 wiþ ioye & wiþ worschupe, þat [he þoroȝ]⁹ þe grace of God
 10 schulde for alle men taste þe deþ. For it bysemed hym,
 þoroȝ whom beþ alle þinges, & for whom beþ alle þinges, þat
 ladde wiþ hym many chyldren in-to blisse & was auctor of
 11 hure hele, to hafe an ende by passyoun. For he þat haleweþ,

¹ fol. 73 P. ² finem in the margin, in a xvth century hand, S.

³ r added above the line, S. ⁴ y hyzed, S.P. *Vulg. audivimus.* ⁵ lest
 precedes awey, P. ⁶ fol. 63^b S. ⁷ Ion with i added in darker ink, S.
 on P. ⁸ fol. 73^b P. ⁹ *Vulg. ut gratia Dei pro omnibus gustaret mortem.*

& þei þat beþ y-halewed, alle þei beþ of¹ on; for whuche
enchesoun he ne is noȝt a-schamed to clepen hem his
breþeren, seyenge, Y wol telle þi name to my breþeren, & in 12
þe myddel of þe¹ churche y wole² herye þe. & eftsones, Y³
wole haue turst in hym. & eftsones, Lo y & my chyldren 13
þat God haþ y-ȝefe me. And þerfore for chyldren han 14
y-comuned to his flesch & his blod, he haþ also y-parted wiþ
hem; þat þoroȝ deþ he wole distroyen hym þat hade þe
empyre of deþ, þat is, þe defel; & wolde delyueren hem þat 15
in drede of deþ by al hure lyf weren⁴ soget to þraldom. For 16
nowȝere he toke aungeles, bote he toke þe sed of Abraham.
Wherfore he owed by alle þinges to ben y-lekened to 17
breþeren, þat he were y-mad mercyful & a trewe byschop
to-fore God, to forȝefen his pepel hure synnes. For in þat he 18
suffred & was y-temptyd, he is myȝty to helpen þilke þat beþ
y-tempted.

Wherfore, ȝe holy breþeren þat beþ partyneres of an 1 **3**
hefenlyche clepynge, byholde ȝe þe apostul & þe byschop
of ȝoure knowlechynge, Iesus, þat is trewe to hym þat made 2
hym, as Moyses was in al his hous. Bote þes is worþi to 3
muche more worschupe þan Moyses, as muche more as he is
worþi þat makeþ an hous⁵ þan þe hous. For eferich hous is 4
y-buld of sum man; bote he þat made alle þinges he is God.
& Moyses was trewe in al his hous as a serfaunt, in witnesse 5
of þilke þinges þat weren to seyen þer-aftur. Bote Crist 6
is as a sone in his hous; whyche hous we beþ, ȝef it so be
þat we holden oure trust & þe ioye of oure hope sadlyche
to þe ende. Wherfore þe Holy Spiryt saiþ, To day ȝef ȝee 7
hereþ his voyce, ne harde ȝe noȝt ȝoure hertes, after⁶ þe day 8
of temptacyoun, þat ȝoure fadrus tempteden⁷ me in desert,
where þei prefeden me and syen my werkes fourty ȝeres. 9
Wherfore ich was wroþ to þis generacyoun, & y seyde, þese 10
erreþ efermore in hure herte: bote þei knewen noȝt my
weyes; & y swor to hem in my wraþþe, þat þei ne schulden 11
noȝt entren in-to my reste. And breþeren, loke ȝe, wheþer 12

¹ om. P. ² fol. 64 S. ³ y wele haue trust...eftsones added in a later
hand, P. ⁴ fol. 74 P. ⁵ *Bous*, error for *Hous*, repeated in the margin,
1st corr. S. ⁶ fol. 64^b S. ⁷ fol. 74^b P. *e* in the margin, S.

þer¹ be in any of ȝou an efel herte of vnbylefe, to departen
 13 ȝou from þe lyfynge God; bote prefeþ ȝou-selfe by eferich
 day, whyles þat þis day is nempned, wheþer eny of ȝou be y-
 14 harded þoroȝ þe fallas of synne: for we beþ y-mad partyneres
 of Crist, ȝef þat we holdeþ þe bygynnyng of his substaunce
 15 to þe ende: whyles it is y-sayd, To day ȝef ȝe hereþ his voys,
 ne harde ȝe noȝt ȝoure hertes, as þei duden in hure tarrynge.
 16 For summe tarreden hym, bote noȝt alle þilke þat comen out
 17 of Egypt by Moyses. Bote to whom was he wrop fourty ȝere?
 bote to þilke þat synneden, whos careynes weren þrowen
 18 a-down in desert. And to whom swor he þat þei schulden
 noȝt entren in-to his reste, bote to þilke þat weren vnbylefynge?
 19 & we seþ þat þei ne myȝte not entren in-to his reste for hure
 vnbylefynge.

4 1 And þerfore drede we, leste þe byheste be y-lafte to
 entren² in-to his reste, leste þer be y-founde any of ous fayle
 2 þer-hennes³. For it is y-told to ous, as it was to hem; bote
 þe⁴ word þat þei herden ne profyted hem noȝt, for it ne was
 3 noȝt y-medled wiþ bylefe. For we þat haueþ bylefed schuleþ
 entren in-to reste⁵, as he sayde, As ich haue y-swore in my
 wraþþe, þei ne schuleþ noȝt entren in-to my reste. And
 whanne in þe bygynnyng of þe worlde he hade parfomed
 4 his werkes, he saiþ in on place of þe⁶ sefeþe day in þis wyse,
 5 God rested þe sefeþe day⁷ from alle his werkes; & in þis
 6 place also, þei ne schuleþ noȝt entren in-to my reste. And
 for þat summe entreden in-to þat reste, & þilke þat weren
 byfore to whom it was y-told, ne entrede noȝt in-to þat reste,
 7 þerfore he setteþ a certeyn day, To day, in Dauyd seyenge as
 it is y-sayd abofen, aftur so muche tyme, To day ȝef ȝe hereþ
 8 his voys, ne harde ȝe noȝt ȝoure hertes. And ȝef Iesus hade
 y-ȝefen hem reste, he ne wolde nefer aftur han y-spoken of
 9 þis day. And þerfore þer is y-laft a day of reste to Goddes
 10 pepel. For he þat entred in-to his reste, he rested from his
 11 werkes, as God dude from his werkes. & þerfore hyȝe we to
 entren in-to þatreste, þat no man falle in-to þat ensampel of

¹ þer in the margin, 1st corr. S. ² fol. 75 P. ³ h above the line;
 second n on erasure, S. þer enne, P. ⁴ fol. 65 S. ⁵ ste on erasure, S.
⁶ om. P. ⁷ god rested þe sefeþ day repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

vnbylefe. For Goddes word is lyfynge, & spedful, &¹ more ¹² persynge þan eny two-egged swerd: for he comeþ to þe departynge of þe soule & of þe spiryt, & of þe myndes & of þe maryȝes, & knowere of þoȝtes & of þe² willes of þe herte. & þer ne is no creature invysybel in his syȝt. Bote alle ¹³ þinges beþ naked &³ opne to his yen to whom oure speche is. And þerfore we þat haueþ a gret byschop þat haþ y-persed ¹⁴ hefnes, Iesu Goddes Sone, holde we þe knowlechynge of oure hope. For we ne haueþ no bischop þat ne may haue com- ¹⁵ passyoun to oure intirmytees, þat haþ ben y-tempted by alle þinges to oure lyknesse wiþ-outen synne. And þerfore go we ¹⁶ wiþ trust to þe throne of his grace, þat we han mercy & y-fynden grace in cofenabel help.

For euerych byschop þat is y-taken up of men. he is ¹ 5 y-ordeyned for men in þese þinges þat beþ to God: to offren ȝiftes & sacryfyses for oure synnes; þat may sorowen wiþ ² hem þat beþ vnkunnynge & erreþ, for he hymselfe is enuyroned aboute wiþ infirmyte; and þerfore he is y-holde ³ to offren for hym-self & his synnes, as for þe pepel & hure synnes. Ne no man takeþ worschype⁴ to hymselfen, bote he ⁴ þat is y-cleped of God, as Aaron. So Cryst ne claryfyed noȝt ⁵ hym-selfen, þat he were y-maad⁵ a byschop, bote he þat spake to hym & sayde, þou art my sone, to day ich haue bygete þe. As he seiþ in an oþer place, þou art an euerlastynge prest ⁶ aftur þe ordre of Melchysedech. & he in þe dayes of his ⁷ flesch offred preyeres & bysechynge wiþ gret cry & wiþ teres to hym þat myȝte safen hym from deþ, & for his reverence he was y-herd. And ȝet whan he was Goddes sone, he lerned ⁸ 9 obeydience of þinges þat he suffred; & he⁶ þat was y-broȝt to an ende, was y-maad to alle þilke þat boweþ hem to hym a cause of an eferlastynge hele; & of God he was y-cleped ¹⁰ a byschop aftur þe order of Melchysedech. Of whom þer is ¹¹ to ous a gret speche þat may noȝt ben expouned, for ȝe beþ y-maad ful febel for-to heren. For þouȝ ȝe oweden to ben ¹² maystres⁷ for tyme, ȝow byhoueþ aȝeynward to ben y-tauȝt whiche beþ þe elementes of þe bygynnyng of Goddes wordes.

¹ fol. 75^b P. ² om. P. ³ fol. 65^b S. ⁴ worschype repeated in the margin, S. ⁵ fol. 76 P. ⁶ fol. 66 S. ⁷ y maystres S.P.

And ȝe beþ y-maad so þat ȝou byhofeþ mylk¹ & no sad mete.
 13 For eferich man þat is partener of mylk, he is wiþ-outen part
 14 of þe word of ryȝtfulnesse ; for he is a smal chyld. Bote sad
 mete is of parfyt men, of hem þat by costom han hure wyttes
 y-vsed to discrecyoun of good and of yuel.

6 1 Werfore² we woleþ senden in a word of þe bygynnyng
 of Crist, & passen forþ to a more parfyt ; noȝt castynge aȝeyn
 þe foundement of penawnce from dede werkes, & of feiþ³
 2 to God, & of baptysmes, & of techynge also of puttyng
 [in]⁴ of hondes, & of arysynge aȝeyn of dede men, & of þe
 3 eferlastynge dom. & þis we woleþ don, ȝef þat God wole
 4 leten us. For it is im-possybele to þilke þat beþ ones y-lyȝted
 & han y-tasted an hefenlyche ȝefte, & beþ y-made parteneres
 5 of þe holy Spiryt, & han y-tasted also þe goode word of God,
 6 & þe vertues of þe worlde þat is⁵ to comynge, & beþ y-slyde
 aȝeyn, to ben renewed aȝen⁶ to penaunce. For þei crucyfyeþ
 aȝeyn Goddes sone to hem-seluen, & han hym to a spectakel.
 7 For þe erþe þat drynkeþ þe reyn þat falleþ ofte syþes up-on
 hym, & bryngeþ forþ a cofenabel herbe to þilke men þat heo
 8 is y-tyled of, vnderfongeþ blesyng of God: bote ȝef heo
 bryngeþ forþ breres & þornes⁷, heo is nyȝ cursyng ; & þe
 9 ende þer-of is to ben y-brand. Bote, my lefeste breþeren, we
 trusteþ of ȝou beter þinges and neer to hele, þouȝ we speken
 10 þus : for God ne is noȝt vnryȝtful, þat he wole forȝeten ȝoure⁸
 werk & ȝoure lofe þat ȝe han y-schewed in his name : for ȝe
 11 han y-mynystred to goode men & ȝet ȝe doþ. & we desyre
 þat eferich of ȝou schewe oftesyþes þe same bysynesse to
 12 fulfullynge of ȝoure hope to þe ende : þat ȝe ben noȝt y-mad
 slowe, bote foloweres of hem þat by feiþ & pacyence schulleþ
 13 an-heryten þe byhestes. For God þat made his byheste to
 Abraham, for he ne hade no grettour to swere by, he swor by
 14 hym-selfe & sayde, Ich wole blesse þe, & ich wole multyple
 15 þe. And so wiþ his longe abydynge he get his byheste.
 16 For men swereþ by hym þat is grettur þan þei beþ ; & þe

¹ mylk repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ² fol. 76^b P. ³ þe feiþ P.

⁴ & S.P. ⁵ fol. 66^b S. ⁶ e on erasure, S. ⁷ breres þornes

repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁸ ȝ added in a later hand, S.

⁹ fol. 77 P.

confirmacyoun of þe ende of eferich ple is an oþ. In þe whuche 17 þing God, þat wolde schewen to eyres þe immebelnesse of his conseyl, putte by-twene a gret oþ: þat þorow tweyne im- 18 mebel þinges, in þe whuche it¹ is im-possybel for God to lye, we han þe strongest solas; we þat goþ to-gedere to holde þis forseyd hope, þe whuche we han as a syker & 19 a stabel anker of oure soule, & goyng in-to þe inwardnesse² of þe huydynge; wher Iesus, oure byfore-goere, entred in 20 for ous, y-mad an eferlastynge byschop aftur Melchysedekes ordre.

For þes Melchysedek³, kyng of Salem, and a prest of þe 1 7 heyeste God, þat mette wiþ Abraham whenne he⁴ come aȝeyn from þe sleynge of kynges, & blessed hym, to whom 2 Abraham departed þe tenþinges of al his good; & he was furst y-cleped Kyng of ryȝtfulnesse, & afturward Kyng of Salem, þat is, Kyng of pees; wiþ-outen fadur, wiþ-outen 3 moder, wiþ-outen kynrede, nouȝer hade [he] bygynnyng of his dayes ne ende of his lyf, bote y-lykned to Goddes Sone, he duelleþ stille an eferlastynge prest. Bote byholdeþ how gret 4 þes is, to⁵ whom Abraham ȝef tenþinges þat was on of þe moste worþy patryarkes. For þilke þat weren of þe children 5 of Leui þat vnderfongen presthod haden a comaundement to take tenþinges of þe pepel, after þe lawe of hure owne breþeren, þouȝ þat þei passeden out of Abrahames lendes. Bote he whos generacyoun ne is noȝt y-nombred a-mong hem 6 tok tenþinges of Abraham, & blessed hym þat hade þe re-promyssyones. Bote wiþ-outen any aȝeyn-seyenge⁶ þat þing 7 þat is lasse is yblessed of þat þing þat is beter. & here men 8 þat dyeþ takeþ tenþinges; bote þere it is y-wytnessed þat he lyfeþ. And ȝef it mowe be seyd so, by Abraham Leui, þat 9 vnderfong ten-þinges, was y-tenþed; for he was ȝet in his 10 fader lendes, whanne þat Melchysedek mette wiþ hym. And 11 þer-fore ȝef þer hade⁷ y-ben an ende by þe presthod of Leui—for vnder þat⁸ presthod þe pepel vnderfong þe lawe—what had it be nedful þat þer hade rysen up an-oþer prest aftur

¹ fol. 67 S. ² in om. P. ³ melchysedek repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁴ fol. 77^b P. ⁵ & to S.P. ⁶ fol. 67^b S.
⁷ fol. 78 P. ⁸ þe P.

Melchisedekes order, & noȝt ben y-sayd of þe order of Aaron ?
 12 For ȝef þe presthode be y-translated, it mot nede ben þat þer
 13 be y-mad a trauslacyoun of þe lawe. For in hym of whom
 þese þinges beþ y-sayd it is of an-oþer kynrede, of þe whuche
 14 kynrede þer ne was non ordeyned to þe auter. For it is
 open y-knowe þat oure Lord was y-boren of þe kynrede of
 Iuda ; in þe whuche¹ kynrede Moyses spak no þing of prestes.
 15 And ȝet furþer-more it is openlyche y-knowe þat, ȝef þer is
 a-rysen up an-oþer prest aftur þe lyknesse of Melchysedeck,
 16 þat ne is noȝt y-mad after þe lawe of þe fleschlyche comaunde-
 ment, bote aftur þe vertu of a lyf þat may not ben vndon.
 17 For he bereþ wytnesse, þat þou art an eferlastynge prest aftur
 18 þe order of Melchisedek. þanne is þe raþere comaunde-
 19 ment reprefed for his infirmyte & his vnprofytabelnesse : for
 þe lawe brouȝte no man to perfeccyoun. Bote þer is a²
 bryngynge in of a betur hope, by þe whuche we neyȝlacheþ to
 20 God. In as muche as it ne is noȝt wiþ-outen a gret oþ—for
 21 þe oþer weren y-mad prestes wiþ-outen a gret swerynge³ ; bote
 þes was wiþ a gret swerynge by hym þat sayde to hym, Oure
 22 Lord haþ ysworen & it ne⁴ schal noȝt a-þinken hym, þou art
 an euerlastynge prest—& in so muche Iesu Crist is y-made
 23 a byhoter of a beter testament. And þe oþer weren y-mad
 many prestes, for as muche as þoroȝ deþ þei weren forboden
 24 to dwellen efermore stille : bote þes, in þat he dwelleþ efer-
 25 more, he haþ an eferlastynge presthode. Wherfore he may
 efermore safen, neyȝenge by hym-selfen to God, & lyfynge
 26 efermore to byseche God for ous. For it by-semed þat oure
 byschop were⁵ holy, innocent, im-pollut, departed from synful
 27 men, & y-mad heyȝer þan hefnes ; þat haþ no nede eferich
 day, as oþer prestes, furst to offren for hure owne gyltes
 sacryfyses & seþþe for þe pepel : for þat he dude ones,
 28 offrynge hym-self. And þe lawe ordeyneþ men to ben prestes,
 þat habbeþ infirmyte ; bote þe word of þe grete swerynge,
 þat is aftur þe lawe, ordeyneþ þe sone þat is efermore
 parfyte⁶.

¹ om. P.² fol. 68 S.³ fol. 78^b P.⁴ om. P.⁵ wery P.⁶ quod (erasure of two or three letters) peuytt follows in a xvith century hand; the same name occurs on ff. 67, 69, 71^b, 73^b, 75^b, S.

A chapytre on¹ þilke þinges þat beþ y-sayd: we han i 8
 suche a byschop, þat sitteþ in þe ryȝtsyde of þe sege of þe
 Gretnesse of God an hyȝ in hefne, mynyster² of seyntes & of 2
 þe verrey tabernakel, þat God made, & noȝt man. For 3
 eferich byschop is ordeyned to offren ȝeftes & sacryfyces:
 wherfore³ it is nedful þat he haue sumwhat forto offren.
 And þerfore ȝef [he]⁴ were up-on þe⁵ erþe, [he]⁶ ne⁵ were no 4
 prest, when þer weren þilke þat schulden offre ȝeftes aftur⁷ þe
 lawe, þat serfed to þe ensampler & þe schadewe of hefnelyche 5
 þinges; as it was y-answerd to Moyses, when he schulde
 make þe tabernakel, Loke⁸, God sayde, þat þou make alle
 þinges as it was y-schewed to þe in þe hul. Bote now þer is 6
 y-comen a beter serfynge, by as muche as þe medyatour is of
 a beter testament, þat is y-halewed in beter byhestes. For 7
 ȝef þat raȝere hade y-ben wiþ-outen blame, þe place of þe
 secounde ne schulde noȝt haue ben y-soȝt. Bote God, 8
 blamynge hem, saiþ, Lo, dayes comeþ, God saiþ, & ich wole
 bryngen on þe hous of Israel & on þe hous of Iuda a newe
 testament; noȝt aftur þat testament þat y made to hure⁹
 fadres in⁹ þat day þat y toke hure hond to bryngen hem out
 of þe lond of Egypt; for þei ne dwelled not stille in myn
 testament, & y dispysed hem, saiþ God. For þis is þe teste- 10
 ment þat ich wole ordeyne to þe hous of Israel aftur þilke
 dayes, God seiþ, ich wole ȝeue my lawe in hure þouȝt¹⁰, & ich
 wole wryte hym in hure hertes; & ich wole ben hure God, &
 þei schulleþ be my pepel: and eferich man ne schal noȝt seye 11
 to his nexte¹¹ neyȝbore, ne to his broȝer, Knowe þou God:
 for alle þei schulleþ knowe me, from þe leste to þe⁵ meste.
 For ich wole forȝeuuen hem hure synnes, & y nul noȝt haue 12
 muynde on hem þer-aftur. And in¹² suggynge, A newe, he 13
 made þe raȝere waxen old. & þat ȝing þat waxeþ old is nyȝ
 his dystruccioun. And þe⁵ raȝere hade iustifyenges & an i 9
 holy seculer.

For þe tabernakel was furst y-mad, in whom þer weren 2

¹ of P. ² fol. 79 P. ³ fol. 68^b S. ⁴ þer S.P. *Vulg.* si ergo
 esset super terram, nec esset sacerdos. ⁵ om. P. ⁶ & þer S.P.
⁷ of P. ⁸ on erasure, S. ⁹ & S.P. ¹⁰ fol. 79^b P. *u* inserted
 above the line, S. ¹¹ nexte expunged, S. ¹² fol. 69 S.

chaundeleres, & a table, & proposycyon of loues ; þat is y-sayd
 3 holy þinges. Bote aftur þe veyl þer is þe secounde taber-
 4 nakel¹, þat is y-sayd holy þinge of holy þinges, þat haþ
 a censer of gold, & þe arke of þe² testament wiþ helynge on
 eferich syde of gold ; in þe arke þer is a pot of gold þat is wiþ
 5 manna, & Aarones ȝerde þat broȝte forþ bowes, & þe tables of
 þe testament ; & abouen þese³ þinges was Cherubyn of blisse
 [o]ferschadewyng⁴ þe propycatorye ; of whuche it ne is noȝt
 6 now to speken of sundrylyche. & whenne alle þese þinges
 weren þus y-ordeyned, in þe furste tabernakel entred in
 7 prestes efermore, doyng þe offyces of sacryfycses. Bote in
 þe secounde tabernakel⁵ þe byschop al-one, ones in þe ȝer,
 schulde entren in, noȝt wiþ-outen blod, þat he schulde offren
 8 for his owene vnkunnyngnesse & þe peples also : & þis sygny-
 fyþ þe Holy Spiryt, þat ȝet noȝt holy mennes lyfynge ne
 was noȝt y-schewed, whiles þe raþer tabernakel hade his
 9 stondynge ; þe whuche parable is of þe tyme þat is nowþe⁶,
 by whom ȝestes and sacrificyes beþ y-offred, þat mowe noȝt
 maken hym þat serfeþ parfyt in his consycyence, in metes
 10 & drynkes & dyuerse waschynge & riȝtfulnesse of⁷ þe flesch,
 11 þat weren y-ordeyned in-to þe tyme of correccyoun. Bote
 Crist þat is a byschop of goodes þat beþ to comynge, [in]⁸
 a more large & a² more parfyt tabernakel, noȝt y-mad wiþ
 12 honden, þat is² to seyn, noȝt of þis creacyoun, nouþer⁹ by
 gotes blod ne by calfes blod, bote þoroȝ his owne blod he
 entred in-to holy places þat weren y-founden by an efer-
 13 lastynge redempcyoun. For ȝef þat gotes blod oþer boles
 blod, oþer þe aschen¹⁰ of a cow-calf y-spreynd on men, haleweþ
 14 hem þat beþ defouled to þe clansyng of hure flesch : how
 muche more schal Cristes blod, þat by þe Holy Gost offred
 hym-selfe wiþ-outen wem to God, make¹¹ clene hure con-
 15 scyence from dede werkes to serue þe lyuyng¹² God ? And
 þerfore he is a medyatour of a newe testament, þat, þoroȝ þe
 bysechynge of deþ in forbuggyng of þe preuarycaciones þat

¹ tabernakel repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ² om. P. ³ þese twice, P. ⁴ efersch. S.P. ⁵ fol. 80 P. ⁶ newe P. ⁷ fol. 69^b S.

⁸ & S.P. ⁹ neyper P. ¹⁰ conrē (expunged) in the text with aschen in the margin, probably in the original scribe's hand, S. ¹¹ schal make, S.P.

¹² fol. 80^b P.

weren vnder þe raþere testament, þei taken a byheste þat beþ
 y-cleped of an eferlastynge heritage. For þer as is a testa- 16
 ment, it is nedful þat þe deþ go bytwene of hym þat oweþ þe
 testament. For a testament in dede men is y-confermyd: 17
 for it a-vayleþ noȝt whyles he lyueþ þat makeþ þe testament.
 Wherfore þe furste ne was noȝt y-halewed wiþ-oute blod. 18
 For whanne þat eferich comaundement of þe lawe was y-rad 19
 of Moyses to al þe pepel, he toke gotes blod & calfes* blod,
 wiþ water & red wolle & ysope, & spreynde þe bok & al þe
 pepel, & sayde, Þis is þe blod of þe testament þat God haþ 20
 y-send¹ to ȝow. He spreynde also wiþ blod þe tabernakel & 21
 alle þe vesseles þat serfeden þer-to. And almost alle þinges 22
 beþ y-mad clene wiþ blod aftur þe lawe, & wiþ-outen
 schedyng² of blod þer ne is y-mad no remyssyoun. And 23
 þerfore it is nedeful þat þe sampleres of hefenlyche þinges
 ben y-mad clene þoroȝ þese þinges; bote þilke hefenliche
 þinges [þo]roȝ³ muche betur þinges þan þese beþ. For Iesu 24
 ne entred noȝt in-to holy places y-mad wiþ honden, þat beþ
 sampleres of verrey⁴ places; bote in-to þe self hefne, þat he
 appere now to þe syȝt of God for ous: and noȝt þat he offre 25
 felesyþes hym-selfe, as þe byschop doþ wiþ-ynne holy places,
 eferich ȝer in an-oþer þinges blod; oþer it hade byhoued hym 26
 fele syþes to haue y-suffred from þe bygynnyng of þe worlde.
 Bote now he apered ones in þe ende of þe worlde to distruccioun
 of synne by his owne sacrifice. & riȝt as it was y-ordeyned 27
 to men for-to dyen ones & syȝþe comen to dom; ryȝt so Crist 28
 was y-offred ones to þe clensyng of many mennes synnes, &
 in þe secounde tyme he schal appere to hem þat abydeþ hym
 in-to hele. For þe lawe haþ a schadewe of goodis þat beþ to 1 10
 comynge, & noȝt þat ymage of þinges, [&] eferich ȝer offreþ
 þe selfe sacrificyes wiþ-outen cessyng, & may noȝt maken hem
 parfyt þat haueþ accesse to hem. For elles me schulde hafe 2
 y-cessyd to offren sacrificyes, for as muche as þe doeres
 þer-of⁵, ones y-mad clene, ne schulden hafe y-had afterward
 no consyience of synne. Bote eferyche ȝer in hem þer is 3
 y-mad a muynde of synnes. For it is impossybel for synnes 4

¹ fol. 70 S.

² schedyng^e P.

³ ȝoroȝ S.P.

⁴ fol. 81 P.

⁵ fol. 70^b S.

5 to ben y-don a-wey þoroȝ gotes blod oþer boles blod. And þerfore whanne he comeþ in-to¹ þe worlde, he saiþ, þou ne desyredest² noȝt sacryfyce & offrynge, bote þou schapedest to 6,7 me a body; & holocaustes³ for synne ne plesede þe noȝt: & þo y sayde, Lo, y come—in þe bygynnyng of þe bok it is 8 y-wryten of me—þat y do þi wille, God. & so suggynge abofe, þat þou ne woldest noȝt sacrificyces & offrynges & holocaustes for synnes, ne þei weren noȝt plesynge to þe þat beþ 9 y-offred aftur þe lawe, þo y⁴ sayde, Lo, God, y⁵ come þat y do þi wylle. He doþ awey þe raþer, þat he stable þat þat 10 foleweþ. In þe whuche wylle we beþ y-halewed by þe 11 offrynge of þe body of Iesu Crist ones. And eferich prest mot ben eferich day redy mynstryng⁶ & offrynge fele syþes 12 þe same sacryfycys, þat mowen nefer don awey synnes: bote þes prest⁷, offrynge on sacryfyce for synnes, sytþeþ efer- 13 more in þe⁴ ryȝt syde of God, abydyng⁸ her-aftur for-to þat 14 his enemyes ben y-sett þe stool of his fet. For þoroȝ on 15 offrynge he made men holy for efer. For þe Holy Gost 16 wytnesseþ þat whanne he saiþ, þis schal be þe testament þat ich wole make to hem aftur þilke dayes, seiþ God, ich wole ȝeue my lawes in hure hertes, & ich wole⁸ wryte hem in hure 17 þoȝtes; & y nul byþenke no more of hure wyckednesse⁹ & 18 hure synnes. & þer as is forȝeuenesse of þese, þer is non 19 offrynge for synne. And þerfore, breþeren, we habbeþ a trust 20 in þe entrynge of seyntes in Cristes blod, in þe whuche trust he baþ y-cast to ous a newe weye & a lyfynge þoroȝ þe 21 keferynge, þat is, þoroȝ his flesch; & þoroȝ a gret prest vp-on 22 Godes hous; & come we to hym wiþ a trewe herte in fulnesse of bylefe, & spreng¹⁰ we oure hertes from an efel conscyence, 23 & wasche we þe body wiþ clene watyr, & holde we þe know- lechynge of oure hope bowynge to no syde; for he is trewe of 24 þat he¹⁰ haþ y-ȝefen ous a byheste. And byholde we to- 25 gedere in sterynge of charyte & of goode werkes, noȝt lefynge oure quyletes, as it is a custom to summe men, bote

¹ fol. 81^b P.² desyrest P.³ holocaustes, þt is sakerfices brentadded in the margin, 1st corrector's hand, S. ⁴ om. P. ⁵ god y on erasure, S.⁶ mynȝstryng⁸ S. ⁷ þese prest S. þese prestes P.⁸ fol. 71 S. ⁹ fol. 82 P. ¹⁰ he in the margin, S.

comfortynge eferychone oþer; & so muche þe more as we seþ þe day neyȝlechen. For ȝif þat we synneþ wylfullyche after 26 þe vnderfongynge of þe knowleche of trewþe, þer ne is noȝt y-laft a sacrifice for oure synnes, bote þer is a dredful 27 abydynge of þe dom, & þe sewynge fuyr þat schal consumen þe aduersaries of Crist. For who þat brekes Moyses lawe, 28 wiþ-outen any mercy, vnder two oþer þre wytnesses, he is y-don to þe deþ; how muche more trewe, ȝef þat he¹ deserfe 29 grettere tormentynges² þat defouleþ Godes sone, & defouleþ þe blod of þe testament, in whom he is y-halewed, & doþ wrong to þe Spiryt of grace? For we wyteþ þat he seyde, To 30 me veniaunce, & ich wole ȝelden aȝeyn³. & eftsones, For God schal demen his pepel. And þerfore it is dredful to 31 fallen in-to þe hondes of þe lyfynge God. Bote hafe ȝe 32 muynde of þe raþer dayes, in whom ȝe weren y-lyȝted & susteyned a gret batayle of suffrynges; & in anoþer day ȝe 33 weren y-mad a spectakel to reprefes & trybulacyones; & an-oþer day ȝe beþ y-mad felawes of þilke þat han such conuersacyoun. For ȝe haden compassyoun of hem þat weren 34 y-bounden, & vnderfongen þe robbynge of ȝoure goodes wiþ ioye, knowynge þat ȝe haden a beter substaunce dwellynge in hefne. Ne lese ȝe noȝt þanne ȝoure trust þat haþ a gret 35 rewardynge. For pacyence is nedful to ȝow þat ȝe don þe 36 wylle of God, þat ȝe bryngen his byheste. And ȝet a lytel⁴ 37 whyle, & wiþynne a lytel whyle he þat is to comynge schal come; & my ryȝtful man lyfeþ of bylefe: & ȝef he wiþ-draweþ 38 his fot he ne schal noȝt plesen his soule. Bote we ne beþ 39 noȝt chyldren of wyþdrawynge in-to perdycioun, bote Goddes chyldren in getynge of þe soule.

Bote⁵ feiþ is þe substaunce of þinges þat beþ to ben **i 11** y-hoped, & an argument of þinges þat semeþ noȝt. For **in 2** þis olde men han y-had testymonye. ȝoroȝ feiþ we vnder- **3** stondeþ þat þe worldes weren y-mad ȝoroȝ þe word of God, & þat of **in 4** vnyssybel þinges weren y-mad þinges þat mowen ben y-seye. ȝoroȝ feiþ Abel offred a grettere sacrifice þan

¹ he in the margin, S.

² fol. 82^b P.

³ fol. 71^b S.

⁴ ytel on erasure, S.

⁵ fol. 83 P.

Caym, þoroȝ whuche he hade wytnesse þat he was ryȝtful. For God ber wytnesse to¹ his ȝeftes: & þoroȝ hure he spak when þat he was ded. þoroȝ feiȝ Enoch was² translated þat he ne seyȝ noȝt deȝ; & he ne was noȝt y-founde, for God³ translated hym: for byforen his translacyoun he hade witnesse þat he plesede God: & wiȝ-outen feiȝ it is impossybel for-to plesȝ God: for it byhoueȝ þilke þat wolleȝ come to God bylefen þat he is, & to þilke þat secheȝ hym byslyche he is y-mad a rewarder. And þoroȝ feiȝ Noe vnderfong an answere of þinges þat ne were noȝt y-seye byfore, &, dredynge, he ordeyned hym a schyp to þe hele of his houshold; by whom he damped þe worlde, & was y-mad eyr of þe ryȝtfulness þat is þoroȝ feiȝ. And þoroȝ feiȝ Abraham, y-cleped, obeysched to gon in-to þe place þat he schulde vnderfongen for erytage; & wente forȝ, noȝt knowynge whyder þat he wente. &⁴ þoroȝ feiȝ he dwelled in þe lond of byheste, as a straunger, wonyng in⁵ lytel houses, wiȝ Ysaac & wiȝ Iacob, þat weren eyres wiȝ hym of þe same byheste: for he abod a cyte hauynge foundementes, whos werk-men & makere was God. And þoroȝ feiȝ Sara þat was bareyne vnderfong vertu in conseyfynge of seed & aȝeyn þe tyme of hure age, for heo⁶ bylefed þat he was trewe þat hadе by-hoten hure; wherfore of on beȝ many y-boren, & aftur þat he was ded, as þe multitude of þe sterres of hefne, & as þe grafel in þe brynke of þe see þat⁷ may noȝt ben y-nombred. By feyȝ alle þese beȝ dede, wiȝ-outen vnderfongyng of þe byheste, bote byholdynge a-fer þyn[g]e⁸ of⁹ byhestes, & saluwynge hem, & knowlechynge þat þei beȝ pilgrymes & men herborewed on þe erþe. For þei þat seyen þis sygnyfyȝ þat þei secheȝ a contray. & ȝef þei haden y-had muynde of þe contray þat þei wenten out of, þei haden tyme to haue y-turned aȝeyn. Bote now desyreȝ a beter, þat is, an hefenlyche contrey. And þerfore God ne is noȝt

¹ fol. 72 S. ² þoroȝ feiȝ enoch was saf repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ³ on erasure, S. ⁴ fol. 83^b P. ⁵ in þe P.

⁶ ȝhe P. ⁷ fol. 72^b S. ⁸ þynke with nke on erasure, S. þinge P.

Vulg. non acceptis repromotionibus, sed a longe eas aspicientes.

⁹ of in the margin, S.

y-confounded¹ to ben y-cleped hure God : for he haþ y-ordeyned to hem a cyte. And þoroȝ feiþ Abraham offred Ysaac whan ¹⁷ he was y-tempted², & offred his on bygeten sone þat hade vnderfongen þe byheste ; for to hym it was y-sayd, In Ysaac ¹⁸ þi seed schal ben y-cleped : schewynge þat God is myȝty ¹⁹ to areren up men from deþ to lyf. Wherfore he vnderfong hym in a parable. & þoroȝ feiþ of þinges þat weren to ²⁰ comynge, Ysaac blessed Iacob & Esau. & þoroȝ feiþ Iacob ²¹ dyynge blessed Iosephes chyldren, & honoured þe hyȝschyp of his ȝerde ; & þoroȝ feyþ Ioseph dyynge hade muynde of ²² þe passynge forþ of þe chyldren of Israel, & comaunded of his bones. And þoroȝ feiþ Moyses, whan³ he was y-bore, ²³ was y-hud þre moneþes of his eldren, for þei seyen þat he was a welfaryng chyld, & dradde noȝt þe kynges comaundement. And þoroȝ feiþ Moyses [was] y-mad gret and forsok ²⁴ þat he was Pharaoes douȝter sone ; desyryng more to ben ²⁵ y-peyned wiþ Goddes peple, þan for-to haue temporel murþe of synne ; trowynge þe obbroyd⁴ of Crist grettour rychesse ²⁶ þan þe tresour of Egypcyenes : for he byheld in-to þe remuneracyoun. þoroȝ feiþ he lefed Egypt, noȝt dredynge ²⁷ þe boldschype of þe kyng ; for he⁵ abod hym þat was in-vysybel as þouȝ he seye hym. þoroȝ feyþ he halewed ²⁸ pask, and þe schedynge of blod, lest he touched hem þat wasted þe furste⁶ bygeten þinges of Egipcyenes. And þoroȝ ²⁹ feiþ þei passeden ouer þe Rede See as by druye lond : bote þe Egypcyenes asayeden þat & weren deuoured.

And þoroȝ feiþ men⁷ of Ierycho fullen a-doun þoroȝ þe ³⁰ circuyl of sefen dayes. & poroȝ feiþ Raab þe hore ne ³¹ perysched noȝt wiþ oþer þat weren vnbylefed, vnderfongynge þe aspyes wiþ pees. & what schal y seye ȝet ? for tyme ³² wole fayle me to telle of Gedeon, Barac, Sampson, Iepte, Dauyd, Samuel & þe prophetes : þat by feiþ ofer-comen⁸ ³³ kyngdomes, & wroȝten ryȝtfulnes, & geten re promyssyones, & stoppeden lyones mouȝes, & quencheden þe impetuesnesse ³⁴ of fuyr, & dryfen a-wey þe scharpnesse of swerd, & han

¹ y om. P. ² fol. 84 P. ³ an on erasure, P. ⁴ The catchwords at the bottom of fol. 72^b have obbrayd of S. ⁵ om. P. ⁶ fol. 84^b P.
⁷ Vulg. Fide muri Iericho corruerunt. ⁸ euercomen P.

y-kefered of seknesse, & han [ben y-] mad¹ strong in batayle,
 35 & han y-turned up þe casteles of straunge men. & wymmen
 han vnderfongen hure housbondes arysyngē aȝeyn from deþ
 to lyf: but oþer han y-be wiþholden, noȝt underfongyngē
 redempcyoun; for þei wolden y-fynde a beter resureccion:
 36 oþer hafeþ assayed dyspysynges & betynges, & prisones
 37 & byndynge: &² han y-ben y-stoned & to-hewe & y-temptyd,
 & han y-dyed þoroȝ sleynge of swerd. And summe han
 y-gon aboute³ in rouȝ cloþinge of heres, & in gotes skynnes;
 38 nedy & a-nuyed & y-angwysched, to whom þe world ne was
 noȝt worþi; errynge in wyldernesse & in hulles & in dennes
 39 & holes of þe erþe. & alle þese⁴, prefed þoroȝ wytnessyngē
 40 of feiþ, ne vnderfongen noȝt þe repromyssyoun: for God
 ordeyned sum þyng beter for us, þat þei ne schulde noȝt
 ben y-broȝt to ende wiþ-outen ous.

12 1 And þerfore we þat hafeþ so gret a cloud of wytnesses
 y-putte to ous, do we a-wey from ous eferich charge & synne
 þat stondeþ abouten ous, & renne we by pacyence to þe
 2 fyȝtyngē þat is y-purposed to ous, byholdynge in-to þe
 auctor & þe bryngere to ende of oure feiþ Iesus, þat whenne
 ioye was y-purposed to hym he suffred þe cros, dispysyngē
 confusyoun, & he sytþ on þe ryȝt syde of þe sege of God.
 3 & þerfore byþinkeþ ȝow on hym þat suffred synful men
 aȝeyn-seyenge hym, þat ȝe ne ben noȝt y-w[e]ryed⁵, faylynge
 4 to ȝoure soules. For ȝet now ȝe ne hafeþ noȝt aȝeynstondynge,
 5 fyȝtyngē aȝeyn synne, to þe schedynge of ȝoure blod. & hafe
 ȝe forȝeten þe comfort þat God haþ spoken to ous as to his
 chyldren, seyenge, My chyld, ne dispysse þou noȝt þe techynge
 of oure Lord, ne be þou noȝt y-weryed⁶ whyles þou art
 6 y-prefed of hym; for he chasteþ þilke þat he loueþ, & he
 7 scoureþ eferych chyld þat he receyfeþ. Abyde⁷ ȝe styllie in
 techynge, for God ȝeþ hymself to ȝow as to his chyldren;
 8 & what chyld⁸ is þere þat þe fader ne chasteþ noȝt? & ȝef
 ȝe beþ out of techynge, whos partyneres ben ȝe y-mad alle?

¹ *vp y mad* P.; S. has *vp* (followed by erasure of one letter) *mad*, the *p* being altered from *b*. *Vulg.* fortis facti sunt. ² fol. 73^b S. ³ fol. 85 P.

⁴ *þese* þei S.P. ⁵ *y waryed* S.P. *Vulg.* ne fatigemini. ⁶ fol. 85^b P.

⁷ fol. 74 S. ⁸ *chyld* repeated in the margin, S.

þanne be ȝe spousebrekeres & noȝt sones. Furþermore, we 9
 haden fadres þat weren techeres of oure flesch, & we wor-
 schupeden hem: muche more we schulleþ be buxom to þe
 Fader of spirytes, & we schulleþ lyfen. And þei wiþ-yinne 10
 a fewe dayes enformeden ous aftur hure owne wylle; bote
 þes to þat þing þat is profytabel, in receyfynge his holynesse.
 Bote eferyche techynge in þis tyme ne semeþ noȝt to ben 11
 of ioye, bote of deþ. Bote afterward he schal ȝelde to þilke
 þat han wel y-lerned þe moste pesful fruyt of ryȝtfulnesse.
 Wherfore rereþ up ȝoure remysse hondes, & ȝowre knees þat 12
 beþ dissolut; & makeþ efene þe goynges to ȝoure fet, þat 13
 no man erre haltyng, bote be raþer y-heled. & folewe ȝe 14
 pes with alle men, & holynesse wiþouten whom no man schal
 y-seo God. And loke ȝe, þat no man lakke þe grace of God; 15
 ne þat no rote of bytternesse bourgenyng upward latte no
 man, þoroȝ þe whuche many men ben¹ defouled; ne þat no 16
 man be¹ a lechour, & wycked as Esau, þat for mete solde his
 herytage. For wyte ȝe wel, þat whanne he desyred to hafe 17
 an-heryted þe blesyng, he was reprefed, for he ne fonde no
 place of penaunce, þouȝ þat he souȝte it wiþ teres. For ȝe ne 18
 beþ noȝt y-come to þe fuyr, þat me may holden & neyȝlechen
 þer-to², ne to þe whyrlewynd & to tempest, ne to þe sown of 19
 a trumpe, ne to þe voys of wordes, whom þilke þat herde
 excuseden hem-selfe, for þat þe voys ne schulde noȝt ben
 y-mad to hem: for þey ne beren noȝt þat was y-seyd, & 20
 ȝef a best hade y-touched þe hul, he schulde³ haue ben
 y-stoned; & so dredful it was þat was y-seye, for Moyses 21
 seyde, Ich am a-gast & quakynge for drede. Bote ȝe beþ 22
 y-come to þe hul of Syon, & to þe hefenlyche Ierusalem þat
 is þe cyte of þe lyfynge God, & to þe cumpany of many
 þousandes of aungeles, & to þe churche of primytyfes þat 23
 beþ y-wryten to-gedere in hefenes, & to þe domesman of alle
 spyrytes & of ryȝtful men & of parfyt men, & to þe medyatour 24
 of a newe testament, Iesus, & to þe schedynge of his blod
 þat spak betere þan Abel. & loke ȝe þat ȝe ne refuse noȝt 25
 hym þat spekeþ. For ȝef þei ne⁴ a-scaped noȝt⁵, þat refuseden

¹ ben...man be on erasure, S. fol. 86 P. ² fol. 74^b S. ³ he schulde
 twice, the first expunged. S. ⁴ om. P. ⁵ fol. 86^b P.

hym þat spak vp-on þe erþe, muche more we ne schuleþ noȝt,
 þat turneþ ous a-wey from hym þat spekeþ to ous from
 26 hefene: whos voyce meued þe erþe sumtyme: bote he
 byhoteþ now & seiþ, ȝet ones, & ich wol meue noȝt onlyche
 27 þe erþe bote hefene also. What is þat, þat he seiþ Ones?
 in¹ þat he declareþ þe translacyoun of mebel þinges, as of
 þinges þat beþ y-don, þat þey þat beþ im-mebel þinges
 28 dwellen styll. & þerfore we þat vnderfongeþ a kyngdom
 þat is im-mebel hafeþ a grace, þoroȝ whom we schulen
 29 seruen oure God wiþ² drede & wiþ reuerence: for oure God

13 1 is fuyr þat consumeþ. þe charite of breþerhede dwelle
 2 a-mong ȝow. & ne forȝete ȝe noȝt hospytalite: for þer-þoroȝ
 sum men han y-plesed aungeles in receyuynge hem to
 3 herborewe. & hafe ȝe muynde of hem þat beþ y-bounde,
 as þouȝ ȝe weren y-bounde ȝow-selfen; & of hem þat
 trafayleþ, as þouȝ ȝe ȝow-selfen weren duellynge in body.
 4 And be þer worschupful wedlak in alle³ þinges, & a bed
 wiþ-outen wem: for God schal deme boþe lecchours &
 5 spousbrekeres. And ben ȝoure maneres wiþ-outen couey-
 tyse⁴, a-payd wiþ present þinges: for God saiþ, Y nul noȝt
 6 lefe þe. So þat we mowen seye trustylyche, My lord is myn
 7 helpere, & y nul not drede what no man do to me. And
 hafe⁵ ȝe muynde of hem þat beþ y-set to-fore ȝow, þat hafeþ
 y-spoke to ȝow Goddus word; & byholde ȝe þe yssew of hure
 8 conuersacyoun, & folewe ȝe hure feiþ. Iesu Crist was ȝurstay
 9 & to day, and he is efermore. Ne be ȝe noȝt y-lad awey with
 dyuerse techynges & straunge: for it is best þat þe herte be
 y-stabled in grace; noȝt in metes, þat ne profyted⁶ noȝt to
 10 hem þat walkeden in hem. We han an auter, of whom no
 men han power forto eten bote þilke þat serfeþ in þe taber-
 11 nakel. For of þilke bestes, whos blod is y-boren in-to holy
 places by þe byschop for synne, hure bodyes beþ y-brent
 12 wiþ-outen þe casteles. Wherfore Iesus, for he wolde halewen
 his pepel þoroȝ his blod, he suffred his passyoun with-outen
 13 þe ȝate. & þerfore go we out to hym wiþ-outen þe casteles,

¹ & P.² fol. 75 S.³ in alle in the margin, later hand, S.⁴ ty om. P.⁵ fol. 87 P.⁶ profyted P.

beryngē his obbrayd. For we ne hafēþ noȝt¹ here no cyte 14
 þat is dwellynge, bote we secheþ on þat is to comen. For 15
 þoroȝ hym we offreþ efermore a sacrifice of herynge to God,
 þat is, þe fruyt of þe lyppys þat knowlecheþ to his name.
 Bote ne forȝete ȝe noȝt of wel doyngē & of comunyon, for in 16
 syche sacrifices God is y-worschuped. & be ȝe buxom & 17
 sogettes to hem þat beþ abofe ȝow: for þei wakeþ as for-to
 ȝelden acontes for ȝoure soules; þat þei don it wiþ ioye
 & noȝt wiþ sorowe²: for þat ne is noȝt spedful to ȝow. & 18
 preyeþ for ous: for we trusteþ þat we han a good consyence
 in all þilke þat han good wylle to don wel. & þe more 19
 largelyche y preye ȝow þat ȝe don so, in as myche as y schal
 þe raȝere comen aȝeyn to ȝou. & God of pees, þat broȝte out 20
 from deþ oure Lord Iesu Crist, a gret schepherde of alle men
 in þe blod of on eferlastynge testament, ordeyne ȝow in eferich 21
 place þat ȝe don his wylle, & do in ȝow þat be plesynge in
 hym by Iesu Crist; to whom be ioye & blysse worlde wiþ-
 outen ende. Amen.

Hus, suster, seynt Poule haþ y-tauȝt men for-to lyfen þat
 byleueþ in Crist in his pystelis. And to Tymothe he wryteþ
 on pistel, how he schulde hafen hymself in good ensampel to
 oþer men, & seiþ in þis wyse,

I. TIMOTHY.

Poule³, Iesu Cristes apostel⁴ þoroȝ þe comawndyng of 1
 God & oure Safyour, & of Iesu Crist oure hope; to Tymothe, 2
 my lefe sone in feiþ, be grace, mercy, & pees of God oure
 Fader⁵ & oure Lord Iesu Crist. As y preyde þe þat þou 3
 schuldest dwelle styll at Ephese, whanne þat ich wente in-to
 Macedonye, þat þou schuldest telle to summe men, þat þei
 ne tauȝte non oþer wyse, ne toke no kepe to tales, ne to 4
 genologyes þat hafēþ non ende, þat meueþ raȝer questyones⁶

¹ fol. 75^b S. ² fol. 87^b P. ³ of follows, P. ⁴ apostestel S.

⁵ fol. 76. Tymothe as heading throughout the epistles, in a late hand, S.

⁶ questyones repeated in the margin, S.

5 þan¹ to þe edyfycacyon of God þat is in feiþ. For þe ende of
 þe comaundement is charite of a clene herte & of a good
 6 conscience & of feiþ noȝt [y]-feyned²: from þe whuche þinges
 summe men habbeþ y-erred a-wey & beþ y-turned in-to veyn
 7 speche, & wolleþ ben doctoures of þe lawe, bote þei ne vnder-
 stondeþ noȝt what þei spekeþ, ne þe þinges þat þey affermeþ.
 8 And we wyteþ wel þat þe lawe³ is good, who-so vseþ hure
 9 lawefullyche, knowynge wel, þat þer ne is no lawe y-set to a
 ryȝtful man, bote to vnryȝtful men, & to þilke þat ne weleþ
 10 noȝt ben sogetes, & to wikked men, & to synful men, & to
 cursed men, & to men þat beþ defouled, & to men þat sleþ
 hure fadres & hure moderes, & to men-sleares, & to lechhoures,
 & to sodomites, & to gyloures, & to lyeres, & to men þat beþ
 11 forswore, & what-efer elles þat þer be, þat be aȝeyn hol-
 12 techyng of þe euangely of blysse of God þat is y-blessed, þe
 13 whuche euangely is y-take to me. And y þonke hym þat
 haþ y-comforted me in oure Lord Iesu Crist, for þat he sup-
 14 posed þat ich was trewe & sette me in his seruyse, þat byfore
 was a blasphemē⁴, & a pursuere, & doyngē⁵ iniurye to his
 serfauntes: bote ich haue y-founde þe mercy of God, for
 15 vnknowynge y dude it in vnbylefē. Bote þe grace of oure
 Lord Iesu Crist wes⁶ ofer-plentefous⁷ wiþ feiþ & lofe þat is in
 16 Iesu Crist. A trewe word & worþy to ben vnderfonge, þat
 Iesu Crist com in-to þe worlde to safe synful men; of whom
 17 ich was on of þe furste: bote þerfore ich had mercy, for þat
 Iesu Crist wolde furst schewen in me eferych pacyence, to þe
 informacyon of hem þat schulden lyfen to hym in-to an efer-
 18 lastynge lyf. Bote to hym þat is Kyng of worldes, & noȝt
 dedlyche, & invysybel, þat onlyche is God, be worschype &
 blysse world⁸ wiþ-outen ende. And þis heste y bytake þe,
 Tymothe my sone, þat þou occupye þe after þe prophecyes þat
 19 habbeþ y-ben byfore þis tyme, hafynge a good feiþ & a⁹ good
 conscyence; whom summe men habbeþ y-put a-wey from hem,
 20 & han y-had schypbreche aboute þe feiþ: of þe whuche weren

1 fol. 88 P.

2 in feynd S. y f. P.

3 lawe repeated in the margin,

1st corrector S.

4 blasphemere with re in a later hand, P.

5 fol. 76^b S.

6 whas P.

7 fol. 88^b P.

8 þe w. P.

9 om. P.

Ymenes¹ & Alysaunder; whom y toke to Sathanas, þat þei lernen þat þei ne blasphemē not God.

And þerfore y byseche þat þer ben furst y-mad of alle ¹ 2 men preyeres², bysechynge, & þankynge to God for alle men; & for kynges & for alle þilke þat beþ y-ordeyned in ² hyȝschype; þat we han a pesybel lyfynge & an esy in eferich ptye & chastyte. For þis is³ good & acceptabel to-fore God ³ oure Safyour, þat wole þat alle men ben y-safed, & þat þei ⁴ comen to þe knowlechynge of⁴ his trewþe. Þer is on God⁵, & ⁵ on medyatour of God & of men, Iesu Crist, þat is a man, þat ⁶ ȝef hym self redempcyon for alle men, whos wytnesse is y-confermed in his tymes; in whom ich am y-set a prechour ⁷ & an apostel, for y seye trewþe & y ne lye noȝt, þat am techere of mysbyleued men in feiȝ & in treuþe. And þerfore ⁸ ich wole þat men preyen in eferich place, lyftynge up clene honden wiȝ-outen wraȝþe & struyunge. And wymmen also ⁹ in a couenabel habyte, wiȝ schamfastnesse & sobernesse araynge hem-selfe, noȝt in heres y-platted, ne wiȝ gol[d] oþer margery perles⁶ oþer precyous cloþing; but, as it bysemeþ ¹⁰ wymmen þat byhoteþ chastyte, by goode werkes. & a wom- ¹¹ man lerne in scylence with alle subieccyon. Bote y ne lete ¹² no womman to teche, ne to hafe lordschupe on hure hous-bonde, bote to ben in sylence. For Adam was furst y-mad, ¹³ & syþen Eue. & Adam ne was noȝt bygyled, bote þe wom- ¹⁴ man was bygyled in preuarycacyon: & heo⁷ schal ben y-safed ¹⁵ by bryngynge forþ of children, ȝef þat he dwelle stille in feiȝ & lofe & holynesse wiȝ eferiche sobernesse.

A⁸ trewe word, Who þat desyreþ a byschopryche, he ¹ 3 desyreþ a good werk. For it byhoueþ a byschop⁹ to ben ² a man wiȝ-outen reprefe, & a man of¹⁰ on wif, sober, redy, chaste¹¹, hospiteler, a techere; noȝt dronkelew, ne smytere; ³ bote softe & good, no¹² stryfer, ne coueytous; bote þat gouerneþ ⁴

¹ s later addition, S. ² preyeres repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

³ above the line, S. ⁴ fol. 77 S. ⁵ fol. 89 P. ⁶ gol oþer perles

repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁷ ȝe P. ⁸ prima ad thimotheum

⁹ C^o heads the chapter in a late xvth century hand, S. ¹⁰ of in the margin, S. ¹¹ fol. 89^b P.

¹² ne P.

wel his household; þat þat¹ haþ his children sogettys in
 5 eferiche chastyte; & who þat can noȝt rewle wel his owene
 housshould, how schal he haue þe dylygence of Godes churche?
 6 ne þilke þat is late y-baptysed, lest he be hofen up in-to
 7 pruyde & falle in-to þe dom of þe defel. For it byhofeþ þat
 he hafe good witnesse of þilke þat ben wiþouten-forþ, þat he
 8 ne falle noȝt in-to obbrayd & in-to þe defeles grun. Dekenes²
 also ben chaste & noȝt of two tungen, noȝt y-ȝeue to myche
 9 wyn, ne suynge foul wynnynge; bote hafynge þe mynstryng
 10 of feiþ in a clene consyence. Bote ben þese first y-prefed,
 11 & so mynystren þei wiþouten blame. & summe wymmen
 also ben chaste, noȝt bakbytyng, sober & feiþful in alle þinges.
 12 Dekenes ben of on wyf, þat rewleþ wel hure chyldren &
 13 hure housshould. For þilke þat mynystreþ wel schulleþ geten
 hem-selfen a good degré, & a muche trust in þe feiþ þat is in
 14 oure [Lord]³ Iesu Crist. Þese þynges y wryte to ȝow⁴, hopynge
 15 to come sone to [ȝow]⁵; & ȝef þat y tarye, þat þou wete⁶ how
 þou schalt haue þi conuersacyoun in þe hous of God, þat is
 Goddes churche þat lyfeþ, & a pyler & a stabelnesse of þe
 16 trewþe. And it is openlyche⁷ a gret sacrament of pyte, þat
 haþ ben y-schewed in flesch & y-iustyfyed in spiryt & appered
 to aungeles & is y-preched a-mong mysbylefed men & is
 y-lefed in þe world & y-taken vp in blysse.

4 1 But⁸ þe spiryt seiþ openlyche, þat in þe laste dayes⁹ þer
 schulleþ summe fallen awey fro¹⁰ feiþ, takynge kepe to spirytes
 2 of¹⁰ error & to þe doctrines of fendes, þat in ypcrysye
 3 spekeþ lesynges, þat hafeþ a corrupt consyence, & forbedeþ
 weddynge, & abstenen from metes þat God haþ y-mad to ben
 vnderfongen of trewe men, þat han y-knowe þe trewþe wyþ
 4 þonkynges to God. For eferiche creature of God is good, &
 þer ne is no þing to ben y-cast awey þat is vnderfongen wiþ

¹ fol. 77^b S.

² derkenesse expunged with dekeness in marg., 1st corr. S.

³ oure (crossed through) lord (erased) with Crist written over it in a later hand, S.

⁴ ȝow crossed out and þe tymoþe in a late hand in the margin, S.

⁵ the in a late hand on erasure, S. ȝe P.

⁶ þat þou wete inserted in a later hand, the same as above corrections, S. om. P.

⁷ fol. 90 P.

⁸ soþli added in a late hand above the line, S.

⁹ fol. 78 S.

¹⁰ in a late hand above the line, S.

þankynge to God: for it is y-mad holy by Goddes word & 5
 by preyere. And proposyng þese þynges to oure breþeren,⁶
 be þou a good serfaunt of oure Lord Iesu Crist, y-norsched
 wiþ wordes of þe feiþ, & of þe good doctryne þat þou hast
 y-folowed. And schunye þou vncouenabel & veyn fables,⁷
 & excersyse þi-selfe to pyte: for bodylyche excercyse is 8
 profytabel to luytel þing; but pyte is profytabel to alle
 þinges. hafynge a byheste of lyf þat is now, & of lyf þat
 is to comynge. A trewe word & a worþi to ben accepted.⁹
 For in þis we trafeyleþ & we beþ¹ y-cursed, for we hopeþ in 10
 þe lyfynge God þat is safyour of alle men, bote most of
 feiþful men. Hote þou þese þinges & teche hem. No man 11,12
 dispys þy ȝouþe; bote be þou ensampel of feiþful men, in
 word, in conuersacyoun, in charyte, in feiþ, in chastyte. Forto 13
 y come, take hede to redyng, to exortacyoun & to doctryne.
 Ne be þou noȝt neccligent of þe grace þat is y-ȝefe þe by 14
 prophecye wiþ² puttyng in of þe honden of presthod³. Þese 15
 þynges by-þenche þou; & be þou in þese þynges, þat þy
 profytyng be opene to alle men. Take hede to þi-selfe, & to 16
 doctrine. Be bysy in hem, for doyng⁴ so þou schalt safe
 þi-selfe & þilke þat y-hereþ þe. Ne blame þou noȝt hym þat 1 5
 is aldere þan þou, bote byseche hym as þi fader; & ȝonge
 men as breþeren: olde wymmen as moderes; ȝonge wymmen⁵ 2
 as sustren in alle chastyte. Worschupe wydewes þat beþ 3
 trewe wydewes. & ȝef þer be a wedewe þat haþ sones oþer 4
 nerewes⁶, lerne he furst to gourne hure owene houshold, &
 to ȝelden a-ȝeyn to hure eldren for þe goodnessse þat þei han
 receyfed of hem: for þis is acceptabel to-fore God. And heo⁷ 5
 þat is a trewe wydewe & desolat, hope heo⁷ in God, & be he
 in hure preyeres & bysechynge nyȝt & day. For heo þat 6
 lyfeþ in delyces is deed. & comaunde þou þese þinges, þat 7
 þei ben wiþouten⁸ reprefe. & who þat haþ no charge of þilke 8
 þat beþ of his, & most of þilke þat beþ homlyche wiþ hym, he
 haþ forsaken his feyþ, & is worse þan a mysbylefed man. A 9

¹ fol. 90^b P. ² fol. 78^b S. ³ þe presthod with *hod* dotted out,
 and þe above the line in a later hand, S. ⁴ o above the line, S.

⁵ old men ȝong men ȝonge wymmen repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

⁶ nerewes dotted out and cosynes written above in a later hand, S. cosyns P.

⁷ ȝhe P. ⁸ fol. 91 P.

wydewe be y-chose noȝt lasse þan of syxty wynter, þat haþ
 10 y-ben on mannes wyf, & haþ y-had testymonye in goode
 werkes; ȝef heo¹ haþ wel y-norsched hure children, ȝef heo¹
 haþ y-herborewd men, ȝef heo¹ haþ y-wasche goode mennes
 fet, ȝef heo¹ haþ y-mynystred to þilke þat habbeþ y-suffred
 trybulacyoun, & ȝef heo¹ hafe y-swed eferych good werk.
 11 Bote schonye² þou wydewes þat beþ ȝongere: for when þei
 haueþ y-don lecherrye in Crist³, þei w[o]lleþ⁴ ben y-weddyd:
 12 & hau[eþ]⁴ dampnacyoun, for þei habbeþ y-mad hure furste
 13 feiþ veyn. & þei lerneþ to gon to-gedere in ydelnesse, & gon
 aboute to mennes houses; noȝt onlyche ydel, bote also ful of
 wordes, and spekyngे curyouslyche þinges þat it byhoseþ noȝt
 14 for-to speken. And þerfore ich wole þat ȝongere wymmen
 ben y-weddyd & bryngen forþ children & ben houswyfes, þat
 þei ȝefen non occasyoun to þe aduersary by enchesoun of
 15 efel seyȝenge: for now þer beþ summe y-turned abak aftur
 16 Sathanas. And þerfore who þat haþ trewe wydewes, mynystre
 he to hem, so þat þe churche ne be noȝt y-grefed, & þat heo¹
 17 mowe suffice to þilke þat beþ trewe wydewes. And þilke
 prestes⁵ þat beþ wel aboven oþer men, ben þei y-had worþy to
 doubel worschupe, & þei most þat traueyleþ in word & in
 18 techynge. For holy scripture seyþ, þou ne schalt noȝt bynde
 þe mouȝ of þe oxe þat tyleþ þi lond. &, A werkman is worþi
 19 his mede. & vnderfonge þou non accusasyoun⁶ aȝeyn a prest,
 20 bote vnder two wytnesses oþer þre. & vnderneme þilke þat
 21 synneþ to-fore alle men, þat oþer ben adrad. And y wytnesse
 to-fore God, & to-fore Iesu Crist, & aungelis þat beþ
 y-chosen, þat⁷ þou kepe þese þynges wiþouten lattyngē of ony
 enchesoun, & þat þou do⁷ no þing bowynge to þe oþer⁸ syde.
 22 Ne putte þou not þyn honden to no man sone, ne comune þou
 23 noȝt to oþer mennes⁹ synnes: kepe þi-selfe chaste. Ne drynke
 þou noȝt water ȝet, but vse þou a lytul wyn for þi stomac
 24 & for þi sekenesses þat þou art y-woned to haue. Summe
 25 mennes synnes beþ opene, & goynge byfore þe dom; & summe

¹ ȝhe P.² fol. 79 S.³ in Crist follows y weddyd P, in the margin, S.⁴ wylliþ be weddid (on erasure) dyd in Crist (expunged) & (half erased) hauing (ing on erasure), S. neleþ nat ben y weddyd P.⁵ fol. 91^b P.⁶ usa on erasure, S. occasyoun P.⁷ þat þou..þou do on erasure, probably different hand, S.⁸ toþer P.⁹ fol. 79^b S.

mennes foleweþ. Also goode werkes beþ opene, & þilke þat beþ oþerwyse ne mowe noȝt ben y-hud.

And alle þilke þat beþ in seruytute, worschypen þei hure 6
lordes [in]¹ alle worschupe, leste þe name of God & his
doctrine be blasphemed. And þilke þat habbeþ feiþful 2
lordes, ne despypseþ þei noȝt hem, for þei beþ hure breþeren;
bote serfen hem þe raþer, þat þei beþ feiþful & y-lofed &
partyneres of² þe benefys of God. Þese þynges teche þou
& stere hem þerto. & ȝef eny man teche oþer-wyse, & 3
assenteþ not³ to þe hol wordes of þe doctryne of oure Lord
Iesu Crist, & to þe techynge of pyte; he is proud⁴, knowyng 4
no þing, bote longyng aboute uestynges & stryfynge of
wordes, of whom ryseþ up enuyes & stryfynge, blasphemyes,
efel suspycyones, fyȝtynge of men þat beþ corrupt in þouȝt & 5
beþ depryfed of trewþe, þat weneþ þat getynge by pyte.
Bote a ful gret getynge is pyte wiþ suffysaunce: for we 6,7
broȝten no þing in-to þis world, & it is certayn wiþ-oute
doute þat we mowen beren no þing a-wey. Bote hafe we 8
lyflode & what we mowen ben y-wrye wiþ, holde we ous
a-payd þerwiþ. For þilke þat woldeþ ben y-mad ryche⁵ men, 9
þei falleþ in-to temptacyoun & in-to þe defeles grun & in-to
many vnprofytabel desyres & noyful⁶, þat drencheþ men in-to
deþ & in-to perdycyoun. For þe rote of al efel is couetyse: 10
whom summen hafeþ desyred, & han y-erred from þe feiþ &
han y-broȝt hemselfen in-to muche sorewe. Bote þou þat art 11
Goddes man, fleo þese þinges; & folewe þow ryȝtfulnesse &
pyte, feiþ, charyte, pacyence, & mansuetude. Fyȝt a good 12
fyȝtynge of þe feiþ, & take⁷ þe eferlastynge lyf, in þe whiche
þow art y-cleped, & hast y-knowleched a good knowlechynge
to-fore many wytnesses. & ich hote þe to-fore God in Iesu 13
Crist, þat makeþ alle þinges lyfen in Iesu Crist, þat ȝef
a testymony vnder Pylat of Pounce, a good knowlechynge,
þat þow kepe þe comaundement, wiþ-outen wem, vnre- 14
prefabel, in-to þe comynge of oure Lord Iesu Crist: whom he 15
schal schewen in his tyme, þat is y-blessed, and al-one⁸ myȝty,

¹ & S.P. ² fol. 92 P. ³ in a later hand in the margin, S. om. P.

⁴ he is proud repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁵ fol. 80 S.

⁶ nyful P. ⁷ fol. 92^b P. ⁸ lone P.

16 & Kyng of kynges & Lord of lordes; þat onlyche haþ vndedlynnesse, & dwelleþ in lyȝt þat no man may come to, ne no man haþ y-seyn, ne may y-sen it nouþ[er]¹; to whom be worschype & blysse & empyre efer wiþ-outen ende. Amen.

17 And byde þou ryche men of þis worlde, þat þei ne safere noȝt an hyȝ, ne þat þey ne hope noȝt in þe vncertaynte of rychesse, bote in þe lyfynge God, þat graunteþ to ous alle 18 þinges plentefouslylyche to vsen, & to don wel, & to ben y-mad ryche in goode werkes, & to ȝesen lyȝtlyche &² to comune hure 19 goodes; & to maken tresour & a good foundement her-after, 20 þat þei take an eferlastynge lyf. Tymothe, kepe þat þing þat is y-put to þe, & schonye wykked nofeltees of speches & 21 þe opposynges of þe fals name of connynge, whom þat summen³ han by-hote & han y-fallen⁴ from þe feiþ. þe grace of God be wiþ þe. Amen.

II. TIMOTHY.

1, And oþer epystel Poule wryteþ to Tymothe, & seiþ, Poule Iesu Cristes apostel by þe wyl of God, after þe byheste of lyf 2 þat is in Iesu Crist, to Tymothe, my dereste sone: Grace, 3 mercy, & pes of God þe Fadur & oure Lord Iesu Crist. And y þanke my God, to whom y serfe in a clene conscyence, þat ich hafe wiþ-outen cessynge mynde of þe in my preyeres⁵, 4 nyȝt & day desyrynge to sen þe, hafynge þoȝt on þy teres of 5 wepynge, þat y be fulfulled wiþ ioye; byþinkynge on þe feiþ þat is in þe vnfeyned; þat dwelled⁶ furst in þi graundam Loyde, & in þi moder Eurace: & ich am certayn þat it is in 6 þe. For þe whuche enchesoun y warne þe þat þou arere up aȝeyn þe grace of God, þat is in þe by þe puttynge yn of myn 7 honden. For God ne haþ noȝt y-ȝesen ous a spyryt of drede: 8 bote of vertu & of lofe & of sobernesse. And þerfore ne be þou noȝt a-schamed of þe wytnesse of oure Lord Iesu Crist, ne of me þat am y-bounden: bote y trafayle neþeles to þe 9 euangelye, þoroȝ þe vertu of hym þat haþ delyfred ous & haþ

¹ mark of shortening erased, S. nouþer P.² fol. 80^b S.³ sūmē men, P.⁴ fol. 93 P.⁵ preyeres repeated in the margin,

1st corr. S.

⁶ duelleþ P.

y-cleped ous þoroȝ his¹ holy clepynge; & noȝt after oure werkes, bote after his owne purpos & his grace, þat is y-ȝefe to ous in Iesu Crist byfore þe² tyme of worldes þat beþ y-passed, bote now it is y-schewed þoroȝ þe lyȝtynge of Iesu to Crist oure Safyour, þat haþ distruyed deþ & y-lyȝted³ lyf & in-corrupcyoun by þe euangely, in whom ich am y-set ¹¹ prechour, & apostel, & mayster of men þat weren mysbylefed. For þe whuche enchesoun þis y suffre: bote y ne am noȝt ¹² confounded; for y wot to whom ich hafe bylefed, & ich am certeyn þat he is myȝty þat tresour þat he haþ y-take me to kepe to kepen hym-selfe in-to þat day⁴. & hafe þou þe forme ¹³ of hole wordes þat þou hast y-herd of me, in feiȝ & in lofe þat is in Iesu Crist. And þe goode tresour þat is y-ȝefe þe by þe ¹⁴ Holy Gost þat dwelleþ in ous, kepe þou. For þow wost wel, ¹⁵ þat alle þilke þat weren in Asya beþ y-turned awey from me; of whom weren Phylegeus⁵ and Hermogenes. & God hafe ¹⁶ mercy on Honesyphores houshold⁶: for ofte syþes he refresched me, & was noȝt a-schamed of my chayne; & whenne ¹⁷ he come to Rome, he soȝte me bysylyche for-to þat he fond me—oure Lord graunte þat he fynde mercy in þat day—and ¹⁸ how wel he mynystred to me at Ephese, þow knowest wel y-nowȝ.

And⁷ þerfore, my sone, be þou y-comforted in þe grace þat ¹ **2** is in Iesu Crist of þilke þinges þat þou hast y-herd of me by ² many wytnesses, & þese þinges bytake þou to feiȝful men, þat⁸ mowen also techen oþer men. & trauayle þou as a good ³ knyȝt of Iesu Crist. þer ne is no⁹ man serfyng God þat ⁴ implyeþ hym-selfe to wordlyche doynges, þat¹⁰ he plese hym to whom he haþ y-prefed hym-selfe. For he þat fyȝteþ ⁵ in batayle ne schal noȝt ben y-crowned, bote ȝif he fyȝte leffullyche. & it byhoueþ þat þe erþe-tyyer þat trauayleþ ⁶ furst perceyfen¹¹ of þe fruytes. Vnderstonde what y seye to ⁷ þe; for God wole ȝefe þe vndurstondynge in alle¹² þinges. & ⁸

¹ fol. 81 S. ² fol. 93^b P. ³ y om. P. ⁴ *Vulg.* et certus sum quia potens est depositum meum servare in illum diem. ⁵ eg on erasure, S.

⁶ houshold repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁷ fol. 81^b S. ⁸ fol. 94 P.

⁹ no man serfiþ god repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ¹⁰ but þat P.

¹¹ perteynen P. ¹² in alle twice, S.

haue muynde þat Iesu Crist a-ros up from deþ to lyfe, of þe¹
 9 seed of Dauyd, aftur myn euangely : in whom y trauayle, for
 whom ich am y-bounde ; bote Goddes word ne is noȝt
 10 y-bounde. & þer-fore al þing y suffre for hem þat beþ
 y-chosen, þat þei ben y-safed þoroȝ þe hele² of oure Lord Iesu
 11 Crist wiþ an hefnelyche blis. A trew word : ȝef we beþ dede
 12 to-gedere with Crist, we schule lyfen to-gedere wiþ hym : &
 ȝef we suffreþ, we schulleþ regne to-gedere : & ȝef we for-
 13 sakeþ hym, he wole forsaken ous : ȝef we ne bylefeþ noȝt, he
 duelleþ stille trewe, & he ne may noȝt forsaken hym-selfen³.
 14 ȝese þinges warne þou, witnessynge to-fore God, & ne stryfe
 þou noȝt in wordes, for þat is profytabel to no þing, bote to
 15 turnen hem up þat hereþ. And be bysy to ȝese þi-selfen
 y-prefed to God, & a werk-man wiþ-outen schenschyp,
 16 tretynge ryȝtlyche þe word of trewþe. And schenye⁴ þou
 boþe wykked speches & veyn speches : for þei profyteþ muche
 17 to wykkednesse, & þe¹ speche of hem crepeþ prufelyche as
 18 a cancre : of whom Phylet⁵ & Ymene beþ, þat beþ y-fallen
 a-wey from þe trowþe, seyenge þat þe resurreccyoun of dede
 men is now y-don ; & þei turneþ up þe feiþ of summe men.
 19 Bote þe stabel foundement of God stondeþ stille, hafyng þys
 marke, Oure Lord haþ y-knowe þilke þat beþ of his : &
 Eferich man departeþ hym-selfe fro wykkednesse þat clepeþ
 20 þe name of oure Lord. & in a gret hous þer beþ noȝt onlyche
 vesseles⁶ of gold & of sylfer, bote also of treo⁷ & of erþe ; and
 21 summe beþ to worschupe, & summe to defoul. Bote who
 þat makeþ hym-self clene from ȝese, he schal ben a vessel
 y-halewed in-to worschupe, and profytabel to God, and redy
 22 to eferich good werk. & fleo þou þe desyres of zouþe, bote
 folewe þou ryȝtfulnesse, feiþ, charyte, & pes, wiþ þilke þat
 23 clepeþ þe name of oure Lord wiþ a clene herte. And schonye
 þou uestynges of foly & þat beþ wiþ-outen techynge⁸,
 24 knowyng þat þei bryngeþ forþ stryfinges. And it byhoueþ
 Godes serfaunt to ben no stryfere, bote good & softe to alle
 25 men, habel to ben y-tauȝt, pacyent, & wiþ softnesse amend-

¹ om. P.² here P.³ fol. 82 S.⁴ fol. 94^b P.⁵ philep P.⁶ repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.⁷ treo expunged with wodde in

the margin, later hand, S.

⁸ fol. 82^b S.

ynge hem þat aȝeynstondeþ þe trewþe; ȝef þat God wole ȝefen hem myȝt for-to knowe þe trewþe, þat þei ascapen 26 from¹ þe defeles grunnes, of whom þei beþ y-holde prysoneres after his wylle.

And² knowe þou þis, þat in þe laste dayes þer schuleþ 1 3 ben perylous tymes. For men schulleþ ben lofyng hem- 2 selfen, coueytous and proude, blasphemous, in-obedyent to hure eldren, vnkynde, cursed, wiþ-outen lofe, wiþ-outen 3 pes, blamynge oþer men, incontynent, noȝ[t] muke, with-outen benygnynge, traytoures, fro-ward, swellynge þoroȝ pruyde, 4 loferes of lustes more þan of God; hafynge þe lyknesse of 5 pyte bote forsakyng his vertu: and þese schenyne³ þou. For of þese þer beþ þat perseþ mennes houses, & ledeþ wiþ 6 hem wrecchede wymmen þat beþ y-charged wiþ synnes & y-lad wiþ dyuerse desyres, & efermore þei beþ lernynge, 7 bote þei ne comeþ nefer to þe knowynge of trewþe. And as 8 Iannes⁴ & Mambres aȝenstoden⁵ Moyses, so þese aȝeynstondeþ þe trewþe; men þat beþ corrupt in pouȝt, & wykked a-boute 9 þe feiþ. Bote þei ne schuleþ noȝt profyten: for hure vnku- 9 nyngenesse schal ben openlyche⁶ y-knownen⁷ to alle men, ryȝt as þe oþeres was. Bote þou hast solewed my techynge, 10 myn ordeynynge, & my purpos, feiþ, longanymyte (þat is longabydynge)⁸, lofe, pacyence, persecucyones, suffrynges, 11 whyche⁹ habbeþ y-ben y-do to me at Anthyoche, at Yconye & at Lystres; whuche persecucyones ich haue y-suffred: bote God haþ defended me of hem alle. And alle þilke þat 12 woleþ lyfen mukelyche in Crist schulleþ suffre persecucyoun. Bote wykkede men & gyloures schulleþ profyten into worse, 13 errynge hem-selfen, & bryngen oþer men in-to errour. Bote 14 dwelle þow styll in þese pinges, þat þou hast y-lernyd & þat beþ y-take to þe, knowynge of whom þou hast y-lernyd; & þat from þi ȝouþe þou hast y-knowe holy wrytynges þat 15 mowen enforme þe in-to hele by þe feiþ þat is in Iesu Crist. And eferich wrytyng þat is inspyred of God is profytabel 16 to techen men, & to vndernymen hem, & to amenden hem,

1 fol. 95 P.

2 sektyis in the margin, 1st corr. S.

3 schonye P.

4 s on erasure, S.

5 aȝenstonden P.

6 en on erasure, S.

7 fol. 83 S.

8 Thus in P. þ^b is lonabydege in the margin, 1st corr. S.9 fol. 95^b P.

17 & to enformen hem in ryȝtfulnesse: so þat a Goddes man is parfyȝt & enformed to eferich good werk.

4 1 And y wytnesse to-fore God, & oure Lord Iesu Crist, þat schal deme boþe quyke men & dede, & by his comynge & his 2 kyngdom; preche þou þe word, & stonde byslyche boþe in hese & in anuy; & vndernyme þou, & byseche, & blame þou 3 in eferich pacyence & in techynge. For tyme¹ schal come when men ne wolleþ noȝt susteyne good techynge² & hol; bote þei schuleþ gedere to-gyder maystres, ychynge³ heres⁴; 4 & þei schulleþ turnen awey hure herynge from trewþe, & þei 5 schuleþ turnen hem to tales. Bote wake þou, & trauayle þou in alle þinges, & do þou þi werk of þe euangelye, & fulfulle þi mynstryng. & be þou sober.

TITUS.

And⁵, suster, to an oþer of his dissiples þat hyȝte Tyte he 1 5 wryteþ in þis wyse, For þis enchesoun y lafte⁶ þe at Crete, for þou schuldest amenden þilke þinges þat lakkeþ, & þat þou 6 schuldest ordeyne prestes by cytees, as ich ordeyned þe; and who þat is wiþ-outen blame, a man of on wyf, þat haþ feiþful 7 children, noȝt in-to accusacyoun, ne soget to leccherye. For it byhofeþ þat a byschop be wiþ-outen blame, as despensatour of God; noȝt proud, ne wraþþeful, ne dronkelew, ne a smyter, 8 ne coueytous of foul wynnynge; bote an ospyteler & benygne, 9 sober, ryȝtful & holy, contynent; & cleppynge a feiþful & a trewe word þat is aftur good doctryne, þat he be myȝty to warne men in hol techynge, & vndernymen þilke þat aȝeyn- 10 seyen. For þer beþ manye in-obedyent, veyn spekeres & 11 gyloures, & most of þilke þat beþ of circumcysyoun, whom byhofeþ to ben vndernomyn; for þei turneþ up alle houses, techynge þat ne byhofeþ noȝt to ben y-tauȝt, for enchesoun 12 of foul wynnynge. And on of⁷ hure owne prophetes⁸ seyde, Men of Crete beþ efermore lyeres, lether bestes, of slow

¹ for tyme repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ² fol. 83^b S.

³ tichynge on erasure in a late hand, P. ⁴ fol. 96. þe heres, P.

⁵ Heading: Tyte in a modern hand on ff. 83^b and 84, S. ⁶ laue P. nota in the margin, S. ⁷ fol. 96^b P. ⁸ fol. 84 S.

wombe. & þis testymonye is soþ. & þerfore blame hem 13
 harde, þat þei ben hol in feiþ, noȝt takynge kepe to þe fables 14
 of Iewes, ne to mennes comaundementes þat turneþ hem
 a-wey from trewþe. And to clene men alle þinges beþ clene: 15
 bote to men þat beþ defouled & mysbylefed þer ne is no þing
 clene; for hure þoȝt and hure conscyence beþ defouled. & þei 16
 knowlecheþ þat þei knoweþ God; bote in hure dedys þei
 forsakeþ hym, for þei beþ abhomynabel, & vnbylefed, &
 [reprefabel] to eferich good werk.

Bote speke þou hol doctryne þat bysemeþ þe to speke: 1 2
 þat olde men ben sober and chaste, redy & wys, hol in feiþ, 2
 in lofe, & in pacyence: olde wymmen also ben in an holy 3
 habyt, noȝt schidesteres, noȝt serfyng to muche wyn¹,
 spekyng & seyenge wel, þat þei techen wysdom: ȝonge 4
 wymmen, þat þei lofen hure housbondes & hure chyldren
 also, & þat þei ben redy & wys, chast & sober, hafynge [cure] 5
 of þe houshold, benyngne, & sogetys to hure housbondes, þat
 þe word of God ne be noȝt y-blasphemed. Warne þou also 6
 ȝonge men þat þei ben sober: & in alle þinges ȝef þi-selfen 7
 an ensampel of goode werkes, in techynge, in holnesse, in
 chastyte, in sadnesse þi word be hol & wiþouten reprefe; 8
 þat he þat is aduersary² be³ adrad, & fynde non yfel to seyn
 of ous. Also þat serfauntes ben in alle þinges sogetes to hure 9
 lordes, plesynge in alle þinges & noȝt aȝeyn-seyenge; ne 10
 bygylynge, bote in alle þinges schewynge a good feiþ; þat þei
 worschupen in alle þinges þe doctrine of oure God & oure
 Safyours. For þe grace of God oure Safyours haþ appered 11
 to alle men, techynge ous þat we forsaken wykkednesse 12
 & wordlyche desyres, & þat soberlyche & ryȝtfullyche &
 mukelyche we lyfen in þis worlde, abydynge þe blissed hope 13
 & þe comynge of þe blysse of þe grete God & oure Safyours
 Iesu Crist; þat ȝef hym-selfen for ous to fore-byȝenge ous 14
 of eferich wykkednesse, & to maken ous a clene pepel & an
 acceptabel to hym-selfe & a folewere of goode werkes.

þese þinges spek þow & warne & vndernyme wiþ eferich 15
 power of comaundynge. No man despyse þe. And warne: 3
 hem to be sogetes to princys, & to potestatys, to ben

¹ veyn P.

² fol. 84^b S.

³ fol. 97 P.

obedyent to þat þat is y-sayd hem, & redy to eferich good
 2 werk, to blaspheme no man, ne ben none stryferes, bote softe,
 3 schewynge eferich mansuetude to alle men. And we weren
 ous-self sumtyme vnwyse, vnbylefed, errynge, & serfyng
 to oure desyres & to dyuerse lustes, & in¹ malyce and in
 enuye lyfynge, y-hated of oþer men, & hatynge to-gedere.
 4 Bote when þe benygnyte & þe humanyte appered² of God
 5 oure Safyour, noȝt of þe werkes of ryȝtfulnessesse, þat we hafeþ
 y-don, bote þoroȝ his owne mercy he safed ous, by waschynge
 6 of a bygetynge aȝeyn & renewynge of þe Holy Gost, whom
 he haþ y-sched in ous plenteuouslyche, by Iesu Crist oure
 7 Safyour; þat we ben y-iustyfyed þoroȝ his grace & ben eyrys
 8 þoroȝ hope of an eferlastynge lyf. A trew word, & of þese
 þinges ich wole conferme þe, þat by goode werkes men
 chargen to ben beforen oþer, þilke þat bylefeþ to God. For
 9 þese þinges beþ goode & profytabel to men: bote schenye
 þou uestyones of foly, and genologyes, and stryfes of þe lawe;
 10 for þei beþ vnprofytabel and veyn. A man þat is an heretyk
 aftur þe furste & þe secounde correccyoun schenye hym;
 11 knowynge þat such a man is y-turned upso-doun, & he
 agulteþ whan he is y-dampned þorowȝ his owne dom.

þus, suster, seynt Poule techeþ how Cristene men schuleþ
 lyfe, & his techyng acordeþ wiþ Cristis techynge in þe gospel,
 as þe techynge of þe oþere apostoles doþ. And now, suster,
 my counseyl is þat þou lyfe vertuouslyche³ after Cristes
 techynge, & kepynge his hestes whyles þou art in þis world;
 & þanne þou schalt þoroȝ his mercy come to an eferlastynge
 lyf of blysse, boþe in body and in soule. Amen.

¹ fol. 97^b P.

² fol. 85 S.

³ fol. 98 P.

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES¹.

Als² saynte Luke telles ande writes of þo dedes of þo apostuls, ande³ sais vpon⁴ þis wise, Forsoþe, þou Theophil, i 1 þe firste sermone I made of alle⁵ þat Iesu bigan to do ande⁶ teche, vnto þat daye þat he ascended vppe (or was taken 2 uppe), comawndeande⁷ vnto⁸ þo apostuls⁹ þurhge þo Holigoste þo whiche he chees: ande vnto þo whiche he schewed hym- 3 seluen lifande efter hise passion in many argumentes, bi fourty¹⁰ days¹¹ apperande vnto hem, ande spekande of þo kengdome of God: ande etande he comanded hem þat þei 4 schulde noghte departe nor¹² go away fro Jerusalem, bot þat þei schulde abide þo sonde ande þo bihetynge¹³ of þo fader, þat ȝhe haue harde, he saide, bi my mowþe: for¹⁴ forsoþe 5 Iohn baptised in water, forsoþe ȝhe schal be baptised þurhge þo Holigoste noghte myche efter þise dais. þerfore þei þat 6 wore komen togader asched hym, ande saide, Schalt þou in þat tyme restore þo kengdome¹⁵ of Israel¹⁶? Ande he saide 7 soþely unto hem, Hit es noghte ȝoures to knowe þo tymes (or, hit falles noghte to ȝowe) ande þo momentes, þo whiche my¹⁷ Fader has¹⁸ putte in his power. Bot ȝhe schal take 8 vertewe comande fro abouen vnto ȝowe of þo Holigoste into ȝowe: ande vnto⁸ me witnesses ȝhe schal be¹⁹ in Ierusalem, ande in al Iury ande Samarye, ande vnto þo ferreste²⁰ ande laste of erþe. Ande whanne he hade saide þise þinges, 9 hem²¹ seande, he was lifte vppe; ande a clowde toke hym fro her eyghne. Ande³ whanne þei loked²² vppe into²³ heuen efter 10 h[ȝ]ym²⁴ wendande, lo, twoo²⁵ men stoden biseide hem in white

¹ MSS. C and D begin here. *Here bigynnes þo actus of apostuls* C. *Actuum apostolorum* S.P. *Apostolorum* D. fol. 16^b C; 8 D; 85^b S. ² C^o 1. in the margin, C. ³ om. S.P.D. ⁴ on S.P.D. ⁵ þinges follows in a later hand, P. ⁶ & to D. ⁷ comaundede S.P.D. ⁸ to S.P.D.

⁹ posteles S.P. ¹⁰ argumen (crossed through) tes follows, C. ¹¹ days in the margin, C. ¹² no P. ¹³ hetynge S.P.D. ¹⁴ om. P.

¹⁵ þe kyngdom (crossed out) follows, S. ¹⁶ Israel D. ¹⁷ my fader (expunged) ends fol. 85^b; the line is unfinished with room for 7—8 letters more; my fader repeated on fol. 86 S. ¹⁸ fol. 17 C. ¹⁹ bere S.P.D.

²⁰ ferþeste S.P.D. ²¹ þei S.P.D. ²² lokande S.P.D. ²³ in tul S.P.D.

²⁴ hem C. hym S.P.D. ²⁵ twey S.P.D.

11 cloþinges, þo whiche saide vnto hem, Men of Galilee, wherto
 stonde ȝhe biholdande into heuen? [He þis Jesus þat es
 up-taken fro ȝou in-to heuene]¹, righte as ȝhe sawe hym
 ascende² vnto³ heuen⁴, right so schal he kome as⁵ ȝhe sawe
 12 hym wende. þan⁶ turned þei agayne vnto⁷ Ierusalem fro þe
 13 mownte of Olyuete, þat es biside Ierusalem. Ande whanne
 þei hade enturde into þer⁸ cynacle (a howse þat þei dwelled
 inne), þei ȝode vppe where Peter dwelled, ande Iohn, ande
 Iames, ande Andrewe, ande Philippe, & Thomas, ande
 Bartholomew⁹, ande Mathewe ande Iacob Alphei, ande
 14 Symon¹⁰ Zelotes & Iudas Iacobi. Alle þise were lastande
 in preyer togader wiþ wymmen, ande Mary Jesu moder, ande
 15 hire breþer. In¹¹ þo dais Peter ros uppe inmyddes¹² þo breþer,
 ande saide—þo company of men þat was þer togider was
 16 nerehande¹³ a hundreþe¹⁴ ande twenty¹⁵—þe men ande my
 breþer, þo writte þat þo Holigoste has bifore saide, hit bihoues
 to be fulfilled of Iudas by Dauid¹⁶ mowþe, þo whiche was¹⁷
 17 ledar of hem þat toke Iesu; þo whiche was noumburde in vs
 (þat es¹⁸, was of oure company), ande he es lotted in þo lote of
 18 þis priuete. Ande he þis forsoþe fledde away, ande helde þo
 felde of þo hire of wikkednes (þat es, þat was boghte wiþ þo
 money þat Criste was solde fore), ande honged¹⁹ hymseluen,
 ande braste ymiddles²⁰, ande alle hise guttes & entrailes
 19 wore ȝette oute. Ande hit es knowne þinge vnto²¹ alle²² þat
 dwellen in Ierusalem, so as þat²³ felde was called on þer
 20 langage Acheldemac, þat es, þo felde of blode²⁴. Soþely hit
 es writen in þo boke of Psalmes, His dwellynge be²⁵ deserte,
 ande be þer none²⁶ to dwelle þerinne: ande, An oþer hafe hise
 21 bischopriche. Ande²⁷ þerfore it bihoues of þise men þat ben

¹ S.P.D.² in the margin, C.³ om. P. *up into* S.D.⁴ om. P.⁵ os⁶ new division with initial, S.P.D.ⁱⁱ in the margin, D.⁷ to S.P.D.⁸ þe P.⁹ bertulmewS.P. *berthilmew* D.¹⁰ symonde S.P.D.¹¹ new division withinitial, S.P.D. *iii* in the margin, D.¹² *y myddys*S.P.D. fol. 17^b C.¹³ nyhande S.P.D.¹⁴ an hundred S.P.D.¹⁵ fol. 86^b S.¹⁶ Dauid S.P.¹⁷ in the margin, C.¹⁸ eer S.P.D.¹⁹ henged S.P.D.²⁰ in m. S.P.D.²¹ til S.D. to P.²² alle men P.²³ þat (inserted)

þe P.

²⁴ Chapters I. 20—IV. 6 omitted in D.²⁵ made inserted in a later

hand, P.

²⁶ none it be S.P.²⁷ om. S.P.

wiþ vs gadurde togider in alle þo tyme þat oure Lorde Iesu Criste kome ande ȝode amonge vs, bigynnande fro þo ²² bapteme of Iohn, vnto¹ þo day þat he was vp-taken fro vs, [on]² of þis[e] forto³ be a witnes wiþ us of his uprisinge. Ande ²³ þei sette tweyne, Ioseph þat was called⁴ Barsabas, ande⁵ his kouþe name es Rightwise, ande Mathewe. Ande preyande ²⁴ þei saide, þow Lorde, þat knewe þo hertes of alle, schewe vs whom þow haueste chosen of þise twoo⁶, to take þe place of⁷ ²⁵ þis priuete ande of þis seruice, & þo apostulhed of whiche Iudas es depriued, þat he may dwelle in hise stede. Ande ²⁶ þei gafe hem lottes, ande þo lotte felle vpon⁸ Mathewe, ande⁹ he was anoumburde wiþ þo eleuen¹⁰ apostuls. Ande ¹¹ whanne ¹ ² þo dais of Witsonenday¹² wore fulfilled, alle þo disciples weren togader in þat same place¹³. Ande sodenly a sowne kome fro ² heuen, as hit wore of an¹⁴ hasty komynge spiritte, ande fulfilled alle þo house þore þei wore sittande. Ande diuerse ³ langages appered vnto hem, as it wore fire; ande sat abouen¹⁵ icheone of hem. Ande alle were fulfilled of þo Holigoste, ⁴ ande þei biganne to speke in diuerse langages, righte as þo Holigoste gafe to hem to speke. Ande þer¹⁶ wore þat tyme ⁵ soþely in Ierusalem dwellande Iwes¹⁷, religiowse men of alle nacyon þat vndur heuen was. Ande ¹⁴ whanne þis voice was ⁶ made ande þis sowne¹⁸, þer kome togider grete multitude, ande was confused in mynde: ande þei¹⁴ merueyld gretly, for icheone harde hem spekande in hise langage. Alle soþely ⁷ þei were amerueyld¹⁹, ande gretely wondurden²⁰, ande saiden, Lo, ne ben²¹ noghte alle þise men of Galilee þat speken vpon⁸ þis wise? Ande how es hit þat iche of vs has harde hise ⁸ langage, in whiche þat we²² wore borne inne? Of Parthi, ⁹ Medy ande Elamyte, ande of hem þat dwellen in Mesapo-

¹ vnto repeated on fol. 18, C.² ande C. on S.P.³ to S.P.⁴ cleded P.⁵ þat S.P.⁶ two oon S.P.⁷ fol. 87 S.⁸ on S.P.⁹ C^m 2 in the margin, C.¹⁰ enleuene S.P.¹¹ no break in MS. C.Initial and new division, S.P. die pentecostes in the margin, xvth cent. hand. II Chap' in a late hand on erasure, S. ¹² Whyssoneday S.P.¹³ in þat stede S.P. ¹⁴ om. S.P. ¹⁵ up on or abouen S.P. ¹⁶ þer in a later hand in the margin; nota below it, S. ¹⁷ fol. 18^b C. ¹⁸ sounde S.P.¹⁹ a wondrud S.P. ²⁰ merueyded S.P. ²¹ ar S.P. ²² in the margin, 1st corr. S.

tonye, in þo Iury ande in Capodoche, Pounty ande Assyen,
 10 in Frige ande¹ Pamphile², Egipte ande in þo parties of Libee
 þo whiche es aboute Cirynence, ande þo komelynges of
 11 Romayn³, ande þo Iewes ande þo procellytes, þo Cretes⁴ ande
 þo Arabies, we hafe harde hem spekande in⁵ oure langage þo
 12 grete wondurs ande dedus of God. Alle soþely þei wore
 astonyed, ande merueilde togader, ande saide, What þinge
 13 wol þis be? Oþer soþely lowghne, ande saide, Þise men ben⁶
 14 filled wiþ muste. Ande þanne stode Peter wiþ þo elleuen⁷
 soþely ande saide wiþ highe voyce vnto hem, Men of Iewry,
 &⁸ alle þat dwellen in Ierusalem, þis þinge be knownen vnto
 3owe, ande wiþ 3oure eres takes ande⁹ conceyues my wordes.
 15 Soþefastly noghte as ȝhe trowe þise men ben drunken, whanne
 16 hit es of þo day bot þo þridde houre, Bot þis hit¹⁰ es þat was
 17 saide bi þo prophete¹¹ Ioel: Oure Lorde sais þat hit schal be
 in þo laste dais, I schal ȝete oute of my spiritte vpon alle
 flesche: ande 3oure sones ande 3oure doghters schal pro-
 phecye, ande 3oure ȝonge men schal se sightes¹² ande visiones,
 18 ande 3oure elders schal dreme dremes: ande forsoþe vpon my
 seruantes (boþe men ande wymmen¹³) ande vpon⁴ my honde-
 maydens I schal ȝote oute of my spiritte in þoo dais; ande
 19 þei schul prophecye. Ande I schal gife wondure¹⁴ in heuen
 abouen, ande tokens in erþe¹⁵ bineþen; blode, ande fire, ande
 20 steme¹⁶ of smeke: þo sonne schal be turned in-to markenes¹⁷,
 ande þo mone into blode, bifore þo grete daye of God ande
 21 þo opunsched¹⁸ kome: ande¹⁹ hit schal be, alle or iche whoeuer
 22 calles þo name of God, he schal be saufe. ȝhe men of Israel,
 here ȝhe þise wordes: Iesu of Nazareth, a proued man of God
 in 3owe þurgh vertewes ande schewynges ande takens, þat
 23 God did bi hym amonges 3owe, as ȝhe wote; hym, þurgh
 kownseile endide ande þurgh þo bifore-knowynge of²⁰ God

¹ fol. 87^b S. ² in Pam. S.P. ³ romanye P. ⁴ crite corrected into
 crete, S. ⁵ on S.P. ⁶ are S.P. ⁷ enleuene S.P. ⁸ fol. 19 C.
⁹ or S.P. ¹⁰ þis S.P. ¹¹ prophecye S.P. ¹² sightes
 ande om. S.P. ¹³ boþe.....wymmen faintly underlined, C. om. S.P.
¹⁴ gret inserted before wonder, P. ¹⁵ abouen, expunged, follows, C. þe erþe P.
¹⁶ þe myst of smoke S.P. ¹⁷ derknesse S.P. fol. 88 S. ¹⁸ opun schewed S.
 opun day (inserted) schewed P. ¹⁹ verse 21 begins: & alle who so euere
 clepeþ S.P. ²⁰ fol. 19^b C.

þurhе wikked mennes hende bitraid & taken, tourmentande¹ þe slowe: whom² God raysed agayne, þo paynes²⁴ of helle lowsed ande broken³, so as⁴ hit was impossibul þat helle hym schulde holde. (Siþen⁵ he heled hit þurhе his myghte, ande alle þat euer was maked.) Dauid soþely sais of²⁵ hym, I schal puruey ande force oure Lorde⁶ euer bifore me; for he es at my righte side, þat I be noghte stired⁷. Ande²⁶ þerfore es my hertte maked brode, ande my tunge made⁸ ioye; ande ouer þat (or, þeropon)⁹ my flesche schal reste in hope, for þow schal noghte¹⁰ leue my soule in helle, nor¹¹ þou²⁷ schalte gife þi saynte to see corupcione. þo ways of life þow²⁸ made knowne vnto¹² me; þow schalte fulfille me wiþ þi face in ioynge. þe men ande breþer, if hit be¹³ leffulle to say²⁹ vnto¹² ȝowe of Dauid þo patriarche, for þat he es deed ande biried, ande hise graue es amonge ȝowe vnto þis daye. Ande³⁰ þerfore whanne he was a prophete, ande wiste wele¹⁴ þat God þurhе trewe¹⁵ oþe¹⁶ hade sworne vnto hym, þat of þo frute þat outh of hym schulde kome, schulde sitte vpon his sege; seande ande for-spekande¹⁷ of þo resurreccione of Criste, for³¹ noþer was he forlefte¹⁸ in helle, ne¹⁶ neþer his flesche sawe corupcione (þat es, was neuer filed). Hym¹⁹ þis same Iesu³² God raysed agayn, werof ande²⁰ of whom we alle ben witnes. Ande²¹ þerfore forsoþe [he was] highe liftud vppe [bi] þo righte³³ honde of God²¹ ande þurhе þo bihetynge of þo Holygoste taken of þo Fadire, he has ȝotted downe þis, þat ȝe see ande here. Soþely Dauid steghe noghte vppe into heuen: for³⁴ hymseluen soþely sais, Oure Lorde saide vnto¹² my Lorde, Syt þow vpon²² my righte honde, þe while þat I putte þine³⁵ enmyse schamel²³ of þi fete (þat es, til þat I putte hem vnder

¹ to torment & S.P. ² upp wh. S.P. ³ brake S.P. ⁴ as om. P.

⁵ Siþen (synne S.P.) he...maked underlined, C.P. ⁶ louerd with ue crossed out, S. ⁷ meuyd S.P. ⁸ makeþ S.P. ⁹ or þeropon om. S.P.

¹⁰ not in 1st corrector's hand in the margin, S. ¹¹ neþer S.P. ¹² to S.P.

¹³ if (crossed out) it be marked to be inverted, S. be it P. ¹⁴ fol. 88^b S.

¹⁵ trewþe, S.P. ¹⁶ om. S.P. ¹⁷ byfore sp. S.P. ¹⁸ left S.P.

¹⁹ fol. 20 C. hym om. S.P. ²⁰ ande of whom om. S.P. ²¹ Ande

þerfore forsoþe þo highe liftud vppe honde of god þat es þo righte honde of god alþerhyeste C. þerfore þe ryȝt hond of god is hyed S.P. Vulg. Dextera

igitur Dei exaltatus. ²² on S.P. ²³ shameful S.P.

36 þi fete)¹ Ande þerfore certaynly wite alle þo folkke of Israel, þat
 God has maked hym Lorde ande Criste, þis iche² same Iesu
 37 þat ȝhe crucified. Ande³ whanne þei herde þis, in hertte þei
 wore prikked, ande þanne þei saide vnto Peter ande to þo⁴
 toþer⁴ apostuls, Leue men ande breþer, what schal we do?
 38 Soþely Peter saide vnto⁵ hem, Dos penaunce, ande iche of
 ȝowe be baptised in þo name of oure Lorde Iesu Criste in
 forgifnes of ȝoure synnes; ande ȝhe schal take þo gifte of þo
 39 Holygoste. Vnto⁶ ȝow es⁷ hette⁸ a bihetynge, ande alsono
 vnto⁵ ȝowre childer, ande to alle þat fer be, ande vnto alle þat
 40 God oure Lorde haues⁹ called¹⁰. Wiþ many alsono oþer wordes
 he has wytnessed¹¹, ande he amonested¹² hem, ande saide, Bes
 41 ȝhe saued fro¹³ þis schrewde kynreden. Ande³ þoo þat receyued
 þer sermone wore baptised: ande þat day weren wonnen
 42 vnto⁵ God ande turned abowte þeo þowsande. Ande þei wore
 þanne lastande in þo apostuls techinge, ande in komunyng
 43 of brekinge of brede, ande in preyers. Dredfulle was forsoþe
 iche sowle: ande many merueyles ande wondurs wore bi þo
 apostuls in Ierusalem wroghte; ande grete drede was amonges
 44 hem alle. Alle¹⁴ alsono þat trowed weren togader, ande alle
 45 þer þinges wornen in komun amonges hem; þei solden þer
 londes, þer catelle ande þer godus¹⁵, ande departed hit amonges
 46 hem alle, vnto⁵ euerichone efter¹⁶ he hade nede. Ande iche
 day þei contynued lastande in þo temple togader, ande abowte
 howses (þat es, vnto⁵ þo puple þat þer kome of diuerse places)¹⁷
 þei brake þe brede (þat es, Goddes worde)¹⁷, [ande] þei token
 47 mete wiþ ioye ande sympulnes of hertte, þankande God, ande
 hafande grace vnto⁵ alle folke. Ande oure Lorde [soþly
 maked more þe whiche schulde be¹⁸ saued iche day in hym-
 seluen]¹⁹.

3 1 Peter²⁰ soþely ande saynte John ȝoden into þo temple atte
 2 þo houre of none-preyer. Ande²¹ a man þat was crokud fro

¹ gloss underlined, C.S.P.

² om. S.P.

³ om. P.

⁴ oþere P.

⁵ to S.P.

⁶ þat to S.P.

⁷ soþlyche is S.P.

⁸ byhote S.P.

⁹ fol. 20^b C.

¹⁰ clepyd S.P.

¹¹ fol. 89 S.

¹² amoneste S.P.

¹³ fro

twice, P.

¹⁴ also alle S.P.

¹⁵ ande þer godus om. S.P.

¹⁶ after þt S.P.

¹⁷ gloss underlined, S.P.

¹⁸ schulde be in marg.

contemporary hand, S.

¹⁹ Thus in S.P. hit made more epistola sequitur, C.

²⁰ Cm 3^m in a later

hand, in marg., C. iii chap^e in a xvith century hand, S.

²¹ fol. 21 C.

his moder wombe (þat es, was borne crokud)¹ [was borne, ande] iche² day hise frendes sette hym atte þo temple-dore þat was Speciosa, þer³ forto begge almes of hem þat ȝode in ande oute of þo temple. He þis whan he sawe Peter ande ȝ Ioon begynne to enter into þo temple, he preide hem of þer almes. Ande Peter wiþ Ioon bihelde vnto⁴ hym, ande saide, 4 Loke vpon vs. Ande he bihelde vpon hem, and trowed sum- 5 whate to haue of hem. And þanne Peter soþely saide, Golde 6 ande syluer haue I none (þat es to say, noþer)¹; bot soþely þat⁵ þat I haue I⁶ gife vnto⁷ þe. In þo name of Iesu Criste of Nazareth, rise ande go; ande toke hise righte honde, 7 ande lifte⁸ hym vppe: & alssone wore hise lymes made hole ande sadde. Ande he stode vppe ande ȝode his 8 way, worschipande ande þankande God. [& alle þe puple 9 sawe hym walkande & worschipande God]⁹: soþely [wel]¹⁰ 10 men hym knewe, þat hit was he þat satte at þo temple-dore forto⁴ asche mennes almes: ande of hym þei wore merueyled ande gretely awonderde¹¹ how hit so bifelle vnto⁷ hym. Ande 11 soþely whanne þei [sawe]¹² Peter ande Iohn, alle þo puple kome rennande vnto⁴ hem to Salomons porte¹³, wondurande vpon¹⁴ hem ande biholdande¹⁵. Ande Peter whanne he sawe¹⁶ 12 þat, he saide vnto⁴ þo folke, Men of Israel, whi wonduren ȝhe here-oponne¹⁷, ande whi biholde ȝhe vs so, as we þurgh eure vertewe or eure power hafe made hym ȝis to go? Abrahams 13 God ande Isaaks God ande Iacobs God ande ȝoure faders God¹⁸ haues glorified hise sone Iesu; þo whiche forsoþe ȝhe bitraide ande denied bifore þo face of Pilate, demande hym vnto⁴ þo deþe. ȝhe, forsoþe¹⁹, þo holy ande þo rightwise man 14 ȝhe denied, ande²⁰ asched to be gifen vnto⁴ ȝowe a²¹ man þat was a mansleare; soþefastely¹⁹ þo maker of life ȝhe slowe, 15 þat²² God raysed fro²³ deþe vnto⁴ life, whos wytnes we ben.

¹ gloss expunged, S. om. P. ² þat i. C. & eche S.P. ³ fol. 89^b S.

⁴ to S.P. ⁵ om. P. ⁶ þat I S.P. ⁷ om. S.P. ⁸ rerid S.P.

⁹ S.P. ¹⁰ whyleste C. wel S.P. ¹¹ wondrud S.P. ¹² schulde take C. sawe S.P. *Vulg.* cum teneret autem. ¹³ fol. 21^b C.

¹⁴ on S.P. ¹⁵ ande biholdande om. S.P. ¹⁶ Soþly whan Petir saw S.P. ¹⁷ here onne S.P. ¹⁸ fol. 90 S. ¹⁹ soþly S.P.

²⁰ & ȝe S.P. ²¹ a man þat was, om. S.P. ²² whom S.P.

²³ fro deþe om. S.P.

16 Ande in þo faiþe of hise name hym þis þat ȝhe see ande knowe, he haues confermed ande helud: þo name of hym, ande þo faiþe þat es bi hym gafe þis man fully his hele biforn 17 alle ȝoure sighte. Ande nowe, breþer, I wote þat þurh 18 vnknowyng ȝhe hit did, ande so did ȝoure princes. þo þinges soþely þat God spake biforn þurh þo mowþe of alle þo prophetes, þat his Criste schulde suffure, þus he fulfilled 19 hit. Dos penawnce þerfore, ande bes turned, þat¹ ȝowre 20 synnes be done away, whanne þo tymes schul kome of refreschinge fro þo siȝte of God, ande² whanne he schal sende 21 hym þat es preached vnto ȝowe, Iesu Criste: þo whiche schal dwelle in heuen vnto þo tyme of restoryng of alle þat God has spoken þurh³ þo mowþe of his sayntes fro þo bigyn- 22 nynge of þo worlde ande þurh³ hise prophetes. Moyses soþely saide, God oure Lorde⁴ schal raise vnto⁵ vs a prophete of oure⁶ breþere; ȝhe schal here hym as meseluen (þat es, as ȝhe done me) anentes alle þinges þat he schal speke vnto ȝowe. 23 Ande soþely hit schal be, þat iche sowle þat⁷ heres noghite þo⁸ prophete, schal⁹ be þutte oute of þo puple & oute of hise 24 termes. Ande alle þo prophetes fro Samuel ande so forþer- 25 more, þat spaken, schewed þise dais. Ande ȝhe soþely ben prophetes sones ande of þo testamente þat God disposed ande ordeynde to oure¹⁰ faders, sayande vnto⁵ Abraham, In þi sede 26 schal be blessed alle þo meyne of erþe. To ȝow firste God rayssed¹¹ his sone, [ande] sende hym blessande ȝowe, þat iche- one schulde turne hym from þo way of his wikkednes.

4 1 As¹² þei stoden ande spaken vnto⁵ þe puple, þer¹³ kome fallande vnto⁵ hem prestes ande maisters of þo temple ande¹⁴ 2 Saduceys (þat wore relygyouse men)¹⁵, [ande] maden grete sorowe þat ȝei tawghten¹⁶ þo puple ande schewed in Iesu þo 3 risinge of deþe; ande layden hondes¹⁷ vpon hem, ande putte 4 hem in holde vnto þo toþer daye: þanne soþely hit was

¹ fol. 22 C. ² *die trenete* (?), in the margin in a xvith cent. hand. Below it *peuyt* in the same hand as previous insertions, S. ³ by S.P. ⁴ om. S.P. ⁵ to S.P. ⁶ ȝoure S. ⁷ fol. 90^b S. ⁸ þat S. ⁹ he schal S.P. ¹⁰ ȝoure S. ¹¹ *reysynge* S.P. ¹² *Cm4m* in the margin, C.S.P. ¹³ fol. 22^b C. ¹⁴ om. P. ¹⁵ gloss underlined in S.P. ¹⁶ þ^t þei ¹⁷ *hond* S.P. *tauȝte* repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S.

nyghte. Many of hem¹ forsoþe troweden þat herden Goddes worde; ande was þo noumbrē of men fīue þowsande. þo 5 toþer² day hit felle þat þer schulde be gadired togider þer princes, þo olde men, ande þo wise of Ierusalem, ande Annas 6 þo prince of prestes, ande Cayphas, ande Iohn, ande Aly-sawndure, ande als many as wore of þe prestes³ kinreden. Ande [þei] put hem ymyddes⁴ hem alle, ande asched hem, 7 In whatte vertewe & in whos name did ȝhe þise þinges? Thanne Peter, fulfilled of þo Holygoste, saide vnto⁵ hem, 8 Princes⁶ of⁷ puple ande olde men, heres⁸ ande vndur-stondes⁹. If we to daye ben demed in þo gode dede of þis⁹ seke man, in þo whiche he þis¹⁰ es made saufe, knowne þinge 10 to be hit vnto⁵ ȝowe¹¹, ande to alle þo folke of Israel: for in þo name of Iesu Criste of Nazareth, þe whiche ȝhe crucified, whōm God raysed agayn fro deþe. in¹² þat he þis stondes bifore ȝow¹³ hole. He þis Ihesus es þo stone þat of ȝowe was re- 11 proued in howsinge, þat es nowe made þo heued kornerstone. Ande þer es no hele in any oþer. Nor soþely oþer name 12 vnder heuen es none gifен vnto⁵ men, in whiche we maye ande bihoues be sauied. Ande¹⁰ whanne þe men sawe ande 13 bihelde þo stedfastnes offe Peter ande Iohn, ande was founden þat þei wore men unletterde ande ideotes, þei were amer-ueyled, ande knew þem, þat þei hade ben wiþ Iesu. Ande 14 þei sawe þo man stondande wiþ hem þat was heled¹⁴; ande no þinge þei myghte agaynsaye. Ande¹⁰ þei komanded hem 15 forto⁵ go¹⁶ oute of þo kownseyl, ande þei kownseilde togider, ande saide, What schal we do vnto⁵ þise men? For als 16 mykel soþely as a knowne token ande merueyl es done þurghe hem, knowne vnto⁵ alle þo folkke þat dwellen in Ierusalem, ande we maye noghte denye hit. Bot þat hit be 17 no more¹⁵ pupplisched ne¹⁵ spoken amonge þo folkke, þrete we hem, þat þei in þat name speke nomore vnto⁵ any man. Ande þei called¹⁷ hem¹⁵ unto hem¹⁵, ande komawnded hem¹⁰ 18

¹ hom (?) C. ² þt oþer S.P. ³ here D begins; fol. 9. ⁴ in þe myddel of S.P.D. ⁵ to S.P.D. ⁶ fol. 91 S. ⁷ of þe P. ⁸ ȝee follows, S.P.D.

⁹ ande vndurstondes om. S.P.D. ¹⁰ om. S.P.D. ¹¹ ȝow alle S.P.D.

¹² ande in the text with in in the margin, C. ¹³ fol. 23 C.

¹⁴ nota in the margin, S. ¹⁵⁻¹⁵ om. S.P.D. A cross in the margin, C.

¹⁶ go forþ S.P.D. ¹⁷ cleded S.P.D.

þat þei schulde nomore¹ so speke, [ne]² teche on³ no wise
 19 in Ihesu name. Peter soþely ande Iohn ansuered and saide
 vnto⁴ hem, If hit is⁵ riȝtewise in þo sighte of God soner to
 20 here ȝowe þan God, telle vs; þat we hafe harde ande sene,
 21 we may noghte bot we hit speke. Ande þei lefte hem wiþ
 many þretynge, dredande þo puple. No rightwise cause
 myghte þei finde hem forto punische, for alle spake hit ande
 made hit clere ande knowne, þat þinge þat bi hem was done,
 22 of þat þinge þat bifelle. þat man was of elde fourety ȝhere
 ande twoo⁶ more, whanne þis token ande þis hele was.
 23 Ande⁷ whanne þei wore laten oute of þo⁸ kownseile to wende
 forþe þer way, þei komen vnto⁹ þer breþer þat wore conuerted,
 ande broghte hem worde, what kynnes¹⁰ þinges¹¹ þo princes of
 24 prestes ande þo olde men hade vnto hem saide¹². Whanne
 þei hit harde, þei lifte¹³ vppe þer voyce togider alle to God¹⁴,
 ande saide, Lorde, þow þat madeste heuen ande erþe, þe see
 25 ande alle þat in hem are¹⁵: þat þurghe þo Holigoste, bi þo¹⁶
 mowþe of oure fadire Dauid, þi childe¹⁷, þow saideste, Whi
 gruccched þo folke, ande þo puple þoghte vayn þinges?
 26 Kenges of erþe stoden togider, ande princes komen alle in
 27 one agayns oure¹⁸ Lorde ande agayns hise Criste: þei komen
 togider soþely in þis cyte agaynes þi¹⁹ holy childe Iesu, þat
 þow ennoyntedeste, Herowde ande Pounce Pilate wiþ meny²⁰
 28 ande folke of Israel²¹, to do þat þi honde ande þi cownseile
 29 discryued²² (þat es, ordeynde) to be done²³. Ande nowe, Lorde,
 biholde vnto²⁴ þer þretynge, ande grawnte þi seruantes wiþ
 30 alle faiþefulnes to speke þi worde, in þat þow putte forþe þi
 honde; hele²⁵, merueiles²⁶ ande wondures to²⁷ be done for²⁸
 31 þo holy name of þi sone Iesu. Ande whanne þei hade

¹ fol. 91^b S. ² ne S.P.D. & C. ³ in S.P. fol. 23^b C. ⁴ to S.P.D.

⁵ is in the margin, C. ⁶ om. S.P.D. *Vulg.* Annorum enim erat
amplius quadraginta homo. ⁷ þat S.P.D. ⁸ manere S.P.D.

⁹ þing S.P.D. ¹⁰ seyd to hem S.P.D. ¹¹ hyed S.P.D. ¹² to god
alle togÿdere S.P.D. ¹³ ben S.P. bup D. ¹⁴ þi childe om. P.

to þi children S.D, with to...ren dotted out in darker ink, S. *Vulg.* per os
patris nostri David, pueri tui. ¹⁵ fol. 24 C. ¹⁶ þe S.P.D. ¹⁷ gentyles
S.P.; in S in late hand on erasure. ¹⁸ fol. 92 S. ¹⁹ descryueþ S.

destriueþ P. ²⁰⁻²⁰ underlined in S. ²¹ to helynges S.P.D. ²² & m. S.P.D.

²³ om. S.P.D. ²⁴ by S.P.D.

preyde, þo place þat þei wore inne was stired¹, ande alle wore fulfilled of² þe Holigoste. þei³ spaken þanne Goddes worde⁴ wiþ faiþfulnes. O hertte ande o soule (þat es, o 32 wille) hade alle þat puple þat troweden⁶ togider⁵. Ne none of hem þat any þinge hade saide hit⁷ was his, bot wore⁸ in comun vnto⁹ hem alle. Ande wiþ grete vertewe þo apostul[s]¹⁰ 33 bare witnes of þo¹¹ vprisinge of oure Lorde Iesu Criste: ande grete grace was in hem alle. Ne was þer none nedy amonges 34 hem: als many possessioners as þer wore of houses or of feldes solden hem, ande broghte þo price of hem þat þei solde, ande putte hit bifore¹² þo fete of þo apostuls: [& soþly 35 it was departed to ichone after þei had nede. Ioseph, þat 36 hade his sorname knownen of þe apostuls]¹³, Barsabas¹⁴—þat bitokens, sone of comforþe—he hade a felde, ande solde hit, 37 ande broghte þo price, ande laide bifore þo apostuls¹⁵ fete¹⁶.

Soþely a man þat hatte¹⁷ Ananyas, ande hise wife Saphira, 1 5 solden a felde¹⁸, and wiþ þo¹⁹ konseile of hise wife²⁰ wiþhelde 2 a party of þo price, ande þo remnante broghte ande layde bifore þo apostuls²¹ fete. Ande Peter saide to hym, Anany, 3 whi tempted Sathanas þi herte, þow forto⁹ lyghe vnto⁹ þo Holigoste, ande forto defraude of þo price of þo felde? Ne 4 was hit dwellande vnto⁹ þiseluen, ande þo sale was in þine owne power? Whi puttest þou þis dede in þine herte? þow ne haues noghte lyed to man²² bot to God²³. Soþely 5 whanne Ananyas hade harde þise wordes, he felle downe & dyed: ande grete drede was þer þanne amonge alle þat harde þeroffe. Thanne ȝonge men ros²⁴ vppe, ande bare hym 6 away ande biried hym. Efter-worde, as hit were þo space of 7 þre houres, hise wife enterd inne, ande wiste not what was done. Ande soþely Peter ansuered vnto⁹ hire, Say me, þow 8

¹ meuyd S.P.D. ² wiþ S.P.D. ³ & þei S.P.D. ⁴ þe word of god
S.P.D. ⁵⁻⁵ underlined in S.P. ⁶ trowen P. ⁷ þt it S.P.D.
⁸ þei were S.P.D. ⁹ to S.P.D. ¹⁰ apostuls S.P.D. ¹¹ om. S.P.D.
¹² fol. 24^b C. ¹³ thus in S.P.D. om. C. ¹⁴ Barnabas S.P.D. ¹⁵ postuls P.
¹⁶ Capitulum quintum follows; C^m 5 in the margin, C. V chape on erasure, S.
¹⁷ hyȝte S.P.D. ¹⁸ a felde repeated in the margin, 1st corr. S. ¹⁹ om. P.
²⁰ fol. 92^b S. ²¹ postuls S. ²² men S.P. ²³ Thus the order of S.P.D.
to god bot to man C. ²⁴ reysen S.P., in S on erasure, 1st corrector's hand.

womman, solde þe þo felde of¹ þat price? Ande sche²
 9 saide, ȝhe, of þat price. Ande soþely Peter saide vnto³ hire,
 Wharto þoghte ȝhe hit accordande to ȝowe forto³ tempte þo
 10 Holygoste of God? Loo þo⁴ fete of hem þat biried þine
 11 howsebande at þo dore, ande schal bere forþe þe. Ande⁵
 alsfaste sche² felle downe atte hise fete ande dyed: þo ȝonge
 men enterd inne ande fonde hire dead, ande toke hire vppe,
 12 ande biried⁶ hire biside hire husbande. Ande þanne þer was
 grete drede in alle holy chirche, ande in alle þat hit harde.
 13 Bi⁷ þo hondes soþely of⁸ þo apostuls were done many tokens
 ande merueyls in þo folke; ande þei wore alle togider in
 14 Salomons porte. Soþely of alle þo toþer none durste ioyn
 hem vnto hem, bot myche þo puple hem praysed. þo multi-
 tude of hem þat preyde⁹ wexe euer more ande more, boþe of
 15 men ande wymmen; so þat þei hade oute þo¹⁰ seke into þe
 feldes¹¹ ande laide hem in þer couches ande in þer beddes
 in þo felde, þat whanne Peter kome, at þo leste his schadowe
 myghte ouer-schine¹² iche of hem, ande so be deliuerde of þer
 16 sekenes. Soþely þo multitude of neghburs¹³ of þo cite runnen
 togider in Ierusalem, berande þe seke, ande hem þat wore
 traueiled wiþ vnclene spirittes, þo whiche alle wore helud.
 17 Thanne soþely þo prince of prestes¹⁴ rose vppe, ande alle þat
 wiþ hem wore, þo whiche es heresie of Saduceys (þat wore
 18 religiowse)¹⁵, ande wore fulfilled of enuy ande trecchery, ande
 layde hondes vpon þo apostuls, ande putte¹⁶ hem into¹⁷ a
 19 komun holde þat opunly was knowne. Ande soþely onne¹⁷
 þo nyghte one of Goddes awngels opunde þo ȝhates of þo
 20 prisone, ande ledde hem oute, ande saide, Gos, ande stondes
 in þo temple, ande spekes vnto³ þo puple alle þo wordes of þis
 21 life. Ande¹⁸ whanne þei hade herde þis, þei enterde in þo
 mornynge¹⁹ into þo temple, ande tawghte²⁰. Whanne þo prince
 of prestes harde þis, ande þoo²¹ þat wore wiþ hym, þei called²²

¹ for S.P.D. ² ȝhe S.P. ³ to S.P.D. ⁴ fol. 25 C. ⁵ om. S.P.D.

⁶ beyried P. ⁷ nota in the margin, S. ⁸ fol. 93 S. ⁹ trowed S.P.D.

Vulg. credentium in Domino multitudo. ¹⁰ of þo S.P. ¹¹ stretis

S.P.D. ¹² ouerschadwe S.P. with *adw* on erasure in S. ¹³ *Vulg.*

multitudo vicinarum civitatum. ¹⁴ prestes in the margin, 1st corr. S.

¹⁵ gloss underlined, S.P. ¹⁶ fol. 25^b C. ¹⁷ in S.P.D. ¹⁸ om. S.D.

¹⁹ morwynge P. ²⁰ fol. 93^b S. ²¹ þei S.P. ²² cleped S.P.D.

togider a konseile, ande alle þo eldeste men of þo sons of Israel, ande sende vnto¹ þo prisone to bringe þo apostuls² to hem. Ande whanne þo mynistres soþely kome ande opunde 22 þo prisone, þei fonde hem noghte. Bot turned agayne ande tolde þo prince how þat hit was, ande saide, Forsoþe þo 23 prisone we fonde faste sparred³ as hit was lefte, ande þo kepars stondinge at þo zhates: þei opunde þo prisone, ande no man fonde we þerinne. Whanne þo maistres of þo temple 24 ande þo princes⁴ of⁵ prestes herde þise wordes, þei vniþoghten⁶ hem, ande spake togider what was forto¹ do of hem. Ande þo⁷ whiles þer kome one ande broghte worde vnto¹ 25 hem, how þoo men þat þei putte in prisone ben in þo temple, ande ⁸stonden ande techen⁹ þo puple. Thanne ȝode 26 þo mayster wiþ his mynistres, ande ladde hem forþe wiþouten strenkþe: þei dredde þo puple, ⁹in auenture þat⁹ þei wolde stone hem. Ande whanne þei hade ledde hem forþe, 27 þei toke hem in a¹⁰ kownseyl. Ande þo prince of prestes asched hem, ande saide, Wiþ comandmente we¹¹ bid ȝowe, þat 28 ȝhe ne teche noghte in þis name. Ande lo, ȝhe hafe fulfilled Ierusalem wiþ ȝoure techinge, ande ȝhe wil putte vpon vs þo blode of þis man (þat es, þo deþe of Criste). ¹²Peter ande þo 29 apostuls¹² ansuerde ande saide, More hit¹³ bihones vs¹⁴ to¹³ be buxum vnto¹ God þanne to men¹⁵. God of ȝoure¹⁶ faders 30 raised Iesu vnto¹ lyfe, whom þat ȝhe slowen, hongande¹⁷ hym vpon a crosse. Hym has God highed, ande made hym a 31 prince ande sauyoure þurghe his righte honde, to gife penaunce vnto¹ hem of Israel, ande forgiþnes of þer synnes. Ande we 32 ben witnes¹⁸ of þise wordes; ande þo Holygoste whom God haues gifen vnto¹ alle þat¹⁹ to hym ben buxum. Whanne 33 þat þei harde þis, þei ymagynde ande þoþte in þer hertes to slee hem. Ande soþely a Pharisew ros vp in þo kownseile, 34

¹ to S.P.D. ² postuls S.P.D. ³ closed S.P.D. ⁴ prynce S.P.D.

⁵ of þe S.P.D. ⁶ byþouȝte S.P.D. ⁷ þer S.P. ⁸⁻⁹ stondynge & techynge S.P. ¹⁰ om. S.P. ¹¹ i comaundede P., in S. on erasure with nota in the margin. ¹²⁻¹² Petur & Ion S.P.

¹³ om. S.P.D. ¹⁴ us behueþ S.P.D. ¹⁵ man S.P.D. ¹⁶ the ȝ

erased in S. ȝoure P. ¹⁷ fol. 94 S. ¹⁸ witnessis S.P.D. ¹⁹ þt byleueþ

or beþ buxum to hym S.P.D. *Vulg.* omnibus obedientibus sibi.

whos name was Gamaliel, a doctour of þo lawe, worschipful¹ vnto² alle³ folke. He comanded þat þe apostuls schulde 35 gange⁴ oute a lytel, ande saide þanne vnto² hem þat wore gadurd þere, Men⁵ of Israel, take hede vnto² ȝowreseluen, of 36 þise men whatte ȝhe þinke to do. Bifore þise dais Theodas saide þat he was hymseluen grête; vnto⁶ whom assented folke, þo noumbrē of men abouten foure hundreþe⁷: þo whiche was slayne; ande alle þat to hym trowed wore disarpulde (þat es, wore⁸ spred obrode⁹ ande¹⁰ destroide) ande¹¹ worþed¹² 37 vnto² noghte. After hym was þer an-oþer, Iudas of Galilee, in þo dais of profescion¹³, ande myche puple he efter hym turned: and he¹⁴ perisched¹⁵; and als many as vnto hym 38 assented¹⁶ wore sparpulde o-brode. Ande nowe þerfore I say vnto ȝowe, Departes away fro þise men, ande suffers hem: for if þis conseile ande þis dede þat þei do be of man, hit 39 schal be vndone & worþe vnto² noghte: ande soþely¹⁷ if hit be of God, ȝhe schul noghte mowe vndo hem, bot suffure hem, in auenture þat ȝhe be not fownden fightande agayn God. 40 Forsoþe þei assented, ande called¹⁸ þo apostuls¹⁹ vnto² hem²⁰, ande komawnded hem, þat²¹ þei schulde nomore speke in 41 Iesu name, ande lete hem wende þer way. Ande þei forsoþe ȝode ioyande oute of þo sighte of þo cownseile, for þat þei wore made worþi to suffur strife ande²² schame for þo name of 42 Iesu. Soþely euery day in þo temple &²³ abowte howses þei cessed noghte of techinge ande prechinge of Iesu Criste²⁴.

6 1 Soþely²⁵ in þo dais gretely wexe þo noumbure of þer disciples, ande was made a murmour²⁶ ande a grucchinge of þo Grekes agaynes hem of Ebrewe, for þat þer widowes wore

¹ and (om. S) a w. man S.P.D. ² to S.P.D. ³ alle þe puple S.P.D.

Vulg. homines. ⁴ goo S.P. ⁵ fol. 26^b C. ⁶ to SP. ⁷ hundrud S.P.D.

⁸ om. D.S.P. *dispair* follows, dotted out, C. ⁹ the r has a mark of abbreviation for e, C. ¹⁰ ande es C. ¹¹ es follows, S.P.C.D.

¹² worþe S.P.D. ¹³ touched up in a later hand, C. ¹⁴ and h· on erasure in a later hand, C. ¹⁵ preached D. ¹⁶ as sentyd to hym S.P.D. ¹⁷ fol. 94^b S.

¹⁸ clepid S.P. ¹⁹ postuls S.D. ²⁰ & beden hem follows here, P. & beten hem in the margin, 1st corrector's hand, S. ²¹ om. S.P.D.

²² strife ande om. S.P. In S there is, however, an erasure of circa 4 letters after suffre. ²³ fol. 27 C. ²⁴ Epistola sequitur follows, C. ²⁵ Cm 6 in the margin, C. VI Chap' in a late xvith century hand, S. ²⁶ muruil (?) D.

despiced in þo iche daye seruice. Ande þanne¹ called² 2
togider twelue³ þo nowmbur offe þo apostuls ande þo
disciples⁴, ande saide þus vnto⁵ hem, It es noghte righte⁶
þat we schul leue þo worde of God⁷ ande serue vnto⁸ þo
bordes (þat es, atte þo mete). Ande þerfore lokes amonge 3
ȝowe, breþer, seuen gode men offe testymony ande wytnes, þo
whiche ben ful of þo Holigoste ande wisdome, whom we schul
ordeyne forto do þis bisines ande þis warke. For we wole 4
holde vs in preyer ande in Goddes worde. Ande þis worde 5
was plesinge⁹ vnto¹⁰ alle þo multitude¹¹, ande gladde were [þei]
þer-offe. Ande þei ches Steuen, a man fulle of þo Holigoste
ande trewe in þo faiþe, ande Philip, ande Prochorum,
ande Nichanore, ande Tymothewe¹², ande Pernyenam¹³, ande
Nicholas þat was komen fro Antiochen; þise þei sette bifore 6
þo sighte of þo apostuls, & made þer preyers, ande laide alle
¹²þer hende vpon hem¹². Ande Goddes worde wexe; ande 7
gretely¹³ was þo nowmbur of disciples waxen in Ierusalem.
Grete company alssو of prestes bowden vnto⁵ þe faiþe. Steuen, 8
gostely¹⁴ fulle of grace ande strenkþe, did many merueyles
ande wondurs amonge þo puple. Summe soþely of þo 9
synagogue risen¹⁵ vppe, þat was¹⁶ of Lybertynes, ande of
Sirenences, ande of Alysaawndur, ande of hem þat wore of
Cilyce ande of Asye, disputande wiþ Steuen. Ande þei 10
myghte noghte wiþtonde his wytte ande þo spiritte þat
wiþinne hym spake. Thanne sende þei wiþ tresone men þat 11
schulde saye, ¹⁷þat þei harde hym saye¹⁷ wordes of blaspheme
of Moyses & of God. Þei stired ande¹⁸ moued alssو þo puple, 12
& þo olde men, ande þo wise, ande ran togider, ande token
hym, ande ledden hym into¹⁹ kownseyl; ande sette²⁰ agayns 13
hym þo fals witnes, sayande, þis man cesses noghte to speke
wordes agayne holy place ande þo lawe: soþely we harde 14

¹ soþly S.P.D. ² þei cleped S.P. ³ of hem follows, S.P.D.

⁴ ande þo disciples om. S.P.D. *Vulg.* Convocantes autem duodecim multitudinem discipulorum. ⁵ to S.P.D. ⁶ leſful S.P.D. ⁷ of god in the margin, C.

⁸ plesaunt S.P.D. ⁹ fol. 95 S. ¹⁰ tymome S.P.D.

¹¹ parmanam S.P.D. ¹²⁻¹² upon hem (here D) hond S.P.D. ¹³ fol. 27^b C.

¹⁴ soþly S.P.D. ¹⁵ ros S.P.D. ¹⁶ were S.P.D. ¹⁷⁻¹⁷ om. S.P.D.

¹⁸ stirred ande om. S.P.D. ¹⁹ into a S.P.D. ²⁰ þei sette S.P.D.

hym saye, þat he þis Iesus of Nazareth schal¹ destroye þis place, ande schal turne oure lawes² þat Moyses gafe vnto³ vs.
 15 Ande þei bihelde vpon hym alle þat in þo konseyl satte; þei sawe hise face as hit wore þe face of an awngel amonges hem⁴.

7 1 þo⁵ prince⁶ of þo prestes saide vnto⁷ Steuen, Es þis þinge 2 soþe⁸ þat þise men sayne⁸? Ande he⁹ ansuered ande⁸ saide, 3 he⁹ men, my¹⁰ breþer ande faders, heres ande vndurstondes. God of ioye appered vnto⁷ Abraham oure¹¹ fadire, whanne he was in Mesapotany, bifore þat he schulde dye in Charre, ande 3 saide vnto⁷ hym, Gange oute of þi londe, ande oute of þi knowynge, ande kome into þat londe þat I schal schewe vnto³ 4 þe. Thanne¹² wente he oute of þo londe of Caldey, ande dwelled in Charram: ande þeþen¹³, efter¹⁴ his fader was deade, he kome into þis londe, ⁸ande caried hise fader hidre⁸, where¹⁵ 5 þat ȝhe¹⁶ dwelle nowe. Ande he gafe hym þerinne none heritage, nor¹⁷ o fote of erthe, ande¹⁸ he bihette forto gife hit vnto³ hym into¹⁸ hise³ possessione, ande til⁷ hise sede efter 6 hym, whanne þat he hade no sone. Soþely God saide¹⁹ vnto⁷ hym, þat hise sede schal hafe a wonynge [in]²⁰ anoþer londe, ande he²¹ schal make hem subgette to hise²² service, ande 7 yuel he²¹ schal lede hem foure hundreþe ȝhere²³. Ande [þat folk to whom þei schal serue I schal iwge, sais God]²⁴; ande after þat þei schul wende heþen²⁵ ande serue me in þis 8 place. Ande he gafe vnto⁷ hym þo testamente²⁶ of circum- sicion: ande so he gate Isaac, ande circumsiced hym þo eghetod²⁷ daye; and Isaac Iacob, ande Iacob þo twelue

¹ fol. 95^b S. ² lawe & tradicyons S.P.D. ³ om. S.P.D. ⁴ amonges hem om. S.P.D. Epistola follows, C. ⁵ C^m vii in the margin, C. a S.P.

⁶ princes C. ⁷ to S.P.D. ⁸⁻⁸ om. S.P.D. ⁹ Chapter vii.

begins here with new paragraph and initial, S.P.D. ¹⁰ my dotted out, S. om. P.

¹¹ ȝoure C.D. ¹² þan he S.P.; in S. on erasure; he om. D.

¹³ þenne S.D. þanne P. ¹⁴ whan follows S.P.D. ¹⁵ in whuche S.P.D.

¹⁶ he S.P.D. ¹⁷ ne S.P.D. ¹⁸ in S.P.D. ¹⁹ spak S.P.D.

²⁰ S.P.D. ande C. ²¹ þei P, in a later hand on erasure, S. ²² her

P, er on erasure, S. ²³ and xxx follows, S.P.D. Vulg. et servituti

eos subjiciunt, et male tractabunt eos annis quadringtonitis. ²⁴ thus

in P, on erasure in 1st corrector's hand, S. I schal schewe, saide God, to

what folke þei schul serue vnto C.D. Vulg. et gentem cui servierint, judicabo

ego, dixit Dominus. ²⁵ þenne S.P.D. ²⁶ fol. 96 S. ²⁷ eyȝteþe S.P.D.

patriarches. Ande þo¹ patriarches haden enuye vnto Ioseph, 9
 ande solde hym into Egipte: ande God² was wiþ hym, ande to
 hym delyuerde of alle hise tribulaciones, ande gafe hym grace
 ande wisdome in Pharaos sighte, þo kenge of Egipte; ande
 made hym guernoure ande prouoste ouer Egipte ande ouer
 alle hise howse. Bot soþely þer kome þanne a³ hungur in 11
 alle Egipte ande Canaan [ande]⁴ grete tribulacyone; ande
 ȝoure fadres fonde no mete. Whanne Iacob harde þat whete 12
 was in Egipte, he sende firste oure fadres. Ande þe⁵ secunde 13
 sonde he⁶ was knownen, Ioseph, of hise breþer, ande he schewed
 his kynreden vnto Pharao. Ande Ioseph sende efter his 14
 fader, ande alle hise knowynge. Ande Iacob so kome into 15
 Egipte; ande he es deade, ande oure fadres; ande þei ben 16
 translated into Sichem, ande putte in þo⁷ sepulcur þat
 Abraham boghte wiþ price of siluer of þo sons of Emor,
 Sychem sons. Soþely whanne þo tyme of biheste come 17
 nerehande⁸, þat God tolde vnto⁹ Abraham, þo puple wexe
 ande multiplied in Egipte, vnto⁹ þo tyme þat an-oþer kenige 18
 was þerinne¹⁰, þat¹¹ knewe noghte Ioseph. He þis ouerȝode 19
 oure kynreden, ande tourmented oure fadres, ande ordeynde
 þat of oure ȝonge childer þat were þanne¹² borne, þo¹³ knaue-
 childe schulde not¹⁴ life. Þo same tyme was Moises borne, & 20
 plesinge vnto God; þo whiche þree moneþes was norysched¹⁵
 in hise owne fader howse: ande soþely he was putte forþe 21
 into þo flode, ande Pharaos doghter toke hym vppe, ande¹⁶
 norysched hym as hit wore hire sone. Ande Moyses was 22
 lerned¹⁷ of alle þo witte of Egipte; ande he was myghty in
 wordes ande in hise dedes. Whanne hise tyme was fulfilled 23
 vnto⁹ fourty¹⁸ ȝhere, hit felle in hise hertte þat he wolde visite
 hise frendes, hise breþer¹⁹ of Israel. Ande whanne þat²⁰ he sawe 24
 one of hise kynne suffer grete wronge, he venged hym, ande
 wreked hym þat wronge suffurde, ande smote hym offe

¹ fol. 28^b C. ² in a later hand in the margin, S. om. P. ³ an S.P.

⁴ S.P.D. ⁵ in þe S.P.D. ⁶ Ioseph S.P.D. ⁷ om. S.P.D.

⁸ nyȝhonde S.P.D. ⁹ to S.P.D. ¹⁰ in egypte S.P.D. ¹¹ & þt S.P.D.

¹² fol. 96^b S. ¹³ no S.P.D. ¹⁴ fol. 29. not on erasure in a
 different hand, C. om. S.P.D. ¹⁵ & he was nursched þre monþes S.P.D.

¹⁶ & sche S.D. & ȝhe P. ¹⁷ tauȝte S.P.D. ¹⁸ þrity S.P.D. Vulg.
 quadraginta. ¹⁹ þe children follows, S.P. ²⁰ om. P.

25 Egipte: he wende hise breþer schulde haue vndurstonden,
 þat God þurhise hende schulde gife hele vnto¹ hem; ande
 26 þei vnderstode² hit noghte. Soþely þo secunde daye he
 appered vnto¹ hem striuande, ande reconseilde hem into pees,
 ande sayde, Men, ȝhe ben breþer; wharto noys eyþer of ȝowe
 27 oþer? Soþely he þat did þe wronge vnto¹ hise broþer, putte
 hym agayne, and saide, Who ordeynde þe prince or iustice
 28 ouer vs? Pow³ wilte noghte⁴ slee me, as þow ȝesterday
 29 dideste þo man of Egipte? Atte þis worde Moises fledde,
 ande was made a komelynge in þo lande of Madian, where
 30 he gate twey⁵ sons. Ande whanne fourty ȝhere wore ful-
 filled⁶, an awngel appered vnto¹ hym in þo deserte of mounte
 31 Synaye in flaumbe of fire in þo buske. Moyses, whanne he
 hit sawe, of þat sighte he was awondurde: ande as he ȝode
 nerre forto biholde þerto, þo voyce of God spake vnto¹ hym
 32 ande saide, I am þo God of þi fadres, God of Abraham, of⁷
 Isaac ande of⁷ Iacob. Moyses þanne trembulde ande durste
 33 nomore biholde. God soþely saide vnto¹ hym, Lowse⁸ þo⁹
 schone of þi fete: þo place es holy þat þou stondes ynne.
 34 Biholdande I sawe þo affliccione of my folke þat es in Egipte,
 ande þaire sorowynge I harde, ande I kome downe hem to
 delyuer: ande kome nowe, ande I schal sende þe into Egipte.
 35 þis Moises whom þei denyed, ande saide, Who ordeynde þe
 prince ande domes-man ouer vs? hym God sende prince
 ande byare wiþ þo awngel honde þat in þo buske appered
 36 vnto¹ hym. He þis ledde hem oute, doande merueyles ande
 wondurs in þo lande of Egipte, ande in þo Rede See, ande in
 37 deserte fourty ȝhere. þis es Moises, þe whiche saide hit¹⁰
 vnto¹ þo childer of Israel, A prophete vnto¹ ȝowe God schal
 raise of ȝoure owne breþeren, ande luke ȝhe here hym reghte
 38 as ȝhe do me. He þis hit es þat was in þo chirche in wilder-
 nes wiþ þo awngel þat spake vnto¹¹ hym in þo mownte of
 Synay, ande with oure fadires: þo whiche toke þo wordes¹²
 39 offe life to gife vnto¹⁰ vs: to whom oure faders wolden noghte

¹ to S.P.D.² vndirstonde with *n* expunged, S.³ Wer precedes, P.wer þt in the margin, 1st corr. S. ⁴ om. P. crossed out, S. ⁵ fol. 97 S.⁶ fol. 29 C.⁷ god of S.P.D.⁸ louse with the *u* crossed out, S.⁹ þy P.D.¹⁰ om. S.P.D.¹¹ to S.P.D. fol. 30 C.¹² fol. 97^b S.

bowe, bot putte agayne [hym]¹, ande wore turned agayne in
 þer hertes vnto² Egipte, sayand vnto³ Aaron, Make vs goddes ⁴⁰
 þat may go bifore vs: he⁴ þis Moyses þat ledde vs oute of þo
 londe of Egipte, we woten noghte what es fallen vnto hym.
 Ande in þo dais þei made a kalfe, ande offurde⁵ offeringes to ⁴¹
 þo symulacre (þat es, vnto⁶ þo mawmete). Ande þei made
 ioye in þo warke⁷ of þer hende. Soþely God conuerted ande ⁴²
 toke hem to serue to þo kengedome of heuen: as hit es⁸
 writen in þo boke of þo prophetes, þow⁹, meny of Israel,
 sacrifice¹⁰ nor¹¹ offuringes offurde ȝhe none¹² vnto³ me fourty
 ȝere in deserte. Ande ȝhe toke þo dwellynge-stede of ⁴³
 Meloch ande þo sterne of ȝoure god Rempha, þat wore figures
 þat ȝhe made forto worschippe. Ande I schal transferre ȝowe
 into Babilony¹³. ȝo tabernacle of¹⁴ testimony was to ȝoure ⁴⁴
 fadire[s]¹⁵ in deserte, [as]¹⁶ God ordeynde, spekande vnto³
 Moises, þat⁶ he schulde make hit efter þo schappe of þat þat
 he sawe. þe whiche þei ledden in, [ande] oure faders [wiþ ⁴⁵
 Iesu broghten] into þo possession of gentiles, þo whiche God
 putte away fro þo face of oure¹⁷ faders vnto³ þo dais of Dauid, ⁴⁶
 þo whiche fonde grace bifore God, ande asched pat he myghte¹⁸
 finde a tabernacle vnto³ God of Iacob. Salomon soþely made ⁴⁷
 hym¹⁹ an²⁰ howse; bot he þat es alþerhigheste²¹ dwelles ⁴⁸
 noghte in þinges þat ben made wiþ hende; as he bi²² þo
 prophete sais, Heuen es vnto³ me a sege, erþe soþely a stool ⁴⁹
 vnto³ my fete: what howse schul²³ ȝhe⁶ make to me? sais²⁴
 oure Lorde, or whiche es þo place þat I schal reste inne?
 Ne made noghte my hende alle þise þinges? Harde- ^{50,51}
 frownted ande vncircumsised hertes ande eares, euer ȝhe han
 wiþstonden þo Holygoste: so as ȝoure faders did, so do ȝhe.

¹ hym P, in the margin, 1st corr. S. ² in to S.P.D. ³ to S.P.D.

⁴ soþly S.P.D. ⁵ offre S.P. ⁶ om. S.P.D. ⁷ werkes S.P.D.

⁸ in the margin, C. ⁹ þow dotted out with wher ȝe in the margin,
 1st corr. S. wher ȝe P. *Vulg.* numquid victimas et hostias obtulisti
 mihi. ¹⁰ sacrifices P; last s added in a later hand, S. ¹¹ or S.P.

¹² crossed out, S; om. P. ¹³ for þis þing follows, P, in the margin,
 1st corr. S. ¹⁴ testamente follows, C. ¹⁵ wiþ ȝoure fadrus D;

wiþ oure fadires S.P. ¹⁶ S.P.D.; of C. ¹⁷ ȝoure D; oure with the ȝ
 erased, S. ¹⁸ fol. 30^b C. ¹⁹ fol. 98 S. ²⁰ a S.P.D.

²¹ most h. S.P.D. ²² he bi om. S.P.D. ²³ ȝhe schul C; schulde S.P.D.

²⁴ oure louerd seyþ S.P.D.

52 For ȝoure fadirs, ne wore þei noghte pursewars of prophetes ?
 ande þei slowe hem þat schewed bifore of¹ þe komynge of þis
 rightwise man, of whom ȝe wore traytures ande manslears :
 53 ȝe þat token þo lawe þat schulde haue disposed ȝow vnto²
 54 awngels, ande ȝe kepped hit noghte. Ande³ whanne þei
 harden þis, þei saiden in þer hertes, ande gnaisted vpon⁴ hym
 55 wiþ þer teþe. So whanne Stheuen was ful of þo Holigoste,
 he bihelde vppe into heuen ande sawe þo ioye of God, ande
 Iesu stondande atte þo righte side of his fadire, ande saide,
 Lo, I see heuens⁵ opun, ande mannes sone stondande at þo
 56 righte side of þe vertewe of God. þei crierden þanne alle⁶
 lowde⁷ togider⁸, ⁹ande stopped þer eres, ande þei alle to-
 57 gider did lettyng vnto hym⁹; ande þanne¹⁰ þei cacched¹¹ hym
 oute of þo cytee, ande stoned hym : ande þe two¹² falsse
 wytnes¹³ did of hise cloþes biside þe fete of þo ȝonge man þat
 58 was¹⁴ called¹⁵ Saule. Ande þ[e]ji¹⁶ stoned Steuen, þat called¹⁴,
 59 ande saide, Iesu¹⁶, receyue my spiritt ; ande kneled downe
 vpon⁴ hise knees, ande cried wiþ a lowde⁷ voyce, & sais¹⁷,
 Lorde, sette noghte þis synne agaynes hem¹⁸. Ande whanne
 he hade saide þat, he rested hym in God, ande gafe vnto²
 heuen his goste. Soþely Saule was assentande vnto² his
 deþe.

8 1 Soþely þat daye was grete persecucion done in holy
 chirche þat was atte Ierusalem ; ande alle þei wore dis-
 parpulde ande wente isonder³ bi²⁰ þo kendames of Iurye
 ande Samary, outtaken þo apostuls þat dwelled stille in
 2 Ierusalem. Men²¹ ful dredfull biried saynte Steuen, ande
 3 made grete wepinge ande sorowe ouer hym. Saule forsoþe
 wastud holi chirche ande destroyde hit³, ande ȝode into
 howses, ande drowe oute men ande wymmen, ande putte hem
 4 into holde²². Ande þei þerfore þat wore spredde obrode ȝode

¹ of om. P. ² to S.P.D. ³ om. S.P.D. ⁴ on S.P.D. ⁵ heuene S.P.D.

⁶ alle þanne P. ⁷ longe S.P.D. ⁸ fol. 31 C. ⁹⁻¹⁰ om. S.P.D.

¹⁰ ladde S.P.D. ¹¹ þe two crossed out S. om. P. ¹² wytnessis S.P.D.

¹³ fol. 98^b S. ¹⁴ cleped SPD. ¹⁵ þoi C. ¹⁶ Lord Iesu S.P.D.

¹⁷ seyde S.P.D. ¹⁸ for þei knoweþ not what þei doþ follows, P, in the
 margin, 1st corr. S. ¹⁹ C^m 8 on erasure in the margin, C. þe viii chap^e
 in a late xvith century hand, S. ²⁰ into alle þe kyngdom S.P.D.

²¹ but precedes in a late hand, P. ²² holdes S.P.D.

prechande þo gospelle of God, how he was Goddes sone. Philippe ȝode into þo cyte of Samarye, ande preached Criste 5 vnto¹ hem. þo folke soþely gafe gode hede vnto¹ þo wordes 6 þat Philippe saide, herande hym holly togider ande alle wiþ o wille, ande bihelde vnto¹ þo wonders² ande³ tokens whiche þat he wroghte. Many soþely of hem þat haden in hem yuel 7 spirittes cryed⁴ wiþ grete voyce ande⁵ ȝode awaye oute of hem. Many þat haden þo palsy, ande alsoþat wornen crokude, 8 wornen maked alle hole. Ande þerfore⁶ was þer maked grete 9 ioye in þat cite. Symon soþely Magus⁷, þat was bifore in þat cite, made hymseluen⁸ grete as a⁹ god, ande many folke of Samarye hade he deceyued ande saide hem forsoþe þat he was a god: ande alle hym herkende, fro þo leeste vnto¹ þo meeste¹⁰, sayande, He þis es þo vertewe of God þat es called Mag[n]a¹¹. þei¹² gafe tente vnto¹² hym, wharfore longe tyme 11 wiþ hise fals craftes he made hem wode. Bot soþely whanne 12 þei schulde haue trowed vnto¹ Philippe, prechinge vnto¹ hem of þo kengdome of heuen in þo name of Iesu¹³, þere wore baptizied many men ande wymmen. 14 þanne trowed he þat 13 Symon¹⁴; ande 15 whanne he schulde be baptised, he drowe hym vnto¹ Philippe; ande¹⁵ whanne he sawe þo vertewes ande þo⁹ wondurs þat bi Philippe wore done, þerfore¹⁶ he was amerueylde wondurfully. Whan þo apostuls hade harde þat 14 Samary hade receyued Goddes worde, þei sende vnto¹ hem Peter ande Ioon. Ande whanne þei wore komen, þei preyed 15 for hem þat wore¹⁷ turned, þat þei myghte take þo Holygoste: ȝitte¹⁸ he kome¹⁹ noghite into iche of hem, bot only þei²⁰ wore 16 baptizied in þo name of Iesu, oure Lorde. þanne putten þei 17 þer hende vpon hem, ande þanne þei token þo Holygoste. Whanne þat Symon hade²¹ sene þat þurgh þo puttynge to²² 18 one²³ of þo apostuls²⁴ hende þo Holygoste was gifen vnto¹ hem,

¹ to S.P.D.² wordus S.P.³ fol. 31^b C.⁴ fol. 99 S.⁵ said follows, expunged, C. ⁶ þat follows, P. ⁷ symon magus repeated in marg., 1st corr. S.⁸ hym S.P.⁹ om. S.P.¹⁰ moste S.P.D.¹¹ magna P; S has *n* inserted later; *Maga* C.D. ¹²⁻¹² toke heede to S.P.D.¹³ Crist follows, S.P.D. ¹⁴⁻¹⁴ & þanne þ^t Symon byleued S.P. ¹⁵⁻¹⁵ om. S.P.¹⁶ þer of S.P.D. ¹⁷ komen expunged, follows, C. ¹⁸ ȝif P. ¹⁹ fol. 32 C.²⁰ þei þat S.P.D. ²¹ fol. 99^b S. ²² om. S.P.D. ²³ on S.P.D.²⁴ postelys S.P.

19 he profured hem money, ande saide, Haue þis, ande gife me
 þat power, þat whom¹ I putte vpon² my honde, he schal haue
 20 þo Holycoste. Ande Peter soþely ansuered hym³ & saide, þi
 money ande þi catelle be with þe in dampnacyon, for þow
 trow[ed]reste⁴ þat þe gifte of God wiþ money myghte be
 21 boghte. Neþer þow haueste parte ne lote in þis worde: for
 22 soþely þi⁵ hertte es noghte rightwise bifore God. Ande þer-
 fore do penaunce for þi wikkednes, ande preye þanne God, in
 auenture þat he wole⁶ forgife þe þis wikked þoghte of þine
 23 hertte. For soþely in galle of bitternes ande in bonde of
 24 wikkednes I see þat þow erte. þanne soþely Symon ansuered
 & saide, Preye ȝhe⁷ vnto⁸ God for me, þat none of alle⁹ þise
 25 falle vpon me whiche þat ȝhe haue sayde. Ande þei soþely
 witnessed ande spaken Goddes worde, ande ȝede vnto⁸ Ieru-
 salem agayne; ande [in]⁹ many kengedams of Samarytanes
 26¹⁰ tawghten þei ande¹⁰ preached. An aungel of¹¹ God vnto⁸
 Philippe saide¹², ande spake, Rise, ande wende to¹³ meridiane,
 vnto⁸ þo way þat gos downe fro Ierusalem into Gaȝam¹⁴, þat
 27 es a deserte place. Ande vppe he ros ande ȝede; ande þer
 he mette wiþ a man of Ethiopes, þat was a myghty man wiþ a¹⁵
 qweene of Candacis of Ethiopes, þo¹⁶ whiche was ouer alle hire
 tresure, ande was a geldynge þat hade hire in kepinge; he
 28 kome to worschippe ande forto⁸ preye in¹⁸ Ierusalem: ande
 he was turned agayne, sittande vpon¹⁷ hise charre, redande
 29 Ysay þo prophete. Ande þo spiritte sayde vnto⁸ Philippe,
 30 Kome nerre, ande ioyne þe to þis carte. Ande Philippe
 ranne þerto, ande harde hym redande Isaye þo prophete,
 ande he saide, Trowes þow, þat þow vndurstondes noghte þat
 31 þow redes? Ande he saide, How myghte I¹⁸, bot if any hade
 tawghte hit me? Ande he preyde Philippe, þat he wolde
 32 kome vppe ande sytte wiþ hym. þo place þat he redde¹⁹ of
 was þis in þat prophecye, As a schepe vnto⁸ þo slawghter²⁰

¹ whom so S.P.D. ² om. S.P.D. ³ hym answerde S.P.D. ⁴ S.P.D.;
 trowest C. ⁵ þin S.P.D. ⁶ wolde P. ⁷ om. S.P. ⁸ to S.P.D.
⁹ S.P.D. ¹⁰⁻¹⁰ om. S.P.D. ¹¹ fol. 32^b C.
¹² spak & seyde. ¹³ into S.P.D. ¹⁴ ȝ erased S; Gaȝam P. ¹⁵ þe S.P.D.
¹⁶ fol. 100 S. ¹⁷ on D. ¹⁸ vnderstonde follows, P. underston in marg.
 1st corr. S. ¹⁹ reode D. ²⁰ slawȝe P.

was he ledde, ande as a lombe bifore þo clippar¹ wiþouten voice, so he opunde not hise mowþe. In meknes he bare his dome awaye ande his rightwise vengeance: hise generacyone who schal hit telle? For his life² es taken awaye oute of³ erþe. þo geldynge ⁴ansuered agayne ande sayde vnto 33 Philyppe⁴, I preye þe, of what prophete sais he þis? of hym-seluen, or of an⁵-oþer? þanne soþely Philyppe tawghte 34 hym, ande declared, bigynnande atte þat place þat he redde of þo prophecye, ande tolde hym of Iesus. Ande þo⁶ whileste 36 þei kome⁷ by þo waye, þei kome vnto⁸ a water; ande ⁹þanne saide þo geldynge, Lo, here es water⁹, ande¹⁰ who schal lette me here to be baptised? Ande Philippe saide vnto⁸ hym, If 37 þow trowe wiþ alle þine hertte, hit es leffulle vnto¹¹ þe. Ande he¹² ansuered ande saide, I trowe þat Iesu Criste es 38 Goddes son. Ande he comawnded þo carte to stonde, & boþe he 39 þei ȝode downe into þo water, Philippe ande he¹³, ande þer he baptised hym¹⁴. Soþely whan þei wore wente vp oute¹⁵ of 39 þo water þo spirytte of God rauysched Philippe away; & after sawe he hym nomore. He ȝode soþely bi þo waye makande ioye. Ande Philippe was fownden soþely in Aþoto¹⁶, 40 þat was an-oþer cyte; ande þer he ȝode abowte prechande vnto⁸ alle¹⁷ cytes, tille¹⁸ he kome to Cesarye.

Saule¹⁹ alwaye þrette ande wayted Goddes discipuls; he 1 **9** kome vnto⁸ þo prince²⁰ of prestes, ande asched of hym pistels 2 ande comyssions into Damaske vnto⁸ þo synagoges, þat²¹ whomsoeuer he fonde of þo company of þe apostuls or hem-seluen, men or wymmen, to brynge hem bownden vnto⁸ Ierusalem. Ande as he ȝode þiderworde, hit bifelle²² þat he 3 kome nere²³ Damaske: ande sodenly þer come a wondurful

¹ For þo clippar S.P.D. have þat scheriþ hym. ² fol. 33 C. ³ of þe S.P.D. ⁴⁻⁵ answerde to phylyp & seyde S.P.D. ⁵ eny S.P.D. ⁶ whylis S.P. ⁷ ȝede S.P.D. ⁸ to S.P.D. ⁹⁻¹⁰ þe geldyng seyde lo her ys water at the bottom of the page, 1st corr. S. follows in the text, P. om. D. ¹⁰ om. S.P. ¹¹ fol. 100^b S. ¹² inserted above the line, S.P. ¹³ þe geldynge S.P. geld... on erasure in 1st corrector's hand, S. þe comelyng D. ¹⁴ in margin, C. ¹⁵ om. S.P.D. ¹⁶ a ȝoto with oto on erasure, S. a ȝate D. a gate P. ¹⁷ alle þe S.P.D. ¹⁸ fort S.D. ¹⁹ Cm 9m on erasure, C. þe ix chapter in a late hand, S. Paule D. In S. Saule with the S supplied by the 1st corr., the marginal letter indicating the initial is p. ²⁰ S.P.D.; princes C. ²¹ fol. 33^b C. ²² fel S.P.D. ²³ ny S.P.D.

4 lyghte alle aboute hym fro heuen, ande he felle downe vnto¹
 þo erþe, ande harde a voyce sayande vnto¹ hym, Saule, Saule,
 5 wherto purswes þow me? Ande he saide, Who erte þow,
 Lorde? Ande þo voyce saide vnto¹ hym, I am Iesus of
 Nazareth whom þat þow purswes: hit es ful² harde to þe
 6 to kese³ agayne þo prikke. Ande he qwakande ande dred-
 7 fulle saide, Lorde, what wilte þow þat I do? Ande oure
 Lorde saide vnto¹ hym, Rise, ande wende into þo cytee, ande
 þer hit schal be tolde þe, what þat *þe bus⁴ do. Soþely þo
 men þat wore sende wiþ hym stoden alle mased, a voyce
 8 soþely⁵ þei harde, bot no man þei sawe. Saule þanne soþely
 ros vppe fro þe erþe, opunde hise eyne, ande loked aboute⁶,
 bot no man⁷ he sawe. þei drowe hym forþe bi þo hende,
 9 ande ledde hym into Damaske; ande þer he was þree days
 10 wiþouten sighte ande noþer ete nor⁸ dranke. þer was a
 disciple in Damaske þat hatte Ananyas; ande God sayd to
 hym in vision, Anany. Ande he saide, Lo⁹, Lorde, I am
 11 here. Ande oure Lorde saide¹⁰ unto hym¹¹, Rise, ande wende
 vnto þo way¹² þat es called¹³ Rectus, ande seche Saule in
 Iudas¹⁴ howse, whos¹⁵ name es Tharsen: for lo, þer he preys;
 12 ande he sawe þo man þat hatte Anany enterande into þo
 howse, ande puttande hise hondes¹⁶ vnto¹ hym, þat he
 13 myghte receyue his syghte¹⁷. Ande Ananyas ansuered ande
 saide, Lorde¹⁸, I hafe harde of many of þis man, how many
 14 harmes he haues done vnto¹ þi sayntes in Ierusalem: ande
 he haues powere of þo princes of prestes to bynde alle hem
 15 þat ben þi name oknowe¹⁹. Ande soþely oure Lorde sayde
 vnto¹ hym, Go forþe, for he es maked vnto¹ me a vessel of
 choos²⁰ forto²¹ bere my name bifore kenges ande folke, ande
 16 bifore þo childer of Israel. Ande soþely I schalle schewe
 hym²² how many þinges hym bihoues for my name suffre²³.

¹ to S.P.D. ² om. S.P. ³ kyse D. kynse S.P. fol. 101 S.

⁴⁻⁵ þou byhoueþ to S.P. þe byhoueþ to D. ⁵ om. P. ⁶ loked aboute crossed
 out, S. om. P. ⁷ & no þing P. but no þing with þing on erasure in darker
 ink, S. ⁸ ne S.P.D. ⁹ fol. 34 C. ¹⁰ inserted by contemporary hand, C.

¹¹ vnto hym om. S.P.D. ¹² strete S.P.D. ¹³ clepyd S.P.D. ¹⁴ iewes P.

¹⁵ whas D. ¹⁶ honde S.P. ¹⁷ seyȝt in marg., 1st corr. S. ¹⁸ lo follows,

dotted out, C. ¹⁹⁻²⁰ þe clepen þi name S.P.D. ²⁰ choyse S.P.D. ²¹ fol. 101^b S.

²² to hym S.P.D. ²³ to precedes, P; in S. above the line in darker ink.

Ande Ananyas ȝode, ande enterde into þo howse, ande putte 17
 hise hondes vnto¹ hym, & sai[de]², Saule, broþer, oure Lorde
 Ihesus þat appered to þe in þo waye þat þow kome, sende me
 vnto¹ þe, þat þou haue þi syghte, ande be fulfilled of þo Holy
 Goste. Ande alssone³ þer felle fro his eyghne⁴ slyme as hit 18
 wore þo⁵ skales of a fische; & so he⁵ receyued his sighte,
 ande ros vppe, ande was baptizid; ande he was gretelyche 19
 comforþed⁶ whanne he hade taken mete. Ande þan soþely a
 fewe days he dwelled at Damaske wiþ þo disciples. Ande 20
 anone Poule ȝode into þo synagoges, ande preached Iesu þat
 he es verray Goddes sone. Ande alle þei wore ameruelde 21
 soþely þat hym harde, ande sayden, Ne was noghte he⁵ þis
 he þat in Ierusalem wiþstode hem þat wore þis name
 oknowe⁷? ande þerto he kome hider to lede hem bownden
 vnto⁸ þo princes of ⁹þo lawe þat ben prynces of⁹ prestes. 22
 Ande Poule myche þo⁵ more he encresched, ande confounded 22
 þo Iewes þat dwelden atte Damaske, wele affermande þat he
 was Criste. Ande whanne he hade þer many days fulfilled, 23
 þo Iewes token cownseyl hym forto¹⁰ slee: ande soþely þer 24
 deceytes wore tolde vnto⁸ Poule. Ande þei kepped þo ȝates
 boþe daye ande nyghte of þo cyte, to wayte hym forto slee;
 ande þo disciples token hym bi nyghte, ande leten hym downe 25
 bi þo walle in a bere-lepe. & soþely whanne he vnto⁸ Ieru- 26
 salem kome, he drowe hym towarde þo discipuls; ande alle
 þei wore of hym aferde, noghte knowande how he was Goddes
 discipul. Bot Barnabas soþely toke hym, ande ledde hym 27
⁹to þo disciples ande⁹ to þo apostuls¹¹, ande tolde hem alle⁵
 how in þo waye he hade sene Godde, ande how þat he spake
 wiþ hym, & how faiþefully¹² he hade done in Damaske in þo
 name of Iesu. Ande he was wiþ hem wendande in ande 28
 oute in Ierusalem, ande trewly doyng in þo name of Iesu.
 Ande vnto¹ þo gentyles he spake, ande disputed wiþ þo 29
 Grekes; & ¹³þei sogheten faste aboute hym forto slee¹³. & 30
 whanne þo breþer knewne þat, vpon¹⁴ þo nyȝte to Cesarye

¹ to S.P.D. ² & sai in marg. C. ³ a noon S.P.D. ⁴ eynghe C. ⁵ om. S.P.D. ⁶ fol. 34^b C. he omitted after whanne P.

⁷ a knowe S.P.D. ⁸ to S.P. ⁹⁻⁹ om. S.P.D. ¹⁰ fol. 102 S. ¹¹ postelus S.

¹² fol. 35 C. ¹³⁻¹³ þei soþly souȝte to slee hym S.P.D. ¹⁴ on S.P.D.

31 soþely þei hym ledde, ande sente hym vnto¹ Tharsum. þanne
 holy chirche þurhge alle þo Iurye ande Galyle ande Samarye
 hade pees, ande was gretely edified, wendande² in þo drede
 of God, ande was fulfilled in komforþe of þo Holygoste.
 32 Ande Peter, whanne he hade passed alle þo kontres abowte,
 ande schulde kome to þo holy folke³ þat wore dwellynge at
 33 Lydde, he fonde þer a man whos⁴ name was Eneam, þat fro
 34 he was eghete ȝhere olde hade lyne bedreden⁵. Ande Peter
 saide vnto¹ hym, Enea, oure Lorde Iesu Criste hele þe⁶, rise
 35 vppe fro þi bedde. Ande he anone rose⁷ vppe. & alle þei
 hym sawe þat atte Lydde dwelled⁸ ande Saron, þat wore
 36 conuerted vnto¹ God. In Ioppen forsoþe þer was a discipul,
 a womman þat hatte⁹ Tabita, þat propur name es Dorcas: þo
 whiche was ful¹⁰ of almes ande of gode dedes¹⁰ þat sche¹¹
 37 vnto¹ many dide. Ande¹² on a¹³ day hit bifelle, þat¹⁴ sche¹⁵
 wexe seke ande died. Whanne þei hire hade waschen, þei
 38 layde hire in þer¹⁶ halle. Ande soþely so as þat cyte Lydde
 was nere¹⁷ þo towne of Ioppen, þo disciples harden telle how
 Peter was þerynne; þei sende tweyne¹⁸ vnto hym, preyng
 hym noghte forto¹ dwelle, bot faste to kome vnto¹ hem.
 39 Ande saynte Peter ros vppe ande ȝode forþe wiþ hem. Ande
 whanne saynte¹⁴ Peter was komen, þei ledden hym into þo
 synacle¹⁹, ande alle þo wydowes stoden aboute hym ande
 wepped, ande schewed hym þo cloþes²⁰ ande þo kotes þat
 40 Dorcas hade hem made. Ande Peter maked hem alle forto
 wende forþe, ande he kneled downe ande preyed, ande turned
 hym vnto¹ þo deade body ande saide, Thabita²¹, surge (þat es,
 Thabita rise). Ande atte his worde sche¹¹ opund hire eyne;
 41 ande whan sche¹¹ sawe Peter sche¹¹ toke hym hire honde, ande
 he raised hire vppe. Ande þanne he called²² þo sayntes ande
 42 þo wydowes, & schewed hem þat sche¹¹ was on²³ lyue. Ande

¹ to S.P.D.² goynge S.P.D.³ folkes S.P.D.⁴ his S.P.D.⁵ on þe palysye follows, P.; in margin, 1st corr. S. ⁶ above the line, 1st corr. S.; om. D. ⁷ fol. 102^b S. ⁸ dwelled at ledde S.P.D. ⁹ hette S.D.¹⁰⁻¹⁰ of goode werkes & almes S.P.D. ¹¹ ȝhe P. ¹² & it in þo dayes byfell S.P.D. ¹³ fol. 35^b C. ¹⁴ om. S.P.D. ¹⁵ he D. ȝhe P.¹⁶ hire S.P.D. ¹⁷ nyȝ S.P.D. ¹⁸ twey men S.P.D. ¹⁹ halle S.P.D.²⁰ kootes & þe cloþes S.P.D. ²¹ thabyta surge underlined, S.P.²² clepid S.P.D. ²³ a S.P.

þat was tolde þurghe-oute Ioppen ; ande many þerfore trowed¹ in Iesu Criste.

[P]anne² Peter longe tyme ande manye dais efter dwelled³ 43 in Ioppen wiþ a⁴ man þat hatte⁵ Symonde, corueser. Ande⁶ i **10** þo whileste⁷ þer was a man in Cesarye þat hatte⁵ Cornelyus, centurio, a man þat was relygyowse ande dredande God wiþ 2 alle hise howsemeyne⁸, þat many almes vnto⁹ þo puple did ; ande euer preyande God. He þis sawe in visione¹⁰, as hit 3 wore þo nynte¹¹ houre of þo daye, þo awngel of God ¹²enterande in vnto hym¹², ande þus vnto⁹ hym he¹³ sayde, Cornely. Ande [he]¹⁴ loked vpon hym, ande wondurfully 4 was aferde, ande saide, Lorde, who erte þowe ? Ande þo awngel saide vnto⁹ hym, þi preyers ande þine almes-dedes ben steghne¹⁵ vppe ande¹⁶ ben hade in mynde in þo sighte of God. Ande sende now men vnto¹⁷ Ioppen, ande make þe 5 knowne wiþ Symonde, þat es called¹⁸ Peter, þat es harbarowed 6 atte Symons howse, þo curyoure¹⁹, whos²⁰ howse stondes biske þo see ; ande he schal teche þe what þe bihoues to do. Ande 7 whanne þo awngel was departud fro hym þat so vnto⁹ hym spake, he called¹⁸ tweyne of his owne howse þat wore homely wiþ hym, ande alssو a knyghte þat mykel dredde God, to be one of hem forto wende þat waye. Whanne he 8 hade tolde hem²¹ how hit was, he sende hem vnto⁹ Ioppen. þo²² toþer day þei ȝode þer waye ande kome nere²³ vnto⁹ þe²² 9 cyte. Saynte Peter wente²⁴ vppe abouen into þo howse forto saye hise preyers, aboute þo houre of myddaye. Ande efter **10** whanne hym hungred, he wolde²⁵ go vnto þo mete²⁵ ; þo whileste²⁶ þei dighte his mete in spiritte he was rauysched ; ande he sawe heuen opunde, ande a vessel kome þerfro, as **11**

¹ byleueden follows *Crist*, P ; in S. in marg. marked to be inserted after *Crist*. ² Whanne C. þanne S.P.D. **C 10** in margin, C. ³ hade dw.

C.S.P.D. ⁴ fol. 36 C. ⁵ hette S.P.D. ⁶ Chapter x begins here, S.P.D. ;

the x chapter in marg., in late xvith century hand, S. ⁷ whyles S.P.D.

⁸ fol. 103 S. ⁹ to S.P.D. ¹⁰ opunli in marg., marked to be inserted

after visyon, S ; follows in text, P. ¹¹ nyþe S.D. neyþe P. ¹²⁻¹² entrede into hym S.P.D. ¹³ om. S.P.D. ¹⁴ S.P.D. ¹⁵ steyzed S.P.D.

¹⁶ ande ben hade om. S.P.D. ¹⁷ into S.P.D. ¹⁸ clepid S.P.D.

¹⁹ corueser S.P. ²⁰ whas D. ²¹ fol. 36^b C. ²² þat S.P.D.

²³ ny S.P.D. ²⁴ ȝede S.P. ²⁵⁻²⁵ not (in marg.) go to m... expunged, S. ; not ete P. go to mete D. ²⁶ whyle S.P.D.

hit wore a grete schete, by þo foure korners laten downe from
 12 heuen vnto¹ erþe : in þo² whiche wore alle foure-fotud bestes
 13 ande nedders of erþe ande fowles of heuen. & a voyce from
 heuen kome vnto³ hym, ande sayde⁴, Rise, Peter, slee ande
 14 ete. Ande Peter soþely saide, God forbede, Lorde ; for neuer
 15 ȝitte I ete alle komune & vnclene (as who sey⁵, none suche
 bestes)⁶. Ande ete þo voyce saide vnto³ hym, þat at⁷ God
 16 has made clene, calle⁸ þow hit not comune⁹. Ande¹⁰ þis was
 17 þries done, & þo vessel taken agayne vppe into³ heuen. Ande
 þo while Peter mused in hymseluen what þis vision schulde
 be, þe¹⁰ whiche⁷ vnto³ hym [was]¹¹ schewed, þo men komen
 þat¹² wore sende from Cornelyo, ande spirde¹³ vnto³ Symondes
 18 house, ande stoden at þo ȝate ; ande called¹⁴ ynne ande asched
 if Symon, þat es called¹⁴ Peter, wore¹⁵ harbarowed atte þat
 19 place. Soþely as Peter was þenkande vpon¹⁶ his visione, þo
 20 spirit saide vnto⁸ hym, Loo, three men sechen þe. Rise vppe
 þerfore, ande go downe, ande wende forþe wiþ þem ; & be
 21 þow noghte aferde, for I þoo men sente¹⁷. Saynte Peter
 ȝode downe ande sayde vnto³ hem¹⁸, Lo, I am he whom þat
 ȝhe seche : what es þo cause wharfore þat ȝhe hider come ?
 22 þo whiche ansuered vnto hym, Cornelius centurio, a man þat
 es rightwise ande trewly dredes God ande has wytnes þeroffe
 alle þo folke of þo Iurye, an ansuere he hade of þo holy
 awngel forto sende efter þe ande brynge þe vnto³ his howse
 23 þi wordes forto here. Ande Peter ledde hem inne, ande he
 þem þer harbarowede ; ande vpon¹⁶ þo¹⁹ toþer daye roos ande
 ȝode forþe wiþ hem ; ande summe of his breþer ȝode fro
 24 Ioppen wiþ hym. & soþely þo¹⁹ toþer daye þei enterde into
 Cesarye²⁰. Soþely Cornelius gadure togider his knowne
 frendes ande²¹ hem þat nedfulle were vnto³ hym, aude abode
 25 Peter ande þoo²² þat wore wente [for]²³ hym. Ande so
 whanne Peter was kommen ande schulde enter into his howse,

¹ in to S.P.D. ² om. S.P.D. ³ to S.P.D. ⁴ fol. 103^b S. ⁵ seiþ S.P.
⁶ underlined, S.P.C. ⁷ þat S.P. ⁸ clepe S.P.D. ⁹ & vnclene follows, P.
 onclen in marg., 1st corr. S. ¹⁰ om. S.P. ¹¹ schulde be C. was S.P.D.
¹² fol. 37 C. ¹³ axsed S.P.D. ¹⁴ cleded S.P.D. ¹⁵ he in marg.,
 1st corr., marked to be inserted after were, S. ¹⁶ on S.P.D. ¹⁷ corrected
 to sende, 1st corr. S. ¹⁸ þe men S.P.D. ¹⁹ þat S.P. ²⁰ þat oper D.
²⁰ fol. 104 S. ²¹ fol. 37^b C. ²² hem S.P.D. ²³ S.P.D. wiþ C.

Cornelius kome agaynes hym, ande felle downe vnto¹ hise fete, ande worschipped hym. Ande Peter lyfte² hym vppe 26 ande saide, Rise, for I am a man as þow erte. Ande whanne 27 to-gider þei³ haden spoken, Peter ȝode ynne wiþ hym, ande fonde þer many þat wore komen togader: ande he sayde 28 vnto¹ hem, ȝhe wote how þat hit es loþely⁴ þinge a Iewe forto¹ haue comunyng⁵ togider or forto⁶ come vnto men of oþer nacyones⁷. Bot God schewed vnto me þat I schulde calle⁸ no man comune or⁹ vnclene: ande þerfore wiþouten 29 dowte I am comen vnto ȝowe. Ande þerfore I asche ȝowe for what cause sende ȝe efter¹⁰ me forto kome vnto ȝowe. Ande þanne Cornelius saide, Fro foure dais siþen¹¹ vnto þis 30 houre I haue fastud ande preyed in my howse; ande þo nynte¹² houre a man stode bifore me in¹³ a schynande white cloþinge, ande saide, Cornely, þi preyer es harde, ande þine 31 almes-dedus ben þoghte vpon [in]¹⁴ þo sighte of Godde. Sende 32 þerfore vnto¹⁵ Ioppen efter Symonde, þat es callud¹⁶ Peter; he es harbarowed in Symonde¹⁷ howse, þo¹⁸ curyoure, bi þo see. Ande þerfore als¹⁹ smertely I sente vnto þe; ande þow wele 33 dideste þat þow come vnto vs. Now þerfore we²⁰ alle ben here bifore þi sighte, forto¹ here alle þinges þat ben comawnded²¹ of God. Peter soþely²² opunde his mouþe ande²³ 34 saide, In soþefastenes I hafe fownde ande vndurstonden þat God es noghte outetaker of parsons: bot in alle folke þat 35 dredes hym ande dos rightwisenes, he acceptes ande receyues. He sente his worde vnto¹ þo childer of Israel, techande ande 36 schewande pees þurh Iesu Criste. He þis es Lorde soþely of alle. ȝhe knowe þat²⁴ þo worde²⁵ was made ande knownen bi 37 alle þo Iurye, bigynnande fro Galilee, efter þo bapteme þat

¹ to S.P.D. ² toke S.P.D. ³ þei in marg. C., follows whanne, S.P.D. ⁴ vnholi P; in S. with *vn* in marg. in a later hand. ⁵ commynge D. cōmyng with a second *m* inserted above the line, in a later hand, S. ⁶ om. S.P.D. ⁷ nacyon S.P.D. ⁸ clepe S.P.D. ⁹ ne S.P.D. ¹⁰ for S.P. ¹¹ henne S.P.D. ¹² nyþe S.D.; neyþe P. ¹³ & in S.P.D. ¹⁴ S.P.D. ¹⁵ into S.P.D. ¹⁶ cleded S.P.D. ¹⁷ symonys S.P.D. ¹⁸ howse þo om. S.P.D. ¹⁹ also S.P. alsmertely D. ²⁰ fol. 38 C. ²¹ þe follows, P.D. þe in marg., S. ²² opende soþly S.P.D. ²³ fol. 104^b S. ²⁴ þ^t þer with *r* in a later hand, S. ²⁵ a worde in marg. 1st corr. S., follows knownen, P.

38 saynte Iohn preached, Iesum fro Nazareth, how God ennoynted hym þurh þo Holygoste ande vertewe: þo whiche passed by, wele doande, ande helande alle þat¹ wore ouerlyne
 39 wiþ þo dewle. For wiþ hym was God. Ande we ben wytnes of alle þinges þat he did in þo Lewrye ande Ierusalem; whom
 40 þei slowe, hongande hym vpon a tree. Hym God raysed vnto² life þo þridde daye, ande made ³hym forto be sene (or gafe hym to be mayntende, þat es, opunly knownen þat he es
 41 risen agayne³), noghte vnto² alle folke, bot to wytnesses þat wore bifore ordeynd of God, vnto² vs þat eten ande dranke
 42 wiþ hym efter þat he was risen fro deþe. Ande he bade vs preche vnto² þo puple, ande bere wytnes: for he hit es þat
 43 of God es iustise of qwikke ande of deade. Vnto⁴ hym alle prophetes wytnesses beren⁵; bi þo name of hym alle men þat
 44 trowne in hym forto² take forgifnes of alle þer synnes. þo whileste⁶ Peter spake þise wordes, þo Holygoste fel vpon alle
 45 þat⁷ harde þo⁸ wordes. Ande wore awondurd þurh þo circumsicyon þo⁹ trewe folke þat komen wiþ Peter, for in nacyons þo grace was¹⁰ zotted oute of þo Holygoste (þat es, for
 46 þat oþer nacyons hade þo grace of þo Holygoste). þei harden
 47 hem forsoþe spekande langages ande preysande God. Thanne ansuered Peter, None may werne ne defende water, þat þise ben noghte baptised, þat han receyued þo Holygoste as we
 48 haue; ande comawnded hem forto² be baptized in þo name of Iesu Criste. Thanne þei preyed hym forto² dwelle þere summe days wiþ hem¹¹.

11 i. þo apostuls¹² harden ande conceyueden, & alssو þo breþer, þat þo gentiles hade receyued Goddes worde, ande wor-schipped God þeroffe. Whanne Peter was wente vppe agayne vnto² Ierusalem, þei þat wore circumsiced striuen wiþ 3 hym, ande saiden, Why zodeste þow vnto¹³ men þat hade þer circumsicyng¹⁴ (¹⁵þat es, whi zodeste þow wiþ hem þat haden þer prepucy¹⁵ ande wore noghte circumsiced¹⁶)? ande þow

1 in marg., S. 2 to S.P.D. 3-3 hym openly knownen þat he was
 rysen aȝeyn S.P.D. 4 fol. 38^b C. to S.P.D. 5 bere wytnes S.P.D.

6 whyles S.P.D. 7 þe P. 8 om. P. 9 of þe S.P.D. 10 fol. 105 S.

11 capitulum xi^m follows. C^m 11^m in marg., C. þe xi chap' in a xvith century hand, S.

12 postuls S.P.D. 13 in to S.P.D. 14 prepucyon S.P.

prepucium D. 15-15 om. S.P.D. 16 circumsydyd S.D.

eteste wiþ hem. Ande Peter biganne ande expowned vnto¹ 4
 hem bi ordur, ande saide, I was in þo cyte of Ioppen prey- 5
 ande: ande I² sawe, as I was rauisched in spirynt, a³ visione,
 a vessel comande downe, as hit hade ben a grete schete
 laten⁴ downe bi þo foure korners fro heuen, ande kome vnto¹
 me. Ande as I bihelde þer-inne, I sawe foure-fotud bestes of 6
 erthe & crepande wormes ande fowles of heuen. Ande soþely⁷
 I harde a voyce sayande to me, Rise, Peter, slee ande ete.
 Ande I saide agayne, Nay, Lorde, for alle vnclene þinge⁸ 8
 enturde noghte⁹ into my mowþe. Ande soþely þo voyce⁹
 ansuered þo secunde tyme, ande saide, þat at⁷ God haues
 clensed, say þow noghte hit es vnclene. ⁸Ande þat was 10
 thryes done⁸, ande alle were taken vppe into heuen. Ande 11
 als⁹ smertely three men stoden¹⁰ in þo howse þat I was inne,
 sende fro Cesarye vnto¹ me. Ande þo¹¹ Spiritte saide 12
 vnto¹ me þat I schulde go wiþ hem, no þinge dowtande.
 Soþely þer come wiþ me þise sexe breþer; ande we ȝode into
 þo mannes howse: ande he tolde vnto¹ vs how he hade sene 13
 þo awngel of God stondynge in his howse, ande sayande vnto¹
 hym, Sende into Ioppen to Symon, þat es called¹² Peter, forto
 come vnto þe; þo whiche schal speke¹³ wordes to þe, in þo 14
 whiche þow schalte be saued, þow ande alle þi meyne.
 Soþely whanne I biganne to speke, þo Holygoste come downe 15
 vpon hem, as he did vponne¹⁴ vs in þo bigynnyng. Forsoþe 16
 I vñþoghte¹⁵ me of¹⁶ þo wordes of oure Lorde, as¹⁷ he saide,
 Iohn forsoþe baptised wiþ water; ȝhe soþely schul be baptised
 wiþ þo Holygoste. þerfore if God haue gifen vnto¹ hym þo 17
 same grace þat he haues¹⁸ vnto¹ vs, þat trowed in Iesu Criste,
 whatte was I to werne oure Lorde forto¹ gife hem þo
 Holygoste? (As who say, how myghte I or schulde I²⁰
 warne God to gife vnto¹ hem þo Holygoste¹⁹, þat trowed in þo
 name of Iesu Criste.) Whanne þei hade harde¹¹ þis, þei 18
 helde hem stille, ande þanked God, ande saide, þerfore God

¹ to S.P.D. ² fol. 39 C. ³ in a S.P.D. ⁴ y laten S.P. i erased
 before laten, D. ⁵ comune þinge or vnclene S.P.D. ⁶ neuere S.P.D.

⁷ þat S.P. ⁸⁻⁸ & þanne soþly þis was don S.P.D. ⁹ also S.P.

¹⁰ fol. 105^b S. ¹¹ om. S.P. ¹² cleded S.P.D. ¹³ kepe S.P. ¹⁴ in S.P.D.

¹⁵ byþouȝte S.P.D. ¹⁶ on P. ¹⁷ fol. 39^b C. ¹⁸ haþ ȝeuen S.P.D.

¹⁹⁻¹⁹ underlined, S.P. ²⁰ om. S.P.D.

haues gifen vnto¹ þo gentiles penaunce to þo lyfe euer-
 19 lastande. Ande þei for certayne þat wore spredde obrode fro
 þo tribulacyone þat vndur² Steuen was done, ȝeden³ aboute
 20 to þei kome vnto¹ Fenys, ande to Ciprum, ande Antioche, to
 no man spekande worde bot onely vnto¹ þo Iewes. Soþely
 sumine of hem wore men of Cipri ande of Cirenys, þo whiche,
 whanne þei comen vnto Antioche⁴, þei speken vnto¹ þo
 21 gentiles, tellande ande schewande Ihesu Criste. Ande
 Goddes myghte was wiþ hem, ande myche noumbur of trow-
 22 ande⁵ was conuerted vnto¹ God. Soþely þo worde þeroffe
 come vnto¹ þo heryng of þo chirche, þat was in Ierusalem,
 of þise⁶ þinges: ande þei sende Barnabas vnto¹ Antioche.
 23 Whanne þat he come þider, ande⁷ sawe þo grace of God, he
 was ioyful; ande he excited hem alle to holde þer hertes
 24 stabul in þer purpos to God. For⁸ he was a gode man, ande
 fulle of þo Holygoste ande of⁹ faiþe: ande myche puple put
 25 hem vnto¹ God. After he ȝode to Tharsum forto seche
 Sawle; þo whiche, whanne þei¹⁰ haden hym fownden, he
 26 ledde hym vnto¹¹ Antioche. Ande alle a¹² hole ȝhere þei
 dwelled þore togider in¹³ chirche, ande tawghten myche puple;
 so þat þei wore knowne in alle Antioche for Cristes discipuls.
 27 Ande soþely in þise days þat þei þer wore, þer come prophetes
 28 fro Ierusalem vnto¹ Antioche. Ande one of hem, whos¹⁴
 name was Agabus, ros vppe, ande prophecyed or bitokende
 þurh spiritte a grete hunger þat was forto come þurh-oute
 alle þo worlde; þo whiche was done in þo⁹ tyme of Claudii.
 29 þo disciples, icheone forsoþe after þat þei haden, purposed to
 sende vnto¹ þer breþer, þat hit myghte serue hem þat wore
 30 dwellande atte¹⁵ Iude vnto¹ þer sustynaunce. Ande so þei
 diden, sendande hit vnto¹ þo eldeste by Barnabas ande Saule¹⁶.

12 1 þo same tyme sente Herowde þo kenge powere, summe¹⁷
 2 of holy chirche to tourmente. Soþely he slowe Iames, Jones¹⁸

¹ to S.P.D.

² om. P.

³ þei ȝeden S.P.D.

⁴ fol. 106 S.

⁵ þat trowede S.P.D.

⁶ om. S.P.

⁷ he S.P.

⁸ fol. 40 C.

⁹ om. S.P.D.

¹⁰ he had S.P.D.

¹¹ into S.P.D.

¹² an S.P.

¹³ in þe S.P.D.

¹⁴ whas D. whos with o on erasure, S.

¹⁵ in S.P.D.

¹⁶ Capitulum xii^m follows; in marg. C^m 12 C. y^e xii c^o in a xvith cent.

hand, S.

¹⁷ to turmente precedes in S.P.D.

¹⁸ Iames Jones in

different ink on erasure, C.

broþer, wiþ a swerde. He sawe¹ þat he myghte [so]² plese to ȝ
 þo Iewes. He sette forto³ take Peter⁴, ande⁵ whanne þat 4
 he⁶ hade hym taken, he sende hym into prisone, ande
 bitawghte⁷ hym to foure knyghtes forto⁸ kepe; for hit was
 lenten⁹ tyme, ande efter Paske wolde he lede hym forþe
 vnto⁹ þo puple. Ande Peter soþely was holden in prisone: 5
 soþely preyer was made for hym vnto⁹ God wiþouten
 cessynge of holy chirche. Forsoþe whanne þat Herowde 6
 schulde haue ledde hym forþe⁹, in þat nyghte before was
 Peter slepande bitwene twoo knyghtes, bownde wiþ twoo
 chenyes; ande kepars before þo ȝhates kepped þo prisone.
 Ande lo, þer stode by hym an awngel¹⁰, ande lyghteful 7
 schyned¹¹ in þo stede þer he was: he smote Peter vpon¹² þo
 side, ande stired¹³ hym & sayde, Rise vppe smertely. Ande
 þo chenyes felle of hise hende¹⁴. Ande soþely þo awngel 8
 saide vnto⁹ hym, Girde þe, ande do vpon¹² þi¹⁵ schone ande
 þine hoses. Ande so he did. & he⁶ sayde vnto⁹ hym, Keste
 þi cloþes aboute þe, ande folow me. Ande he ȝode oute, ande 9
 he folowed, ande wiste noghte þat hit was soþe þat þat⁵ was
 now⁵ done bi þo awngel: for he wende þat⁵ he hade ben in a
 visione. ȝei passed soþely þo firste ande þo secunde warde, 10
 ande komen vnto⁹ þo iren ȝhate þo whiche ledes vnto⁹ þo
 cyte, þat onone was opunde to hem: ande ȝei ȝode oute ande
 wente forþe into a way; ande þo awngel departed fro hym.
 Ande Peter turned hym vnto⁹ hymseluen, ande saide, Nowe 11
 wote I wele, þat God haues⁵ sende his awngel vnto⁹ me, ande
 delyuered me oute of þo power of Herowde, &¹⁶ fro alle þo
 abidyngre of þo puple of þe⁵ Iewrye. Ande¹⁷ he bihelde ande 12
 come vnto Maryes¹⁸ howse, þat was Ioones modure, þo whiche
 was knownen name Marcus, where þat many wore gadured
 togider, ande were preyande. Ande soþely whan he knokked¹⁹ 13
 at þo dore of þo ȝhate, þer come forþe a wenche þat hatte²⁰

¹ fol. 106^b S. ² S.P.D. ³ to S.P.D. ⁴ take peter repeated in marg.,
 1st corr. S. ⁵ om. S.P.D. ⁶ om. P. ⁷ bytooke S.P.D. ⁸ in l. S.P.D.

⁹ erasure of about 5 letters follows, C. ¹⁰ aungel of god S.P.D.

¹¹ schynynge S.P.D. ¹² on S.P.D. ¹³ meuede S.P.D. ¹⁴ hondis S.P.D.

¹⁵ þi hoses & þi schone S.P.D. ¹⁶ fol. 41 C. ¹⁷ fol. 107 S. ¹⁸ his
 expunged, S. ¹⁹ cnokkyng S.P. ²⁰ hyȝte S.P. hete D.

14 Rode, to loke who was þere. Ande whanne sche harde þo
 voyce of Peter, for ioy sche¹ ranne², lefte þo ȝhate sparde³,
 15 ande tolde hem þat Peter stondes bifore þe ȝate. Ande þei
 saide vnto⁴ hire, þow maddes⁵. Sche¹ saide, Soþely hit es
 16 so. Ande soþely þei saide, Hit es an⁶ awngel. Peter
 soþely stode stille atte þo ȝhate ande knokked. Whanne þei
 hade þo ȝhate opunde, þei sawe hym ande wore awondured.
 17 Ande he bekkende vnto⁴ hem wiþ hise honde þat þei schulde
 holde þem stille. He tolde how þat God hade ledde hym
 18 outh of⁷ prisone, ande saide, Sendes worde herof vnto⁴
 Iames, ande to oure breþer. Ande he ȝede forþe, ande wente
 19 into an-þer place. Whanne þat þo day come, þer was not
 made a lytel turbulynge amonge þo knyghtes þat hym
 20 kepped, what was bifallen of Peter. Soþely whanne Herowde
 asched after hym, ande wolde haue ledde hym vnto⁴ þo puple,
 ande fonde hym noghte, he ⁸made to asche⁸ of þo kepars,
 ande [he comawnded]⁹ brynge hem vnto⁴ hym. Ande
 Peter ȝode fro Iu[de]¹⁰ into Cesarye, ande þer he dwelled.¹¹
 21 [Soþly wiþ Tyrus & Sydonus Heroude was wroþ. But þei
 wiþ o wylle come to hym & Persuasoblasto¹² (!) þat was þe
 kenges higheste chaumbirleyn, þei asked pees of hym, for þat
 he schulde goo into þere kengdomes.¹³] Afterworde, vpon¹⁴
 a day þat¹⁵ was ordeynde, Herowde cladde¹⁶ hym in kenges
 cloþinge, ande sette hym vpon¹⁷ a sege, ande cownseyld wiþ þo
 22 folke of Tiris ande Sidone. Ande þo folke cried, Wiþ goddes
 23 voyce ande noghte with mannes. Ande alsso¹⁸ smertely an
 awngel of God smote hym, for he gafe noghte worschip nor¹⁹
 honoure vnto⁴ God, ande was wastud with wormes ande dyed.
 24 Soþely þanne þo worde of God wexe and was made myche²⁰.
 25 Wanne²¹ Barnabas ande Saule haden don þer office atte
 Ierusalem, þei turne[d]²² þem agayne, ande toke wiþ hem

¹ ȝhe P.² ran in & S.P.D.³ closyd S.P.D.⁴ to S.P.D.⁵ art madd S.P.D.⁶ his S.P.D.⁷ of þe S.P.⁸⁻⁸ enquired S.P.D.⁹ S.P.D. ¹⁰ fro Iu in marg., de cut away in the binding, C. ¹¹ Verse 20
is missing in C.; it has been supplied from S. fol. 41^b C. ¹² Vulg. et
persuaso Blasto. ¹³ Vulg. eo quod alerentur regiones eorum ab illo.¹⁴ on S.P.D.¹⁵ fol. 107^b S.¹⁶ cloþed S.P.D.¹⁷ on his S.P.D.¹⁸ soþly S.P.¹⁹ ne S.P.D.²⁰ epistola follows, C.²¹ C^m 13^m in the

margin on erasure, C.

²² turnen C. turned S.P.D.

John Marcus¹. þer² wore at Antioche in þo chirche prophetes **13**
 ande doctoures, amonge þo whiche wore Barnabas ande
 Symeon, þat was called³ Blakke, ande Lucy of Cyrene⁴,
 ande Manaen þat was þo plawfere⁵ of Herowde þo Tetrarke⁶,
 ande Saulus. Ande whanne þei mynisterde vnto⁷ Godde **2**
 ande fastud, þo Holygoste saide vnto⁷ hem, Twynnes⁸ to me
 Barnaban⁹ ande Saulum vnto⁷ þo warke þat I haue taken
 þem to. þan þo¹⁰ apostules¹¹ fastud¹² ande preyed ande layde **3**
 onne hem þer hondes ande lete hem go. & Barna[ba]s ande **4**
 Sawle¹³, þat wore sende of þo Holigoste, ȝode vnto⁷ Selewce,
 ande fro þeþen¹⁴ þei schipped vnto⁷ Cyper. Ande whanne **5**
 þei wore komen to Salamyne, þei preached Goddes worde in
 þo synagoges¹⁵ of þo Iewes, ande¹⁶ þei haden wiþ hem John in
 mynistrynge of Goddes worde. Ande whanne þei hade **6**
 ouergone alle þat ile vnto Paphum, þei fonde a man þat was
 a wycche, a false prophete ande a Iewe, ande hise name was
 Baryehu; þat was wiþ þo proconsul Sergyo Paulo, þo whiche **7**
 was a ware¹⁷ man ande wise¹⁸. (A proconsul es he þat ledes
 a towne, or guernes bi cownseyl.)¹⁹ He þis proconsul called²⁰
 Barnaban ande Poule vnto⁷ hym, for he desired to here þo **8**
 worde²⁰ of God. Ande he Elymas þo wiche wiþstode hem, for **9**
 þus was hise name expowned or called³, Elymas. Ande he
 þis wyche was abowte in alle þat he kouþe to turne þo¹⁰ pro-
 consul fro þo faiþe. Ande Poule was fulfilled wiþ þo Holy- **10**
 goste, ande bihelde hym, & saide, A, þow þat erte ful of alle **11**
 gile, ande fulle of fallace, ande sone of þo fende, & enmye of
 alle rightwisenes, þow styntes²¹ noghte to vndo þo righte
 ways of God. & lo, þo honde of God es vpon²² þe, ande þow **12**
 schalte be blynde, ande þow schalte noghte see þo sonne
 vnto⁷ certayne tyme. Ande onone dymnes ande²³ derkenes
 felle vpon hym; ande he wente aboute sekande if any wolde

¹ þe which is clepid Marchus in darker ink on erasure, S. ² Chap. xiii. ³ cleped S.P.D. begins here, S.P.D. ⁴ cyrenence S.P.D. ⁵ þe blawfere S.D. ⁶ second r erased, S. ⁷ to S.P.D. ⁸ departeþ S.P.D. ⁹ Saule & barnaban S.P.D. ¹⁰ om. P. ¹¹ postelus S.P.D. ¹² faste S.P.D. ¹³ Saulus & barnabas S.P.D. ¹⁴ þen S.P.D. ¹⁵ synagoge S.P.D. ¹⁶ fol. 42 C.

¹⁷ slyȝ S.P. ¹⁸ fol. 108 S. ¹⁹ gloss underlined, S. ²⁰ of, expunged, follows, C. ²¹ restest S.P. ²² on S.P. ²³ dymnes ande om. S.P.D.

12 take his honde to lede hym. Thanne þo proconsul, whanne
 he sawe þis, he trowed in God, ande meruayled on þo doctrine
 13 of God. Ande whanne Poule ande þoo þat wore wiþ [hym]¹
 schipped² fro Papho, þei come vnto³ Pergen of Pamphilye:
 ande Iohn departed fro hem ande turned agayne vnto³
 14 Ierusalem. Ande þei passande þurgh Pargen come⁴ vnto
 Antioche of [Persidye]⁵; ande in þo daye of sabbate þei
 15 enterd into þo synagoge ande sete þerinne. Ande efter þo
 lessone of þo lawe ande of þo prophetes, [þe prynces]¹ of þo⁶
 synagoge sende vnto³ hem, sayande, ȝhe men, dere⁷ breþer, if
 þer be any worde of exhortacyon vnto³ þo puple, says hit.
 16 Ande⁸ Poule risande ande wiþ his honde biddande⁹ silence
 he saide vnto³ hem, Men of Israel, ande ȝhe þat dreden
 17 God, heres¹⁰ þise wordes. þo God of þo folke of Israel
 chesed¹¹ oure faders, ande he highed hise folke þe¹² whileste
 þei were comelynges ande dwellynge in þo lande of Egipte,
 ande in stalworþe arme ande¹³ highe myghte he ledde hem
 18 oute of þo lande of Egipte. Ande by þo tyme of fourty ȝeres
 19 he suffured þer maners in þo deserte; ande destroyed seuen
 nacyons in þo lande of Chanaan, ande by lotte he dalte vnto³
 20 hem þer londe, as after foure hundreþe¹⁴ ande fifty ȝere.
 Ande after þis he gafe hem domes-men to rewle hem vnto³
 21 þo tyme of Samuel þo prophete. Ande fro þo tyme of
 Samuel þei asched a kenge to be þer gouernoure: ande God
 gafe hem a kenge, Saul þo sone of Cys, of¹⁵ þo tribe of
 22 Beniamyn, fourty¹⁶ ȝhere. Ande after hym þis¹⁷ Saule, God
 gafe vnto³ hem Dauid þo kenge, vnto³ whom he beres wytnes,
 ande says¹⁸, I haue fownden Dauid, þo sone of Iesse, a man
 23 efter my hertte þo whiche schal do alle my willes. Of þo
 sede of hym þis Dauid¹⁹ God sende, as he biheghe, a
 24 sauoyoure vnto³ Israel, Ihesu. Ande Iohn preached bifore þo
 face of his comynge þo baptyme of penawnce vnto³ alle þo

¹ S.P.D. ² fol. 42^b C. ³ to S.P.D. ⁴ & come S.P.D.

⁵ S.P.D.; a blank with room for circa 5 letters, C. ⁶ om. D.P.

⁷ om. S.P.D. ⁸ and soþly S.P. ⁹ bad S.P.D. Between honde and
 biddande erasure of about 5 letters, C. ¹⁰ fol. 108^b S. ¹¹ chese. with
 erasure of one letter, S. ¹² whylis S.P.D. ¹³ & in S.P.D.

¹⁴ hundred S.P.D. ¹⁵ a man of S.P.D. ¹⁶ fol. 43 C. ¹⁷ hym þis om.
 S.P.D. ¹⁸ seyde S.P.D. ¹⁹ þis Dauid om. S.P.D.

puple of Israel. Ande whanne Iohn hade fulfilled his course, ²⁵ he saide vnto¹ po folke of Israel, I am noghte he whom² þe supposed þat I was. Bot loo, he comes after me, of whom I am noghte worþi to lowse þo chausers³ of hise fete. Ande ²⁶ vnto¹ ȝowe, dere breþer ande childer of þo kynne⁴ of Abraham, ande to þoo⁵ þat in ȝowe drede God es sende þo worde of þis hele⁶. Bot⁷ þoo þat dwelled⁸ in Ierusalem, ande ²⁷ þo princes of þat cyte, þat knewe noghte þis Iesu, ande þo voyce⁹ ande þo¹⁰ spekyng of þo prophetes, þo whiche ben redde iche sabbate, þei fulfilled, demande hym. Ande no ²⁸ cause of deþe þei fonde in hym, ande ȝitte¹¹ þei asched of Pilate forto slee hym. Ande whanne þei hade¹⁰ ended alle ²⁹ þinges þat wore writen of hym, þei toke hym downe of þo tree, ande layde hym in a graue. Ande God raysed¹² hym ³⁰ fro deþe vpon¹³ þo thridde daye, ande he was sene bi many dayes of hem þat kumen wiþ hym fro Galilee vnto Ierusalem, ³¹ þat ȝitte vnto¹ þis day ben hise wytnes to þo puple. Ande ³² we schewe¹⁴ vnto¹⁵ ȝowe þo bihesta þat God highte vnto¹ oure fadirs: þat God haues fulfilled hit in oure¹⁶ childer, raysande ³³ Iesu¹⁷ fro þo deþe; as hit es writen in þo secunde psalme, My sone þow erte, þis day I¹⁸ haue gotten þe¹⁹. Ande for þat ³⁴ he so raysed hym from þe deþe, þat he schulde no more see corupcyone, þus he saide, I schal gife vnto¹ ȝowe þo holy trewe þinges of Dauid. Ande þerfore he says in an-oþer ³⁵ place, I schal noghte gife þine halowe forto¹ see corupcyone. Bot Dauid in his generacyone, whanne he hade mynsterde ³⁶ vnto¹ þo wille of God, he slepped (or, dyed), ande was layde²⁰ vnto hise faders, ande²¹ he sawe corupcyone. Bot he þat ³⁷ God raysed²² fro þo deþe sawe no²³ corrupcyone. Ande þer- ³⁸ fore ȝhe men, dere breþer, be hit knowne vnto¹ ȝowe þat bi hym es schewed to ȝowe of alle remyssion of ȝoure synnes,

¹ to S.P.D. ² þat S.P. ³ schoon S.P. ⁴ after kynne erasure of circa 8 letters, C. ⁵ ȝow S.P.D. ⁶ fol. 109 S. ⁷ But soþly S.P.D.

⁸ duellen S.P.D. ⁹ voyces S.P.D. ¹⁰ om. S.P.D. ¹¹ om. P.

¹² soþlyche reryd S.P.D. ¹³ in S.P.D. ¹⁴ schewed P. ¹⁵ to S.P.D. fol. 43^b C. ¹⁶ after oure erasure of 4 letters, C. ¹⁷ om. S.P.

¹⁸ haue I S.P.D. ¹⁹ in marg. 1st corr. S. om. D. ²⁰ set P. put on erasure in a later hand, S. ²¹ & as P. as erased in S. ²² reryd S.P.D.

²³ not S.P.D.

fro þo whiche þe myghte noghte be iustified in þo lawe of
 39,40 Moyses¹. Bot in hym whoso trowes, he es iustified. Bes
 ware þerfore, þat hit kome noghte vnto² ȝowe, þat es writen
 41 in þo prophetes : Ses, þe despisars, ande þe meruayle, ande
 ȝe ben loste ; for a warke I³ wirche in ȝowre days, þo warke
 42 þat þe schal noghte trowe, if any telle hit vnto⁴ ȝowe. Ande
 whanne þei wente oute of þo synagoge, þo puple preyed hem
 þat þei⁵ schulde⁶ speke þise wordes in þo nexte sabbate
 43 filowande. Ande whanne þei hade lefte þo synagoge, many
 Iewes ande comelynges folowed Poule ande Barnaban ; ande
 44 þei amonestud þem forto dwelle in þo grace offe God. Ande
 in þo nexte sabbate folowande alle þo cyte almoste come
 45 forto² here Goddes worde. Ande þo Iewes see grete multi-
 tude of folke come forto here Poule, ande þei wore fulle of
 enuye ande agaynsaide þo wordus of Poule, blasphemande.
 46 Thanne saiden Poule ande Barnabas traistely vnto þe Iewes,
 To ȝowe firste hit⁷ bihoued⁸ to speke Goddes worde. Bot for
 ȝe refuse hit, ande deine ȝoureseluen vnworþi to aylastande⁹
 47 life, loo, we turnen vs vnto² nacyons ande leue ȝowe. For so
 oure Lorde bade vs, I haue sette þe, he saide, in lyghte of
 nacyones, þat þow be my hele vnto² þo ende of þo⁷ erþe.
 48 Ande þe nacyons whanne þei harde þis¹⁰ worde, ¹¹þei wore
 ioyfull, ande þei glorified þo worde¹¹ of God : ande als many
 49 as wore ordeynde to aye-lastande⁹ life troweden. Ande þo
 50 worde of God was sparpulde þurghe alle þo contree. Ande
 þo Iewes stirde¹² relygiowse wymmen¹³ aude honeste, ande¹⁴
 þo firste of þo cyte, & þei stirde¹⁵ a persecuyone to Poule
 ande Barnaban, ande¹⁶ keste¹⁷ hem oute of þer contrees¹⁸.
 51 Ande Poule ande Barnaban keste þo powder of þer fete
 52 agaynes¹⁹ hem, ande kome vnto Yconye. Ande þo discipules
 wore fulfilled²⁰ wiþ ioye & wiþ þo Holygoste.

¹ fol. 109^b S.² to S.P.D.³ þat I C.⁴ om. S.P. to D.⁵ erasure of circa 7 letters follows, C.⁶ fol. 44 C.⁷ om. S.P.D.⁸ byhoueþ S.P.D.⁹ þe euerelastyng S.P.D.¹⁰ þe on erasure; inmarg. ioyeden & glorifyeden þe in a later hand, marked to be inserted after
 herde, S. ¹¹⁻¹² om. S.P.D. ¹² entysed S.P.D. ¹³ wym above the line,
 in a later hand, S; men P. ¹⁴ om. P. ¹⁵ meuyd S.P.D. ¹⁶ fol. 110 S.¹⁷ chasyd S.P.D.¹⁸ cuntry S.P.D.¹⁹ fol. 49^b C. ²⁰ fyllyd S.P.

Ande¹ hit bifelle in Iconye, þat grete multitude of Iewes **14**
 ande of Grekes enturde togadire vnto² þo synagoge. Ande **2**
 þo Iewes þat wore vntrowþeful stired³ persecuyone, ande
 excited þo hertes⁴ of nacyons agaynes þo breþer. Bot God **3**
 grawnted sone pees, ande longe tyme þei dwelled þer, doande
 trestly⁵ & stedfastely in God, þat bere⁶ wytnes vnto⁷ þe worde
 of hise grace, ande grawnted wondures ande tokens to be
 done by þo hende of hise seruantes. Bot þo multitude of þat **4**
 cytee was deuydid; for summe helde wiþ þo Iewes, summe⁸
 wiþ þo apostuls. Ande whanne þo hastynes of þo Iewes **5**
 ande þe gentyles assentud togider wiþ þer princes, forto⁹
 punysche þo apostuls wiþ iniuryos wordes, ande forto stone
 hem, whanne þei knewe þis, þei fledde into þo cytes of **6**
 Lycaonye, Lystram ande Derben ande alle þo contre aboute:
 ande þere þei wore prechande. Ande alle þo multitude was
 stired³ in þer doctrine; ande Poule ande Barnabas dwelled
 in Lystris. Ande þer was a man in Lystris þat was⁹ seke in **7**
 his fete, ande was⁹ halte ande lame fro his moder wombe,
 ande neuer wente vpon¹⁰ hise fete. He þis harde Poule **8**
 spekande: ande Poule bihelde hym & sawe þat¹¹ he hade
 faiþe to be sawfe, ande cryed wiþ a grete voyce ande saide, **9**
 To þe I saye in þe name of oure¹² Lorde Iesu Criste, rise
 vpon þi fete righte. Ande he stirte vppe ande ȝode. Ande **10**
 whanne þo companyes seghe þis þat Poule did, þo men of
 Lycaonye lyfte vppe¹³ þer voyce & saide, Goddes ben comen¹⁴
 vnto⁷ vs in lyknes of men. Ande þei called¹⁵ Barnaban Iouem **11**
 ande Poule¹⁶ Mercurye, for he was ledar ande spekar of þo
 worde. Ande þo preste of Iouys, þo whiche was bifore þo **12**
 cytee, broghte bulles ande corownes bifore þo¹⁷ ȝhates, ande¹⁸
 wiþ þo puple he wolde haue done sacrifice vnto⁷ Poule ande
 Barnabas. Ande whanne þo apostuls harden þis, þei schere¹⁹ **13**

¹ C^m 14^m in a later hand, in marg., C. þe xiiii c^o in a xvith cent. hand, S.
² into S.P.D. ³ meuyd S.P.D. ⁴ wylle S.P.D. ⁵ trewely S.P.D.

⁶ here P. ⁷ to S.P.D. ⁸ & summe P. ⁹⁻⁹ om. S.P.D. ¹⁰ on S.P.D.

¹¹ fol. 45 C. ¹² fol. 110^b S. ¹³ hyȝed S.P.D. ¹⁴ Godes arme is come,
 S.P.D. ¹⁵ cleped S.P.D. ¹⁶ after poule erasure of 3 letters, C.

¹⁷⁻¹⁷ om. S.P.D. brynggynk bolles & crownes in marg. 1st corr. marked to be
 inserted after puple, S; P. reads, bifore þe ȝatis wiþ þe peple brynggynge
 bolles & trowes. ¹⁸ erased, S. ¹⁹ kitte S.P.D.

þer cloþes ande stirtte forþe amoneg þo multitude, criande
 14 ande sayande, A, men, wherto done ȝhe þus? We ben bot
 dedly men lyke to ȝowe, schewande ande prechande vnto¹
 ȝowe forto turne ȝowe fro þise vayne þinges vnto¹ þo lifande
 God, þat made heuen ande erthe, þo see ande alle þat ben in
 15 hem: þo whiche God in generacyones bifore lete gentiles² to
 16 enter hise ways. Ande noghte wiþouten testymonye lefte
 he hymseluen, wele doande, ande gifande raynes from heuen
 ande fruteful tymes, & fillande ȝoure hertes wiþ mete ande
 17 gladnes. Ande ȝitte whanne þei saide þise, vneþes myghte
 þei stille þo companyse þat ne³ þei wolde sacrifice vnto¹ hem.
 18 Bot sunine Iewes comen in þo mene tyme from Antyoche
 ande Yconye, ande made ille⁴ suggestion to þo puple of
 Poule, ande þei stoned hym, ande drowe hym wiþouten þo
 19 cyte, supposande þat he was dede. Ande whanne þo discipuls
 comen abowte hym, he roos vppe ande entered into þo cyte:
 ande in þo daye after he wente⁵ wiþ Barnabas into Derben.
 20 Ande whanne þei⁶ hade preached vnto¹ þat cyte, ande haden
 tawghte many, þei wente agayne vnto¹ Lyster ande Yconye
 21 ande vnto¹ Autyoche, ande confermed þo sowles of þo
 discipuls, ande made exhortacyone to hem þat þei schulde
 dwelle in þo faiþe, ande tolde vnto¹ hem þat hit bihoues by
 many tribulacyones to enter into þo kengedam of God⁷.
 22 Ande⁸ whanne þo apostuls haden ordeynede vnto¹ hem by
 syngulere chirches prestes, ande whanne þei hade preyed
 ande fasted, þei comended hem vnto¹ God in whom þei
 23 trowed. Ande þo apostuls⁹ passande¹⁰ þurh Psidie¹¹, þei¹²
 24 come into Pamphilye. Ande þei speke Goddes worde in
 25 Pergen, ande fro þeþen¹³ þei¹⁴ wente vnto¹⁵ Atthlaye; ande
 fro þeþen¹⁶ þei schipped into Antioche, where þei wore bitaken
 26 to þo grace of God into þo warke þat þei hade fulfilled. Ande
 whanne þei wore comen þider ande hade gaderd togider þo¹⁷

¹ to S.P.D.² on erasure, different ink, C.³ fol. 45^b C.⁴ yuel S.P.D.⁵ ȝede S.P.D.⁶ fol. 111 S.⁷ heuene S.P.D.⁸ new paragraph with initial, C. no break in S.P.D.⁹ postuls S.P.¹⁰ passyn S.P.D.¹¹ sydya D.

sydya with per added above the line, S;

¹² persydya P.¹³ & þei S.P.¹⁴ þeyn S.D. þyn P.¹⁵ in to S.P.¹⁶ þeyn S.P. þen D.¹⁷ fol. 46 C.

disciples¹ of holy chirche², þei tolde how myche God hadde³ done wiþ hem, ande how þat God hadde⁴ opunde vnto⁵ þo nacyons þo ȝate of þo faiþe. Ande þei dwelled a longe tyme ²⁷ wiþ þo disciples. Ande⁶ summe þat comen from þo Iewrye ¹⁵ tawghte ande preched vnto⁵ þe breþer ande saide, Bot if ȝhe be circumcydid after þo custome of Moysi, ȝhe maye noghte be sauie. Ande a grete sedicyon was made vnto⁵ Poule ande ² Barnabas agaynes hem ; ande Poule saide vnto⁵ hem þat þei schulde abide in þo same trowþe þat þei wore inne. Ande Poule & Barnabas ande summe of oþer disciples ordeynde þat þei schulde goo vnto⁵ þo apostuls ande þo prestes þat wore in⁷ Ierusalem to wyte of þis question⁸. ⁹ Ande þei, whanne ³ þei wore forþe-ledde of þo disciples⁹, þei passed þurh Fenyce ande Samarye, tellande þo conuersacyone¹⁰ ande þo lifynge of nacyons : ande þei made myche ioye to alle þo breþer. Ande ⁴ whanne þei come to Ierusalem, þei wore receyued of þo congregacyone ande of þo apostuls ande þe eldars, ande þei tolde what God hadde done wiþ hem. Ande þanne ros vppe ⁵ summe of þo heresie¹¹ of þo Pharisees, þe whiche trowed, ande saide þat hit byhoued¹² hem forto⁵ be circumcided ande alssو forto bidde to kepe þo lawe of Moysi. & þo¹³ apostuls ande ⁶ þo eldars wente togider to auyse¹⁴ of þis worde. Ande ⁷ whanne grete aschinge ande sechinge was of þis þinge, Peter ros vppe, ande saide vnto⁵ hem, ȝhe men, oure breþer, ȝhe knowe þat fro¹⁵ elder days in vs God haues chosen bi my mouþe nacyons¹⁶ to here þo worde of þo gospelle ande forto trowe. Ande he, þat knewe þo hertes of alle, bere wytnes ⁸ vnto þis, gifande vnto⁵ hem þo Holygoste as to vs. Ande ⁹ noghte he departed (or, made difference) bitwixe hem ande vs, clensande¹⁷ in þo faiþe þo hertes of hem. Bot nowe ¹⁰ þanne¹⁸ wharto tempte ȝhe to laye þo ȝoke ande charge vpon

¹ *disciples of holy* om. S.P.D. ² *churche þt byleuyd* S.P.D. ³ *haþ* P.

⁴ om. S.P. ⁵ to S.P.D. ⁶ new paragraph with initial, S.P.D.

⁷ *y^e xv c^o* in a xvith cent. hand, S. ⁸ *C^m 15^m* in a late hand in marg., C.

⁹ *fol. 111^b* S. ¹⁰ *sa expunged*, S. ¹¹ *heresie of þo* om. S.P.D.

¹² *byhoueþ* S.P.D. ¹³ *fol. 46^b* C. ¹⁴ *ayuse hem* S.P. ¹⁵ *fro þe* P.

¹⁶ *þe n.* S.P.D. ¹⁷ *he clensyng* S.P.D. ¹⁸ om. S.P.D. ¹⁹ *on* S.P.

þo heued of þo disciples, þat noþer¹ oure faders nor we myghte
 11 bere? Bot² we hopen forto be saued by þo grace of oure
 12 Lorde Iesu Criste, as þei ben. Ande³ alle þo multitude was
 13 stille; ande þei harden Barnaban ande Poule tellande⁴ how
 myche God hade done merueyles⁵ ande tokens in nacyons by
 14 hem. Ande after þat þei wore stille, Iames answered ande
 15 saide, ȝhe men⁶, dere breþer, heres me. Symon has tolde
 16 vnto⁷ ȝowe onne what maner firste God visit[ed]⁸, to take
 15 þo⁹ puple of nacyones vnto⁷ his name. Ande to hym
 16 accorden þo wordes of þo prophetes: as hit es wryten, Efter
 þise I schal go agayn, ande I schal edifye agayne þo
 tabernacle of Dauid, þo whiche es fallen¹⁰; ande I schal bigge¹¹
 17 agayn þo broken of it, ande I schal vpraise¹² hit: þat þo
 remnaunte of men seche þer¹³ Lorde, ande alle nacyons vpon
 18 whom es incalled¹⁴ my name, sais ȝe Lorde doande þis. For
 19 fro þo⁹ worlde es knowne vnto⁷ God his warke. Wharfore
 I iuge hem þat ben turned vnto⁷ God offe nacyons¹⁵ noghte
 20 forto⁷ be vneside: bot forto write vnto⁷ hem þat þei abstene
 hem fro contamynacyone of mawmetes, ande fro fornycacione,
 21 ande fro þo suffocate, ande blode. For⁹ Moyses fro olde
 tymes has in syngulere cytes þat prechen hym in synagoges,
 22 where he es redde bi iche sabbate. Thanne hit liked vnto⁷
 þo apostuls ande to þo elders, wiþ alle þo chirche (or, congrega-
 gacyone), forto chese summe of hem, ande to¹⁶ sende vnto⁷
 Antioche wiþ Poule ande Barnabas; ande þei chesed¹⁷ Iudas
 þat was surnamed¹⁸ Barsabas, ande Sylam, þo whiche wore þo
 23 firste amonge þo breþer: writande bi þo hende¹⁹ of hem, þo
 apostuls ande þo elder breþer to hem þat ben at Antyoche
 ande Sirie ande Cilyce breþer of nacyones, gretes²⁰ wele (or,
 24 ȝernes²¹ hele): For þat we haue harde þat²² summe of oures
 goande fro vs haues droued²³ ȝow wiþ wordes, turnande ȝoure

¹ noþur we noþur oure fadrus S.P.D. ² by ȝe grace of oure lord iesu
crist follows, S.P.D. ³ soþly S.P.D. ⁴ & tellynge S.P.D. ⁵ fol. 112 S.

⁶ myn P. ⁷ to S.P.D. ⁸ visit C. vysyted S.P.D. ⁹ om. S.P.D.

¹⁰ fol. 47 C. ¹¹ bylde S.P.D. ¹² up rere S.P.D. ¹³ ȝe S.P.D.

¹⁴ in cleped S.P.D. ¹⁵ offe nacyons om. S.P.D. ¹⁶ for to S.P.D.

¹⁷ chose S.P.D. ¹⁸ surname S.P. ¹⁹ hond S.D. lond P. ²⁰ gretynge

S.P.D. ²¹ desyrynge S.P.D. ²² fol. 112^b S. ²³ disturbyd S.D. dysturblyd P.

hertes¹; to² whom we bade noghte; ande þerfore hit plesed 25
 to vs to gader³ vs in one ande forto chese men ande sende
 vnto⁴ ȝowe wiþ oure⁵ dere breþer⁶ Poule & Barnaban, þo 26
 whiche ben men þat han sette þer lyfes for þo name of oure
 Lorde Iesu Criste. Ande⁷ þerfore we sentte vnto⁷ ȝowe 27
 Iudas ande Silam, þo whiche alssو schal telle þo same⁸ vnto⁷
 ȝowe, þat⁹ hit es sene to þo Holygoste [ande vs]¹⁰ no more 28
 charge forto⁷ lay¹¹ vpon¹² ȝowe þanne þise þat ben nedfulle;
 þat ȝhe abstene ȝowe fro þinges þat ben offerde vnto maw- 29
 metes, ande fro sacrifice of ydolatrye, ande fro blode þat es
 suffocate, ande fro fornycacyone; ande þat ȝhe wille noghte
 were¹³ done vnto⁷ ȝowe, dos hit noghte vnto⁷ an-oþer; ande if
 ȝhe kepe ȝowe fro þise, ȝhe schal wele do. Fares wele.
 Ande Poule, Barnabas, Iudas ande Sylas wente¹⁴ fro þo 30
 apostuls, ande kome vnto⁷ Antioche; ande whanne þei haden
 gaderd þo¹⁵ multitude of¹⁶ þo disciples, þei toke hem þo
 epistel; þo whiche whanne þei haden redde, þei ioyed in 31
 a grete ioye for þo comforþe þat þei hade. Ande Iudas ande 32
 Sylas, for þat þei wore prophetes ande prechors, wiþ myche
 spekyng þei comforþed þo breþer ande confermed hem.
 Ande hit bisemed vnto¹⁷ Syle to dwelle þore, ande only Iudas 33
 wente agayne into Ierusalem. Ande Poule ande Barnabas 35
 dwelled atte Antioche, techande ande prechande, wiþ oþer
 discipuls of Criste, Goddes worde. Ande efter summe¹⁸ days 36
 Powle saide vnto⁷ Barnabas, Turne¹⁹ we agayne, ande visite
 we oure breþer bi alle þo cytes in þo whiche we han preached
 Goddes worde, ande see we how þei hafe hem. Ande 37
 Barnabas wolde take Iohn wiþ hem, þo whiche es surnamed
 Marchus. Ande Poule preyed Barnaban, þat he þat departed 38
 fro hem fro Pamphilye ande wolde noghte go wiþ hem in
 warke of þo gospelle, þat he schulde noghte be taken wiþ hem.
 Ande so amonge hem was made discencyone, in so myche þat 39

¹ soulis S.P. ² þe whiche we sente (wente P) not S.P.D. ³ fol. 47^b C.

⁴ om. S.P.D. ⁵ ȝoure S.P.D. ⁶ broþer S.P.D. ⁷ to S.P.D. ⁸ name P.

⁹ soþly S.P.D. ¹⁰ S.P.D. ¹¹ seye P. no more charge repeated in the
 margin, 1st corr. S. ¹² up crossed through, D. on S.P. ¹³ be crossed
 out, follows, S. ¹⁴ þt wente S.P.D. ¹⁵ a S.P.D. ¹⁶ of þo discipuls
 om. S.P.D. ¹⁷ good to S.P.D. ¹⁸ fol. 48 C. ¹⁹ fol. 113 S.

þei departed otwynne¹, & Barnabas toke wiþ hym Marchus
ande schippide² vnto³ Cipir⁴.

40 Ande⁵ Poule toke wiþ hym Sylam ande wente his waye,
whanne he was bytaken⁶ vnto³ þo grace of God of þo breþer.
41 Ande he wente þurh Sirye ande Cylce, confermande þo
congregacyone of holy chirche, & bade hem þat þei schulde
16 1 kepe þo biddynges of þo apostuls ande of þo⁷ eldars. Ande⁸
whanne þei hade gone abowte þise nacyons, he come vnto⁹
Derben ande Lystram: ande þer was a discipul, þat was called¹⁰
Tymoþe, þat was a trewe wydowe sone; bot his fadir was
2 a panyme. To hym bere trewe¹¹ wytnes þoo þat wore in
3 Lystris ande Yconye. Hym wolde Poule þat [he]¹² schulde
go with hym; ande he¹³ toke hym ande circumcyded hym for
þo Iewes þat wore in þo places: for alle wiste¹⁴ wele þat hise
4 fadir was a gentile (or, a paynyme). Ande as þei passed bi
cytes, þei tawghte hem þo techynges þat wore ordeynde of
5 þo apostuls, whanne þei wore at Ierusalem. Ande þo chirches
wore confermed in þo faiþe, ande¹⁵ encresced in nowmbur alle¹⁶
6 daye. & as þei passed þurh Phrigye ande Galace¹⁷, þei wore
7 letted of þo Holygoste to speke Goddes worde in Asye; ande
whanne þei wore comen vnto³ Misy, þei assayde to passe by
8 Betheny; ande þei wore letted bi þo spiritte of Iesu. Ande
9 whanne þei passed Misye, þei wente¹⁸ vnto³ Troyden. Ande
in þo nyghte was a visione schewed vnto³ Poule, þat a man
of Macidonye stode, ande preyed hym, ande sayde, Go into
10 Macedonye, ande helpe vs. Ande onone¹⁹ as he hade sene þis
vision, we þoghte to go into Macedonye, for we were certayne
11 þat God called vs to preche to hem. Ande we schipped from
Troade, ande righte course we come vnto³ Samotrache ande
12 þo nexte daye to Neapolym; ande fro þeþen²⁰ vnto Philippis²¹,
þo whiche es þe firste of þo contree of Macedonye, þo cyte
of Coleyne²²: ande we wore in þis cyte certayn days techande.

¹ atweynne P. ² pide on erasure, C. ³ to S.P.D. ⁴ sequitur epistola
follows, C. ⁵ new paragraph with initial, C. ⁶ taken S.P.D. ⁷ om. S.D.

⁸ C^m 16^m in a later hand, in marg., C. initials in S.P.D. y^e xvi c^o in a xvith
cent. hand, S. ⁹ in to S.P.D. ¹⁰ cleped S.P.D. ¹¹ good S.P.D. ¹² S.P.D.

¹³ toke, expunged, follows, C. ¹⁴ fol. 48^b C. ¹⁵ fol. 113^b S. ¹⁶ eche S.P.D.

¹⁷ galacye kyngdom S.P.D. ¹⁸ om. P. ¹⁹ euene S.P.D. ²⁰ þen S.P.D.

²¹ to phyprys S.P.D. ²² Vulg. prima partis Macedoniæ civitas, colonia.

Ande in þo day of sabbate we wente wiþouten þo ȝhate biside 13
 þo flode, where preyng semed forto¹ be; ande þere we sete,
 and speke vnto¹ wymmen þat þider come togider. Ande 14
 a womman whos name was Lydda², a purpurere of þo cyte
 of Thiathire, þo whiche worschipped God, herde vs: whos
 herte God opunde, forto¹ biholde vnto¹ þo þinges þat wore
 saide of Poule. Ande whanne sche³ was baptised, [ande]⁴ hire 15
 howse, she³ preyed, sayande, If ȝhe deme me trewe vnto God,
 enteres into my howse, ande dwelles þere⁵. Ande sche³ gartte⁶
 vs. Ande hit bifelle, whanne we wente forto prey, þat a 16
 wenche þat hade a spiritte of a wycche mette vs, þo whiche
 gafe grete wynnyng vnto¹ [hire]⁷ lordes by dyuynynge.
 Sche³ folowed Poule ande vs, criande ande sayande, ȝise men 17
 ben þo seruantes of þo highe God, þo whiche schewen to ȝowe
 þo waye of hele. ȝis sche did many days; ande Poule 18
 mournande for hire, he⁸ turned hym ande spake⁹ vnto þo
 spiritte, I bidde þe in þo name of Iesu Criste to go oute fro
 hire. Ande þo yuel spiritte wente oute of¹⁰ hire in þo same
 howre. Ande whanne hire lordes see, þat þe spiritte of [hire]¹¹ 19
 was away, þei toke Poule ande Sylam, ande ledde hem forþe
 into þo market¹² vnto¹ þo princes, ande schewed hem to þo 20
 magistrates, sayande, ȝise men sturbulen¹³ ande deceyue¹⁴
 alle oure cytee, for þei ben Iewes, ande þei tellen a maner 21
 þat es noghte leffulle to vs to receyue or¹⁵ do, siþen we ben
 Romaynes. Ande þo puple ranne agayn hem, ande þo 22
 magistrates, [ande]¹⁶ þer¹⁷ cloþes [wore] torn, ande [þei]
 comanded hem forto¹ be beten wiþ ȝerdes. Ande¹⁸ whanne 23
 þei hade beten hem longe, ande made hem fulle of wondes¹⁹,
 þei put hem in prisone, ande bade vnto¹ þo kepar of þo
 prison þat²⁰ he schulde bestly²¹ kepe hem. Ande he, efter 24
 þat he was boden²², he putte hem in þo inner prisone, ande
 he strayned þer fete in a tree. Bot atte þo²³ mydnyghte 25

¹ to S.P.D. ² fol. 49 C. ³ ȝhe P. ⁴ S.P.D. in C. ⁵ fol. 114 S.

⁶ constreyned S.P.D. ⁷ S.P.D. þer C. ⁸ & S.P.D. ⁹ seyde to S.P.D.

¹⁰ fro S.P.D. ¹¹ S.P.D. þeire C. ¹² chepynge S.P.D. ¹³ disturbeþ S.P.D.

¹⁴ ande deceyue om. S.P.D. ¹⁵ noþur S.P.D. ¹⁶ S.P.D. wiþ C.

¹⁷ þe (here D) cloþis of hem were tore S.P.D. ¹⁸ fol. 49^b C. ¹⁹ of woundis

repeated in marg., 1st corr. S. ²⁰ þo þat C. ²¹ bysly S.P.D.

²² comawndid þus S.P.D. ²³ om. S.P.D.

Poule ande Silas ¹lowtande vnto God loued hym¹ in alle his sonde, ande þoo þat wore in kepynge in þo prisone harde hem ;
 26 ande sodenly was² made a grete erþe-schake, so myche þat þo grownde of þo prisone stired³. [& onone wore opun alle
 27 þo dores & alle þer bondes wore lowsed.]⁴ Ande he⁵ þat kepped þo prisone, [whanne he saw þo ȝhates opun of þo prisone,]⁴ drowe oute a swerde, ande wolde haue slayne hymseluen, supposande þat alle þo prisons wore gone oute.
 28 Ande Poule cried vnto⁶ hym wiþ a grete voyce⁷ ande saide,
 29 Do þe no harme⁸: for we alle ben here. Ande he toke lyghte, ande enterde into þo prisone, ande quakande he felle
 30 downe to þe fete of Poule ande Silas ; ande he⁹ broghte hem forþe ande saide, Leue lordes, whatte bihoues me forto¹⁰ do
 31 þat I myghte be saufe ? Ande þei saide vnto¹⁰ hym, Trowe in oure Lorde Iesu, ande þow schal be saufe ande al þi howse.
 32 Ande þei preached vnto¹⁰ hym þo worde of God ande to alle þat
 33 wore in his howse. Ande þo kepar of þo prisone toke hem in þo same houre of þo nyghte, ande wesche¹¹ þer wondes ;
 ande onone he was baptised, ande alle⁵ hise howse alsso.
 34 Ande efter þat he hade broghte hem into hise howse, he sette
 a¹² borde to hem, ande he⁵ was gladed wiþ alle [his]¹³ house,
 35 trowande to God. Ande whanne daye¹⁴ was comen þo magistrates sente baylys (or, bedels), sayande¹⁵, Late þoo men goo. & þo kepar of þo prisone tolde þis vnto¹⁶ Poule, þat
 36 þo magistrates han sende þat ȝe ben laten go: ande þerfore
 37 gos nowe forþe in pees. Ande Poule saide to hem, þei hauen beten vs¹⁷ vnrightly ande vndampned¹⁷, ande we ben men of
 Rome [þat þei haue putte in prisone]¹⁸, ande¹⁹ priuely þei
 38 putte vs oute ; noghte so, bot come þei hemseluen²⁰ ande
 putte þei vs oute. Ande þo bedels (or, þo baylyes)²¹ tolde
 þise wordes to þo magistrates : ande þo²² magistrates, whanne
 39 þei harden þat þei wore Romaynes, dredde hem ; ande come

¹⁻¹ honoured & preyed god S.P.D. ² fol. 114^b S. ³ quoke S.P.

⁴ S.P.D. ⁵ om. S.P. ⁶ to S.P.D. ⁷ a leaf missing in D,

chapp. xvi. 28—xvii. 6. ⁸ noon arme P. ⁹ om. P. ¹⁰ to S.P.

¹¹ wosche S. ¹² fol. 50 C. ¹³ his S. at his P. ¹⁴ þe day S. þat d. P;

erasure of 4 letters before daye, C. ¹⁵ s. þat P. ¹⁶ om. P. to S.

¹⁷⁻¹⁷ opynlyche & indempnyd S.P. ¹⁸ S.P. ¹⁹ ande now S.P. ²⁰ fol.

115 S. ²¹ gloss om. S.P. ²² om. S.

vnto¹ hem ande preyde hem þat þei schulde go oute of þo cyte. Ande þei outegoande of þo prisone þei enterde into ⁴⁰ Lyddam: ande whanne þei sawe þo² breþer, þei tolde hem whatte God hade done wiþ hem, ande comforþed þo breþer ande wente on³ þer way.

Ande⁴ whanne þei hade gone bi Amphibolym ande ¹⁷ Appollonye, þei come to Thessalony, were a synagoge of Iewes was: ande Poule, as he was wonte, enterde vnto¹ þem, ² ande by þre sabbates he preached to hem of holy scriptures, declarande ande shewande, þat hit bihoued Criste to suffur ³ ande to rise fro þo deþe; ande þat he þis es⁵ Iesus⁶ whom I schewe vnto⁷ ȝowe. Ande summe of hem [trowed]⁸, ande ⁴ wore ioyned vnto⁹ Poule ande to Sylas; ande alsso of þo gentyles grete multitude, ande many¹⁰ noubul wymmen. Ande summe of þo enuyous Iewes token summe ille¹¹ men ⁵ of þo¹² puple, ande gadured a grete companye, ande stired¹³ þo cyte agayne þo apostuls, ande wente vnto¹ þo house of Iason forto brynghe hem forþe vnto¹ þo puple. Ande ⁶ whanne þei fonde noghte hem, þei drowe Iason ande summe breþer vnto¹ þo princes of þo cite, criande ande sayande, þise ben þei þat stiren¹⁴ alle þo worlde ¹⁵ ande hider þei come¹⁵; ande¹⁶ he þis Iasone receyued hem: ande alle þise done ⁷ agayne þo ordynawnce of þo¹⁷ Cesar, ande sayne þat þer es an-⁸ oþer kenge þat highte Iesu. Ande þei stired gretely þo puple ande þo princes of¹⁸ þo cites þat harde þise þinges. Ande ⁹ whanne Iason ande oþer hade made satisfacyon (or, excusinge) to þo princes of þo cyte, þei lete hem go. Ande þo ¹⁰ breþer [on]one¹⁹ in þo nyghte lete²⁰ Poule ande Sylam into Ber[o]am²¹; ande whanne þei wore comen þider, þei enterde into þo synagoge of þo Iewes. Ande þise men of Beroam ¹¹

¹ to S.P. ² þer S. ³ oute S.P. ⁴ C^m 17 in marg. in a later hand, C. xvii c. in a xvith century hand, S. ⁵ above the line, 1st corr. S. ⁶ iesu crist P. crist in marg. 1st corr. S. ⁷ fol. 50^b C. to S.P. ⁸ S.P. ioyed C. ⁹ after vnto erasure of circa 3 letters, C. to S.P. ¹⁰ & many twice, S.P. ¹¹ yuel S.P. ¹² erasure of about 5 letters follows, C. ¹³ meuyd S.P. ¹⁴ meuep S.P. ¹⁵⁻¹⁵ om. S.P. ¹⁶ D. begins here. ¹⁷ expunged S. om. P. ¹⁸ fol. 115^b S. ¹⁹ anone S.P.D. ²⁰ lede P. lede with d on erasure, S. ²¹ S.P.D. berbam C. beroam tessalonye repeated in marg. 1st corr. S.

wore þo moste noubul of þoo þat ben atte Thessalonye, þo
 whiche toke Goddes worde wiþ grete desire, iche daye
 ransakande þo holy scriptures, wheþer hit wore so as hit was
 12 preached to hem. Ande many trowed of hem; ande grete
 multitude alssō¹ of honeste wymmen þat were gentyles (þat
 es, of þo nacyones þat wore called² gentyles)³, ande many
 13 men alssō. Ande whanne þo Iewes þat wore in Thessalony
 knewe þat Goddes worde was preached in Beroam of Poule,
 þei come þider ⁴ande stirde ande stourebulde⁴ myche of þo
 14 puple. Ande onone þo breþer lefte Poule, þat he myghte goo
 15 vnto⁵ þo see: and Syle ande Tymoþe dwelled þere. Ande
 þo breþer þat wente wiþ Poule þei broghte hym to Athenys;
 ande he bade hem þat als sone as þei come to Syle ande
 Tymoþe þat þei schulde saye hem hastely to come to h[y]m⁶.
 16 Ande Poule whileste⁷ he abode hem in Athenys, his spiritte
 was gretely stired in hym, for he sawe þat þo cytee was gifен
 17 to ydolatrye. Ande he disputed in þo synagoge wiþ þo Iewes
 ande þo dwellande⁸, in þo market, by alle þo days, to hem
 18 þat wore neghe⁹. Ande¹⁰ summe Epichurens ande Stoycens¹¹
 ande philysofers disputed wiþ hym. Ande summe saide,
 What wole he þis sower of wordes saye? ande oþer saide,
 Hit bisemes þat¹² he es a schewar of newe fendes: ande þis
 þei saide for he schewed vnto⁵ hem Iesu ande þo¹³ resur-
 19 reccyone. & þei toke hym, ande ledde hym to þo Ariopage
 (þat es, to a strete of Athenys, where þo¹⁴ philysofers studied),
 ande þei saide, Maye we knowe þis newe doctrine þat þow
 20 spekes of? Newe þinges þow bringes in oure eres, ande
 21 þerfore wole we knowe what þei may be. Ande þo men of
 Athenys & oþer comelynges þat dwelled þer, gafe þer
 entente¹⁵ vnto¹⁶ noghte elles bot forto say or forto¹⁶ here
 22 summe newe þinge. Ande Poule stode vppe in myddes¹⁷
 of þat towne¹⁸ (or, strete), ande saide, ȝhe men Atthenyenses,

¹ fol. 51 C. ² cleped S.P.D. ³ gloss underlined, S.P. ⁴⁻⁴ meuyng
 & sturbllynge S.P. ⁵ to S.P. ⁶ S.P.D. hem C. ⁷ whyles S.P.

⁸ þo dwellande om. P. ⁹ þat þer were P. þt herde D, with herde crossed
 through and þer were in marg. 1st corr. S. ¹⁰ & soþly P, with soþly in
 marg. 1st corr. S. ¹¹ scopty P. ¹² fol. 116 S. ¹³ om. P. ¹⁴ fol. 51^b C.

¹⁵ tente S.P.D. ¹⁶ to S.P.D. ¹⁷ myddyl S.P. ¹⁸ towne or om. S.P.D.

hit bisemes vnto¹ me þat ȝhe ben in alle þinges as supersticyouse men (þat es, as men of vayne religioun, or elles, gifen to myche vnto¹ vayne þinges). For I haue passed ande sene² 23 ȝoure mawmetes, & I fonde an auter in þo whiche were³ writen þise wordes, To þo vnknowne god. Ande þerfore þat ȝhe worschipe vnknowande, þat schewe⁴ I vnto ȝowe. ȝo⁵ God²⁴ þat made þo worlde ande alle þinges þat ben in þo worlde⁶, he⁵ siþen he es Lorde⁷ of heuen ande erþe, he wonnes noghte⁸ in temples made wiþ hende⁹; nor¹⁰ he es worschipped wiþ 25 mennes hende for þat he has nede of any þinge þat man dos, siþen he gifes vnto¹ alle¹¹ life, ande wynde, & inspiringe, ande alle oþer þinges; ande of one þinge¹² he maked alle mankynde 26 forto inhabyte on alle þo face of þe erthe, ordeynande¹³ certayne tymes ande termes¹⁴ (or, endes) of þer habitacyone; forto 27 seche þer God, If in auuter þei may drawe¹⁵ hym to hem, or fynde hym, þose he be noghte ferre fro icheone of vs: for in 28 hym we life, ande in hym we stire¹⁶, ande in hym we ben; as summe of ȝoure poetes has sayde, Ande we ben alssō hise kynne. Ande siþen we ben þo kynne of God, vs owe noghte 29 to suppose þat þat purtenes vnto God es lyke to golde, ande syluer, or to stone of þo crafte of grauynge, ande þat comes of mannes þenkyng¹⁷ ande of mannes hondewarke¹⁸. Ande¹⁹ 30 God þat despices þo tymes of þis ignorawnce, nowe he schewes to men þat icheone, whersoeuer²⁰ þei be, do penaunce: for 31 þat he has ordeynde a daye, in þo whiche he schal deme alle þo worlde in euenhede, gifande faiþe vnto¹ alle in a man þat he rayssed²¹ fro²² deþe. Ande whanne þei harde þo resurreccione 32 [of dede men]²³, summe scorned hym; ande summe saide, We schal here þe este of þis. Ande so Poule wente fro þo 33 myddes²⁴ of hem. Ande summe wente wiþ Poule, ande 34 trowed vnto¹ hym: in whom²⁵ was Dyonyse þo mayster of þo

¹ to S.P.D.² seyng S.P.D.³ was S.P.D.⁴ y schewe P.⁵ om. S.P.D.⁶ heere follows, D, crossed through, S.⁷ he is lord

twice, S.P.D.

⁸ in marg. later hand, S.⁹ honde S.P.D.¹⁰ noþer S.P.D.¹¹ erasure of 2 letters follows, C.¹² crossed through, S.

om. P.

¹³ fol. 52 C.¹⁴ termey S.P.¹⁵ fol. 116^b S.¹⁶ meue S.P.D.¹⁷ þenkyng P.D.¹⁸ be lyke to follows, P, in marg. 1st corr. S.¹⁹ erased S. om. P.²⁰ euer om. S.P.D.²¹ reryd S.P.D.²² fro þe S.P.D.²³ S.P.D.²⁴ myddyl S.P.D.²⁵ whuche S.P.D.

philysophers, ande a womman þat was called¹ Damarise, ande many² oþer wiþ hem³.

18 1 After⁴ þise Powle wente fro Athenys, ande come vnto⁵ Corynþum. Ande þer he fonde a Iewe, ande hise name was Aquila, þat late come fro Ytalye wiþ Priscille⁶ his wife, for Claudynes⁷ hade biden⁸ þat alle þe Iewes schulde goo oute of Rome: ande vnto⁵ hem he⁹ wente; ande for he was offe þo same crafte þat þei wore of, he dwelled wiþ hem ande wroghte; ande þei were of þo crafte of makyng of tabernacles (or, of cordes ande ropes). Ande he disputed in þo synagoge in iche sabbote¹⁰, ande euermore in his saynge he menged ande sette¹¹ þo name of Iesu, ande he ammonested þe Iewes ande þo Grekes. Ande whanne Sylas ande Tymothe weren comen fro Macedonye, Poule was besy in prechinge, berande wytnes vnto⁵ þo Iewes þat Iesu Criste was. Ande whanne þo Iewes agaynsaide Poule wordes [&]¹² blasphemed⁹, he schoke his cloþes ande saide, ȝoure blode be vpon¹³ ȝoure heued¹⁴, for I am clene of þis: I schal go to þo naciones. 7 Ande he wente fro þeþen¹⁵, ande enterde into þo house of one þat was called¹ Tytus, þo whiche was rightwise ande worshippande God. Ande his howse was ioyned vnto⁵ þo synagoge. 8 Ande Crispus, þat was maister of þo synagoge, trowed vnto¹⁶ God wiþ alle hise howse; ande many of þo¹⁷ men of Corynþi 9 þat harde Poule trowed, ande wore baptizid. Ande God saide¹⁸ by a visione in þo nyghte vnto⁵ Poule, Drede noghte, 10 bot speke, ande be noghte stille; for whi I am wiþ þe, ande none¹⁹ schal be putte to þe þat schal noye þe: for myche 11 folke es to me ande myne in þis cyte. Ande Poule sete þer a ȝhere ande sexe moneþes, techande amonge hem þo worde 12 of God. Ande whanne Gallyo was þe proconsul of Achaye, þo Iewes ros wiþ one herte agaynes Poule, ande ledde hym 13 to²⁰ þo sete of þo domes-man, sayande, þat he þis agaynes

¹ cleped S.P.D. ² om. S.P.D. ³ Epistola follows, C. ⁴ Cm 18^m

in a later hand, C. The xviii chaptvr in a xvith cent. hand, S. ⁵ to S.P.D.

⁶ pryschest P. ⁷ claudyus S.P.D. ⁸ boden S.P.D. ⁹ in marg., C.

¹⁰ halyday S.P.D. ¹¹ fol. 117 S. ¹² S.P.D. ¹³ on S.P.D.

¹⁴ heuedes S.P. ¹⁵ þen S.P. ¹⁶ fol. 53 C. to S.P.D. ¹⁷ of þo om. S.P.

þo om. D. ¹⁸ god seyde repeated in marg. 1st corr. S. ¹⁹ no þing S.P.D.

²⁰ in to S.P.

þo lawe teches men to worshippe God. Ande as Poule¹⁴ biganne to opun his mouþe to speke, Gallyo saide vnto¹ þo² Iewes, ȝhe men, Iewes, if hit wore any wikked þinge or grete mysdede, rightly³ schulde I susteyne (or, suffre) ȝowe. Bot 15 if hit be bot questions of þo worde ande names of ȝoure lawe, auyse ȝoure-seluen, for I wole noghte be iuge of þise⁴. Ande 16 he made hem go⁵ from hise demyng-place. Ande þo Iewes 17 token one Sostynen, þat was prince of þo synagoge, ande þei smote hym bifore hise sete of dome. Ande Gallyo roghte⁶ noghte þeroffe, (ande⁷ toke no kepe þeroffe.) Ande Poule 18 [soþly þat ȝit suffrede many daies]⁸ made his haylsinge to þo⁹ breþer, ande schipped vnto¹ Sirye, & wiþ hym ȝode Priscille ande Aquila, þo whiche Priscille hade dodded his heued; for so hade he vowed. Ande Poule come vnto¹ 19 Ephesum, ande lefte hem þere; ande he enterde into þo synagoge ande disputed wiþ þo Iewes. Ande þo disciples 20 preyde þat he lenger tyme schulde dwelle. Bot he assented noghte, bote bade hem fare wele, ande saide, Efte I schal 21 come to ȝow, if God wole. Ande so he wente fro Ephesum. Ande goande to Cesarye, he haylsed¹⁰ þo chirche þat þore was, 22 ande so he wente¹¹ vnto¹ Antioche. Ande whanne he hade 23 ben þore a certayne tyme, he ȝode his waye, ande wente by ordure þurh þo contree of Galace ande Phrigye, confermande alle þo discipuls. & a Iewe whos name was Apollo, of 24 Alexander borne, an eloquente man ande conyng¹² scriptures, come vnto¹ Ephesum. He þis was tawghte þo waye of God; 25 ande he was feruente in spiritte, ande teched besily þinges þat wore of Iesu Criste; ande onely he knewe þo bapteme of Ioon. He¹³ þis biganne tristely¹⁴ to do¹⁵ in þo synagoge. 26 Ande whanne Priscille ande Aquyla harde hym, þei toke hym vnto¹ hem, ande¹⁶ besily expowned to hym þo waye of God. Ande whanne he wolde¹⁷ go vnto¹ Achaye, þo breþer 27 wrote vnto¹⁸ þo discipuls, þat þei schulde receyue hym: ande

¹ to S.P.D. ² om. S.D. ³ fol. 117^b S. ⁴ þis wordes S.P.D.

⁵ on erasure in different ink, C. ⁶ fol. 53^b C. þouȝt D. ⁷ on erasure, S.

⁷ or S.P.D. ⁸ S.P.D. ⁹ & toke his leue (lyue D) at his S.P.D.

¹⁰ blessed S.P.D. ¹¹ ȝede S.P.D. ¹² in follows, S.P.D. ¹³ & he S.P.

¹⁴ fol. 118 S. ¹⁵ trustely to do twice, P. ¹⁶ fol. 54 C. ¹⁷ þei wolden P.

¹⁸ om. S.P.D.

whanne he come þider, he gafe ande speke myche vnto¹ hem
28 þat trowed; ande gretely he ouercome þo Iewes, opunly
schewande bi scriptures þat Iesu Criste was.

19 1 Ande² hit bifelle, whanne Apollo was at Corynthy, þat
Poule hade gone þo ouer contrees, ande kome vnto¹ Epbesum;
2 ande he fonde summe of þo disciples, ande saide vnto¹ hem,
If þe³ haue taken þo Holygoste trowande? Ande þei sayde
to hym, Bot we haue noghte harde if⁴ þo Holygoste es.
3 Ande Poule saide, In whom þanne ben þe baptised? Ande
4 þei saiden, In þo bapteme of Iohn. Poule saide, Iohn
baptised in bapteme of penaunce þo þuþul, techande, þat
þei schulde trowe in hym þat was to come efter hym, þat es,
5 in Iesu. Ande whanne þei hade harde þis, þei wore baptised
6 in þo name of oure Lorde Iesu Criste. Ande whanne Poule
hade laide on hem hise hende⁵, þo Holygoste come vpon⁶ hem;
7 ande þei speke wiþ tungenes ande prophecyed. Ande alle þo
8 men wore nerehande⁷ twelue. Ande Poule entered into þo
synagogue, ande tristely he speke by þree monythis, disputande
9 ande techande of þo kengdome of God. Ande⁸ for summe
were indurate ande wolde noghte trowe, waryande⁹ þo way
of God bifore þo multitude, he, goande fro hem, departed
þo discipuls, disputande iche daye in þo scole of a tyraunte
10 fro þo houre of sexte¹⁰ to þo houre of tenne. Ande þis he
dide bi twoo ȝere; in so myche þat men þat wonned in Asye
11 harde þo worde of God, boþe þo Iewes ande gentiles. Ande
12 many vertewes did God by þo hende⁵ of Poule: in so myche
þat men broghten sudaries [ande]¹¹ girdels from hise body, ande
layde hem vpon⁶ þo seke, ande þe sekenes wente fro hem,
13 ande þo wikked spirittes wente oute of men¹². Ande summe
of þo exorcistes of þo Iewes þat wente aboute, assayde forto
calle þo name of Iesu vpon⁶ hem þat hade yuel spirittes, &
14 saide, We coniure ȝowe bi Iesu whom Poule preches. Ande
þer wore in a house of a Iewe, þat was prince of prestes, seuen
15 sones þat diden þis. Ande þo wikked spirite¹³ answierande

¹ to S.P.D. ² C^m 19^m in later hand, on erasure, C. The xix c^o in xvith cent. hand, S. ³ we P. ⁴ om. S.P.D. ⁵ honde S.P.D. ⁶ on S.P.D.

⁷ ny honde S.P.D. ⁸ fol. 54^b C. ⁹ cursyng S.P.D. ¹⁰ þe sixþe S.P.D.

¹¹ S.P.D. ¹² hem S.P. ¹³ wicked spirite repeated in marg. 1st corr. S.

saide, Iesu I knewe, ande Poule I knowe¹; bot who² ben
 þe? Ande þo man in whom þo³ fende was lepe to hem,¹⁶
 ande he⁴ hade maisterschippe of boþe, ande was myghtye
 agayne, in so myche þat wonded ande naked þei fledde fro
 þo⁵ house. Ande þis was made knowne vnto⁶ alle þe Iewes¹⁷
 ande gentiles þat dwelled atte Ephesey; ande grete drede felle
 vpon⁷ alle hem, ande⁸ þei loued þo name of oure Lorde Iesu.
 & many of þo trowande⁹ come, schriuande, ande schewande¹⁸
 þer dedes. Ande many alsso¹⁰ þat¹¹ vsed curiostes broghte þer¹⁹
 bokes, ande brente hem bifore alle: ande whanne þei hade
 acounted þo price of hem, þei fonde money of fifty thowsande
 penyes (þat es, so myche wore þei worþe in price). Ande so²⁰
 wexe þo worde of God ande was confermed. Ande whan þise²¹
 wore ended, Poule purposed in spiritte to go vnto¹² Macedonye
 ande Achaye¹³, ande so forto goo vnto⁶ Ierusalem, ande saide
 to hymseluen, þat efter þat I haue ben þore, me bihoues
 to see Rome. Ande he¹⁴ sende two of þoo þat mynisterde²²
 unto⁶ hym, Tymoþe ande Eraste, into Macedonye, ande he
 dwelled vnto⁶ a certayne tyme in Asye. Ande in þat tyme²³
 was grete turbacione of þo waye of God. For one, whos²⁴
 name¹⁵ was Demetrye, þat was a siluer-maker, ande made þo
 thabernacles of þo goddes¹⁶ Dyane of syluer, he gafe vnto⁶ þo
 warke-men grete money, ande called¹⁷ hem togider, ande²⁵
 saide vnto⁶ hem þat wore of þat¹⁸ crafte, 3e men, 3he wyten
 wele þat of þis crafte es oure getynge ande lyuyng. Ande²⁶
 3he seen ande heren, þat noghte onely at Ephesum, bot alsso
 alle þo multitude of Asye, he þis Poule bi his techinges haues
 turned, ande teches, þat þoo ben noghte goddes þat ben made
 wiþ hende¹⁹: ande noghte onely¹⁹ schal oure crafte perische²⁷
 ande be in repreoue to vs; bot alsso þo temple of þo grete
 Dyane, oure goddes, schal be destroyed ande broghte to
 noghte, ande hire mageste schal be vndone, þo whiche alle
 Asie ande alle þo worlde worschippes. Ande whanne þise²⁸

¹ knewe S.P.D. ² what S.P.D. ³ þe wicked S.P.D. ⁴ om. P.

⁵ þe S.P.D. ⁶ to S.P.D. ⁷ on S.P.D. ⁸ fol. 55 C. ⁹ þat troweden
 S.P.D. ¹⁰ om. S.P.D. ¹¹ þat byfore S.P.D. ¹² by S.P.D. ¹³ fol. 119 S.

¹⁴ d in the margin, S. ¹⁵ þe goddesse repeated in the marg. 1st corr. S.

¹⁶ cleded S.P.D. ¹⁷ þe P. ¹⁸ honde S.P.D. ¹⁹ fol. 55b C.

wordes wornen harde, þei wore fulfilled¹ wiþ² ire, ande þei
 29 cryed, sayande, þo grete Dyane of Ephesye. Ande þo cyte
 was fulfilled wiþ confusione: ande wiþ one herte þei made
 an hastines into þo spectacle; ande þore þei toke Gaye ande
 30 Aristarke, men of Macedonye, þo felowes of Poule. Ande
 Poule wolde haue gone into þo puple, ande þo discipuls wolde
 31 noghte suffre hym go³. Ande summe of þo princes of Asye,
 þat wore hise frendes, sente vnto⁴ hym⁵ ande preyed hym⁵ þat
 32 he schulde [not]⁶ sytte atte þo spectacle. Ande summe cried
 ande saide oþerwise; ande þo chirche was confused⁷, ande
 many wiste noghte for whatte cause þei wore comen togider.
 33 Ande þei wiþdrowe Alexander fro þo company, þe Iewes
 puttande hym forþe. Ande Alexander made token of cylence
 wiþ hise honde, in wille forto⁴ schewe hise skille to þo puple.
 34 Ande onone as þei knewe þat he was a Iewe, onone was bot⁸
 as one voice of alle, fully two houres cryande, þo grete Dyane
 35 of Ephesye. Ande whanne þe scribe⁹ hade stilled þo com-
 panyse¹⁰, he saide, ȝhe men of Ephesie, whatte man es þat
 þat knowes noghte þo cytee of Ephesie worschippar of þo
 36 grete Diane, ande of Iouys hire childe? Ande siþen none
 may agaynesay þis, hit bihoues ȝowe to be stille, ande to do
 37 no þinge folily. For ȝe han broghte hider þise men, þat
 noþer are fownden¹¹ giltye, nor blasphemares¹² of ȝoure goddes.
 38 Bot if Demetryus, ande þo warke-men þat ben wiþ hym,
 haue any cause agaynes any, gider hem wiþoute-forþe¹³; ande
 þer¹⁴ ben proconsuls, late hem accuse þem togider bifore
 39 hem. Ande if any oþer þinge be þat ȝhe¹⁵ asche, in þo lawful
 40 chirche hit may be assoyled. Ande we ben in perele to be
 reprehendid of þo sedicione of þis daye, siþen þere es none
 blame-worþi, of whom we may gife skille (or¹⁶, wyte) of þis con-
 course. Ande whanne he hade saide þis, he lefte þo chirche.¹⁷

20 1 Ande¹⁸ efter þo grete noyse was stilled, Poule called¹⁹ þo
 discipuls, ande ammonested hem, ande bade hem fare wele;

¹ *fyllyd* S.D.

² *in* S.P.D.

³ *to goo* S.P.D.

⁴ *to* S.P.D.

⁵⁻⁶ om. S.P.D.

⁶ S.P.D.

⁷ fol. 119^b S.

⁸ *it* S.P.D.

⁹ fol. 56 C.

¹⁰ *cumpanye* S.P.D.

¹¹ *foule* S.P.D.

¹² *blasphemys* S.P.D.

¹³ Cf. *Vulg.* *conventus forenses aguntur.*

¹⁴ om. S.P.D.

¹⁵ *he* P.

¹⁶ *of* P.

¹⁷ *epistola* follows, C. ¹⁸ *Cm 20^m* in a later hand, in marg. C.
the xx^c in a *xvith* cent. hand, S. ¹⁹ *cleped* S.P.D.

ande he wente forþe forto go to Macedonye. Ande whanne ² he hade gone þo¹ contrees, ande hade ammoneste hem wiþ myche gostly speche², he come vnto³ Grece, where⁴, whan he ³ hade ben þree monythes ande schulde hafe schipped into Cyrie, þo Iewes wayted hym⁵; ande he hade cownseile of⁶ summe⁷ to⁸ turne agayne by Macedonye. Ande wiþ hym ⁴ felyschipte Sosy⁹, þo fadire of Pirry of Beroens, ande of men offe Thessalonye Aristarcus, ande Secunde, ande Gayus, ande Derbeus, & Tymothe; ande of men of Asye, Titicus ande Trophimus. þise wente bifore, ande abode atte Troade. ⁵ Ande we schipped efter þoo days of aȝym from Philippis, ande ⁶ we come vnto³ hem to¹⁰ Troade in fyue days; ande þere we dwelled seuen days. Ande in one daye of þo sabbote, whanne ⁷ we come forto³ breke brede, Poule disputed wiþ hem. Ande for þat he schulde go forþe in þo morneynge, he drowe olonge hise worde vnto þo¹¹ mydnyghte; ande many laumpes wore ⁸ in þo cynacle¹², where we were gadired. Ande a ȝenge man, ⁹ whos name was Eutyce, sete abouen vpon¹³ þo wyndowe. Ande whanne Poule [hade]¹⁴ longe disputed, ande he was in heuy slepe, he¹⁵ felle fro þo thridde cenakil downe, ande was borne vppe ande broghte deade. Ande whanne Poule come ¹⁰ vnto³ hym, he laye vpon¹³ hym, ¹⁶ ande he clipped hym¹⁶, ande saide, Bes¹⁷ noghte droued¹⁸; for his sowle es in hym. Ande ¹¹ þanne Poule ȝede, ande breke brede ande ete; ande whan he hade ynowghe spoken, vnto þo day was comen, so he wente forþe hise waye. Ande þo¹⁹ men þat were þer broghte þo ¹² childe Eutyce¹¹ lifande, ande þei wore gretely comforþed. Ande we wente into²⁰ a¹¹ schippe ande schipped into Asson, ¹³ for þer schulde we fynde Poule: for so ordeyned he, forto make hise way bi þo londe. Ande whanne he fonde vs, ¹⁴ alssone²¹ fro þeþen²² he²³ wente vnto³ Mitylene. Ande fro ¹⁵

¹ om. D. ² *þylke* in marg. 1st corr. S. ³ *þylke* P. ⁴ ² *spekyng* S.P.D.

³ to S.P.D. ⁴ fol. 120 S. ⁵ fol. 56^b C. ⁶ between of and to erasure with some illegible letters in a later hand, C. ⁷ in marg. C.

⁸ þat he schulde S.P.D. ⁹ *sofy* P. *Vulg.* Sopater Pyrrhi Beroensis.

¹⁰ of S.P.D. ¹¹ om. S.P.D. ¹² *senake* S.P. ¹³ on S.P.D. ¹⁴ S.P.D.

¹⁵ & he S.P.D. ¹⁶⁻¹⁶ om. S.P.D. ¹⁷ *be ȝe* S.P.D. ¹⁸ *troublid* S.P.D.

¹⁹ fol. 57 C. ²⁰ in S.P.D. ²¹ in *asson* S.P.D. ²² *þeyn* S.P. ²³ þen D.

²³ we S.P.D.

þeþen¹ we schipped, ande² þe nexte daye we come to³
 Contrachye⁴; ande þo toþer daye we hauende at Samum;
 16 & in þo toþer daye we comen vnto⁵ Milet. For Poule
 purposed forto ouerschippe Ephesum, þat he schulde noghte
 be taried⁶ in Asye. For he hastud, þat, if hit wore possibul,
 he myghte make þo day of Pentecoste atte Ierusalem.
 17 Ande fro Milet he sente vnto⁵ Ephesum, ande he clepud þo
 18 moste worþi of þo chirche. Ande whanne þei were comen
 vnto⁵ hym, ande þei ande he wore togider, he saide vnto⁵
 hem, ȝhe knowe how I hafe ben wiþ ȝowe in alle tymie⁷, fro
 19 þe firste daye in þo whiche I enterde into Asye, ande how
 I haue serued to God in alle mekenes, ande myldnes, & teres,
 ande temptaciones þat han fallen vnto⁵ me of þo waytynges
 20 of þo Iewes: ande how I haue noghte wiþdrawne fro ȝowe
 any profitabul þinge þat ne⁸ I haue schewed vnto⁹ ȝowe,
 21 ande tawghte ȝowe opunly & bi ȝoure howses, wytnesande to
 þo Iewes [ande þo folke]¹⁰ into God penaunce, ande faiþe into
 22 oure Lorde Iesu Criste¹¹. Ande lo¹², I, þat am nowe bownden
 in spiritte, go into Ierusalem, noghte knowande what schal
 23 bifalle to me in hit, bot þat þo Holygoste wytnes to me
 be alle þo cytes, sayande¹³, þat bondes ande tribulaciones
 24 abiden me in Ierusalem. Bot I drede no þinge of þise, nor I
 make my life more preciouse þanne meselfe, whileste¹⁴ þat
 I ende my course ande mynistrynge of þo worde, þat I haue
 taken of oure Lorde Iesu Criste, forto¹⁵ wytnes þo gospelle of
 25 þo grace of God. Ande lo, nowe I wote þat ȝhe schal nomore
 see my face, ȝhe alle, bi whom I haue passed ande preached þo
 26 kengedame of God. Ande þerfore I wytnes ȝowe þis daye,
 27 þat I am clene fro þo blode of ȝowe alle. Forwhi I haue
 noghte letted, þat ne⁸ I haue schewed alle þo counseyle of God
 28 to ȝowe. Takes kepe þerfore vnto⁵ ȝoure-seluen ande to alle
 þo flokke, in þo whiche flokke þo Holygoste haues sette ȝowe
 bischoppes, forto guuerne his chirche, þe whiche he boghte
 29 bi hise owne blode. For I wote þat efter my disses schal

¹ þeyn S.P. þen D. ² in S.P.D. ³ fol. 120^b S. ⁴ Vulg. contra
 Chium. ⁵ to S.P.D. ⁶ trayed S.P. ⁷ tymes S.P. ⁸ I ne S.P.D.
⁹ fol. 57^b C. ¹⁰ S.P.D. ¹¹ om. S.P.D. ¹² also P.
¹³ witnessyng to me precedes, S.P.D. ¹⁴ whylys S.P.D. ¹⁵ fol. 121 S.

enter rauischande wolues¹ amonge² ȝowe, ande schal noghte³ spare vnto⁴ þo flokke of God ; ande of ȝoure-seluen schal rise 30 men, spekande mys[turned]⁵ þinges, þat þei may lede disciples efter hem. Wharfore bes ware ande⁶ waker, ande holdes in 31 mynde þat bi thre ȝere nyghte ande daye I cessed noghte wiþ teeres monestande icheone⁷ of ȝowe. Ande nowe I komaunde 32 ȝowe vnto⁴ God, ande to þe worde of his grace, þo whiche es myghty to edifye, ande forto gife heritage in alle hise halowes⁸. Siluer⁹, nor¹⁰ golde, or cloþe¹¹ þat ȝoures was, I 33 haue noghte ȝernede, ȝhe wote wele : forwhi þat was nede to 34 me ande vnto þoo þat were wiþ me, þise hende han mynsterde¹¹. Alle I haue¹² schewed vnto⁴ ȝowe, ¹³þat þoo þat þus 35 traueylen hit bihoues to receyue þo infirme (or, þo febul), ande alssو forto þenke on¹³ þo worde of oure Lorde Iesu, þo whiche¹⁴ he saide, þat hit es more blessed to¹⁵ gife þanne forto⁴ take. Ande whanne he hade saide alle¹⁶ þise, he 36 kneled ande preyed wiþ hem alle. Ande alle made a grete 37 wepinge, ande þei felle vpon¹⁷ hise nekke¹⁸, ande kissed hym, sorowande moste¹⁹ for þo worde þat he saide, þat þei schulde 38 noghte see more his face. Ande þe[i]⁵ broghte hym vnto⁴ þo schippe.

Ande²⁰ whanne we schipped ande were wiþdrawen²¹ fro **21** þer eyghne, righte course we come vnto⁴ Choum, ande þe nexte daye vnto⁴ Rodum, ande fro þeþen²² to Patharam : ande 2 whanne we haden fownden þere a schippe þat wolde go into Fenyce, we wente into þat schippe. Ande whanne we 3 appered vnto⁴ Ciper, we lefte hit vpon¹⁷ þo lefte honde, ande schipped into Sirie, ande we come vnto⁴ Tyre ; for þer schulde oure schippe be descharged. Ande þere, whanne we fonde 4 discipuls, we dwelled þere seuen dais : þo whiche discipuls

¹ woluys repeated in marg. 1st corr. S. ² in to S.P.D. ³ fol. 58 C.
⁴ to S.P.D. ⁵ S.P.D. ⁶ ware ande om. S.P. ⁷ eche S.P.
⁸ halwyd S.P.D. ⁹ But syluer S.P.D. ¹⁰ & S.P.D. ¹¹⁻¹¹ of noone of ȝow coueytyd I, as ȝe self wyten, ffor to nede of þinges þt I had & to hem þt weryn wiþ me mynystreden þese hondys S.P.D. ¹² alle þese þinges haue I S.P.D. ¹³⁻¹³ for men þt traueylen þus moten take seke men & haue mynde of S.P.D. ¹⁴ for S.P.D. ¹⁵ more to S.P.D. ¹⁶ om. S.P.D. ¹⁷ on S.P.D. ¹⁸ nekke of poule S.P.D. ¹⁹ fol. 121^b S. ²⁰ Cm 21^m in a later hand in the margin, C. xxvi c^o in a xvith century hand, S. ²¹ fol. 58^b C.
²² þen S.P.D.

saide to Poule bi spiritte, þat he schulde noghte go to
 5 Ierusalem. Ande whanne þo seuen dais wore gone, we wente
 forþe; ande alle þo discipuls, wiþ þer wyues ande childer,
 ledde vs vnto¹ we [come]² wiþouten þo cyte: & we kneled
 6 vpon³ þo banke of þo water, ande preyde; ande whanne⁴ we
 hade⁵ made oure haylsyng togider⁶, we wente into þo schippe,
 7 ande þei wente agayne vnto hers⁷. Ande we in opun
 saylynge descended fro Tyre vnto⁷ Tholomaydam; ande we
 8 haylsed⁸ oure breþer, ande dwelled with hem a daye. Ande
 vpon þo⁹ toþer daye we come vnto⁷ Cesarie; ande we enterde
 into¹⁰ þo howse of Philippe þo euangeliste, þo whiche was
 9 one of þo seuen, ande we dwelled wiþ hym. Ande he hade
 10 foure doghter¹¹, virgynes, þat were prophetes. Ande whanne
 we haden dwelled þere bi summe dais, one come from þo
 Iewry, þo whiche was a prophete, ande his name Agab¹².
 11 He, whanne he come vnto¹³ vs, he toke þo girdel of Poule,
 ande bonde Poules hende¹⁴ ande hise fete, ande saide, þis sais
 þo Holygoste, þus schal þo Iewes þat ben in Ierusalem bynde
 þo man þat owes þis girdel, ande þei schal bitake hym into
 12 þe hende¹⁵ of nacyons. Ande whanne we harde þis, we ande
 þoo þat wore of þat place preyde hym þat he schulde noghte
 13 go vnto⁷ Ierusalem. Ande thanne ansuered Poule ande saide,
 What done þe, þat þe wepe ande disese myne hertte? I
 am redy noghte onely to be bownden, bot alssso forto dighe in
 14 Ierusalem for þo name of oure Lorde Iesu Criste. Ande
 [whanne] we myghte¹⁶ make no skille vnto hym to holde hym
 fro Ierusalem, we cessed, & saide, þo wille of God¹⁷ be done.
 15 Ande efter þise dais¹⁸ we¹⁹ wore redy, ande wente into Ieru-
 16 salem. Ande summe of þo discipuls come with vs fro Cesarye,
 bringande with hem Iasone, wiþ whom we wore harbarowed,
 17 þo whiche was a man of Ciper & an olde discipul. Ande

¹ *tul* with the *u* changed to *y* by a later hand, S. *til* P. *to* D. ² S.P.D.

³ *on* S.P.D. ⁴ *om.* P. ⁵⁻⁵ *taken leeue eche at opur* S.P.D.

⁶ *to þeyres* S.P.D. ⁷ *to* S.P.D. ⁸ *saluyd* S.P.D. ⁹ *þat* S.P.D.

¹⁰ *om.* S.P.D. ¹¹ *deghter* (?), fol. 59 C. ¹² *agabbo* P, in S. *bo* inserted
above the line. ¹³ *to* S.P.D. fol. 122 S. ¹⁴ *hondys* S.P. *honde* D.

¹⁵ *hond* S.P.D. ¹⁶ *myȝte not* D. ¹⁷ *oure lord* P., in marg., 1st corr. S.

¹⁸ *dayis* with *is* expunged, D. *day* S.P. ¹⁹ *added above the line*, 1st corr. S. *om.* D.

whanne we come vnto¹ Ierusalem, gladly receyued vs þo
breþer. Ande on þo secunde daye wente Poule² wiþ us vnto¹ 18
Iame, ande alle þe eldars wore gadired togider. Ande whan¹⁹
he hade hailsed³ hem, he tolde vnto¹ hem þat God hade done
by his mynistrynge in nacyons. Ande⁴ þei, whanne þei 20
harde þis, þei loued God, ande þei saide vnto¹ hym, Sees þow,
broþer, how many [þowsande]⁵ of þe Iewes trowden; ande
alle ben filowers of þo lawe; ande þei hafe harde of þe, þat 21
þow teches discencyone (or, diuerste) fro Moises of þo Iewes
þo whiche are bi nacyons: þat hem owes noghte to circum-
cide þer childer, nor forto¹ go⁶ as þei ben wonte. What²²
þanne⁷? a multitude⁸ soþely schal be gaderde togider, for þei
schal here þat þow erte comyn. Do þerfore þat we saye: 23
Wiþ vs ben foure men þat has on hem [v]owe⁹; take þise, 24
ande halow þe wiþ hem, ande gife¹⁰ þow in hem þat þei
schauë þer heuedes: ande alle¹¹ schal knowe, þat what þei
haue harde of þe ben fals; bot alssو þei¹¹ schal¹² knowe, þat
þow gos ande kepes þo lawe. Ande of þoo þat trowen of þo 25
nacyons, we haue writen, demande þat þei abstene hem fro
þinge þat es sacrificed vnto¹ idoles, ande fro blode, ande fro
beeste þat es chokud in blode, & fro fornycacyone. Thanne¹³ 26
Poule toke þise men, ande whanne he was pur[ifie]de¹⁴ þo
nexte daye¹⁵ efter he wente¹⁶ wiþ hem into þo tempul, schew-
ande þo fulfillynge of þo dais of þo purificacyone, vnto¹ þat
offeringe wore offerde for icheone of hem. Ande whan¹⁷ þo 27
seuen dais wore ended, þo Iewes þat wore of Asie, whanne þei
see hym in þo temple, þei stired¹⁸ alle þo puple, ande keste¹⁹
þer hondes on hym criande, ȝhe men of Israel, helpes: þis es 28
þo man þat teches in iche place alle maner of men agayne þo
puple, þo¹⁹ lawe, ande þis place²⁰: & alssо he haues broghte
þo gentiles into þo temple, ande has filed þis holy place. For²¹
þei see one Trophyme in þo cyte, þo whiche was a man of

¹ to S.P.D. ² fol. 59^b C. ³ salowyd S.P.D. ⁴ & whan þei had

herd S.P. ⁵ P. þowsund in marg. 1st corr. S. ⁶ above the line, C.

⁷ þerfore is S.P. ⁸ fol. 122^b S. ⁹ S.P.D. nowe C. ¹⁰ put S.P.D.

¹¹⁻¹¹ om. S.P.D. ¹² alle schal P. alle in marg. 1st corr. S. ¹³ þat D.;

þan on erasure, 1st corr. S. ¹⁴ S.P.D. purueyde C. ¹⁵ fol. 60 C.

¹⁶ ȝede S.P.D. ¹⁷ meuyd S.P.D. ¹⁸ putte S.P.D. ¹⁹ & þe S.P.

²⁰ om. S.P.

Ephes, with hym, ande þei supposed þat Poule hade broghte
 30 hym into þo temple. Ande alle þe cyte was stired¹, ande
 grete concourse of þo puple was made: ande þei toke Poule
 ande drowe hym wiþouten þo temple: & onone wore þo
 31 ȝhates sparred². Ande whileste³ þei wore aboute forto slee
 hym, worde come vnto⁴ þo tribune of þo compayne, þat alle
 Ierusalem es confonded⁵. (Tribune was he called⁶ þat hade
 32 a þowsande knyghtes at his ledinge.) Ande he toke hise
 knyghtes ande centuryons onon, ande wente⁷ vnto⁴ Ieru
 salem: ande whan þei see þo tribune ande þo knyghtes, þei
 33 cessed forto smyte Poule. Panne þo tribune toke⁸ Poule,
 ande bade þat he schulde be bownden wiþ twoo chenys, ande
 34 asched what he was, ande whatte þat he hade done. Ande
 diuersite of cryyng was amoung⁹ þo company, for summe
 saide one, ande summe an-oþer. Ande whanne þo tribune
 myghte noghte knowe þo soþe for¹⁰ grete noyce, he bade þat
 35 he schulde be ledde into⁴ þo castels¹¹. Ande whanne he
 come vnto⁴ þo grees, bifelle, þat Poule was¹² borne¹³ of þo
 36 knyghtes for þo strenkthe of þo puple. For grete multitude
 37 of þo puple filowed, criande, Undo hym (or, slee hym). Ande
 whanne Poule biganne to come into þo castels¹¹, he saide
 vnto⁴ þo tribune, If hit be leffulle þat I speke sumwhat vnto⁴
 þe? Ande þo tribune saide, Kannes þow speke of Grewe?
 38 Arte þou noghte, he saide, þo Egipcyene, þat bifore þise dais
 raysed grete noyce, ande ledde into¹⁴ deserte foure þowsande
 of men sicaryens? (Sicariens wore men þat maden fauchons
 39 or lytel swerdes.) Ande Poule saide vnto⁴ hym, I soþely am
 a Iewe, of Tharse of Cilyce, a buriase of a cyte þat es noghte
 vnknowne: I prey þe þat I may speke vnto þo puple.
 40 Ande¹⁵ whanne þo puple¹⁶ gafe hym leue forto⁴ speke,
 Poule, stondande in þo grees, wiþ hise honde he bekkende
 vnto⁴ þo puple; ande¹⁷ whanne grete¹⁸ stillynge was, he speke

¹ meuyd S.P.D. ² closyd S.P.D. ³ whyles S.P.D. ⁴ to S.P.D.

⁵ fol. 123 S. ⁶ clepyd S.P.D. ⁷ ȝede S.P.D. ⁸ fol. 60^b C. ⁹ in S.P.D.

¹⁰ for þe P. ¹¹ castel S.P.D. ¹² he was in marg. 1st corr. S; in text, P.

¹³ up follows, P; above the line, 1st corr. S. ¹⁴ into þe S.P.D.

¹⁵ Chap. xxii. begins here in all the MSS. xxvii c^o in a late hand, S,
 erasure in marg., C. C^m xxii P. ¹⁶ tribune S.P.D. Vulg. ille.

¹⁷ C^m 22^m in marg. later hand, C. ¹⁸ þe gr. P.

in þo tunge of Ebewe, ande¹ saide, ȝhe men, breþer ande ²²
 fadirs, heres what skille I schewe vnto² ȝowe. Ande whanne ²
 þei harde þat³ he speke in þo tunge of Ebewe, ȝei helde hem
 þo more stille: ande he saide, I am a man, a Iewe borne in ³
 Tharse of Silice, ande norisched in þis cyte binside þo fete of
 Gamalyel. I was tawghte ande lernud⁴ efter þe verite of my
 fadires⁵ lawe, ande filowar of þo lawe as ȝhe alle ben todaye:
 ande þis waye I pursewed vnto þo dead⁶, byndande⁷ ande ⁴
 bitakande to prisones men ande wymmen. As þo prince of ⁵
 prestes beres wytnes vnto² me, ande alle þo mooste worþi: of
 whom I toke epistels ande letters, ande wente vnto² þo⁸
 breþer into Damaske forto bringe hem from þeþen⁹ bownden
 into Ierusalem, þat ȝei schulde be punysched. Ande hit ⁶
 bifelle, as I wente, ande¹⁰ neghed vnto² Damaske, ¹¹ymiddes
 þo way¹¹, sodenly vmschone¹² me grete lighte fro heuen. Ande ⁷
 [fallande]¹³ vnto² þo erthe I harde a voyce sayande vnto² me,
 Saule, Saule, wharto pursewes þow me? Ande I ansuered, ⁸
 Who erte þou, Lorde? Ande he saide vnto² me, I am Iesu
 of Nazareth, whom þat¹⁴ þow pursewes. Ande þoo þat wore ⁹
 wiþ me seen lighte, bot ȝei harde noghte his voice þat speke
 wiþ me. & I saide, What schal I do, Lorde? Ande he saide ¹⁰
 vnto² me, Rise, ande go into Damaske; ande þer schal be
 saide vnto² þe of alle þinges þat¹⁵ þe bihoues to do. & ¹¹
 whanne I myghte noghte se for clerte of þat lyghte, I was
 ledde bi þo¹⁶ honde of my¹⁶ felowes, ande so I kome vnto²
 Damaske. Ande a¹⁷ man whos name was Ananye, he bi þo ¹²
 lawe hade wytnes of alle þo¹⁴ Iewes, þat dwelled þore, ande he ¹³
 come to me, ande¹⁸ seid to me, Saule broþer, biholde ande se.
 Ande I in þo same houre bihelde vpon¹⁹ hym. Ande he ¹⁴
 saide, þo²⁰ God of oure fadires haues bifore-ordeyned þe forto
 knowe hise wille, ²¹& forto see hise rightwise²¹, ande forto here
 hise voyce of hise mouþe. For þou schalt be wytnes of hym ¹⁵
 vnto² alle men of þo¹⁴ þinges þat þow haues sene ande harde.

¹ fol. 123^b S.² to S.P.D.³ fol. 61 C.⁴ leryd S.P.D.⁵ fader S.P.D.⁶ dep S.P.D.⁷ y bownde S.P.D.⁸ om. D.⁹ þen

S.P.D.

¹⁰ I S.P.¹¹⁻¹¹ in myddil of þe day S.P.D.¹² byschone S.P.D.¹³ fallynge S.P.D.¹⁴ om. S.P.D.¹⁵ what S.P.¹⁶ fol. 61^b C.¹⁷ fol. 124 S.¹⁸ ande seid to in different ink, on erasure, C.¹⁹ on S.P.D.²⁰ erased S.

om. P.

²¹⁻²¹ om. S.P.D.

16 Ande nowe, wharto taries þowe? Rise, ande be baptised¹,
 and wasche þi synnes, ande calle² vponne³ hise name þat þus
 17 haues schewed vnto⁴ þe. Ande hit bifelle, þat, whanne I
 turned agayne into Ierusalem ande preyde in þo temple, þat
 18 I was stonyed in mynde; ande me þoghte I harde hym
 sayande vnto⁴ me, Haste þe, ande go oute swiftly⁵ of Ieru-
 salem, for þei schal noghte receyue þo⁶ wytnessinge of me.
 19 & I saide, Lorde, þei knowne þat I am he þat sperred⁷ in
 prisone & betty bi þo synagoge⁸ hem þat trowed⁹ in þe:
 20 ande whanne þo blode of Stephyn þat was þi witnes was
 schedde, I was þore, ande assented vnto⁴ hise slaughte; ande
 21 I kepped þo cloþes of hem þat slowe hym. Ande he saide
 22 vnto⁴ me, Go, forto alle nacyons I schal sende þe¹⁰. þo
 compaþye harde hym vnto⁴ þis worde, ande þei lifte vppe þer
 voice, ande cried, Undo hym (or¹¹, delyuer hym) oute of þo
 23 erthe: for hit es noghte leffulle þat he schal life. Ande
 whanne þei maked þis crye, ande keste forþe þer cloþes, ande
 24 smote vppe pouder into þo ayre, þo tribune bade to¹² lede
 hym into þo castels, ande forto bete hym wiþ scourges, ande
 forto¹³ tourement, þat he myghte wyte for what cause suche
 25 criyng was made agayne hym. Ande whanne þei hade
 streyned hym in þoo¹² bondes, Poule saide vnto⁴ þo centurione
 þat stode bi hym, Is hit leffulle vnto⁴ ȝowe so forto scourge
 26 ande bete a man Romayne þat es noghte dampned? Ande
 whanne þo centurio harde þis, he wente vnto⁴ þo Tribune,
 ande saide vnto² hym, What schalte þow do? þis man es
 27 a Romayne. & þo tribune come vnto⁴ hym ande saide¹⁴, Say
 28 me if þow be a Romayne. Ande he saide, ȝhe. Ande þo
 Tribune saide, Lyghtly sais þou þat þow erte a buriase of
 Rome; I haue gotten þis cyte¹⁵ wiþ myche money. Ande
 29 Poule saide, Ande I am borne Romayne. Ande onone þoo¹⁶
 þat schulde hafe tourmented hym wente fro hym; ande þo

¹ baptizest P.

² clepe S.P.D.

³ on S.P.D.

⁴ to S.P.D.

⁵ schyftely P.

⁶ þi S.P.D.

⁷ closyd S.P.D.

⁸ synagogys S.P.D.

⁹ þat trowed expunged follows, S.

¹⁰ fol. 62 C.

¹¹ and S.P.D.

¹² om. S.P.D.

¹³ fol. 124^b S.

to S.P.D.

¹⁴ seyde to hym S.P.D.

¹⁵ cytee crossed through with borcheschep in marg. 1st corr. S. burscheschep P.

¹⁶ þo ilke S.P.

tribune dredde, after þat he harde þat he was a Romayne,
ande for he hade so bownden hym.

Ande¹ þo day after þo Tribune wolde knowe certaynly² 30
for what cause he was accused of þo Iewes. He lowsed hym,
ande called togider³ þo prestes ande alle þo cownseile, ande
broghte forþe Poule, ande sette hym amonge hem. Ande 1 **23**
Poule, lokande vnto⁴ þo cownseile, saide, 3he men, breþer, I in
alle gode conscience hafe lifed bifore God vnto þis daye.
Ande Ananye, þo prince of prestes, bad to þoo þat stode 2
nere⁵ hym forto smyte hise mowþe. þanne⁶ sayde Poule 3
vnto⁴ hym, þow⁷ wall whited⁸, Godde schal strike þe. Ande
þou syttande demes me after þo lawe, ande agaynes þe lawe
þow biddes þat I be smyten. Ande þoo þat stoden by 4
saiden⁹ vnto⁴ Poule, Waries¹⁰ þow þo souereyne preste¹¹?
Ande Poule saide, I¹² wiste noghte, breþer, þat he was prince 5
of prestes. For¹³ hit es writen, þow schalte noghte warye¹⁴
þo prince of þi flokke¹⁵. Ande whanne Poule knewe¹⁶ þat one 6
partye of þoo þat wore gadired þer was of þo Pharisens, ande
an-þer of þo¹⁷ Saducens, he cried in þo cownseyle, 3he men,
breþer¹⁸, I am a Pharisene, þo sone of a Pharisene, of þo hope
ande of þo resurreccyone I am demed. Ande whanne he hade 7
saide þise, onone¹⁹ was made a²⁰ discencyone [bitwixe]²¹ þo
Pharisens ande þo¹⁷ Saducens, ande so þo multitude was
diuersed ande twynned. þo Saducens saide, þat þere schulde 8
no resurreccyone be, ande þat þer was nouþer awngel nor²²
spiritte: ande þo Pharisens saide þo reuerce þat boþe þise
was. Ande grete criyng was made: ande sum of þo Pharisenes 9
faughte, sayande, We fynde none²³ yuel in þis man: what
þofe²⁴ a spirytte hafe spoken vnto⁴ hym, or an²⁵ awngel?

¹ in marg. y⁶ xxiii. 9⁹ in a xvith cent. hand, S. C^m xxiii P. ² more c.
S.P. ³ fol. 62^b S. ⁴ to S.P.D. ⁵ ny³ S.P.D. ⁶ C^m 23 in marg.

in a later hand, C. ⁷ if þow C, om. S.P. ⁸ if (crossed through) þou D.

⁸ whithyt wall (on erasure, 1st corr.) wyte (crossed through) S. wyte wel P.

⁹ seyden (on erasure, 1st corr. S.), follows Poule, S.P. om. D. ¹⁰ corsest
P.D., in marg. 1st corr. S. ¹¹ prest of god P. of god in marg. S.

¹² erased; inserted after not, S. ¹³ fol. 125 S. ¹⁴ blank space of 4 in. P.

cursest on erasure in a later hand, S. ¹⁵ folke S.P.D. ¹⁶ in marg. C.

¹⁷ om. S.P.D. ¹⁸ & br. S.P.D. ¹⁹ on- above the line, in different ink, C.

²⁰ om. S.P. ²¹ S.P. bytwixte D. byfore C. ²² ne S.P. ²³ fol. 63 C.

²⁴ ȝif S.P.D. ²⁵ eny S.P.D.

10 Ande whanne grete discencyone was amonges hem, þo tribune dredde hym þat Poule schulde be alle todriuen¹ amonge hem; ande he bade knyghtes to goo ande take hym fro myddes of hem, ande forto lede hym into þo castels².
 11 Ande in þo nyghte efter Criste stode bi hym, ande saide, Be stedfaste, for as þow haueste wytnessed of me in Ierusalem, so
 12 bihoues þe to wytnes at Rome. Ande whanne daye was comen, summe of þo Iewes gadured hem togider, ande made a vowe amonge hem, sayande, þat þei schulde nouþer³ ete nor
 13 drinke vnto⁴ þei hade slayne Poule. Ande þei wore mo þanne fourety men þat made þis coniuracyone ande þis oþe.
 14 þise men ȝode to þo princes of prestes ande þo eldars, ande sayde, We han made a vowe, þat we schal nouþer⁵ ete nor⁶
 15 drinke to⁷ we haue slayne Poule. þerfore make ȝhe knowne vnto⁸ þo tribune wiþ þo cownsel, þat he bringe hym forþe vnto⁹ vs as we schulde knowe more certaynly of hym: ande
 16 we, or he come to vs, ben redy forto slee hym. þis harde a childe þat was Poule sister sone; he come into þo castels¹⁰
 17 ande tolde Poule of þis. Ande Poule called vnto¹¹ hym one of þe centuryons, ande saide, Lede þis childe to þo tribune,
 18 for he haues sumwhat to telle vnto¹² hym. Ande he toke hym, ande ledde hym to þo tribune, ande saide, Poule þat es bownden preyde me to bringe þis childe vnto¹³ þe, for he
 19 haues to speke wiþ þe. Ande þo tribune toke þo hande of þo childe, ande wente wiþ hym biside, ande saide vnto¹⁴ hym,
 20 What haues þow to¹⁵ telle vnto¹⁶ me? Ande he saide, þo Iewes han¹⁷ accorded to preye þe, þat þow bringe forþe to
 inorne Poule into þo conseyl, as if þei wolde wyte more
 21 wyterly¹⁸ of hym. Bot trowe hem noghte: for moo þanne fourty men lyne in wayte for hym, þo whiche¹⁹ han made a vowe, nouþer to ete nor drinke to²⁰ þei²¹ haue slayne hym: ande now ben þei redy, ande abiden þi biheste ande þi wille.
 22 Ande þo²² tribune lete þis childe go, ande bade hym þat he schulde telle vnto²³ none þat he hade made þis knowne vnto²⁴

¹ to ryfyn S.P.D.² castel S.P.³ neyþer S.P.D.⁴ to S.P.D.⁵ neyþer P. fol. 125^b S.⁶ no P.⁷ tyl S.P.D.⁸ castel S.P.D.⁹ fol. 63^b C; om. S.P.D.¹⁰ for to S.P.D.¹¹ beþ S.P.D.¹² sykyrlyS.P.D. ¹³ whulke S.D.¹⁴ tul S.P.D.¹⁵ þei sle hym S.P.D.¹⁶ om. P.

hym. Ande he called two¹ centurions, ande saide to hem, ²³ Makes redy two hundredth knyghtes forto go vnto² Cesarye, ande seuenty horse-men, ande spere-men two hundredth, fro þo þridde houre of þo nyghte; ande make redy þour bestes, ²⁴ þat þe may sette Poule on one ande lede saufe³ vnto Felix þo mayer⁴, ande wrote a letter in þis maner of wordes: ²⁵ Claudius Lysias to gode Felix gretes wele (or, ȝernes⁵ hele). ²⁶ þis man þat was taken of þe Iewes⁶, ande in poynte to be ²⁷ slayne of hem, I⁷, in þo mene tyme comande, toke hym fro þer hende⁸, for I knewe þat he was a Romayn. Ande for ²⁸ I wolde knowe þo cause þat þei keste agayne hym, I ledde hym into þer⁹ counseyle. And I fonde þat he was accused of ²⁹ þo questions of þer lawe: bot I fonde hym no þinge worþi þo deþe nor þat bere cryme vnto² þo Iewes. Ande whanne ³⁰ hit was tolde me of þo waytynges þat þei ordeyned agayne hym, I sende hym vnto² þe, ande biddande vnto² þe accusars þat þei telle þer⁹ pleynte bifore þe. Ande þo knyghtes, as ³¹ hit was boden¹⁰ to hem, þei toke Poule, ande ledde hym into Antipatridem. Ande þo toþer day þei lefte þer þer¹¹ horses¹² ³² forto² go wiþ hym, ande þei ȝode vnto² þo castels. Ande ³³ whanne þei wore comen vnto² Cesarie, ande hade gifen þe letter vnto² þo mayre¹³, þei sette bifore hym Poule. Ande ³⁴ whanne he hade redde þo letter, ande asched of what contre he was; ande whanne he knewe þat he was of Cylyce, he ³⁵ saide, I schal here þe whan þine¹⁴ accusars comen. Ande he bade kepe hym in þo mote-halle of Herowde (þo place þere Heroude demed).

Ande¹⁵ efter fwe dais come þo prince of prestes Anany 24 with summe of þo elders, and wiþ one Tertullo, an orator (þat es, a¹⁶ motar or aduoket); þise wente vnto² þe maire¹³ agaynes Poule. Ande whanne Poule was sommunde, ² Tertullus biganne to accuse Poule, ande saide vnto² þe mayre¹³, Siþen we ben in meke¹⁷ pece bi þe, ande many þinges

¹ to P. ² to S.P.D. ³ hym faste S.P. ⁴ fol. 126 S. marye P.

⁵ desyref S.P.D. ⁶ fol. 64 C. ⁷ & S.P.D. ⁸ honde S.P.D. ⁹ þe S.P.D.

¹⁰ bedyn S.P.D. ¹¹ om. S.P. ¹² hors S.P.D. ¹³ marye P. ¹⁴ þi S.P.D.

¹⁵ in marg. Cm²⁴ in a later hand, C. þe xxviii c^o in a xvith century hand, S.

¹⁶ fol. 64^b S. ¹⁷ muche S.P.D.

3 ben correctud by þi prouidence, euermore¹, gode Felix, we
 4 han receyued þise wiþ alle dedis of þankes. Ande þat I no
 5 lenger tarye þe², I prey þe, here þis³ for þi godenes. We
 haue fownden þis wikked man, ande styrande sedicione vnto⁴
 alle þo Iewes in alle þo worlde, ande autor of þo sedicione of
 6 þo sechte⁵ of Nazarens: ande oure temple has he⁶ ben aboute
 forto⁴ file. Ande whanne we haden taken hym, we wolde
 7 haue iuged hym after oure lawe. Ande þo tribune Lysias
 kome, and toke [hym]⁷ oute of our hende⁸ with grete
 8 strenkthe, ande bade hise accusars come vnto⁴ þe, of whom
 þow may knowe, demande of alle þise, of þo whiche we
 9 accusen hym. Ande þo Iewes saiden alssو þat þus hit was.
 10 Ande þo mayre made token to Poule to speke, and Poule
 ansuered, Of many þere I þat haue knowne þe iuge vnto⁴
 þis flokke⁹, [in a good wille I]⁷ schal make satisfaccyon for
 11 me bifore þe: þow may wele knowe þat no moo days ben
 12 vnto⁴ me bot¹⁰ twelfe siþen I come fro Ierusalem. Ande in
 þo temple þei han noghte fownden any disputande wiþ me or
 elles makande¹¹ any concourse of company, nouþer in þo
 13 temple, nor in þo synagoge, nor in þo cyte. Nor þei may
 14 proue þinges þat þei accusen me of vnto⁴ þe. [Ande I know-
 leche to þe]⁷, þat after þo sechte þat þei callen heresie, I haue
 so serued to God my fadire þat I trowe vnto⁴ alle þat ben
 15 wryten in þo lawe. ande þo prophecye: hafande my hope in
 God, in¹² þo¹³ whiche alssو hemseluen abiden þo resurreccione
 16 þat es forto⁴ come boþe of þo¹⁴ gode ande þo yuel. In þis
 alssо I studye forto haue conscience to God euermore, ande
 17 to men alssо wiþouten offendikel. Ande after many þere¹⁵
 I come vnto⁴ my nacyon forto do almes, ande forto do myne
 18 offeringes ande myne auowes: in þo whiche þei fonde me
 purified in þo temple, noghte wiþ grete companye, nor wiþ
 noyce. Ande þei toke me, cryande ande sayande, Vndo oure
 19 enmye. And summe Iewes of Asye, whom hit bihoued

¹ ande euermore S.P.D.C. fol. 126^b S. ² in marg. C. ³ us S.P.D.

⁴ to S.P.D.

⁵ seete D. cytee S.P. ⁶ he haþ S.P.D. ⁷ S.P.D.
⁸ honde S.P.D. ⁹ folke S.P.D. ¹⁰ þan S.P.D. ¹¹ me makyng follows
 companye, S.P.D. ¹² & in S.P.D. ¹³ om. S.P. ¹⁴ fol. 127 S.

¹⁵ zeeres with s in a later hand, S. zeeres P.

nowe forto¹ be redy bifore þe, & forto accuse, if þei hadn oghte agaynes me, or elles say þise hemseluen, if þei hafe 20 fownden any wikkednes in me, siþen I stonde here in þo conseyle, bot onely of þis one voyce, þat I cried stondande 21 amonges hem and sayande, I am demed of ȝowe of þo resurreccione of deade². & Felix differde hem þat accuseden hym, 22 for he kn[e]we³ how hit was, ande he saide to hem, Whanne þo tribune Lysias komes, I⁴ schal here ȝowe. Ande he bade 23 vnto¹ a centuryone forto kepe Poule, ande þat he schulde haue reste; ande þat none of hem⁵ schulde be lette forto mynister vnto¹ hym. Ande efter summe dais Felix come 24 wiþ Drusille, hise wife, þo whiche was a Iewes, ande called⁶ Poule, ande harde of hym þo faiþe in oure Lorde Iesu Criste. Ande whanne he disputed of rightrisenes, ande chastite, 25 ande þo dome þat was forto¹ come, Felix was ferde, ande ansuered, Go nowe at þis tyme, for in a⁷ couenabul tyme I schal calle þe. Ande Felix supposed that Poule schulde 26 gife hym summe moneye: and þerfore often tyme he called hym, and speke with hym. Ande⁸ efter þat Felix hade 27 fynisched hise two ȝhere in hise office, he hade a successoure whos name was called Festus. Ande for Felix wolde haue þanke of þo Iewes, he lefte Poule bownden in bondes.

Ande⁹ whanne Festus þanne come into þo contre, efter þo 1 25 þridde daye he wente vnto¹ Ierusalem fro Cesarye. Ande 2 þo princes of prestes come vnto¹ hym, and þo firste & þo moste worþi of þo Iewes, agayne Poule. Ande þei preyde hym, aschande grace agayn hym, þat he schulde bidde hym 3 be broghte into Ierusalem, settande waytynges forto slee hym in þo waye. Ande Festus ansuered, þat Poule schulde be 4 kepped in Cesarye, ande þat hymseluen¹⁰ schulde hastily go þider. Ande⁷ þerfore, he saide, þoo þat ben myghty¹¹ in 5 ȝowe¹², kome þei¹³ alssو. Ande if⁷ þer be any cryme in þo man, accuse þei hym. And he dwelled amonge hem days 6 no mo bot eghete or tenne. Ande he wente into Cesarye,

¹ to S.P.D. ² þe d. S.P. ³ S.P.D. *knowe* C. ⁴ fol. 65^b C.

⁵ hyse S.P.D., erasure of his follows, C. ⁶ *prayed for to see* S.P. ⁷ om. P.

⁸ fol. 127^b S. ⁹ in marg. *Cm* 25 in a later hand, C. *xxv c^o* on erasure

in a xvith century hand, S. ¹⁰ *he h.* S.P. ¹¹ fol. 66 C. ¹² *in ȝowe*

om. S.P.D. ¹³ om. S.P.D.

ande þo toþer daye he sate in his sete of dome, ande bade þat
 7 Poule be broghte forþe. Ande whanne he was broghte forþe,
 Iewes¹ þat komen fro Ierusalem stoden aboute hym, castande
 agayne hym many grete causes, þo whiche þei myghte noghte
 8 proue; for Poule made his skille agayne, sayande, þat nouper
 I haue synned agayn² þo lawe of þo Iewes, nor agayne þo
 9 temple, nor agayne þo Cesar. Ande Festus, in wille forto
 gife grace vnto² þo Iewes³, ande forto haue þanke of hem,
 ansuered vnto² Poule and saide, Wilte þou go vnto² Ieru-
 10 salem, ande þer be iuged of þise bifore me? Ande Poule
 saide, I stonde atte þo demyng-place of þo Cesare, where hit
 behoues⁴ me forto² be demed. I haue noghte noyed vnto²
 11 þo Iewes, as þow wele knowes. Ande if I haue noyed or done
 any þinge worþi þo deþe, I recuse⁵ noghte to dye. Bot if
 I haue done no þinge þat þei accuse me of, none may gife me
 12 vnto² hem. Vnto² þo Cesar I appele. Panne Festus spake
 wiþ hise cownseyle, and ansuered, þow haues appeled vnto²
 13 þo Cesar, ande to þo Cesar schalte þow go. Aude whanne⁶
 summe days wore passed, þo kenge Agrippa ande men of
 Baronye⁷ come vnto Cesarie to Festus, forto hayls hym.
 14 And whanne þei hade ben þore many dayes, Festus tolde
 vnto² þo kenge of Poule, & sayde, þer was a man lefte
 15 bownden of Felix: for⁸ whom, whanne I was at Ierusalem,
 þo princes of prestes ande þo elders come vnto² me, aschande
 16 dampnacione agaynes hym. To whom I ansuered, þat hit es
 noghte custome vnto² þo Romayns to⁹ dampne any man, to¹⁰
 he þat es accused haue presente hise accusars, and alssو þat
 he haue place forto defende hym, forto ansuere vnto² þo
 17 crymes þat ben putte vpon¹¹ hym. Ande whanne þei come
 hider wiþouten any taryynge, I sate on þo toþer day forto
 18 deme, and I bade hym forto be broghte forþe¹². Of whom,
 whanne hise accusars stode bifore me, I fonde no cause of þo
 19 whiche I supposed ille¹³. Bot summe questions¹⁴ of his super-
 sticione þei hade agayne hym, and specially of one Iesu, þat

¹ þe i. S.P. ² to S.P.D. ³ nor aȝen þe pepel follows, expunged, S.P.

⁴ fol. 128 S. ⁵ refuse S.P.D. ⁶ fol. 66^b C. ⁷ Vulg. Agrippa rex et

Bernice. ⁸ in marg. C. ⁹ for to S.P. ¹⁰ til (on erasure, S.) P.

¹¹ on S.P. ¹² to us S.P.D. ¹³ yuel S.P.D. ¹⁴ ȝuestyoun S.P.D.

es deed, whom Poule affermed forto life. Ande for I was ²⁰ in doute of þis question, I asched if he wolde go vnto¹ Ierusalem and be iuged þore of þise². Ande Poule appealed, & ²¹ forto kepe hit vnto¹ þo knowynge³ of þo Auguste, I bade kepe hym⁴ to I sende hym⁵ vnto þo⁶ Cesar. Ande Agrippa ²² saide to Festus, I wolde alssso here þat man. ⁷ Ande Festus ansuered⁷, Tomorne þow schalte here hym. Ande vpon⁸ þo ²³ toþer daye, whanne Agrippa ande þo men of Beronye wore comen with grete ȝerneynge⁹, ande wore enterd¹⁰ þo auditorye, wiþ þo tribunes aude þo principal men of þo cyte, at þo¹¹ bidynge of Festus Poule was broghte forþe. Ande Festus ²⁴ saide, Kenge Agrippa, ande ȝhe alle þat ben here wiþ vs, ȝhe sene þis man, of whom alle þo multitude of þo Iewes speke vnto¹ me at Ierusalem, aschande & criande þat he schulde no lenger life. Ande I fonde no þinge þat he wore worþi þe ²⁵ deþe fore. Ande for he haues appealed, I haue demed to sende hym vnto¹² Auguste. Bot in certayne what I may ²⁶ write to my lorde haue¹³ I noghte. Ande for þis cause I haue¹¹ broghte hym forthe vnto¹ ȝowe, and specially vnto¹ þo kenge Agrippa, þat I¹⁴ may asche hym bifore ȝowe, ande þat I may knowe what I schal write. For wiþouten resone ²⁷ me þenke¹⁵ to sende hym bownden, ande noghte forto telle þo cause.

Ande¹⁶ þo kenge Agrippa saide vnto¹ Poule, Hit es ²⁶ 1 sifferde þat þow speke for þiseluen. ȝanne Poule spredde hise hende obrode¹⁷, and gafe his skille, ande saide, Of alle þo ² þinges¹⁸ þat I am accused of þo Iewes, kenge Agrippa, I suppose me blessed ande clene¹⁹ bifore þe, siþen²⁰ I schal defende me today. Ande specyally siþen þow knowes alle 3 þo⁶ customes þat ben amonge þo²¹ Iewes, ande alssso þo questions²² þat ben amonge hem: wherfore I preye þe þat

¹ to S.P.D. ² hym; crossed through, with þese þynges in marg. 1st corr. S. þese þinges, P. ³ fol. 128^b S. ⁴ om. S.P. ⁵ fol. 67 C.

⁶ om. S.P.D. ⁷⁻⁷ om. S.P. ⁸ on S.P.D. ⁹ ȝernynges P.

¹⁰ to, expunged, follows, S. ¹¹ om. P. ¹² to þe S.P.D. ¹³ I haue S.P.D.

¹⁴ haue, expunged, follows, P. ¹⁵ þynkeþ S.P.D. ¹⁶ in marg. Cm 26 in a later hand, C. xxvi c^o on erasure, xvith century hand, S. ¹⁷ abrood follows spred, S.P.D. ¹⁸ þ on erasure, S. kyngis D. ¹⁹ knele S.P.D.

²⁰ fol. 67^b C. ²¹ hem P. ²² customes S.P.D.

4 þow here me paciently. Ande alsso forsoþe my lyfe fro my
 5 ȝowþe, ande fro þo bigynnyng in my nacyone, in Ierusalem,
 6 alle þo Iewes knowe; knowande me fro þo bigynnyng, if¹
 7 þei wolde bere wytnes, þat efter þo certayne sekte of oure
 8 relygione I haue lified a Pharisene. Ande nowe in þo hope of
 9 biheste þat was made vnto² oure fadires of oure Lorde God, I
 10 stonde subjecte to þo dome; in þo whiche oure twelue tribes,
 11 nyghte ande daye seruande, hopen to come. Of þo whiche
 12 hope, kenge Agrippa, I am accused of þo Iewes. Bot whatte
 13 es demed incredibil anentes ȝowe, if God raise³ þo deed?
 14 Ande I alsso supposed, þat me awghte to do many contrary-
 15 ouse þinges agayne þo name of Iesu of Nazarene. Ande I
 16 sparde⁴ in prisone many halowes; and þis I did in Ierusalem,
 17 for suche power I toke of þo princes [of prestis]⁵; ande
 18 whanne þei wore slayne, I bare þo sentence. Ande punysch-
 19 ande hem customabuly by alle þo synagoges, I garte⁶ hem
 20 forto² blaspheme. Ande ȝitte I was more wode agaynes hem,
 21 ande pursewed hem to oute nacyons. In þo whiche, when I⁷
 22 wente vnto² Damaske wiþ þo power & letters of princes of
 23 prestes, in þo myddes of þo daye, in þo waye I sawe, kenge
 24 Agrippa, fro heuen, passande þo schynynge of þo sunne,
 25 a lyghte þat vmschone⁸ me and hem þat wore wiþ me.
 26 Ande whanne we alle felle vnto² þo erthe, I harde a voice
 27 spekande to me in þe tunge of Hebrewe, Saule, Saule, whi
 28 pursewes þow me? Hit es harde to þe to kes⁹ agayne þo
 29 brodde¹⁰. Ande I saide, Who erte þow, Lorde? Ande he
 30 saide, I am Iesu whom þow pursewes. Bot rise vppe, he
 31 saide, ande stonde vpon¹¹ þi fete: for for¹² þis cause I appered
 32 vnto² þe, forto make þe a mynister ande wytnes of þinges þat
 33 þow haues sene, and of þo in whom I schal appere to þ[e]¹³;
 34 delyuerande þe¹⁴ fro pupuls ande nacyons, to whom nowe¹⁵
 35 I sende þe, forto opun þo eyghne of þo¹⁶ blynde, þat þei turne
 36 fro þo derkenes vnto² þo lighte, fro þe pouer of þo fende to
 37 God, ande þat þei take remyssion of synnes, ande lote amonge

¹ fol. 129 S. ² to S.P.D. ³ rere S.P.D. ⁴ closyd S.P.D.

⁵ S.P.D. ⁶ maked S.P.D. ⁷ fol. 68 C. ⁸ aboute schon S.P.D.

⁹ kyce S.D. ¹⁰ prikke S.P.D. ¹¹ on S.P.D. ¹² om. S.P.D.

¹³ S.P.D. ¹⁴ þes P. ¹⁵ I now S.P.D. ¹⁶ fol. 129^b S.

halowes bi þo faiþe þat es in me. Wherfore, kenge Agrippa, ¹⁹
 I was noghte vntrowthfulle to þo heuenly visione: bot to ²⁰
 hem þat wore at Damaske firste, ande siþen¹ to þem þat wore
 at Ierusalem, I schewed hit, ande bi alle þo contre boþe to
 þo Iewrye ande to þo nacions, þat þei schulde² do penawnce,
 ande þat þei schulde be turned vnto³ God, doyng þo worþi
 frutes of penawnce. For þis cause þo Iewes, whan I was in ²¹
 þo temple, wolde haue slayne me, ande toke me. Ande zitte ²²
 vnto³ þis daye I stande, hulpun wiþ þo grace of God, witness-
 ande boþe to þo lesse ande to þo more, no þinge sayande
 more þanne Moyses ande þo prophetes saide forto kome; þat ²³
 Criste was p[a]ssibul⁴, & þat he was firste of þo resurreccione
 of þo deed, forto schewe lyghte vnto³ þo puple ande to þo
 naciones. Ande whanne he spake þus ande schewed resone ²⁴
 and skille for hym, Festus saide wiþ a grete voyce, Poule, þow
 fonn̄es⁵; myche⁶ letturere turnes þe vnto³ foly⁷. Ande Poule ²⁵
 saide, Gode Festus, I fonne noghte, bot I speke wordes of
 soburnes and soþefastenes. For þo kenge knowes of þise, ²⁶
 to whom I speke stabuly; I suppose þat none of þise es
 vnkownne to hym; for none of þise was done in hiddels⁸ (or,
 in hernes). Ande þo kenge Agrippa trowes⁹ vnto³ þo pro- ²⁷
 phetes; I wote þat þow trowes. Ande þo kenge Agrippa ²⁸
 saide vnto³ Poule, In lytel þou makes a skille þat I am
 Cristen. Ande Poule saide, I ȝerne¹⁰ bifore God in lytel ²⁹
 ande in myche, noghte onely þe, bot alssō¹¹ alle þat heren me
 todaye, forto be made suche as I am, outetaken þise bondes.
 Ande þo¹² kenge, ande þo mayre, ande þo men of Beronye, ³⁰
 and þoo þat sate wiþ hem, rose vp; and wente biside ande ³¹
 speke togider & saide, No þinge haues þis man done þat es
 worþi þo deþe or bondes. Ande Agrippa saide vnto³ Festus, ³²
 þis man myghte haue ben laten go, if he hade noghte appeled
 vnto³ þe¹³ Cesar¹⁴.

¹ om. S.P.D. ² fol. 68^b C. ³ to S.P.D. ⁴ possibul C.;
passybyl S.P.D. *Vulg.* si passibilis Christus. ⁵ þu fonn̄ys repeated
 in marg. 1st corr. S. ⁶ þi m. S.P.D. ⁷ foltschupe S.P.D.
⁸ hyddyl S.P.D. ⁹ trowest S.P., *st* on erasure, S. ¹⁰ desyre S.P.D.
¹¹ fol. 130 S. ¹² fol. 69 C. ¹³ om. S.P. ¹⁴ capitulum
 follows, C.

27 1 Ande¹ whanne hit was demed þat he schulde schippe into Ytalye, ande be² taken³ vnto⁴ þo centurion of þo compayne 2 of Auguste whos name was Iulye, we wente into a schippe of Hardumetyne⁵. Ande whanne⁶ we biganne to sayle, we bere vppe aboute þo places of Asye; ande with vs dwelled 3 Aristarcus Mecedonye of Thessalonye. Ande þo nexte day we come unto⁴ Sidon: and Iulye tre[t]ed⁷ Poule manly, and lete hym go to hise frendes, and forto do hise owne cure. 4 Ande whanne we wente fro þeþen⁸, we vndursayled Ciper, for 5 þo wyndes wore contrariouse. Ande we, saylande þo see of Cylce and Pamphile, in twelue days we come vnto⁴ Listram 6 of Lycie. Ande þore þo centurion fonde a schippe of Aly-sawnder, schippande into Ytalye; & he putte vs in hit. 7 Ande whanne we hade sailed slouly many dais, ande vneþes wore comen agayne Gwyde, for lettynge of þo wynde, we 8 sayled vnto Crete biside Salomon; ande vneþe saylande biside into⁹ a place þat es called Gode Porte (or, hauen), to 9 þo whiche es nere¹⁰ þo cyte of Thessal[a]¹¹. Ande whanne longe tyme ande myche þan was passed, ande was no forþer siker schippynge ande saylynge, for þat þei haden longe 10 fasted, Poule comforþed hem, sayande¹², Men, I see þat wiþ iniurye ande myche harme noghte onely of þo charge þat es of þo schippe ande of þo schippe, [bot of oure lyues]¹³, 11 bigynnes oure schiprode to be. þo centurio trowed vnto⁴ þo guuernere of þo schippe ande to þo schipman more þanne 12 to Poule[s] saynges¹⁴. Ande for þei haden noghte habul hauenynge forto wynter inne, þei toke þer cownsel to go fro þeþen¹⁵, if þei myghte on⁶ any wise come vnto⁴ Phenyce, forto wynter at þo hauen of Crete, þo whiche was berande towarde 13 Affriche, ande¹⁶ Chore. Bot whan þo souþe wynde blewe, whanne þei supposed to holde þer purpose, ande hade gone 14 fro Assere ande hade passed Crete, noghte myche after come

¹ in marg. C^m 27^m in a later hand, C. xxvii c^o in a xvith century hand, S.

² om. P. ³ bytaken S.P.D. ⁴ to S.P.D. ⁵ adrowmyntyne S.P.D.

Vulg. navem Adrumetinam. ⁶ om. S.P.D. ⁷ S.P.D. treded C.

⁸ þeyn S.D. þen P. ⁹ fol. 69^b C. ¹⁰ nyȝ S.P. ¹¹ S.P.D. Thessalonye with onye expunged, C. ¹² fol. 130^b S. ¹³ S.P.D. vacant space of $\frac{3}{4}$ inch, C. ¹⁴ poules seyenge S.P.D. ¹⁵ þen S.D. þeyn P.

¹⁶ & to S.P.D.

agayne hem a norþe-heste wynde. Ande whanne þo schippe ¹⁵
 was vppe-taken, ande myghte noghte enforce agayne þo
 wynde, we gafe þo schippe to¹ þo wynde, ande þo wynde bere
 vs. Ande so we come vnto an ile þat es named Cawda². ¹⁶
 Ande vneþe myghte we gete þo kokbote: and whanne þis ¹⁷
 was hade away, þei vsed³ helpinge, byndande þo schippe;
 dredande þat ne⁴ þei schulde falle into sande⁵ place: ande so
 þei wore borne, while þe vessel was keste downe. [Ande] we ¹⁸
 wore⁶ schaken wiþ⁷ a grete tempeste; ande þo⁸ toþer [day]⁹
 þei keste oute of þo schippe þinges þat wore þerinne. Ande ¹⁹
 vpon¹⁰ þo þridde day þei keste oute þe¹¹ armorye of þo schippe
 wiþ þer hende, for noþer sonne nor mone nor sternes¹² appered ²⁰
 bi many dais. Ande grete tempeste was, ande þan was alle
 hope of oure hele away. Ande whanne we longe hade fastud, ²¹
 Poule stode ymyddes and saide, It behoued¹³, ȝhe men,
 forto here¹⁴ me (or, forto¹⁵ haue harde me), noghte to¹⁶ haue
 passed fro Crete, ande forto haue wonnen þis losse¹⁷. Bote ²²
 ȝitte bes of gode¹⁸ herte: for losse¹⁹ schal²⁰ þer none²¹ be of²²
 none of ȝoure lifes, bot only of þo schippe. For þis nyghte ²³
 stode bi me þo awngel of God, whos I am, ande vnto²⁴ whom
 I serue, ande saide, Poule, drede þe noghte, forto vnto²⁵ þo ²⁶
 cesar þe bihoues to come. Ande lo, God haues giuen vnto²⁷
 þe²⁸ alle²⁹ þat ben in þo schippe wiþ þe. Ande þerfore, men, bes ²⁵
 of gode herte: for I trowe vnto²⁷ my God, þat so schal it be
 as hit was saide vnto²⁷ me. Ande into an ile schal we come. ²⁶
 Bot efter þo fourten[d]e³⁰ nyghte was comen, and we wore ²⁷
 schippande in A-drye, aboute þo⁴ mydde-nyghte þo schipmen
 supposed þat þei see a contre. Ande þei put þer plumbe ²⁸
 into þe see to knowe þo depnes of²¹ water; ande þei fonde
 twenty paces. Ande whanne þei wore a lytel þen, þei fonde
 xv pases. Ande for þei dredde þat þei schulde falle into ²⁹
 scharpe places, þei sende foure ankers oute of þo²² schippe,

¹ 'e schyp to repeated in marg. 1st corr. S. ² canda S.P.D. ³ om. S.P.

⁴ om. S.P.D. ⁵ sondy S.D. þe sondy P. *Vulg.* timentes ne in Syrtim
 inciderent. ⁶ & we were S.P.D. wore we C. ⁷ fol. 70 C. ⁸ at þe S.P.D.

⁹ P; in marg. 1st corr. S. om. C.D. ¹⁰ sterrys S.P.D. ¹¹ byhoued P.

¹² here with d added and hafe in marg. C. ¹³ here me or forto om. S.P.D.

¹⁴ fol. 131 S. ¹⁵ lost S.P.D. ¹⁶ om. P. ¹⁷ to S.P.D. ¹⁸ on
 erasure, 1st corr. S. ȝow D. ¹⁹ alle lyfes S.P. ²⁰ fourtenþe S.P.D.

²¹ of þe S.P. ²² om. D.

30 ande ȝerned¹ þat day² wore comen. Ande whan þo schipmen
 wolden hafe fledde oute of þo schippe³, ande hade put oute þo
 31 bote of þe schippe into þe see as forto keste þer ankers. Poule
 saide ⁴vnto þo centurion ande to þe knyghtes⁴, Bot if ȝhe be
 32 stille in þo schippe, ȝhe may noghte be saued⁵. Thanne þo
 knyghtus kutteden away þo cordes of⁶ þo boot, ande suffured
 33 hit to falle away. Ande whanne lyghte biganne forto⁷ come,
 Poule preyde hem alle þat þei schulde ete sumwhat, ande
 saide, þis es þo fourtende daye þat ȝhe hauen ben fastande,
 34 ande no mete haue ȝhe eten⁸ (or, taken). Wherfore I pray
 ȝowe to take summe meate for ȝoure hele: for a heer of none
 35 of ȝoure hedes schal perische. Ande whanne he hade saide
 þis, he toke brede ande þanked God in alle þer sighte. Ande
 36 whanne he hade broken þo brede ande biganne forto⁹ ete, þei
 37 wore made þo more herty ande toke mete alssو. þo men þat
 wore in þe schippe wore two hundrethe seuenty ande sexe.
 38 Ande whanne þei haden eten þer fille, þei allegid þo schippe,
 39 ande keste þo whete into þo see. Ande whanne day was
 comen, þei knew [noghte] þo londe¹⁰. Bot an arme þei
 bihelde, in þo whiche þei see as hit wore a banke. Ande
 40 þider þei þoghte, if þei myghte, to keste þo schippe. Ande
 whanne þei hade drawen vppe þo ankurs, þei putte hem
 vnto⁷ þe see, slakande þo iunctures fro þo gubernacle¹¹, &
 raised¹² a lytel sayle. Ande bi þo blaste of þo wynde þei
 41 wente vnto⁷ þo banke. Ande whanne we wore fallen into
 a place þer two sees mette, þei enpeched¹³ þo schippe; ande
 þo forþer partye of þo schippe stode¹⁴ stille. Bot¹⁵ þo schippe
 42 lowsed for strenkthe of þo see. Ande þo knyghtes gafe
 counseile, þat þoo þat wore vndure kepinge in þo schippe
 schulde be slayne, and þat þei schulde noghte skape awaye.
 43 Ande þo centurion, for he wolde þat Poule wore saued, for-
 bedde so to do. Ande he bade þat þoo¹⁶ þat couþe swymme
 schulde firste go vnto⁷ þo see, ande so skape ande come vnto⁷

¹ desyryd S.P.D. ² þe d. P. ³ fol. 70^b C. ⁴⁻⁴ om. S.P.D.

⁵ sauë S.P.D. ⁶ þo cordes of om. S.P.D. ⁷ to S.P.D. ⁸ eten or
 om. S.P. ⁹ fol. 131^b S. to S.P.D. ¹⁰ no lond S.P.D. ¹¹ gubernacles P,
 es added in a later hand, S. . ¹² reryd S.P. ¹³ enpersched S.P.D.

¹⁴ om. S.P. ¹⁵ fol. 71 C. ¹⁶ eche S.P.

þo londe. Ande oþer toke bordes, and summe toke oþer 44
 þinges þat wore of þo schippe. Ande so bifelle, þat þei alle
 skaped vnto þo londe saufe¹, & none perished.

Ande² whanne we were skaped. þanne knewe we þat þo 1 28
 londe þat we³ were onne was called þo ile of Mutilene.
 Ande þo barbarise schewed myche manhede vnto⁴ vs, for þei 2
 kindeld a fire, ande refresched vs, for þe rayne ande þo colde
 þat was þanne. Ande whanne⁵ Poule hade gider[ed]⁶ stikkes, 3
 ande hade layde hem vpon þo⁷ fire, a nedder come from þo
 hete, and smote into his honde. & whanne þo barbarise se 4
 þo beste hongande⁸ in⁹ hise honde, þei saide togider, For-
 sothe he þis es a mansleare, for þose he¹⁰ skaped fro þo see, he
 es noghte suffurde no lenger to lyfe. Ande Poule smote þo 5
 beste into þe fire, ande hade none harme. Ande þei supposed⁶
 þat he schulde bolne¹¹, ande sodenly falle downe ande dighe.
 Ande whanne þei longe hade abiden, and seghe þat he hade
 none harme, þei turned ande saide þat he was God. Ande in 7
 þo places wore þe maners¹² of þo prince of þat ile, whos name
 was Publyus; þo whiche receyued vs, ande¹³ benyngly re-
 fresched¹⁴ vs three dais. Ande þo fader of þis prince laye in 8
 þo fioures ande in þo yuel þat es called dissintery: vnto⁴
 whom Poule enterde. Ande whanne he hade layde vpon¹⁵
 hym his hondes, he helud hym. Ande whanne þis was done, 9
 alle þat wore in þo ile ande wore seke come vnto⁴ hym, ande
 wore helud. Ande men of þat ile worschipped vs with 10
 myche worschippe, ande gafe vs þat vs nedid vnto⁴ oure efte-
 schippinge. Ande efter three monythes we schipped in¹⁶ 11
 a schippe of Alyswnder, þo whiche hade wynterde in þat
 ile, ande hade fairnes of castels¹⁷. Ande whanne we wore 12
 comen to Syracuse, þere we dwelled three dais. Ande fro 13
 þeþen¹⁸ we passed abowte, ande come vnto Regy whole: ande
 efter þo mydday whanne þo souþe blewe, þo secunde day we

¹ follows *scaped*, S.P.D. ² in marg. *Cm 28^m* in a later hand, C. *y^e*
xxviii c^e in a xvith century hand, S. ³ in marg. 1st corr. S. ⁴ to S.P.D.

⁵ om. P. ⁶ *gaderyd a multitude of* S.P.D. ⁷ on þe S.D. on D.

⁸ fol. 132 S. *hyngande* S.P.D. ⁹ on S.P. ¹⁰ *he be* S.P.D.

¹¹ *swelle* S.P.D. ¹² *maystris* S.P.D. ¹³ om. S.P.D. ¹⁴ fol. 71^b C.

om. S.P.D. ¹⁵ on S.P.D. ¹⁶ *into* S.P.D. ¹⁷ *Vulg.* cui erat

insigne Castorum. ¹⁸ þen S.P. þeyn D.

14 come to Puteolos: where we fonde breþer, ande þei preyd vs
 forto¹ dwelle wiþ hem seuen dais: ande so come we vnto¹
 15 Rome. Ande whanne þo breþer þere harde of oure comynge,
 þei come agayne vs vnto¹ þo merket of Appii, þo senator;
 ande whanne Poule se hem, he þanked God, ande toke gode
 16 traiste. Ande whanne we wore comen vnto¹ Rome, Poule
 was suffurd to dwelle wiþouten þo castels bi² hymseluen wiþ
 17 one³ knyghte to kepe hym. Ande efter þo thridde daye he
 called togider þo firste of þo Iewes: ande whanne þei wore
 comen togider, he saide vnto¹ hem, ȝhe men⁴, breþer, I haue
 done no þinge agayne þo pupil of þo Iewes, or agayn eldar⁵
 doyng. Ande fro Ierusalem I am bitaken bownden into þo
 18 hende of þo Romaynes; & whanne þei hade aschinge of me,
 þei wolde haue laten me go, for þei fonde no cause of deþe in
 19 me. Ande for þo Iewes agayn-saide þat I schulde noghte be
 delyuerde, þerfore was I garte⁶ forto appele vnto¹ þo Cesar;
 20 noghte forto accuse my nacione. Ande for þis cause I praid
 forto see ȝowe, ande forto speke wiþ ȝowe: forwhi for þo
 hope of Israel I am vngyuen⁷ (or, bounden) with þis cheyne.
 21 Ande þei saide vnto¹ hym, We toke neuer letturers fro þo
 Iewry of⁸ þe, nor none comande to vs haues tolde vs any
 22 dede or ille⁹ of þe. Bot we prey þe¹⁰, þat we may here of þe¹¹,
 what þow can ande felys. For of þo¹² secte es knowne þat in
 23 iche place hit es withstande. Ande whanne he hade sette
 hem a daye, many come vnto¹ hise hostage þer he dwelled;
 vnto¹ whom he expowned, witnessande þo kengdome of God,
 ande makande skilles to hem of Iesu, of þo lawe of Moisy,
 24 ande of þo prophetes, fro þo morne vnto þo euen¹³. Ande
 summe trowed vnto þoo¹⁴ þat he saide, ande summe trowed
 25 noghte. Ande whanne þei wore not assentande togider, þei
 lerned¹⁵ of Poule¹⁶ o worde þat wele¹⁷ þo Holigoste speke by
 26 Isaye þo prophete vnto¹ oure fadirs, sayande, Go to þis puple,

¹ to S.P.D.² fol. 132^b S.³ ȝoute S.P.D.⁴ myn P.⁵ ȝelderys S.P.D. fol. 72 C. ⁶ nedyd to S.P.D. ⁷ vngyuen or om. S.P.D.⁸ wiþ crossed through and of inserted above the line, D. ⁹ yuel S.P.D.¹⁰ þe þe C. ¹¹ of þe in marg. C. ¹² þis S.P.D. ¹³ to euen S.P.D.¹⁴ to þat S.P.D. ¹⁵ lernyd of crossed through with wenten wey in marg. ina later hand, S. wentyn here wey P. ¹⁶ seyenge follows, P. saynghe in a
 later hand, in marg. S. ¹⁷ second e erased, S.

ande saye vnto¹ hem, þe schal here wiþ ere, ande þe schal noghte vnderstande; ande þe seande schal se², ande þe schal noghte biholde: for þo herte³ of þis puple es hardende⁴, ²⁷ ande wiþ eres heuely þei han harde. Ande þer eyne þai han⁵ lokked togider; þat in aunter þei se noghte wiþ eyne, ande here with eres, ande vndurstonde with herte, forto turne hem, þat I hele hem. Ande þerfore be hit knowne vnto¹ ȝowe, þat ²⁸ þis⁶ helfulle þinges⁷ es sende vnto¹ naciones: ande þei schal here hit. Ande Poule dwelled alle þat two ȝhere in þat place ³⁰ þat he hired, ande receyued alle þat come to hym, þo Iewes, ande þo naciones⁸ þat wore called⁹ gentiles, prechande þo ȝi kengdame of God, ande techande þinges⁵ þat ben of oure Lorde Iesu Criste wiþ fulle traiste wiþouten lettynge¹⁰.

S. MATTHEW.

Matheu¹¹ seiþ in þe firste chapytyl on þis wyse in þe book ¹ **1** of þe kynrede of Iesu Crist, þe sone of Dauid, þe sone of Abraham. Abraham gate Ysaac, & Ysaac gate Iacob. Iacob ² gate Iudam & his breþeren. Iudas gate Phares & Zaram of ³ Thamar. Phares gate Esron. Esron gate Aram. Aram gate ⁴ Amynadab. Amynadab gate Naason. Naason gate Salmon. Salmon gate Booz of Raab¹². Booz gate Obed of Ruth. ⁵ Obed gate Iesse. Iesse gate Dauid þe kyng. Dauid þe kyng ⁶ gate Salomon of hire þat was Vryes wyf. Salomon gate ⁷ Roboam. Roboas gate Abyam. Abyas gate Asa. Asa gate ⁸ Iosaphath. Iosophath gate Ioram. Ioram gate Ozyam. Ozyas gate Ioathan. Ioathas gate Achas. Achaz gate ⁹ Ezechyam. Ezechyas gate Manassen. Manassen gate Amon. ¹⁰ Amon gate Iosyam. Iosyas gate Iechonyam. Iechonyas ^{11,12} gate Salatyel. Salatyel gate Zorobabel. Zorobabel¹³ gate ¹³ Abiud. Abiud gate Eliachym. Eliachym gate Azor. Azor ¹⁴ gate Sadoc. Sadoc gate Achym. Achym gate Eliud. Eliud ¹⁵

¹ to S.P.D. ² fol. 133 S. ³ hertys S.P.D. ⁴ hardyd S.P.D.
fol. 72^b C. ⁵ om. S.P.D. ⁶ is S.P.D. ⁷ es erased, S. ⁸ grekes P,
on erasure, 1st corr. S. ⁹ clepyd S.P.D. ¹⁰ Explicit follows, C.S.P.,
in marg. nearly erased, D. MS. C. ends here. ¹¹ fol. 1, heading,
Mathew D. ¹² ra on erasure, S. rachab D. ¹³ fol. 133^b S.

gate Eleasar¹. Eleasar gate Mathan. Mathan gate Iacob.
 16 Iacob gate Ioseph þe housbonde of Marye, of whom was
 17 bore Iesus þe whuche is clepyd Crist. Alle þe kynredys fro
 Abraham to Dauid beþ fourtene; and fro Dauid to þe goyng
 18 oute of Babilon [fourtene; and fro þe goyng out of Babilon]²
 to Crist fourtene. Soþly þe generacyoun (or, kynrede) of
 Crist was on þis manere: whan Marye þe moder of Iesu was
 weddid to Ioseph, or þei come to-gyder sche³ was founde
 19 hauyng in hire wombe of þe Holy Gost. For-soþe Ioseph
 hire housbonde, for he was ryȝtwys, he wolde not opynly
 20 sclawnder hire, but pryuely he wolde haue left hire. Soþly
 whyle he was þenkyng⁴ þese þinges for-to leue his wyf, loo,
 an aungel of oure Lord apperyd to hym in sleep, seyenge,
 Ioseph, þe sone of Dauid, ne wyle þ[ou]⁵ not drede to take
 Marye þy weddid wyf: forsoþe þat þing þat is bore in hire
 21 is of þe Holy Gost. Soþly sche³ schal bere a sone, & þou
 schalt nempne⁶ his name Iesus; forsoþe he schal make his
 22 puple safe fro þe synnys of hem. Soþly þis was done, þat þat
 þing schulde be fulfilde þe whuche was seyd by þe prophete,
 23 seyenge on þis wyse, Lo, a mayden schal haue in hire wombe,
 & sche³ schal bere a sone, & his name schal be clepyd
 Emanuel; þat is, God is wiþ us (or, God schal be wiþ us).
 24 Soþly Ioseph rysynge up fro his sleep dide as þe aungel
 25 comawndid⁷ hym⁸, & he tooke Marye his wyfe; and he knewe
 hire not (þat is to seye, fleschly)⁹ tul¹⁰ sche³ bare hire sone
 first bygete: & sche clepyd his name Iesus.

2 1 Herfore¹¹ whan Iesus was bore in Bethlem of þe Iewery
 in þe dayes of kyng Heroude, loo, þe kynges come fro þe est
 2 to Ierusalem, seyenge, Where is he þat is bore þe kyng of
 Iewys? soþly we sawe a sterre of hym in þe est, & we
 3 come to wurschupe hym. Soþly kyng Heroud herynge was
 4 troublyd in herte, & alle Ierusalem wiþ hym. & he gederyd
 alle þe princes of prestis & þe wyse men of þe puple, & he
 5 enquiryd of hem where Crist schulde be bore. And þei
 seyde to¹² hym, In Betleem of þe Iewrye: for-why so it is

¹ fol. 1^b D. ² D. ³ þe P. ⁴ þinkynge D. ⁵ D. þe S.P.

⁶ fol. 2 D. ⁷ fol. 134 S. ⁸ to him D. ⁹ gloss om. P. ¹⁰ to D.

¹¹ Werfore P. ¹² fol. 2^b D.

wryte by þe prophete, & þou Betleem, in þe lond of þe 6
 Iewrye, þou art not leest in princes of þe Iewry (þat is to
 seye¹, þou cyte Betlem, þou art not holde to be lest among
 alle þe cytees of þe Iewry, but most of dignite) : for soþly out
 of þe schal goo a dewke (a ledere), þe whuche schal gouerne
 my peple Israel. þan pryuely Heroud callyd þe kynges, & 7
 bysly he enquiryd of hem þe tyme of þe sterre þe whuche
 apperid to hem ; & he seyde sendenge hem into Betlem, Goo 8
 ȝe, & bysly enquere ȝee of þe chylde; þat whan ȝe haue
 founden hym, telle ȝee me aȝeyn, þat I come & wurschupe
 hym also. þese þre kynges, whan þei had herd þe kyng 9
 Heroud, þei wente þer weye ; & lo, þe sterre þat þei sawe in
 þe² est wente byfore hem, vnto suche tyme þat it³ come &
 stode aboue where þe chyld was. Soþly þei seynge þe sterre 10
 were ioyeful; & wiþ gret⁴ ioye þei entrede in-to þe hous & 11
 fownden þe chyld wiþ Mary his moder; & þei felden⁵ down
 worschypynge hym ; & þei openyde þer tresoris & offrede to
 hym ȝyftys, gold & encense & myrre; & toke in slepe an 12
 answere þat þei schulde not turne⁶ aȝeyn by Herode. By
 a-noþer weye þei turnyd aȝeyn in-to her cuntry. & whan 13
 þei were gon aȝeyn, lo, an angel of oure Lord apperyd to
 Ioseph in his sleep, seyenge, Ryse up & take þe chyld & his
 modir, & fle into Egypt, & be þere vn-to suche tyme þat
 I warne to þee : for-soþe it is for-to come þat Herode sekeþ
 þe chyld to lose⁷ (or, to sle) hym. þan Ioseph rysyng toke 14
 þe chyld & his moder in þe nyȝt, & he wente in-to Egypt; &
 he was þere vnto þe deyenge of Herode: þat þat⁸ schulde be 15
 fulfulde þat was seyde of God by þe prophete, seyenge, Fro
 Egypt I callyd my sone. þan Herode, seyng þat he was 16
 bygylid of þe kynges, he was ful wroþ, & sende in-to Betlem,
 & slow alle þe chyldren þat were in Betlem & in alle þe
 costys bysyde, þat were of two ȝeer & wiþinne, after þe tyme
 þat he hadde souȝt of þe kynges. & þanne was fulillyd þat 17
 was seyd by Ieremye, A voyce was herd in hye, gretynge 18
 & mychil waymentynge, Rachel wepyng her sones; and

¹ P. say in marg. later hand, S. om. D. ² om. D. ³ fol. 134^b S.

⁴ a gret D. ⁵ fallen P. ⁶ fol. 3 D. ⁷ leese P. ⁸ þt he P.

19 sche¹ wolde not be comfortyd for þei were noȝt (quic)². Ȣus
 whan Herode³ was deed, loo, an aungel of oure Lord appered
 20 to Ioseph in sleep in Egypt, seyenge, Ryse & take þe chyld &
 þe moder of hym, & go in-to þe lond of Israel: for soþly þei
 21 beþ deed⁴ þat souȝte þe chyldes lyf. & Ioseph roos & toke
 þe chyld & his moder, & he come into þe lond of Israel.
 22 Soþly he herynge þat Archelaus⁵ regned in þe Iude for
 Herode his fadir, he dredde for hym to go þider. & Ioseph
 was amonestyd in his sleep by an aungel how he schulde go
 23 in-to þe partys (þat is, to þe cuntrey) of Galyle, & come
 & duellyd in a cytee þe whiche is called Nazareth: þat þat
 þing schulde be fulfulde þat was seyd by þe prophetys, For-
 soþe, he schal be called Nazarene (þat is to seye, holy).

3 1 Soþly⁶ in þo dayes Ion baptist come, prechynge in þe
 2 wyldernes (or, in þe desert) of þe Iewrye, & seyenge, Do ȝe
 penawnce; for soþly þe kyngdom of heuene schal come nyȝ.
 3 Soþly þis is he of whom it was seyd by Ysaye þe prophete,
 seyenge, A voyce of a cryere in wildernes, make ȝe redy
 þe weye of oure Lord. Make⁷ ȝe ryȝt stretis⁸ (or elles,
 4 streyȝte þe weyes) of hym. Soþly he Ion had cloþinge of þe
 heer of camels, & a gyrdil of a skyn aboute his lendes; soþly
 5 his mete⁹ was hony-sokkles & hony of þe wode. Ȣan wente
 out to hym Ierusalem, & al þe Iewry, & al þe cuntrey aboute
 6 Iurdane; & þei were baptyzed of hym in Iordan, schryuynge
 7 here synnys. Soþly he seynge many of þe Pharysees & of þe
 Saduceus comynge to þe baptem, he seyde to hem, ȝe
 kynredes of þe nedderis, who schewyd to ȝow for-to fle fro þe
 8 wraȝþe þat is for-to come? Do ȝe worþi fruyte of penawnce:
 9 & wyle ȝe not sey wiȝinne ȝoure-self (þat is, in ȝoure hertys),
 We haue a fader Abraham: soþly¹⁰ I sey to ȝow, þat God is
 10 myȝty of þise stonys to rere¹¹ þe sones of Abraham. Soþly
 now þe ax is sett to þe rote of þe tree: þerfore eche tree þe
 whiche makeþ not good fruyt it schal be kutt downe, & it
 11 schal be sent in-to þe fyre. For-soþe I baptize ȝow in water

¹ ȝhe P.

² underlined, S.P.D.

³ fol. 3^b D.

⁴ fol. 135 S.

⁵ archelanus S.P. ⁿ expunged, S. ⁶ C^m ȝm in marg. S. C^m ȝ D.

⁷ fol. 4 D. ⁸ þe str. D. ⁹ te above the line, S. ¹⁰ fol. 135^b S.

¹¹ rere up P.

in-to penawnce: soþly he þat is for-to come after me is¹ stal-worþere þan I, whoos² schoo I am not worþi to bere³: soþly he schal baptyze ȝow in þe Holy Gost & in fyre: whos² ¹² wyndel⁴ is in his honde, & he⁵ schal clese fully his korne; & he schal gedere his korne in-to his berne, & soþly þe chaff he schal brenne in a fyre þat may not be slekked. þanne ¹³ come Iesus fro Galyle in-to Iordan to Ion, þat he schulde be baptyzed of hym. Soþly Ion forbeed hym, seyenge, I fel to ¹⁴ be baptyzed of þee, & þou comest to me? Soþly Iesus ¹⁵ ansuerynge seyde to hym, Suffre now: for on þis manere it bysemeþ us for-to fulfylle al ryȝtwysnesse. þan he lyte hym (or⁶, suffred hym). Soþly Iesus baptyzed wente soone up fro ¹⁶ þe water: & lo, þe heuenes were opene, & he saw þe Spiryte of God comynge down as a doufe upon hym; & lo, a voyce of ¹⁷ heuene seyenge. þis is my Sone wel loued, in whom I am wel plesed.

þanne Iesus was led in-to desert þorow a spiryte þere he ¹ schulde be temptyd of þe deuel. And whanne he had ² fastyd fourty dayes & fourty nyȝtys, afterward he hungred⁷. & þe temptere comynge to hym seyde to hym, If þou art ³ Godes sone, sey þat þise stones be maade loues. Crist ⁴ answerynge seyde, It is wryte þat not onlyche in⁸ breed lyueþ man, but in eche word þat comeþ of Godes mouþ. þan ⁵ þe fende toke hym in-to þe holy cyte; & putte hym aboue þe penacle of þe temple, & seyde to Crist, If þou art Godes sone, ⁶ send⁹ þy-self¹⁰ adowne¹¹: soþly it is wryte of þee, for God bad his aungelys of Crist to kepe þe¹² in here hondys, as in awntyr þou herte þi foot to þe stone. Iesus seyde to hym, ⁷ Eft it is wryte, þou schalt not tempte þe Lord þi God. Eft ⁸ þe fende toke hym in-to a ful hyȝ hille, & he schewed to hym alle þe kyngdomes of þe worlde, & þe ioye of hem; & seyde ⁹ to hym, Alle þese þinges I schal ȝeue þee¹³, ȝif þou falle & loute [to]¹⁴ me. And þanne seyde Iesus to þe fende, Go ¹⁰

¹ fol. 4^b D. ² whas D. ³ crossed out, with *vnbynde* in marg. in a later hand, S. *vnbynde* P. ⁴ crossed through, with *wynnwe* in marg. in a later hand; S. *wynuwe* P. ⁵ om. P. ⁶ *lyte hym* or crossed through, S. om. P.

⁷ fol. 5 D. ⁸ fol. 136 S. ⁹ þt he schulde make D, in S. crossed through with *send* in marg., in a later hand. ¹⁰ *hymself* D., corrected to *þyself*, S.

¹¹ a on erasure, S. *downe* D. ¹² on erasure, S. *him* D. ¹³ to *þee* D. ¹⁴ P

awey, Sathanas ; for it is wryte, þe Lord þi God þou schalt
 11 worschupe, & to hym one þou schalt serue. þan þe fend
 lefte Crist ; & lo, goode aungelys comyn to hym & serued to
 12 hym. Whan Iesus herde þat Ion was put in-to prysoun, he
 13 ȝede in-to Galyle ; & þe¹ cyte of Nazareth lefte, he come
 & duellyd in Capharnaum, by-syde þe see, in þe cuntreyes
 14 of Zabulon & of Neptaly : þat it schulde be fulfulde þat
 15 was seyde by Ysaye þe prophete, Lond of Zabulon & lond of
 Neptaly, þe wey of þe see byȝonde Iordane, of þe folke of
 16 Galyle ; þe folke þe whuche ȝede in derkenesse sawe gret
 lyȝt, & to þe syttinge in þe rewine of schadowe of deeþ, lyȝt
 17 was rysen to hem. After þat Iesus bygan to preche, & seyde,

Do ȝe penawnce ; for soþly, þe kyngdom of heuene schal come
 18 nyȝ. & soþly Iesus wente by-syde þe se of Galile. He sawe
 two breþeren, Symon þe² whuche is cleped Peter, & Andrew
 his broþer, puttynge a nett in-to þe see ; soþly þei were
 19 fyscheris. & he seyde to hem, Come ȝe after me, & I schal
 20 make ȝow to be fyscherys of men. & þei a-noon lefte þer
 21 nettes & þe schyp, & sueden hym & he wente forþ fro³ þen
 & saw oþer two, Iame þe sone of Zebede, & Ion his broþer, in
 schype wiþ Zebede þer fader, makyng redy þer nettys ; &
 22 he clepyd hem. Soþly þei left þer nettys &⁴ her fader,
 23 & folowed hym. & Iesus wente aboute al⁵ Galyle, prechynge
 & techynge hem in here synagoges þe gospel of þe kyngdom
 of heuene, & helynge alle sorowes & alle sekenesse in þe
 24 peple. & þe knowynge of hym wente in-to al Sirry : & þei
 offred to hym alle hauynge yuel, in dyuers sekenes & tor-
 mentys taken, & þo þat hadde fendus wiþ-inne hem, & hem
 þat were lunatyke, & men þat had þe palsy, & he helyd hem.
 25 & many cumpanyes sueden hym, & men of Galyle, & of
 Decapoly (þat is to seye, of þat cuntrey þat hadde ten cytees)⁶,
 & of Ierusalem, & of þe Iewry, & of men fro ouer Iordane.

5 1 Soþly Crist seynge þe peple, he wente up in-to an hylle :
 & whan he had sette hym downe, his discyplys come to hym :
 2,3 & he openynge his mowþe tauȝt⁷ hem, seyenge, Blessyd be

¹ om. P. fol. 5^b D. ² fol. 136^b S. ³ fro twice, D. ⁴ fol. 6 D.

⁵ om. P. ⁶ underlined, S.P. ⁷ tauȝt in marg. 1st corr.; in text
 tauth in a late hand on erasure, S. tauȝte P. techinge D.

pore in speryte : for here is þe rewme of heuenes. Blessyd 4
 be þe mylde : for þei schal haue þe lond of lyf. Blessyd be 5
 þei þat waylen : for þei schal be comfortyd. Blessyd be þei 6
 þat hungren & þrusten ryȝtwysnes : for þei schal be fulfyllyd.
 Blessyd be mercyful men : for¹ þei schal swe mercy. Blessyd 7,8
 be men of clene herte : for þei schal se God. Blessyd² be 9
 pesyble men : for þei schal be cleped Godes chyldren.
 Blessyd be þey³ þat suffren purswyng for ryȝtwysnes : for 10
 here is þe rewme of heuenes. Blessyd schal ȝe be whan þat 11
 men schal curse ȝow, & whan þei haue purswed ȝow, & whan
 þei haue seyd al yuel aȝeyns ȝow, lyȝenge, for me. Ioye ȝe, 12
 & be glad : for ȝoure hyre is muche in heuene : soþly so þei
 haue purswed þe prophetis þat were byfore ȝow. ȝe beþ salt 13
 of þe erþe : & ȝif þe salt vany sche awey, in what þing schal þe
 erþe be saltyd ? þis salt is not worþi after, but to be cast
 oute & be defoulyd of men. ȝe ben lyȝt of þe world. A 14
 cytee sett on an hylle may not be hyd. Nor men lyȝte not 15
 a lanterne & putte it vndir a buschel, but þei sette it on
 a kandelsteke, þat it ȝeue lyȝt to alle þat beþ in þe hous.
 & so schyne ȝoure lyȝt byfore men, þat þei se ȝoure goode 16
 werkes, & so þanke ȝoure Fadir þat is in heuene. Wele ȝe 17
 not gesse þat I come to lose⁴ þe lawe ne prophetys : I come
 not to vn-do hem, but for-to fylle hem. Soþly I seye to ȝow, 18
 To þat heuene & erþe passe, an i ne a tytyl schal not passe
 fro þe lawe byfore alle þinges be done. þerfore⁵ who doþ not 19
 on of þe leeste comawndementis, he schal be cleped leest in
 þe kyngdom of heuene ; and soþly he þat doþ þes comawndem-
 mentes & techeþ⁶, he schal be cleped greet in þe kyngdom of
 heuene. Soþly I sey to ȝow, But if ȝoure ryȝtwysnes 20
 habounde more þan of⁷ þese⁸ wyse men of þe⁹ lawe & of¹⁰
 þe Pharyseus, ȝe schal not entre in-to þe kyngdom of
 heuene. Soþly ȝe haue herd þat it is seyd to men of þe olde 21
 lawe, þou schalt not sle ; forsoþe he¹¹ þat sleþ, he schal be
 coupable in þe dome ; soþly I sey to ȝow, þat who-so¹² is wroþ 22

¹ fol. 137 S. ² fol. 6^b D. ³ ȝe D. þ. y added later, S. ⁴ lese P.

⁵ fol. 7 D. ⁶ techeþ hem D. ⁷ of scribis P, in late hand, in marg. S.

⁸ þe P ; þese...lawe underlined, S.P. ⁹ fol. 137^b S. ¹⁰ above the
 line, S. om. D. ¹¹ in margin, S. ¹² þat P.

to his broþer, he schal be gylty to¹ þe dome; soþly he þat
 haþ seyd² to his broþer, Raca, he schal be gylty to¹ þe
 counseyl; soþly he þat haþ seyd² to his broþer, þou foole, he
 23 is worþi þe fyre of helle. þerfore if þou brynge þi ȝifte to þe
 auter, & þere þou hast byþouȝt þee þat þi broþer haþ sum
 24 þinge aȝeyns þee, leeue þi ȝifte þere byfore þe auter, & go
 ferst to be reconsyled to þi broþer (þat is, be at on wiþ þi
 25 broþer), & þanne þou schalt come & offre þi ȝifte. Be þou
 assentyng soone to þyn enemy, þe whylis þou art in þe wey
 wiþ hym, en awnter þyn enemy take þee to þe domus-man,
 & þe domes-man bytake þee to þe jayleer, &³ þou be putt
 26 in-to prysown. Soþly I sey to þee, þou schalt not go oute
 27 fro þi prysoun, to þou hafe ȝeue aȝeyn þe leste ferþing. ȝe
 haue herd þat it was seyd to þe olde men, þou schalt not do
 28 auowtrye: soþly I sey to ȝow, þat eche man þat haþ sey
 a womman & coueyte⁴ for-to haf hire, he haþ don⁵ auowtrye
 29 wiþ hire in his herte. If it so⁶ be þi ryȝt eyȝe sclawndir þee,
 drawe it oute, & caste it fro þee: for soþly it is more
 spedynge to þee þat one of þi membres per-sche, þan al þi
 30 body be sente in-to helle. & ȝif þi ryȝt hond sclawnder þee,
 kutte it a-wey, & caste it fro þee: for soþly it spedeþ to þee,
 þat raþere on of þi membris persche⁷ þan al þi body go in-to
 31 helle. Soþly it is seyd to olde men, Whoso lefeþ his wyf,
 32 hym byhoueþ ȝefe to hire a lybel of forsakyng: soþly y⁸ sey
 to ȝow, þat eche man þat lefeþ his wyf, outetake cause of
 fornycasyoun, he makeþ hire to do avowtrye: & he þat
 weddeþ hire þat is left of hire housbonde, he⁹ doþ avowtrye.
 33 Eft ȝe hafe herd þat it was seyd to þe olde men, þou schalt
 34 not forswere þee, for þou schalt ȝefe to God þi swerynge: but
 soþly it is seyd¹⁰ to ȝow noȝt to swere in eny manere; neyþer
 35 by heuene, for it is þe¹¹ trone of God; neyþer by þe erþe, for
 it is scaffold of his feet; noyþer by Ierusalem, for it is þe
 36 cyte of þe grete Kyng. Nor þou schalt not swere by þin
 heuyd, for þou mayst not make one heer whȝit or blak.

¹ on erasure, 1st corr. S. in D. ² seyþ for haþ seyd, P. ³ fol. 7^b D.

⁴ coueytip D. ⁵ doþ P. ⁶ so it P. ⁷ fol. 138 S. ⁸ it (changed

into y) is (dotted out) sey with erasure of d, S. ⁹ om. D. ¹⁰ I sey D.

¹¹ D ends with for it is þe written as catchwords at the bottom of fol. 7^b.

Soþly ȝoure worde schal be, ȝe, ȝe; or nay, nay; soþly what 37
 so is more þan þis, it is of yuel. ȝe hafe herd þat it was seyd, 38
 Eyȝe for eyȝe, & a toþ for a toþ (þat is to seye, a man schulde
 be punysched in þe same membre in þe whuche he disseyfede
 his neyȝebors)¹: but soþly I sey to ȝow nouȝt to² wiþstonde 39
 þe yuel: but whoso smyteþ þee in þe ryȝt cheke, ȝif to hym
 þe³ toþer. & whoso wyle stryue wiþ þee in þe dome, & take 40
 fro þee þi kote, lefe þou to hym also þi palle. & whoso 41
 angreþ þee a þousande paas, go wiþ hym oþer two þousande.
 And whoso wyle borowe of þee, ne turne þou not awey. ȝe 42,43
 hafe herd þat it was tolde to olde men, þou schalt loue þi
 frend, & þou schalt hate þin enemy. But⁴ soþly I sey to ȝow, 44
 Loue ȝe ȝowre enemys, do ȝe good to hem þat haten ȝow, &
 preye ȝe for hem þat purswen ȝow, & chalange ȝow falsly⁵; þat 45
 ȝe⁶ be þe sones of ȝoure Fadir þat is in heuene, þat makeþ
 his sunne sprynge on goode men & yuele, & reyneþ up-on
 iuste men & vniuste. For if ȝe louen hem þat loueþ ȝow, 46
 what meede schal ȝe haue? siþ puplycans don þus. & if ȝe 47
 greten only ȝoure breþeren, what schal ȝe do more? Ne don
 not heþene men þus? þerfore be ȝe parfyte, as ȝoure Fadur 48
 of heuene is parfyte. & take ȝe heede þat ȝe do not ȝoure i 6
 ryȝtwysnesse byfore men, to be seyn of hem: for elles schal
 ȝe haue no mede at ȝoure Fadir þat is in heuene. And 2
 þerfore whan þou dost þyn almes, nele þou not trumpe byfore
 þee, as ypocritys don in synagoges & stretis, for-to be wor-
 schuped of men. Soþly I sey to ȝow, þei haue resseyuyd
 here mede. But whan þou dost þyn almes, loke þi lyft syde 3
 wyte noȝt what þi ryȝt syde doþ: þat þyn almes be in hyd: 4
 & þi Fader þat seþ in hyd schal ȝeue þee hyre⁵.

And⁶ whan ȝe preyzen, ȝee schal not ben as ypocritys, 5
 þat louen to stonde in churches & in kornerys of stretys
 to preyze, for-to ben seyn holy⁷ of men. Soþly I sey to ȝow,
 þese men han resceyued here mede. But þou, whan þou 6
 schalt preye, entre in-to þi couche, & schytt þe dore, & pray
 þy Fader, and þy Fader þat seeþ in hyd schal ȝelde þee þi
 meede. Soþly ȝe prayenge wele ȝe not speke mychyl, as 7

¹ gloss underlined, S.P.

² om. P.

³ þ⁴ P.

⁴ fol. 138^b S.

⁵ mede P.

⁶ new paragraph with initial, S.P.

⁷ underlined, S.

heþyn men¹ doþ, for soþly² þei wene þat þei schule be herd in
8 hire myche speche. þerfore wele ȝe³ noȝt be lyckenyd to
hem; for-why ȝowre heuonly Fader wot what þing is nedeful
9 to ȝow, byfore þat ȝee aske hym. þerfore ȝee schal preye on
þis manere: Oure Fader þat art in heuene, halewed be þi
10 name. þi kyngdom come to us. þi wylle be don, as in
11 heuene, & in erþe. Oure eche dayes breed ȝeue us to day.
12 & forȝeue us oure dettys, as we forȝeue oure dettourys.
13 And ne⁴ lede us not in temptacyon, but delyuere us of yuel.

A-M-E-N.

¹ *h...n men* on erasure, in a later hand, S.

² fol. 139 S.

³ om. P.

⁴ expunged, S. om. P.

APPENDIX I.

The Catholic Epistles of MS. Bodl. Douce 250.

JAMES.

1. ¹Iamys^a þe seruaunt of God & of oure Lord Iesu Criste, to þe twelue kynredis þat beþ spred a-brode, gretynge wel. ²My deere breþeren, wite ȝee & hopeþ alle ioye whanne þat ȝe been in many temptacyonus, ³wite ȝee wel þat prouyng of ȝoure feiþ worcheþ pacyence. ⁴Pacience soþeliche haþ a parfyte worke, þat ȝee beþ parfit & hole, faylynge in no þinge. ⁵& whuche of ȝow so haþ nede of wysdom, aske of God þat ȝeueþ plentyuously to alle, & withstonde him nouȝte, & it schal be ȝoue to him. ⁶Aske he soþely in feiþ, nouȝte faylynge: for soþely he þat is faylynge (þat is, faylynge in þe feiþ)^b he is lyke to þe flowynge of þe see þe whuche is meuyd wiþ þe wynde & bore a-boute. ⁷& þerfore trowe he noȝt þat is such a man eny ȝinge to take of God. ⁸A man of double wille is vnstable in alle weytes. ⁹Soþely make he ioye þat is a meke broþer in his hye state, ¹⁰a riche man soþely make ioye in his mekenesse. For as þe floure of þe heyeþ schal he passe. ¹¹Soþely þe sunne wiþ his hete dryeþ the heyeþ; [& hi]s^c floure fallith, & þe fayrnesse of his semblante peryschip: so schal þe riche man in his weytes wexe drye.

¹²Blessid is þat man þat suffreþ temptacyon: for whanne he is prouyd, he schal take þe coroune of lyf þat God haþ byhote to hem þat louen him. ¹³No man whan he is temptud seiþ, I am tempted of God: soþely God is an vntemptar of wickede men, soþely he tempteþ no man. ¹⁴But echone for-soþe is temptyd [f. 58^b], of his desyris wiþ-drawen, & oute of himself ledde. ¹⁵& so whan wille haþ conseuyd, it bryngeþ forþ synne: soþely synne whan it is endyd engendereþ deeþ. ¹⁶& þerfore, my lefe breþeren, ne wele ȝee noȝt erre. ¹⁷Alle þe beste ȝing þat is ȝeue & alle parfite ȝefte it is from a-boue, comynge down from þe Fadir of lyȝte, wiþ whom is no chaungynge, ne no derknesse of synne. ¹⁸Soþely wiþ his good fre wille he gate us þurgh þe word of soþfastnesse, þat we be some bygynnynge of his creature. ¹⁹Wyte ȝee, my deere loued breþeren, be euery man smert for-to here & late for-to speke & late vn-to yre: ²⁰soþely þe wraþþe of man wurcheþ noȝt þe riȝtwisnesse of God. ²¹& þerfore kastyng a-wey alle vnclennesse & abundaunce of malice, [in]^d myldenesse takeþ to drynke þe word, þat may saue ȝoure soulis.

^a MS. Douce 250 f. 58.

^b Underlined in red ink.

^c MS. defaced here.

^d MS. &.

²²Beþ also doeres of þe word & wyrcheres, but not only þe hereres, disceyuynge ȝoure-selfe. ²³For who-so is herere of Godes worde, & not doere, he may be lykkened to a man þat byldeþ þe semblaunt of his birþe in a myroure: ²⁴he byhelde him soþly, & ȝede a-wey, & a-noon he haþ forȝete what he was. ²⁵For-soþe he þat lokeþ in þe lawe of parfite frenesse, and dwelliþ þer-inne, he is not maked a forgetful hyrer, but a doere of þe worke: here in his deede he schal be blessid. ²⁶Soþely who-so wenþþ him-self þat he be religyous, noȝt wiþ-holdyng his tunge but disseyuynge his herte, veyne is his religyoun. ²⁷Clene religioun & vnfiled as [f. 59] to God & þe Fadur is þis, to vysite fadurles children, & wydows in here tribulacyoun, & from al þis worlde to kepe hem clene, vnfouled.^a

2. ¹My breþeren, ne wele ȝe noȝt be oute-takeres of persones (þat^b is, take mannys persone in more state a-ȝens God for his hye kyn, ne for his riches, ne powere in þis worlde, hauyng feiþ þat God takeþ more hede to hem for here gentil kyn, or here grete riches, or here muchel myȝt, or here sotil witte þan he doþ to þe pore þat loueþ him as welle)^c. ²& perfore if eny man come in-to ȝoure siȝt (that is, in-to ȝoure cumpenye þat beþ Godes religiouse men in what degré so ȝe be)^c, þe whiche haþ gold rynge on his fynger & schynynge cloþus, & anoþer pore man in symple & feble cloþinge come also to ȝow; ³& ȝe take hede to him þat is in schynynge cloþinge, & ȝe sey to him, Sitte þou here wel a-boue; & soþely to þe pore ȝe seye, Pou stonde þere, or sitte vndir þe stole of oure fete; ⁴in þis ȝoure-self beþ demed, & ȝee beþ maked iustises of ȝoure wickedē þouȝtes.

⁵Hereþ & take hede, my ful welle loued breþeren; ne, haþ not God chosen þe pore in þis worlde to be riche in þe feiþ, & eyres of þe kyngdom, þat God haþ by-hyȝt to alle þat him loueþ. ⁶& soþly ȝee vnwerschuþe þe pore. Ne ouerlye [f. 59^b] nouȝt þe riche ȝow þorow here power? & þei drawe ȝow to domes. ⁷Ne blasfeme þei nouȝt þe goode name þat is ouer ȝow called? (þat is, cristene men of Criste)^d. ⁸Nouȝt forþi if þou fulfile þe kynges lawe of heuene aftir holy writte, Pou schalt loue þi neyȝebore ryȝt as þi-self, þan þou doost wel, ⁹soþeli if ȝee any mennys persones accepte, þan ȝee doon gret synne, & ȝee schal be blamyd of God as trespasseres aȝeyn þe lawe. ¹⁰Who-so-euere soþly keepe al þe lawe, & trespasseþ in oþinge, þat is forbodyn in þe lawe, he is maked gilty of alle. ¹¹For he þat bad ȝow not synne in lecherrye, he bad þat þou schuldest not slee. If þat þou do no lecherrye, and sleist any man, þou art þanne trespassere & brekere of þe lawe. ¹²So speke ȝee, & so dowte ȝee, so þat by þe lawe of frenes (þat is, þe lawe of mercy)^d ȝee schal mowe be demed. ¹³For soþly to him þat dooþ no mercy schal be dounre wiþ-oute mercy: but soþly mercy ouergoþ dome. ¹⁴What schal profyte to man, my lef breþeren, ȝif eny seye þat he haþ feiþ, & he soþely haue nouȝt þe deede? ne may not feiþ sauþ him? ¹⁵Soþly if eny broþer or sister ben naked, & neden eche day sustynaunce, ¹⁶and if eny of ȝow sey to hem, Goþ forþ in pees, & be ȝee hole & ȝee fedde; & ȝee ȝeue hem nouȝt þat nedeful is to here body, what schal it profyte hem?

^a *Capitulum ii* follows.

^c underlined in red ink.

^b *gl...* in margin.

^d underlined in MS.

¹⁷ Ryȝt [f. 59^c] so feiȝ, if it haue nouȝt deedis, it is dede in it-self. ¹⁸ But some seiȝ, Pou hast feiȝ, & I haue dedis : schewe me þi feiȝ wiȝ-outen werkes, & I schal schewe þe my feiȝ þorow my werkes. ¹⁹ Pow trowest þat þer is o God, þou doost weel : & deueles trowe it & quaken. ²⁰ Pou veyne man, wilt þou wite, how þat feiȝ wiȝ-outen werkes is deed ? ²¹ Abraham oure fadur ne was he noȝt þorow his werkes maked ryȝtwyse, offerryng Ysaac his sone on an auter ? ²² Lo, hou feiȝ was wrouȝt þorow his deedis, & þorow werkes feiȝ is endid ; ²³ & þe scripture is fulfillid þat seiȝ, Abraham trowed to God, & it is putt him to riȝtwisnesse ; & he is clepid Godis freend. ²⁴ Now ȝe se how þat man is maked ryȝtwyse þorow his werkes, & nouȝt only þorow feiȝ. ²⁵ On þe same wyse also Raab þe hore ne is sche not maked ryȝtwyse þorow here werkes^a, takynge messageres, & by oþer weye kastyng a-wey wickednesse ? ²⁶ Soþly riȝt as þe body wiȝ-outen þe soule is deed, so is feiȝ wiȝ-outen good werkes deed.

3. ¹ My deere breþeren, ne wyle ȝe not be maked many maystris, wytyng þat ȝee take þe more dome. ² We alle forsoþe haue offendid in many þingis. Who-so trespasid not in his word, he is here a parfyte man ; he may al-so wiȝ a brydul lede a- [f. 59^d] boute al his body. ³ Soþely if we putte brydulis in mowȝes of horses to make hem to be at oure wille, we beren a-boute al þe body of hem. ⁴ & thouȝ it so be þat scheppis be grete & wiȝ grete wyndis þei been dreuen, soþly wiȝ a lytul stere, wiȝ hasty gouernynge of him þat ledeþ it, it is bore a-boute. ⁵ Riȝt so þe tunge soþly a litul membre it is, & gret þinges it makeþ hyȝe. Loo, how litul fyre how grete a wode it brenneþ ! ⁶ And oure tunge is fyre, is alle manere of wickednes ; þe tunge is ordeyned in oure membris, þe whuche defouliþ al þe body ; & it brenneþ þe roote of oure birȝe in flawme of helle fyre. ⁷ Soþely alle þe kyndes of bestes, & of foules, & of nedderis, & of alle oþere, beþ maked tame & beþ tamed of mankynde : ⁸ soþely tunge no man may make tame, ful of vnpeisibl yuel & deedly venom. ⁹ In it we blesse oure Fadur God, & in it we mysseye men, þat aftir þe ymage of God beþ maked : ¹⁰ & of þat same mowȝe goþ forþe blisseyng & cursyng. My breþeren, it is not by-houeful þat þese þinges so be. ¹¹ Ne oute of þe hole of a welle ne goþ noȝt forþe bittir watur & swete to-gedur ? ¹² My breþeren, þe fyge-tre ne may not bryng forþe grapes, or þe vyne-tre fyges : so no more may salt watur make swete watur. ¹³ Who-so is wyse & wel tauȝt [f. 60] a-monges ȝow, schewe he of his goode lyuynge his werke in myldenesse of wysdome. ¹⁴ ȝif þat ȝee haue bittur loue & struynges in ȝoure hertis, ne make ȝee no ioye & be lyeres aȝens soþfastnes. ¹⁵ Soþely þis wysdom is not comynge from a-boue, but erþely, bestlyche, deuellyche. ¹⁶ Forsoþe wherso enuye is & striþ, þer is vnstabulnes & eche schrewed deede. ¹⁷ Soþely þat wytte þat is of a-bouen first forsoþe it is clene, & aftur þat peysyble, mylde to a-moneste, assentyng to þe goode, ful of mercy & of good fruyte, schewyng wiȝoute fals colouryng. ¹⁸ Soþely þe fruyte of riȝtwysnes is sownen in pees to hem þat dooþ pees.

4. ¹ Where-of comeþ bataylis & strynges amonges ȝow ? ne comeþ þei

^a nota in margin.

not of ȝoure desyris þat fyȝten in ȝoure membres? ²ȝee desyre & ȝee ne haue it nouȝt: ȝe'slee, & ȝee haue enuye, & ȝee may not gete it: ȝee streuen & ȝeuen batayle, & ȝee ne haue it nouȝt wherfore þat ȝee aske. ³ȝee asken & ȝee gete it not, for as muchel as ȝee yuel aske, to dwelle stille in ȝoure desyres. ⁴Auoutoures, ne wite ȝee not þat loue of þis worlde is enmy to God? whoso-euere þerfore wolde be frend of þis worlde, he is ordeynyd þe enmy of God. ⁵Or ellis wene ȝee þat holy write be seyde in-veynelyche? to enuy desyreb þe sperit þat in ȝow dwelleþ. [f. 60^b] ⁶Soþely þe more grace he ȝeueþ. Wherfore seiþ holy writte, God wiþstondiþ þe proude, soþely to meke he ȝeueþ grace. ⁷Be ȝee þerfore sogettes to God: & soþly wiþstondeþ þe deuel, & he schal flee fro ȝow. ⁸Neyȝeþ ny to God, & wole come to ȝow. Makeþ clene ȝoure synful hondis, and clenseþ ȝoure hertes þat beþ of double wille. ⁹Be ȝe nedy, & makeþ sorowe, & wepeþ, & turneþ ȝoure lauȝtre in-to sorowe, & ȝoure ioye in-to mornynge. ¹⁰Make ȝow meke in þe syȝt of God, & he wole make ȝow hye ^ain life wiþ outen ende^a. ¹¹Ne bakbyteþ none of ȝow oþer, my dere breþeren; who-so bakbyteþ his broþer, or demeþ his broþer, he bakbyteþ þe lawe, & demeþ þe lawe: soþely if þow deme þe lawe, þow art not a doere of þe lawe, but a domes-man. ¹²On þer is ȝeuer of þe lawe & a domes-man, þe whiche may boþe saue & lese: ¹³þow soþly, what art þow þat demest þi neiȝebore? Lo, ȝee þat now seye, To day or to morowe schal we goo in-to þat cytee, & soþely a ȝere wele we þer dwelle, & to marchaundise, & þer we wile gete wynnyng: ¹⁴þat knoweþ not what to morwe schal falle. ¹⁵Soþelyche whiche is oure lyfe? Nouȝt but breþe þat lytul whyle lasteþ & scheweþ, & also sone it is ended. Perfore ȝe may seye, If God wule, or, If I leue we schal do þis or þat. ¹⁶Now ȝee make ioye in ȝoure prides, [f. 61] soþeliche alle suche ioye is wicked. ¹⁷Perfore whoso can do wel & doþ not, it is synne to him.

5. ¹Do ȝee now, riche men, make sorwe & wepeþ in ȝoure wrecchednes þe whiche schal come vn-to ȝow. ²Roten beþ maked ȝoure richesses, and ȝoure cloþus wiþ mothes beþ frete. ³ȝoure golde & ȝoure seluer rust haþ ouer-goo; & þe ruste of hem schal be a-geynus ȝow in wittnes & schal ete ȝoure flesche as it were þe fyre. ȝee make ȝow a tresorye of wraþþe in þe laste dayees. ⁴Lo, þe hire of ȝoure hyrid men & of ȝoure seruauntis þat þei traueiled fore in ȝoure seruice, þe whiche fro hem ȝe haue wiþ-holden & defrauded, crieþ: & þe cry of hem entrede in-to þe eres of God almyȝty. ⁵Fat fedde ȝee beþ upon erþe, & in leccheries ȝe nursched ȝoure hertes in day of sleynge. ⁶ȝee brouȝte forþe & slowe þe riȝtwyse, & he wiþstod ȝow nouȝt. ⁷& þerfore, breþeren, beþ sufferynge for þe comynge of oure Lord. Lo, þe tilyere abideþ þe precyouse frute of þe erþe, paciently abidynge to it haue taken sesoun & þe temperaunce. ⁸& þerfore be ȝee sufferynge, & make stalworþe ȝoure hertus, for þe comynge of oure Louerd schal come ny nyȝte. ⁹Ne make ȝee no sorwe, breþeren, echone wiþ oþur, þat ȝe be not demed: lo, þe iustyse by-fore þe zate stondeþ. ¹⁰Takeþ ensample, my breþeren, of yuel wyndynge, & of þe longenesse, & of traueyle, [f. 61^b] & þe

^{a-a} underlined in MS.

suffrynge of prophetis þat spaken in þe name of God. ¹¹Lo, we blessem hem þat suffrede. ȝee haue herd þe sufferynge of Iob, & þe ende of oure Lord ȝe seyȝ: for oure Lord is mercyful & forȝeuere. ¹²Byfore alle þinge, my breþeren, ne wyle ȝe not swere neijer by heuene, ne be erþe, ne noon oþer manere oþe: loke þat ȝoure word be ȝe, ȝe, nay, nay; þat ȝee falle not vndur dome. ¹³If eny of ȝow be heuyed, pray he wiþ stable herte, & ioye he in his heuynes. ¹⁴If eny of ȝow falle seke, bryng he in þe prestes of þe churche, & þat þei preye for him, ennoyntyng him wiþ oyle in þe name of oure Lord: ¹⁵& þe preyzere of feiþ schal sauȝ þe seke, & oure Lord schal uppreyse him; & if he be in synne, þei beþ forȝeue him. ¹⁶& þerfore schryue ȝow eche to opur ȝoure synnys, & prayeþ to-gedere, þat ȝe may be safe. Muche soþely auayleþ bysy preyere of þe rijtwyse. ¹⁷Helye was a man like vnto us, þat myȝte fele noye & suffre, & wiþ prayere he preyed þat it schulde not reyne up-on erþe; & it reyned not þre ȝere and ȝyxe moneþes. ¹⁸& eft he preyed; & heuene ȝaf reyne & þe erþe ȝaf his fruyte. ¹⁹My breþeren, soþely who of ȝow erreþ fro soþfastenesse, & whoso him amendeþ, ²⁰hym oweþ to wyte, þat he þat made þe synful to be turned fro þe errore of his weye schal sauȝ his soule fro deeþ, and [f. 62] hydeþ þe mechelnesse of his synnes þat wole turn to him.

^a Here endeþ þe pisteles of seynt Jame[s]. And Petrus pisteles now bygynne. Pis is þe firste pistel.^a

I PETER.

1. ¹Petre, þe apostul of^b Iesu Criste, vn-to þe chosen comelynges þat beþ spred a-brode of Ponti, of Galathie, of Capadocie, of Asye, and Bythune, ²aftur þe byfore-knowynge of God þe Fadur, in holynes of spiryte, in buxomnes, in sprenkelynge of þe blode of Iesu Criste. Grace be vn-to ȝow, & pees be multiplied. ³Blessid be God & þe Fadur of oure Lord Iesu Criste, þe whiche þorow his grete mercy eft-gate us a-ȝeyn in-to a leuyng hope þorow þe resureccyoun of Iesu Criste fro deeþ, ⁴in-to þat heritage þat may not be defouled, ne fordone, but is euerelastynge kept in heuene in ȝow, ⁵þat in þe vertu of God be keped by feiþ in-to hele maked redy þat on þe laste day schal be schewid; ⁶in þe whiche ȝe schul make ioye. Now if it byhoueþ ȝow a litil to be heuyed in dyuerse trybulacyons, ⁷þat þe prouynge of ȝoure feiþ be more precious þan gold is þat is proued wiþ þe fyre, þat ȝoure feiþ be founde in worschupe & ioye & honoure [f. 62^b] in-to þe schewynge of Iesu Crist: ⁸whom, if ȝe him not see, ȝee loue him: in whom now þat ȝee see not & trowe; whom, whan ȝee schulde him see, he schal be ȝoure ioye, ȝoure comfort þat may not be tolde, & þat schal be glorifyed, ⁹bryngynge aȝeyn þe ende of ȝoure feiþ, hele of ȝoure soulis. ¹⁰Of whiche hele þe prophetes enquired & souȝte, þe whiche prophecyed grace þat was to come in vs: ¹¹sechynge in what tyme it schulde syngnyfye; þe sperite of Crist, þat was in hem, schewid hem þat beþ in Cristes passyoun what ioye þei schulde haue aftur. ¹²& þei mynystrid vn-to ȝow þe pinges þat now beþ schewyd vn-to ȝow by hem þat haue preached vn-to

^{a-a} underlined.

^b a large hole in the MS. here.

ȝow þorow þe Holy Gost sent fro heuene; in whom angelis desyre to beholde. ¹³Wherfore drawe uppe ȝoure herte fro wordly lustes, & beþ sobre & parfyte & tristij þer-inne, þat is, in schewyng þat grace þat is offrud to ȝou in þe reuelacyon of Iesu Crist; ¹⁴as sones of buxomnes, not lyke to ȝoure firste desyres of ȝoure vnknowynge, ¹⁵but aftir him þat cleped ȝow holy. & be ȝee holy in al ȝoure conuersasyoun; ¹⁶for it is wretyn, Be ȝee holy, for I am holy. ¹⁷& if ȝe clepe him Fadur þat, wiþ-oute rewarde-takyng [f. 63] of eny persone, demeþ echone aftur his deedis, leueþ in drede þe tyme of ȝoure duellynge heere: ¹⁸wetyngewel þat ȝee be noȝt bouȝt wiþ roten seluer, or golde þat soone wyle ruste & rote, of ȝoure veyn lyuyng, þat ȝee of ȝoure formere fadres tooken; ¹⁹but wiþ þe precyouse blood, as of þe lombe wiþ-outyn filþe þat may not be defoulyd, of Iesu Criste. ²⁰He was knownen of God or euere þe worlde were maade, & afturwarde he was schewyd in þe laste tymys of þe worlde for ȝowe: ²¹þat þorow him ȝee be made trewe in God þat reysid him froo deeþ, & ȝafe to him ioye wiþ-outen ende, þat ȝoure feiþe & ȝoure hope schulde be in God, ²²chastysyng ȝoure soules in buxomnes of charite, in loue of breþurhede. Loueþ echone oþur bysylly in lowenes of herte: ²³eft-borne nouȝt of sede þat may be roten, but of þat þat may not be roten, þorow þe word of lyuyng God & lastyng wiþ-outen ende. ²⁴For al flesch is but as muke or hey, & alle þe ioye of it is as þe floure of hey or of mucke. Þe hey wexij drye, & þe floure þer-of felle: ²⁵but soþely þe word of God lastej wiþ-outen ende. And þis word it is þat is preched a-monges ȝow. 2. ¹Wherfore doþ a-wey alle malice & alle treccherye & alle feynynges & enuyes & alle bakbytynges, ²as children þat be now bore, koueytyng resonable mylke, [f. 63^b] wiþ-outen trecherye, þat ȝee helfully wexe þer-wiþ: ³but not forþi ȝee haf tasted how swete oure Lord is.

⁴Drawe ȝow to him þat is þe leuyng stone, reprooved of men, but chosen soþely of God, & honoured; ⁵& ȝe as quyke stones beþ maked in worke, in gostly houses, holy presthode, to offyre gostly offrynges þat beþ acceptable to God þorow Iesu Criste. ⁶Wherfore is conteynyd in holy writ^a, Lo, I schal putte in Syon a stone hyȝest cornarde, precyous and chosen, & eche þat troweþ in him schal not be confounded: ⁷þerfore to ȝou þat troweþ, honour: to hem þat troweþ not he is made a stone þat was reprooved, & kaste a-wey of hem þat housed, heere he is maked a heued stone in þe corner, (þat is, þat makeþ boþe one in charite)^b ⁸& he is a stomblyng stone, & to sporne aȝeyn, & a stone of sclawndre to hem þat stumblen þer-ȝeyn þorow worde, & troweþ not; in whom þei beþ putte (þat is, in whom is here dome or þeire sauacyoun putte)^b. ⁹ȝe soþeliche beþ a chosen kynrede, ryal presthode, a holy folke, peple i-chose (þat is, gete þorw passyoun & bore þorw bapteme)^b; þat ȝe schulde schewe þe vertu of him þat cleped ȝow fro derknesse in-to his merueilouse lyȝt; ¹⁰þe whuche some tyme were not his folke, now soþely ȝe beþ Godes folke; þe whuche some tyme folwyd not [f. 64] aftur mercy, now soþely ȝe folwe þer-aftur.

¹¹My deere frendes, I beseche ȝow as comelynge[s] & pilgrymes, þat ȝe

^a say in margin.

^b underlined.

absteyne ȝow fro fleschely desyres, þe whuche stryuen aȝeyn þe sowle ;
¹² hauyng ȝoure conuersacyoun good a-mong þe gentylis ; (þat is, a-mong
þe puple þat is not trewely turned, to teche hem boþe in lyuynge & also in
ȝoure soule) a þat whanne þei speke yuel of ȝow by-hynde ȝow and sey ȝe beþ
yuel-doeris, þat þei may byholde ȝoure good deedis, & so þat þei may wor-
schupe God in þe day of vysitynge. ¹³ Beþ sogettis to alle mannes creature
(þat is, to eche man or womman þat is Godes creature) a, for God (þat is, for
Godes loue in jinges þat beþ lefful wiþ þe wille of God) a : oþur to a kynge,
as he þat is ouer þe ; ¹⁴ oþur to dukes, as to hem þat beþ fro hem sentte to
vengeaunce of yuel doeris, & soþely preysyng to good doaris. ¹⁵ For so is
þe wille of God, þat ȝe make hem þat doþ wel to wexe dombe (þat is, to
holde hem stille wiþ-outen preysyng of here good deede, or, on þis wyse) a
þat ȝe þat do wel make dou[m]e b þe vnkonyngenesse of vnwyse men (þat is
to mene, þat ȝe þorw ȝoure good lyf & ȝoure good speche & sufferyng ȝyfe
suche ensample to be vnwise recheles, þat þei may take ensample, & so of
here [f. 64^b] yuel wordes & deedus waxe dombe) a ; ¹⁶ as ȝe þat beþ fre, & not
as þei þat haue filþe of chorlhede (þat is, bondage to synne) a, & hauyng
frenesse of malice, but as þe seruawntes of God. ¹⁷ Beþ sogettis to alle
creatures of mankynde, for loue of God ; worschupeþ ȝoure kynges ¹⁸ & her
mynynstris in alle drede to ȝoure lordes, not only to þe goode & debonere,
but also vn-to trwawntes. ¹⁹ Soþly þis is grace, for who suffereþ for
conscience of God (þat is, for þat he wul not do aȝeyn consience, leuyng
þe wille of God) a heuynesse or wo sufferiþ in vnriȝtwynnesse, ²⁰ þe whuche is
grace, if þat ȝe synne & þerfore be smeten in þe necke, ȝe suffre it (& þat
riȝtwysly) a. But if þat ȝe do wel & þanne paciently suffre (heuynesse
& wronges) a, þis is grace a-nentis God (þat is, þat grace ȝe haue of God) a.
²¹ & soþely here-to ȝe ben clepid : for Crist sufferid for ȝow, leeuyng
ensample þat ȝe folowe his trace : ²² þat neuere dide synne, ne neuere was
trecherie in his mouþe founde : ²³ þe whuche whan he was mysseyde, he
mysseyde not a-ȝeyn ; whan þat he schulde suffre, he curside not a aȝeyn a ;
he soþly tooke him-self to þe iuge þat demyd him vnriȝtwisly ; ²⁴ þe whuche
bar oure synnys in his body (peyne, wondres & wo, þat he for oure synne
suffred) a up-on þe rode-tre : þat we to synnys schulde be def. 65) de,
& soþly lyue riȝtwisly : þorow whos peyne ȝee beþ helud. ²⁵ Soþly ȝe were
as scheep strayȝenge a-boute (departynge from þe flocke) a, but now ȝe beþ
turned to þe hurde & þe bischop of ȝoure sowlis.

3. ¹ And wymmen on þe same manere be maked sugettis to here
housbondes, so þat who-so troweþ not to ȝoure worde þat þei may be wonnen
wiþ-outyn worde þorow þe goode conuersacyoun of ȝoure wymmen ; ² by-
holdynge in drede ȝoure holy conuersacyoun, ³ of whom ne be þei noȝt
wiþ-oute (þat is, be not þe wymmen wiþ-outen schewynge ensample) a wiþ
þe here of here heued, or wiþ serkylyng a-boute wiþ golde, or wiþ bysy
arayynge of cloþus. ⁴ But of þat þat is hydde wiþ-inne in mans herte (þat
is, þat þei araye her herte wiþ-inne to þe siȝt of God, schewynge oute to þe
folke her holy dedus in mekenes & lowenes) a in vnflynge reste (of here

a underlined.

b cf. 2 Pet ii 16; MS. dounie.

body & soule)* of ony ese, & a demure spyryte þe whuche is riche & cely in þe syȝt of God. ⁶So soþly some tyme holy wymmen, & hopynge in God, enourned hem, sogettes to here housebondes. ⁶As Sare was buxom to Abraham, clepynge him her lorde: whos douȝttes þe beþ, wel doyng & not dredyng eny perturbacion [f. 65^b] or lettynge. ⁷Men also þat beþ duellynge wiþ ȝowre wymmen, aftur witte & connynge reweled, absteyne ȝow fro ȝoure wyues þat beþ þe more freyle, doyng wurschupe vn-to hem, as to hem þat beþ eyres of grace of lyf; þat oure preyeris be not lettud. ⁸Beþ alle of o wylle in feiþe in ȝoure preyeris, hauynge pyte (& compassyoun echone of oþur)*, loueres of breþurhede, merciful, mylde, & meke: ⁹not ȝeldynge euyl for euyl, or mysword for mysword, but euen per-azeyn blysshe hem þat cursiþ ȝow, or myssey; for in þat ȝee beþ clepyd (þat is, ȝe be ordeynyd euere to blyssse)*, þat ȝee may haue þe blyssyng ȝorow herytage. ¹⁰Soþly whoso wole loue his lyf, & see goode dayes, wiþ-drawe his tunge fro yuel, & his lyppis þat þei speke no trecherye: ¹¹bowe him a-wey fro wikkidnes, & do good; seke pees & folowe it. ¹²For þe eyzen of God loke up-on þe riȝtwyse, & his eris be redy to here preieres; soþly þe semblawnt of God (þat is, þe heuy chere)* is up-on hem þat worcheþ þe yuel. ¹³& who is he þat ȝow schal noye, if ȝe folowe me perfytyl (& be Godes amynysteris)* ¹⁴& what so-euere þat ȝee suffre for riȝtwysnesse, in þat ȝe beþ blessed. Ne be ȝe not a-ferid of drede of hem, þat ȝe beþ not lettud ne disturbed; ¹⁵but hald wel ȝee Crist oure Lord in ȝoure hertus; euer redy to make satisfaccyoun to alle þat axkeþ ȝou resoun þer þat in ȝow is ȝorow hope & feiþ. ¹⁶But [f. 66] wiþ a mesurid drede haue euere a good conciense, þat in þat at þei bacbite ȝow, as ȝe ware yuel-doaris, þat þei may be confoundid, þat blamen ȝowre goode conuersacioun & lyfynge in Crist. ¹⁷Forsoþe muche bettur it is if þe wel-doaris suffre aftir þe wille of God, þan al þe lykyng of þe yuel-doaris; ¹⁸for onys Crist was for oure synnes deed, þe riȝtwyse for the vnriȝtwise, to offre us to God; deed soþly in flesche & lyuynge in spirite, et cetera.

4. ¹Arme ȝow in þouȝt of þe passioun þat Crist suffrode in his flesche. ²Beþ ȝe wyse, & wakeþ in praieres; ³hauynge eche wiþ oþur in ȝoureself lastynge charite. For charite hiduþ þe multitude of synne. ⁴Holdiþ hospitalite to-gedere wiþ-outen gruchyng; ⁵echone aftur þat he haþ taken grace, scheweþ it vn-to oþur as good dispenderis of þe many-fold grace of God; ⁶who-so spekeþ as þe wordis is of God; whoso mynsteriþ as porow þe vertu þat God mynsteriþ to him: þat God in alle þinges be worschupid by oure Lord Iesu Criste, vn-to whom is honoure & ioye and lordschupe, in worlde wiþ-outen ende, ainen.

¹²My deere breþeren, wele ȝe not traueyle in hete & brennyng þat stereþ ȝow to temptacyon, as þat some newe þinge falle vn-to ȝowe: ¹³but communyng to-gedere in Cristis passyon [fol. 66^b] (þat is, echone stere oþur whan he is toward eny temptacyoun, wiþ mynde of þe passyoun of Crist)*, make ȝe ioye, þat in þe schewynge of his ioye ȝe mowe make ioye, beyng euere myry. ¹⁴If ȝe be schamed or reproued in þe name of oure Lord Iesu Criste,

* Underlined.

& þe it gladly suffre, blessud schal þe be : for þat at is of þe honoure & of þe vertu of God, & he þat is his sperite, schal vpon ȝow reste ; of oþur he is blasphemyd, of ȝow be he worschupyd. ¹⁶Suffere noon of ȝow as a manslear doþ, or a þeef, or an yuel, wordly man, or as a coueytour of oþur mennes goodes : ¹⁶but soþly if ȝe be not a-schamed to suffre as he þat is a cristen man, þan ȝe schul glorifye God in þis name. ¹⁷For it is tyme þat þe dome bygynne of þe hous of God : if it soþly first bygynne of us, what schal be here ende þat trowe not to þe gospel of God ? ¹⁸& if vñne-þus schal a riȝtwys man be sauyd, þe wikkid & þe synner where schal þei appere ? ¹⁹Also & þei þat suffre aftur þe wille of God, þei be-take here soules in here goode deedus vn-to here trewe makere.

5. ¹I byseche þerfore þe olde þat beþ wiþ ȝou, I, þat am on of ȝoure elderis, & a wittnes of þe passyouns of Crist, þe whuche is comm[u]n[er]^a of his ioye þat schal be schewed in tyme þat is to come, [f. 67] ²þat ȝe feede Godes flokke in þat at ȝee may, purueyinge for hem, not constreyned but by ȝoure fre wille, aftur Godes techynge ; ne for no hauyng of foule wordly wynnynge, but wilfully (& gladly)^b ; ³not as lordis in þe clergye, but a forme (& ensample)^b to the flokke of good lyuynge ; ⁴and whan þe prynce of hirdus schal appere (þat is, Crist on þe day of dome)^b, ȝe schal take a gloriose croune of ioye. ⁵& þe same manere ȝe þat be ȝonge be þe solettes to ȝoure elderis. And scheweþ alle to-gedere mekenes a-mong ȝow : for God þe proude wiþstondiþ, & to þe meke he ȝeueþ grace. ⁶And þerfore meke ȝow vndur þe myȝt[y] honde of God, þat he make ȝow hye in tyme of his visitacioun ; ⁷puttyng in him al ȝoure bysynes, for he haþ kepyng of ȝow. ⁸Beþ sobre & wakeþ, for ȝoure enmy þe deuele as it wore a romynynge lyon goþ aboute, sechynge whom he may swelowe : ⁹whom ȝe schul wiþstonde, stalworþe in þe feiþ, wytyng ȝat ȝee mowe suffre þe same passyoun þat he doþ þat is in þe worlde (for eny strenkþ þat ȝe haue of ȝow-self)^b. ¹⁰& þerfore soþly God of al grace þat haþ callid ȝow in-to his euere-lastynge ioye in Iesu Crist, he schal fulfille (þe myȝt þat ȝow wanteþ)^b, conferme (ȝoure þouȝte)^b, & make it sad. ¹¹In him by ioye & honoure euere wiþ-outen ende. Amen. ¹²By oure trewe broþer [f. 67^b] Syluane, as I suppose, schortly I haue wryton vnto ȝow, prayinge & wytnessynge þat þis is þe verrey grace of God, in þe whuche loke þat ȝe stonde. ¹³þe chosun churche þat is in Babiloyne greteþ ȝow weel, & Marke my sone. ¹⁴Greteþ wel to-gedere echone oþur in holy kyssynge. Grace be to ȝow alle þat beþ in Iesu Criste. Amen.

II PETER.

1. ¹Symon Petre, the seruawnte & þe apostul of Iesu Crist, to hem þat haue taken feiþ euen wiþ vs, in ryȝtwisnesse of oure God & oure saueoure Iesu Crist : ²grace be to ȝow, & pees be fulfillyd in þe knowynge of oure Lord. ³How þat alle þinges beþ ȝeuen to ȝow, þorow þe vertu of God, þe whuche beþ nedeful, & beþ ȝeue to ȝow to lyf & to pyte, by knowynge or

* MS. commin.

b Underlined.

þorowȝ kunnynge of him þat clepēȝ ȝow þorow his owne ioye & his vertu ;
⁴ by þe whiche vertu moste & precyous byhestes he haþ ȝeuen ȝow ; þat
 þorow him ȝe be maked felowis of þe kynde of God, fleynge þe corruptyoun
 of desyres þat beþ in the worlde. ⁵ And þerfore putteþ al ȝoure bysynesse
 to vse vertu in ȝoure feiþ, in vertu to haue connynge, ⁶ soþly in kunnynge
 abstynence, pacyence, in pacyence onlyche of pyte, ⁷ in pyte loue of breþur-
 hede, in br[o]þur[hede]^a loue of charite : ⁸ Soþly if þis be ȝoure lederis
 & wiþ [f. 68] ȝow, þei wele [not] leue ȝow voyde, [ne] wiþ-outer fruyt in þe
 knowynge of oure Lord Iesu Crist. ⁹ Soþly whoso is not redy to þis, soþly
 he is blynde, & suffereþ temptacyon to muche to haue power in him,
 forgetynge to muche þe clensyng of his olde synnys. ¹⁰ Wherfore, my
 dere breþeren, beþ þe more bysy, þat þorow ȝoure goode werkes þat ȝe do
 & fulfylle ȝowre certeyn clepyng & chesynge (þat is, þat ȝe fulfylle þe dedus
 þat ȝe beþ chosen and clepyd to)^b. Soþly if ȝe þus do, & ȝoure clepyng
 fulfille, þan ȝe schul not synne. ¹¹ And þanne schal abundynglyche (þat is,
 plenteouslyche)^b be ȝeuen to ȝow, wherþorow ȝe schul haue entre in-to þe
 euere-lastynge kyngdom of oure Lord & Iesu Crist oure saueoure. ¹² Wher-
 fore I schal bygynne to meue ȝow & telle ȝow eueremore of þes þinges, þat
 ȝe soþly be in þem stabled & confermed in soþfastnes. ¹³ Soþly me þinkeþ
 it riȝtwis, as longe as I schal dwelle in this wonynge stede, (þat is, þe whyle
 I lyue)^b to rere ȝow (þat is, to stere ȝow) in warnynges & techynges.
¹⁴ Serteyn I am þat smert & hasty is þe doyng downen of my tabernacle
 (þat [f. 68^b] is, I am certeyn þat hastely & sone schal come þe tyme of my
 departyng of body and of soule)^b, after þat at oure Lorde Iesu Criste haþ
 ordeynyd to me. ¹⁵ & I schal ȝeue ȝow enchesoun þat I may haue ȝow aftur
 my deed, þat ȝe haue in mynde þes þynges þat I telle ȝow in my lyfe.
¹⁶ ȝe schul not folow þis techynge, as it were yuel tauȝt fabules we haue
 maad knownen vn-to ȝow : þe vertu & þe for-knowynge of God. But I wele
 þat ȝe be byholderes of his grete dedus : ¹⁷ takynge of God the Fadur
 honoure & ioye, þorow þe voice þat come glydyng fro heuene, fro þe fadur
 to þe sone, seyng on þis wyse fro his fulgrete ioye, Here is, or, þis is my
 deere sone, in whom muche lykyng Iche haue hadde ; heere ȝe him.
¹⁸ & þis voice we herde fro heuene brouȝte, whanne we were wiþ him in þe
 holy hylle. ¹⁹ & we haue þe more ful trewþe & word of prophecye, & in þat
 ȝe do wele þat ȝe take heede per-to, as to a lanterne lyȝtenyng in a derke
 place, forto þe day schyne, & lucifer, the grete sterne, be resen in ȝoure
 hertis, þat schyneþ so briȝt. ²⁰ Soþly al tyme prophecye is not ȝeuen
 aftur [f. 69] mannes wille : but alle þe holy seyntes þorow þe Holy Gost
 spaken þat were enspyred of him.

2. ¹ Ther were soþly also fals prophetus a-mong þe folke, ryȝt as a-mong
 ȝow schul be mayster lyeris, þat bryngen vppe newe sectis (þat is, newe
 religyon & newe gyses)^b of dampnacyoun, & þat Lord þat bouȝte hem schul
 þei denye, chesynge hem a ledere of loste & dampnacyoun. ² & many schul
 folowe aftur here lecheryes (þat is to seye, þer schal come in holy churche
 maysterus þat schul mayntene lesynges, boþe of lerid & lewyd, peruerutyng

^a MS. broþur.

^b Underlined.

þe trewe lawes, & turnyng soþe to false & false vn-to soþe ; & þes schulen bryngē newe ordris & sectus, costomes and degyses, turnyngē here religyoun out of þe ryȝte rewle, vnschapyngē þer body wiþ newe manere of degyse, conformynge hem to þe worlde and leuyngē godes rewle ; & make hem a bonde of lost & dampnacyoun. & many schul folowe þer lecherrye ; of men of holy churche þat schulde be Godes prophetes schal by-come prophetis of þe deuel. & oþer grete & smale, þat schal se her lecherrye & her foule dedis, schal folowe here ensample and so wende to helle)^a by þe whuche þe weye of soþfastnes schal be blasfemed (þat is, þe whuche [f. 69^b] schul soþfast techyngē & heleful lore putt downen & despice, & mayntene & aferme þe lawe of lust & synne)^a. ³& þorow auaryce (þei schul be erandebereris & depraueris to lette ȝow) in ȝoure wordis, & ȝoure deedus þei schul bye & sylle (þat is, in þat ȝe teche þe peple þe peryl of yuel lyf to make hem to haue drede, in þat þei schul bye & sylle her synne for syluer & for golde)^a, to whom þe dome now ne somtyme sessiþ nouȝt, & here dampnacyoun slepeþ nouȝt. ⁴Soþly if God sparud not to þe aungeles þat synnede, but bytoke hem to be drawnen wiþ þe romynyngē deueles of helle, whan þei deuelis bycome, echone to drawe oþur, euere þere to be tormentid, kepid vn-to þe dome. ⁵& origynale worlde he sparud not, but al it fordide, safe Noe & þo þat wiþ him were, wiþ þe grete flode. ⁶And þe cytees of Sodome & Gomorre turnyd it in-to poudre [þ]orow^b his vpturnyngē, & dampnede hem alle, ȝeuynge hem ensample þat aftur wolde do yuele ; ⁷& þe ryȝtwyse Loth þat wiþ þe wickede was ouerlyen, & holdun downen wiþ here vnriȝtwyse lyfynge, God him fayre delyuerede : ⁸soþly þorow syȝt & heryng ryȝt-wyse he was dwellynge a-monges hem, þat from day to day [f. 70] his ryȝt-wyse soule wiþ wickede dedus þei turmented. ⁹God wolde his ryȝtwyse from temptacyoun delyuere, and soþly þe wicked vnto þe day of dome in peyne & turmentis hem kepede ; ¹⁰& soþly more hem þat aftur here flesche in desyres of vncleunes walke ; to haue any lordschupe þei dispice it (þat is, eny lord to haue ouere hem)^a; bolde þei be, & drede not to gadere to hem lykynge companyis, gyses & sectes newe for-to ordeyne, þe whuche be blasphemaris ; ¹¹sijen þat angelis beþ of more vertu & strengþ, þei take no mynde of þat dredeful dome þat schal be ȝeue aȝeyn hem. ¹²þei soþly as it were vnresonable bestes, þat þorow sleyȝtus be taken or þei wite, so þe blasphemaris in here fylþe schal preche, takynge [þe mede] of vnriȝtwisnes. ¹³For þei wende þe lustus of þis worlde & þe fylþe & þe lykynge hadde ben delices, folowynge in þer lykynge, in þer festus doyngē lecherrye, ¹⁴hauyngē here [ey]sen^c ful of a-uoutries, wiþ-outeren sessyngē of here synne ; hauyngē rowe soules & vnstable ; & vsyngē þer hertes in auaryce ; childeeren of malyson, ¹⁵ȝoden omysse, forsakynge ryȝt weye, & folwed þe weye of Baalam, þe whuche loued mede of wickednes ; [f. 70^b]. ¹⁶soþly blamed he was of his wodnesse of a doume beste—as who seiþ, he spak not as resonable man, but as a doume beste þat vndur synne was ȝoked—vndur ȝokke, spekyngē wiþ mannes voyce & of his vn-wytte of þe prophete was him forbode, seyinge on þis wyse,

^a Underlined.^b MS. rorow.^c MS. aȝeyn.

¹⁷Pis beþ welles wiþ-outen watur, & cloudes þrowen aboute wiþ stormes (þat is, þei þat schulde haue watur of wysdom & techynge as men of holy churche, þei been alle drye, & þe cundyte of grace renneþ nouȝt to hem : but beþ cloudes derke wiþ synne, þrowen a-boute wiþ stormes of temptacyon. ¹⁸Pus vndurstonde I þis).^a in þe whuche dymnes of derkenes is kept ; ¹⁹spekyngе proude þinges of vanyte, deseyuynge hem in desyres of lecherye of flesche þat tristep to hem ; & opynly lyfen in here errorr, ²⁰by-hotynge to hem frenes, & by hem-selue bounde & seruantes of corupcyon. Soþly of whom-so eny is ouercomen & þus defoulyd, his seruant he is. ²⁰Soþly who-so feleþ þe fyllynges of þe worlde in knowyngе of oure Sauoeoure & oure Lord Iesu Criste, & eft in þe same ben ouercome, þanne þat lattere fallynge is wors vnto hem þan þe firste was. ²¹Soþly betre it were to hem not to knowe þe weye of ryȝtwisnesse, [f. 71] þan, aftur þat þei haue knownen it, to turne awey þer-fro aftur þat it is ȝeuen us in holy comawndement. ²²Soþly to hem falleþ þe trewe prouerbe þat is seyde. Lyke þei ben to an hounde þat turneþ aȝeyn to ete þat he haþ spewe, and also to þe sowe þat wascheþ hyre in þe podel wiþ mukke al fyled.

3. ¹My dere breþeren, I wryte þis vnto ȝow to be ȝoure secunde pistil in þe whyche I stere ȝoure ful clere myndes þorowe biddynge & bysekynge, ²þat ȝe þenke vpon þe wordis þat Crist haþ spoken vnto ȝowe and of þe apostelus wordes, & also of þe prophetes, & of þe comawndementis of oure Lord & oure Sauour. ³& wyte ȝe wel þat first þer schal come in þe laste dayes bygylaris to disceyue, þat schal rewel hem aftur þeir owne lustus & þer lykynges, ⁴& ^bschul seye (þat is, of Crist to helpe & to deme)^b Where is his byheste, or where is his comynge ? Seþen þat þe olde fadrus were deede, ȝut alle þinge lastuþ þus fro þe bygynnynge of eche creature. ⁵But þei haue no mynde how þat he made heuene & erþe, see & londe, & alle þorow his worde. ⁶Þorow þe whuche word he distroyede þanne þorow flowynge water al þe worlde, [f. 71^b] saue a fewe þat were kept. ⁷Soþly þe heuenys þat now ben & erþe wiþ þe same worde—þat is, to heuene schal be fordon & erþe schal brenne—beþ maked a-ȝeyn, & kepte vnto þe fyre on þe day of dome, & vnto þe day of lesyngē & peryschynge of þe wickede men. ⁸But o þinge, my dere breþeren, be knownen to ȝow & not hyde, þat o day wiþ God is as it were a þousande ȝeere, & a þousande ȝere but as it were o day. ⁹God taryeþ not in þinges þat he haþ byhette as some folke wene ; but sufferyngelyche he abyduþ vs, willynge þat none perysche : but he wile þat alle be turned to penawnce in a-mendynge of here lyf. ¹⁰Soþfastly þe day of God sodeynly schal come as a þef vnwarned, in whos comynge hastyly heuenes schul passe (þat is, heuenny soules schul passe fro þe dredeful dome vnto þe blisse of heuene)^a, þe elementes soþly þorow hete schul be vndone, & þorow brennyngē of fyre þei schul be wastud, þe erþe soþly & alle þinges þat schal be þere-inne, alle þei schul be brent. ¹¹Perfore syþen alle þes beþ to be vndone, how nedeful is it þanne to us to be holy in lyfynge & pyte, [f. 72] ¹²abydynge & makynge us redy aȝeyn þe dredful comynge of oure Lord Iesu Criste, þorow whom heuenes brennyngē

schul be vndone, & þe elementis þorow brennyng of fyre schul fayle. ¹³Soþfastly newe heuenes & newe erþe we abyde & his byhestes, in þe whyche ryȝtwysnes dwelliþ. ¹⁴Wherfore abydyng þes þinges, my dere breþeren, bysy ȝow to be founden a-nentes him in pees vnsoyled & vnfouled, ¹⁵& trowiþ wel þat þe longe a-bydyng of oure Lord Iesu Crist is for oure hele, ryȝt as oure dere broþur Poule, aftur þe witte þat was ȝeuen him, wrote vnto ȝow; ¹⁶& as he in alle his pistelys spake of þes þinges, in þe whyche somme beþ harde to vndurstonde, þat þei þat be vnstable & vn-tauȝt deprauen, as þei don oþur wrytynges, vnto þeire ounen dampnacyon. ¹⁷And þerfore, ȝe my breþeren, knowiþ it byfore, kepeþ ȝoure-self, þat þorow þe errour of hem þat beþ vnywyse ȝe be nouȝt deceyuyd, fallynge fro ȝoure firste strengþe. ¹⁸But beþ wexyng in grace & in þe knowyng of oure Saueoure Iesu Crist; to him be ioye & worschupe, worlde wiþ-outen ende. Amen.

Here bygynnyþ þe first pystyl of seynt Ion þe a-postele.

[f. 72^b]

I JOHN.

1. ¹The lyf þat was wiþ-outen ende fro þe bygynnyng, þe whuche we herde, and wiþ oure eyȝen sawe, þat we byholde, & oure hondis him handlede, of þe whuche word of lyfe we haue drawe, ²& we him sawe, & bere wittnes, & schewe vnto ȝow þe lyf euerelastynge (þat is, Crist Godis sone)^a þat was wiþ þe Fadur & to us apperud: ³þat we haue herde & seyne we schewe it vn-to ȝow, þat ȝe mowe haue felowschupe wiþ vs, & þat oure felowschep be wiþ þe Fadur and wiþ his sone Iesu Crist. ⁴& þis haue we wryte vnto ȝow þat ȝe make ioye, & þat ȝoure ioye be fulle. ⁵& þis is þe schewyng þat we herde of him, & we schewe it vnto ȝow: for God is þe lyȝt, & þer is in him no manere of derknes. ⁶If we seye þat we haue felowschep wiþ him, & we in derknes walke, we lye & doþ not soþfastnes. ⁷Soþly if we walken in lyȝte, so as he is in lyȝte, þanne haue we felouschype to-gedur, & þe blode of Iesu Crist his sone^b makeþ vs clene of alle synne. ⁸If þat we seye we haue no synne, we diceyue vs-self, & soþfastnes is not in vs. ⁹If þat we schryue us of oure synnes, God is trewe & ryȝtwyse, & forȝeueþ oure synnes, [f. 73] and he schal make vs clene of alle manere of wickednes. ¹⁰If þat we seye we synned nouȝt, we make him a lyere, & his word is not in vs. 2. ¹My children, þis I write to ȝow, þat ȝe synne not. But whoso-euere haþ synned, we haue Iesu Crist oure ryȝtwyse avocat byfore þe Fadur: ²& he is socoure and helpe for oure synnes; soþly not only for oures, but also for al þe worlde, þat wiþ trewe trowþe wile to him clepe. ³And in þat we wote þat we haue knownen him, if þat we kepe his biddynge. ⁴Whoso seiþ þat he knoweþ God, & kepeþ not his biddynge, he is a lyere, & soþfastnes is not in him. ⁵Soþly whoso-euere kepuþ his word, verreyly, in him is Godes charite parfyte. & in þat we knowe þat we dwelle in him, if þat we be parfyte in him. ⁶Whoso seiþ þat he in him dwelleþ, as he haþ go mote he go. ⁷My dere frendes, I wryte vnto ȝow not

^a Underlined.

^b MS. sonne.

a newe byddynge, but an olde comawndement þat ȝe haue had fro þe bygynnynge: ^aeftsones I write a newe mawndement to ȝow here, þat is seþ in him & in ȝow; for derkenesse now beþ passed, and now schyneþ verrei lyȝt. ^bWhoso seiþ ȝat he is in lyȝte, & hatuþ his broþur, he is in derkenes. [f. 73^b] ^cWhoso loueþ his broþer he dwelleþ in lyȝte, & sclaudur is not in him. ^dSoþly whoso hatiþ his broþur, in derknesse he is, & in derknesse he goþ, & wote not whydur he goþ, for derknesse haþ blyndid his eyȝen.

¹²Sones^b, I wryte vnto ȝow, ȝat for his name ȝoure synnes beþ forȝeue ȝow. ¹³I write to ȝow, fadrus, for ȝe haue knownen him ȝat is wiþ-owten ende. I write to ȝow, ȝonge men, for ȝe haue ouercome þe wicked. ¹⁴I wryte to ȝow, ȝonge children, for ȝe haue knownen ȝoure Fadur. I wryte to ȝow, fadrus, for ȝe haue knowynge of God. I write to ȝow, ȝonge men, for ȝe beþ stronge, & Godes [word] dwelleþ in ȝow, & wickednes ȝe haue ouercome. ¹⁵Ne wil ȝe not loue þe worlde, neyþur þe þinges ȝat in þe worlde beþ. For who-so loueþ þe worlde, þe charite of þe Fadur is not in him. ¹⁶For al ȝat is in þe worlde, it is a desyre of þe flesche & desyre of eyȝen, & pride of lyf, þe whuche is not of þe Fadur, but of the worlde it is. ¹⁷& þe worlde schal passe wiþ alle his lykynges & desyres: who-so doþ þe wille of God, he dwelleþ wiþ-owten ende. ¹⁸My leue sones, it is þe laste oure; & as ȝe haue herd ȝat Antecrist comeþ; now beþ many Antecristes maked, wherfore we wote ȝat it is þe laste oure. ¹⁹þei ȝede forþ fro vs, but þei were not of vs; for soþly hadde þei ben of vs, [f. 74] soþly þei had dwellid wiþ us: but ȝat þei schul miow be knownen, for þei ne beþ not alle of us. ²⁰But ȝe haue ennoyntyng of þe Holy Goste, & alle þinges ȝe haue knownen. ²¹I wrote not þis to ȝow as vnto hem ȝat knewe not soþfastnesse, but as to hem ȝat knewe it, and wherfore al lesynge is not of soþfastnes. ²²Who is a lyere, but he ȝat denyeþ ȝat Iesus is Crist? He þis is Antecriste, ȝat denyeþ þe Fadur & þe Sone. ²³Alle ȝat denyeþ þe Sone, denyeþ þe Fader (ȝat is, he denyeþ ȝat he is a fader, for no fader may be wiþ-owten a sone or a chylde)^c; who-so is a-knowe þe Fader, he is a-knowe þe Sone; & whoso is a-knowe þe Sone, a Fader he haþ. ²⁴ȝat at ȝe fro þe bygynnynge haue herde, in ȝow mote it dwelle. ²⁵ȝif it dwelle in ȝow ȝat ȝe fro þe bygynnynge haue herde, þan ȝe schul dwelle in þe Fader & in the Sone. ²⁶& þis is þe byheste ȝat þe Sone haþ byhette ȝow, lyf euere-lastynge (ȝat is, of Criste)^c. ²⁷þise þinges I wryte vnto ȝow of hem ȝat deceyue ȝow. ²⁸& ȝee þe ennoyntyng ȝat ȝe toke of him, it mote dwelle in ȝow. & ȝe ne haue not nede ȝat eny teche ȝow: but his ennoyntyng techiþ ȝow of alle þinges, it is soþ, & it is no lesynge. & as he haþ tauȝte ȝow, so dwelleþ þerinne. ²⁹& whanne ȝat ȝe schal appere, haue we [f. 74^b] feyþ-fulnes, & be we not confoundid of him in his comynge. ³⁰If ȝe wite ȝat he is ryȝtwyse, wete ȝe forsoþ ȝat alle ȝat doþ ryȝtwysnesse is bore of him.

3. ¹Seþ what charite þe Fadur haþ ȝeven to us, ȝat we Godes sones be nemnyd. & we knowe & wite wel, ȝat þerfore þe worlde knewe ȝow not:

^a not follows, crossed through.

^b Chap. ii. begins here in MS.

^c Underlined.

for it knewe not him. ²My dere frendes, now we be Godes sones, & ȝit was it not schewid what þat we schul be. Soþly we wote, whan þat he schal appere we schul be lyke vnto him ; for we schul se him riȝt as he is. ³& echone þat haþ þis lykenesse in him, he halweþ him, so as he is holy. ⁴Alle þat doþ synne, he doþ also wickednes : for synne is wickednes. ⁵And wite ȝe þat he appered to do a-wey synne of þe worlde, & no synne is in him. ⁶Alle þat in him dwelleþ synneþ nouȝt : & alle þat synneþ seeþ him not, ne knoweþ him nouȝt. ⁷My children, late noone disceyue ȝow : whoso doþ riȝtwisnes he is riȝtwis, as he riȝtwise is : ⁸whoso doþ synne of þe deuel it is ; for fro þe bygynnyng þe deuel synneþ. In þat apperud Godes Sone, þat he wolde vndo þe deuelis werkes. ⁹Alle þat beþ bore of God doþ not synne, for his seed in him dwelleþ : & he may not synne, for of God he is bore. ¹⁰In [f. 75] þis beþ Godes sones schewed & þe fendus sones : whoso is not riȝtwyse he is not of God, & he þat loueþ not his broþur. ¹¹For þis þe schewynge þe whuche ȝe haue herde fro þe bygynnyng, þat eche of ȝow loue oþur : ¹²nouȝt as Caym þat of wickednes was, & sleare of his broþur. & for what þing slowe he him ? For his dedus were wicked, & his broþeres riȝtwyse. ¹³Ne wondreþ ȝow nouȝt, breþeren, if þe worlde ȝow hate. ¹⁴We wote þat we beþ translatud fro deþ vnto lyf, for þat we loue oure breþeren. He þat loueþ not dwelleþ in deþ. ¹⁵Whoso euere hateþ his broþer he is a man-sleare : & wyte ȝe þat eche mansleare haþ not lyf euerelastynge in him dwellynge. ¹⁶In þat we haue knownen þe charite of God, for he putte his soule for us : & we owe for oure breþeren to putte oure soules. ¹⁷He þat haþ þe goodes of þis worlde, & seeþ his broþer haþ nede & helpeþ him not, how dwelleþ þe charite of God in him ? ¹⁸My children, loue we nouȝt [wip] worde, neþer wiþ tunge, but wiþ deede & soþfastnes. ¹⁹In þat we knowe þat we beþ of soþfastnes, if we amoneste & make meke oure hertes in his syȝte. ²⁰For if oure herte reprehende vs nouȝt, God is more þan oure herte, & he knoweþ alle þinges. ²¹My dere [f. 75^b] frendus, if oure herte reprehende vs not, we haue feiþfulnes to God ; ²²& what-so-euere we aske of hym, we schal it haue, for þat we kepe his bydynges, & do þe þinges þat beþ plesynge byfore him. ²³& þat is his comaundement, þat we trowe in þe name of his sone Iesu Crist, & þat we loue echone oþur, as he haþ vs comawndid. ²⁴& whoso kepeþ his comaundementis in him he dwelleþ, & he in him. & in þat we wote þat he dwelleþ in vs, þorow þe spyryt þat he haþ ȝouȝt vs.

4. ¹My dere frendes, ne trowe ȝe not to eche spyryte, but proue þe spyrytes if þei be of God : for many false prophetes ȝede in-to þe worlde. ²In þat is þe speryt of God knownen : for eche spyryte þe whuche is a-knowe þat Iesu Criste haþ comen in flesche—þat is, boþe God & man—he is of God. ³& eche spirite þat vndoþ Iesu Criste, he is not of God : but þis is Ante-crist of þe whuche ȝe haue herde. For he comeþ, & now ryȝt he is in þe worlde. ⁴My children, ȝe beþ of God, & in him ȝe haue ouercomen : for God is gretttere þat is in ȝow þan he þat is in þe worlde. ⁵þei beþ of þe worlde, & þerfore of þe worlde þei speke, & þe world hem heriþ. ⁶We beþ of God : whoso kneweþ God hereþ ȝow ; he þat [f. 76] is nouȝt of God heriþ ȝow nouȝt. & in þat we knowe þe spirite of soþfastnes & þe spirite of

erroure. ⁷ My dere breþeren, loue we us to-gidere : for charite is of God ; & eche þat loueþ his broþur of God he is bore, & God he knowiþ. ⁸ He þat loueþ nouȝt knewe not God : for God is charite. ⁹ In þat appered þe charite of God in vs : for he sente his owne sone in-to þe worlde, þat we lyue by him. ¹⁰ & in þat is charite not as we haue loued God, but for þat he first loued vs, & sente his sone an helpe for oure synnes. ¹¹ My dere breþeren, if God haue loued vs, & we schulde eche loue oþur. ¹² No man saw God euere (or, eny tyme)^a: if we loue to-gidere, God in vs dwelleþ, & his charite is in vs parfyte. ¹³ In þat we knoweþ þat we in him dwelleþ & he in vs, for of his Spirite he haþ ȝeue vs ; ¹⁴ and we haue seye & bere witnesse, þat þe Fadur sente his sone Saueoure of þe worlde. ¹⁵ Whoso is a-knowe þat Iesus is Godes sone, God dwelleþ in him, & he in God. ¹⁶ & we haue knowe & we trowe to þe charite þat God haþ in vs. God is charite ; & he þat dwelleþ in charite, he dwelleþ in God, & God in him. ¹⁷ In þat is charite parfyte wiþ vs, þat we haue feiþ in þe day of dome ; for ryȝt as he is & we beþ in his worlde. ¹⁸ Drede is not in charite : but parfyte charite putteþ [f. 76^b] ousc drede, for drede haþ peyne ; soþly whoso dredip, he is not parfite in charite. ¹⁹ & þerfore loue we God, for first God loueþ us. ²⁰ Whoso-euere seiþ þat he loueþ God, & hateþ his broþur, he is a lyere : þe whiche soþly loueþ noȝt his broþur whom þat he seiþ, how may he loue God whom þat he seeþ nouȝt ? ²¹ & þat biddinge we haue of God, þat whoso loueþ God, he loueþ his broþer.

5. ¹ Alle þat troweþ þat Iesus is Criste þorow; God he is bore : & eche þat loueþ him þat gate, loueþ him þat of him is bore. ² In þat we knowe þat we loue Godes children, whan whe loue God, & we do his byddynges. ³ Þis is soþly charite of God, þat we kepe his biddynges : & his biddynges ne beþ not greuous. ⁴ For alle þinge þat is bore of God (or, þorow; God)^a ouercomeþ þe worlde : & þis is þe victory þat ouercomeþ þe worlde, oure feiþ. ⁵ Who is it þat ouercomeþ þe worlde ? noon but he þat trowiþ þat Iesus is Godus sone. ⁶ Þis is he þat come by water & blode, Iesus Criste ; nouȝt only in water, but in watur & blode. & it is þe spryrite þat beruþ witnes þat Crist is soþfastnes. ⁷ For þre þer beþ þat witnes bere in heuene, þe Fadur, þe Sone & þe Holy Goste : and þes þre beþ one. ⁸ & þre þer beþ þat ȝeueþ witnes in erþe, Spirite, ater, & blode : & þre beþ one. ⁹ ȝif we take witnes of men, more is þe witnes of God ; for þat^b [is] þe witnes of God [f. 77] þat is more, for he bar witnes of his sone. ¹⁰ Whoso troweþ in Godes Sone, he haþ þe witnes of God in him. He þat troweþ not in þe Sone he makeþ him a lyere, for he troweþ not in þe witnes þat God witnessiþ of his Sone. ¹¹ And þis is þe witnesse, for lyfe euere-lastynge he haþ ȝeue to us, & þat is þe lyfe in his Sone. ¹² He þat haþ þe Sone haþ lyfe ; whoso haþ not þe Sone (of God)^a, he haþ not lyfe. ¹³ Þis I wryte vn-to ȝow, to make ȝow to wyte þat ȝe haue lyfe euere-lastynge þat troweþ in þe name of Godes Sone. ¹⁴ & þis is þe feiþfulnes þat we haue to God, for what þinge so we vse axse aftur his wille, he hereþ us : ¹⁵ & we wote þat he hereþ us, what-so we axe : & we wote þat we haue þe axsynges, þat we

^a Underlined.

^b MS. þat for.

haue him axsyd. ¹⁶He þat wote þat his broþur synneþ synne þat is not to þe deeþ, axse for him, & God schal ȝeue lyfe to him þat synneþ not to þe deeþ. Soþly þer is synne vn-to þe deeþ (þat is, euere contynuyng in sýnne, & endynge in dispeyre, þat is, wanhope)^a: none, I sey, prey for him. ¹⁷Eche wickednesse is synne, & it is synne vn-to þe deeþ. ¹⁸We knowe þat eche þat is bore of God (or, þorow God)^a ne synneþ not—þat is, wilfully in deedly synne—but getynge keþeþ him, & þe wicked toucheþ hym [f. 77^b] not (þat is, þe yuel spirite ouercomeþ him noȝt)^a. ¹⁹We wote þat of God we beþ bore, & alle þe worlde is putte in wickednes. ²⁰& we wote þat Godes Sone come & ȝaf us witte to knowe verrey God, & þat we be in his verrey Sone, Iesu Criste. He þis is verrey God & lyfe euere-lastynge. ²¹My children, keþeþ ȝow fro mawmetrye (and symulacris)^a. *Here endiþ þe firste part of Ionys pistelis and þe secunde part bygynneþ by name^b.*

• Underlined.

^b The remaining epistles 2—3 John, Jude which follow here are printed from MS. S. on pp. 42—47.

APPENDIX II.

Variant readings of MS. Holkham 672 f. 132.

Heading : *Here beginnin þe pistoles of þe zeer* in red ink, p. 18 l. 5 *suster* om., l. 6 *first* & om., l. 7 *in þis*.

1 Pet. i 13 *y profered*, 24 Heading *C^m 2^m*, new division with initial : *bisse*, ii 2 *nouþe* : *þer inne in to*, 4 *quik ston*, 7 *worschiped*, 8 *repreued*, 9 *folk* *yehose* : *an holy for and h.* : *of wynnyng adquisiciooun*, 11 no division in MS., 12 b. *þou in ȝoure werkes*, 17 *Dredip ȝe God* om., 20 *but if...suffrep* om., 21 *stappes*, 22 *no s.* : *no g.*, 24 *þat we dede vnto synnes. lyue to riztwynnesse*. & *þoruȝ*, 25 *þat erreden*, iii 1 *C^m 3^m* in margin, 3 *as þouȝ* : *on oþer*, 6 *sarra*, 7 *dwellynge*, 16 *hause ȝe*, 17 *ȝef it is*, 21 *nouþe* : *of oure*, iv 1 *C^m 4^m* in margin, 2 *mannes*, 3 & *etynges* & *drynynges* om., 4 *ne ȝerneþ*, 11 *as þe ȝertue*, 12 *fel*, 16 *bute he þt*, 11 *schal þe w. man*, v 1 *C^m 5^m* in margin, new division, 2 *folk*, 5 *sogett*, 10 *blisse*, 11 *be*.

2 Pet. i 1 *Sedā Petri 1^o* in margin, 5 an asterisk in the margin, referring to the following note in a late hand : *Nota þe gradacioun of þise vertues & how man is blynd ȝif he hause hem not or else to be besi to hause he[m]*, 11 *þer ben*, 19 *forto*, 21 *nys noȝt*. ii 1 *C^m 2^m* in margin. 9 *vnto þe d.*, 10 *boldeliche*, 13 *delyces of god* : *hure* om., 14 & *vnstable hauseþ*, 20 *after m.*, 22 *forto spewe* : *plodde* of *f.* iii 1 *C^m 3^m* in margin, 3 *day* : *coueytise*, 7 *nouþe* : *world*, 8 *noȝt* om., 15 *deme ȝe*, 18 *deo*.

James i 1 Heading : *James capitulum primum* in red ink, 6 *in* om., 11 *hey*, 13 *seiþ*, 27 *from þe*, ii 1 *C^m 2^m* in margin, 2 *upon his*, 3 *seiþ* : *seiþ*, 8 *kyndelyche l.* : *þi nexte neyȝebore*, 11 *schalt do*, 19 *þer nys*, 22 *seestou*, 25 *sche*, iii 1 *C^m 3^m* in marg., 2 *no w.* : *a body*, crossed through and expunged, follows *body*, 7 *y tamed*, 8 *tamen*, 11 *of hol a w.*, 15 & *a bestysch* *wysdom* om., 16 *as is h.*, iv *C^m 4^m* in marg., 3 *ne* om. : *first in* om., 5 *seiþ*, 6 *seiþ*, 10 *in tyme of tribulacions*, 11..f *bachityng* in marg., crossed through, 13 *seyeþ* : *2nd we* om. : *on þe m.*, 14 *seluen* om., v 1 *C^m 5^m* in marg. : *wrecchednesse*, 2 *mouȝþþes*, 4 *kyngdomes*, 6 *azzenstod*, 16 *þat ȝe* om., 17 *þere þre*, 20 *keueren*.

1 John i 1 Heading : *Ioon C^m 1^m* : & *oure*, 2 & *lyf* : *yhan* exp. follows *han*, 3 & *þat oure f.*, 8 *seyeþ* : *2nd ne* om., 10 *seyeþ*, ii 8 *derknesses*, 12 Heading *C^m 2^m*, new division, 16 *ne* om., 20 *habbeþ* always before *hauseþ*, 21 3rd *þat* om., 28 *ȝe* om., iii 4 & *eueriche man þat doþ synne*. & *wycked-*

nesse he doþ. & synne is wyckednesse, 6 seiþ, 10 fendas children: ne loueþ noȝt god follows broþer, 12 2nd werkes om., 18 ne leue we, 19 þis syȝt, 21 not om., 23 þe sone, iv 1 C^m 4^m in marg., 10 sone, v 1 C^m 5^m in marg., iesu is crist, 4 oure feiþ. & who ouercomþ þe world om., 11 þis is lyf, 16 synneþ a s., 20 goddes sone: þat is v. God, 21 & simulacris. Here endeþ ...bygynneþ om.

2 John 1 Heading: 2^a epistola, 4 founde om., 5 maundement, 6 ȝe herde fro, 7 1st he om., 8 lȝose, 9 goþ added above the line: draweþ noȝt in þe l., 10 to hym, 11 soþely whoso seiþ, 12 to zou.

3 John 1 3 epistola as heading, 2 I hauie my, 5 what-so þou dost om.: gloss om., 7 þi name, 10 neue, 11 of G., 13 by lettre, 14 schal: Here endeþ etc. om.

Jude 1 Heading: Iudas Tadeus C^m 1^m: C. & Iames: in Iesu, 3 frendes al my: vnto zou: preynge om.: þat ones, 4 sumtyme adesc.: into lecch., 5 ones, 6 aungels: & his comarundementes om., 7 esaumple, 8 blasfeme, 10 þei knoweþ not þei blaspheme: soþly what-so-euere om., 11 Heading: C^m 3^m, new division; 12 haruest, 13 derknessis, 14 Ecce...etc. om.: 2nd his om., 18 in wykkednesse om., noȝt in gode religioum follows desyres, 19 bestyalis, 21 in to, 23 ouþer.

p. 47 l. 1 princypal om., and om., l. 2 first & om., l. 3 schullen, l. 11 tauȝte men to lyue when he om., l. 16 y fulled, l. 20 y fulled: suster, p. 48 l. 4 kepen, 8-9 of his fader & so alle þilke men han forȝ[e]fnesse of hure synnes om.

Rom. v 19 Heading: Poule to þe Romaynes in red ink: as be, 21 riȝt-wynnesse, vi 1 Heading: C^m 6^m, new division; schul we s., 2 schul, 4 ros, 12 ben boren to, 13 armed, 17 habbeþ, 19 seye, vii 1 C^m 7^m in marg., sche is d., 3 sche: sche is: erasure of half inch before man, 5 dep, 13 þat it schulde seme synne. þorȝ þat yng þat was good. wrouȝte dep to me. þat me be y-maad seye aboue manere (see p. xvii): synne þorȝ þe c., 14 & y soldē, 16 nel noȝt: he, 20 wolde noȝt, viii 1 Heading: C^m 8^m, 4 fulfille, 7 to þe lawe, 17 togydere with C., 21 first þe om., 23 habbeþ, 30 last he om., 31 schul, 32 yaf: haþ he, 33 2nd þat om., 36 fforþi, 37 loueþ, xii 1 Heading: C^m 12^m: breþer, 2 confermed: neweschipe: 2nd & om., 4 habbeþ, 6 to added above the line, 9 be, 16 ne wille zee, 18 And zef it mowe be in þat þat it is of zou. hauie ȝe pes wiþ alle men, 21 þou noȝt o., xiii 1 Heading: C^m 13^m; soule be twice, 2 a power he aȝeynstondeþ þe ordynance of god & who þat aȝeynstondeþ precedes geteþ: hem self, 8 he þt loue, 9 schalt: 4th ne om., 10 and, 12 w. neyze, 14 Iesu Crist.

1 Cor. i 10 Heading: Ad Corintheos C^m 1^m, seye, 12 seye, 13 or wher ȝe, 14 þanke, 15 seye, 16 knowe, 18 percheþ, 19 þe wysdom of om., 25 wiser þan men; & þat is febel of God is om., 26 2nd mony om., 29 noȝt om., ii 1 Heading: C^m 2^m, 4 þe uertue, 6 no w., 8 I knewe, 13 ne om., 14 bestliche, 16 habbeþ, iii 1 Heading: C^m 3^m, 2 ȝet nouȝe, 3 struynges, 5 in om.: habbeþ, 13 whiche is euerycche mannes w., 15 ben as twice, v 1 Heading: C^m 5^m, 7 paske lombe, 8 þe perfnes, 11 oþer a dr., 12 2nd of om., vi 1 Heading: C^m 6^m, 2 habbeþ, 4 habbeþ: lest worþi, 5 seye, 6 stryueþ, 8 & gyle, 11 2nd ȝe om., 13 distr. boþe þe wombe &, 14 arered, 15 þe om.: goddes forbode, vii 1 Heading: C^m 7^m, of þilke, 2 a wyf, 4 last ne om., 5 first ȝe

om., 6 *seye*, 9 first *þei* in marg., 10 *togedere* om., 11—13 *sche* for *heo*, 16 *sche*, 18 last *he* om., 22 & *his fr.*, 25 *no*, 28 *sche*: *neyþer*, 29 *habbeþ*, 33 *how* om., 34 *sche*: *he* crossed through with *sche* in marg., 36 *sche*: 2nd *he* om.; *sche* for *he*, *heo*, 39, 40 *sche* for *heo*, xi 1 Heading: *C^m 11^m*, 5 *sche*, 6 *sche* for *heo*: *y* *todded* for *y-dodded*, 7 last *a* above the line, 12 *w. is of*, 16 *non*, 17 *for þe worse*. & *noȝt* for *þe betere*. *first whan ȝe comeþ togydere* follows *togedere*, 23 *n^a* *þe sacrament* scribbled in marg., 27 *oper*, 31 *demeden*: *ne* om., 34 *selfe*, xii 1 Heading: *C^m 12^m*, *ne* om., xiii 1 Heading: *C^m 13^m*, 5 *þinkeþ*, 10 *a* *voyded*, 11 *bute* (crossed through) follows first *was*, 13 *alle* for *þese*.

2 Cor. vi 1 Heading: 2^a *Cor₃*, 7 *armes*, 10 last *þat* om.: *habbeþ*, 14 *riȝtful men*, 16 *þe lyuynge*.

Gal. v 2 Heading: *Galathes he wryteþ & seiþ* om., 8 *gloss* om., 23 *gloss* om., 25 *no* division in MS., *walke we in spiryt* om., vi 1 Heading: *C^m 6^m*, new division; 2 *burdenes*, 4 in *hymseluen*. & *noȝt in anoþer man*: *burdene*.

Ephes. iv 1 Heading: *Ad hephesios C^m 4^m*, 13 *forte*, 17 in *wytnesse* for & *w.*, 24 *þoruȝ*, v 1 Heading: *C^m 5^m*, 2 *ȝaf*, 3 *y-nempned*, 4 *no*, 11 *vn-riȝtful w.*, 14 *þou þat sl.*: *up þou*, 23 *chirche*, 27 *no such*, vi 1 Heading: *C^m 6^m*, 3 *wel*, 6 *to þee as*, 11 *upon*, 20 *gloss* om.: *in Iesu I*, 24 in *incor-ruþeyoun*.

Phil. i 27 Heading: *Ad philipenses C^m 1^m*, *I here*, 30 & *þat*, ii 1 Heading: *C^m 2^m*, 4 *owne þing*, 12 *herbyfore* for *herd b.*, 18 *ȝe to me*, iii 1 *C^m 3^m* in marg., 5 *kynde of B.*, 8 *omission*=S.P., 10 *in þe v.*, 16 *to fele we*, iv 1 Heading: *C^m 4^m*, 6 *bysechynge*: & *doyng*, 8 *oper chaste*, 9 & *þilke*.

Col. i 9 Heading: *Colocenses C^m 1^m*; *w. in eueriche*, 23 *ȝif* om.: *im-
meuable*, 25 *dispensacyoun*, 29 *hym* om., ii 1 Heading: *C^m 2^m*, 16 *neomenye*, 19 *iuyntes*, 23 *ne* om., iii 1 Heading: *C^m 3^m*, 6 *þe for þat*, 7 *in þe whiche
ȝe w.*, 11 *noȝt*, 25 *ne* om., iv 1 Heading: *C^m 4^m*, new division.

1 Thes. i 2 Heading: *Tessalonisences C^m 1^m*, 3 *muynde* om., 4 *ȝe om.*, 8 *word*: *of ȝoure*, 10 *loue* for *Sone*, ii 1 *C^m 2^m* in marg., new division; *it om.*, 4 *we w.*, 9 last of *om.*, 12 *walkeden*, 14 in *Iude*, 17 *from ȝou in mouþ*, 19 *ȝe it noȝt*, iii 1 Heading: *C^m 3^m*, 4 *as we kn.*, 6 *m. of us*, 7 *ȝoure n.*: *ȝoure tr.*, 9 *al. om.*, iv 1 Heading: *C^m 4^m*, 4 *o. his owne*, 6 *it om.*, 7 *clen-
nesse*, 9 *lyue*, 10 *þat ȝe dop*, 12 *habbeþ*, 14 *herbyfore*, v 1 Heading: *C^m 5^m*, 14 *c. hem of*, 15 *euermore schewe*.

2 Thes. i 3 Heading: *Secunda tessalonicenses, C^m 1^m*, 4 *in alle ȝoure p.*, 7 *angele*, ii 1 *C^m 2^m* in marg., 5 *was* om., iii 1 Heading: *C^m 3^m*, *be ȝe*, 7 *ne om.*, 9 *y-had* om., 14 *who*.

Hebr. i 1 Heading: *hebreos C^m 1^m*; *Seynt Poule* for *he*, ii 1 *C^m 2^m* in marg.; *yherd*, 8 *he* for *it*: *leueþ*, 12 *my name*, 13 *trust*: *God* om., 14 *to his bl.*, iii 1 *C^m 3^m* in marg., 6 *a om.*, 13 *by om.*, iv 1 Heading: *C^m 4^m*, f. *þerynne*, 3 2nd *my om.*, 7 *D. is*, 12 *peryschynge*: *iuyntes* for *myndes*, 14 *haþ om.*, v 1 Heading: *C^m 5^m* *first men om.*: *her synnes*, 4 *God as om.*, 12 *y maade maystres*, vi 1 Heading: *C^m 6^m*, 2 *p. in*, 7 *f. eftstones upon*, 8 *nys-
keruynge*, 18 *we han þe strongest solas we þat goþ togydere om.*, vii 1 Heading: *C^m 7^m*, 2 *tenþis*, 19 *we neyzede*, 27 *f. oure gultes*, viii 1 Heading:

C^m 8^m ; sege of þe om. : & hye, 7 þe rāþere, 8 Israel & on þe hous of om., 9 in þat d., ix 1 C^m 9^m in marg., 5 ouer sch., 10 d. werchynges, 13 axen, 17 it vayleþ, 19 sprengde þe blod on al, 23 þoruz, 26 Oþer elles, 27 Heading : C^m 10^m, new division ; x 5 desyrest, 7 of, crossed through, precedes God, 8 synne : vnto þee, 9 þat þat he f., 23 last he om., 29 more trowe ȝe þat : gret t., 37 he schal, 39 of wyþdrawynge om., xi 1 Heading : C^m 11^m, 4 þe whiche : bar, 11 sche, 13 afer þilke byhestes, 24 was y maad, 30 fallen, 34 y ben made, xii 1 C^m 12^m in marg., 3 byþenke : aȝeynseye : y weyryed, 4 aȝeynstonde, 6 scourgeþ, 8 ne om., 12 arereþ, 19 þe trumpe : for þat þe word ne sch., 21 quake, 23 pruyutyfes : domes men, 27 inmeuable, 28 in meuable, xiii 1 Heading : C^m 13^m, new division ; dwelleþ, 17 walkeþ.

1 Tim. i 1 Heading : *Tymotheum C^m 1^m, 2 by grace &, 4 þe om., 5 y feyned, 9 2nd ne om., 10 holy t., 18 prophetes : habbeþ om., 19 þe om., 20 ymene, ii 1 Heading : C^m 2^m, 5 first & om., 6 ȝaf, 9 a om. : gold : ne for oþer, iii 1 Heading : C^m 3^m, 3 no sm., 4 first þat om., 8 dekenes, 11 & synne w., 13 a gre : þe om. : lord, 14 ȝou, 15 þat þou wete om., iv 1 Heading : C^m 4^m, 6 purposynge, 13 ffor I, v 1 2nd hym om., 3 þat beþ trewe twice, 4 C^m 5^m as heading, new division ; 4 neuewes : sche, 5, 6, 10 sche for heo, he, 11 þei nylleþ noȝt b. y wedded in crist, 12 hauþ, 16 haþ in marg., 18 þin oxe, vi 1 Heading : C^m vi^m, þilke above the line, h in worschipen above the line : in alle, 10 of om., 13 þinge : ȝaf, 16 nouþer, 17 bidde.*

2 Tim. i 1 Heading : *2^a thymothei^{1^o}*, epystels, 5 byþenkyng, 5 eunyce, 15 phigelus, 16 ofte tymes, ii 1 Heading : C^m 2^m, 2 to om. : first men om., 3 as om., iii 1 Heading : C^m 3^m, 3 noȝt m. : fromward, 8 iamnes, 10 gloss om., 11 last me om., 12 þilke om.

Titus i 5, *Tyte C^m 1^m in marg. : to on of, 7 as þe, 12 yuele bestes, 16 reþpreued follows werke, ii 1 C^m 2^m in marg., 3 chydesteres, 4 also om., 5 h. þe charge of, 14 ȝaf : fore byggen, iii 1 Heading : C^m 3^m, 5 noȝt in þe : sauþ, 10 schonye.*

NOTES.

PROLOGUE.

Page 1, line 1. Gen. i 27. l. 2. Gen. ii 8 ff. P. 2 l. 4 ff. Is. xiv 13, 14. l. 35 ff. Gen. iii. P. 4 l. 6 ff. Gen. iv. l. 11 ff. Gen. vi 5-7. l. 16 ff. Gen. vii. l. 20 ff. Gen. ix 11-13. P. 6 l. 5. Job xxviii 28. l. 9. Jer. xxix 13. P. 8 l. 2. *scole*, the university. Cf. Matthew, *Engl. Works of Wyclif hitherto unprinted*, E.E.T.S. No. 74, p. 427, 'for collegies in oxneford & caunbrige ben foundid on siche appropingis, & collegians wenden out & prechen & quykenen many partis of englond; & degré takun in scole makiþ goddis word more acceptable, & þe puple trowiþ betere þerto whanne it is seyd of a maistir.' l. 25 ff. Exod. i 13, 14. l. 30 f. Exod. iii, iv. l. 32 ff. Exod. xi 10. P. 9 l. 5 ff. Exod. xiv. l. 15 ff. Exod. xx. P. 10 l. 9 ff. Exod. xix. l. 21 ff. Exod. xx 19. l. 28 ff. Exod. xxi-xxiii. P. 11 l. 6 ff. Exod. xxiv 12-xxviii. l. 16 ff. Exod. xxxii 1 ff. P. 12 l. 14 ff. Exod. xxxiii. P. 13 l. 5 ff. Exod. xxxiv. l. 14 f. Vulgate, Exod. xxxiv 30 videntes autem...cornutam Moysi faciem, ib. 35 faciem egredientis Moysi cornutam. Cf. Lyra's gloss *Wycl. Bible* i 277 beemes of wondurful schynynge ȝeden from him at the maner of hornes, whiche the postle in ii. pistle to Cor. iii C^o clepith the glorie of Moyses face, wherfor in Ebreu it is thus, Israel knew not that the skyn of his face was horned. l. 16 ff. Exod. xxxv 5. l. 19 ff. Exod. xxxvii 1 ff. ll. 25-32. Exod. xl 34-38. P. 14 ll. 1, 2. Exod. xxviii 1, 41. l. 3 ff. Num. iii 6 ff. l. 5 ff. Num. iv. l. 18 ff. Exod. xxi-xxiii. P. 15 l. 20 ff. Lev. xi, Deut. xiv. P. 16 l. 15 ff. Lev. xiii. l. 17 ff. Lev. xiv. l. 22 ff. Lev. xv. P. 17 l. 14 ff. Lev. xii. l. 24 ff. Lev. xxiii.

I PETER.

Chap. i 3. þe Fader] A. et pater. ȝow] A. nos. on hope] A. Spem vivam; the scribe evidently read unam. 6. in þe whyche tyme ȝe schuleþ ioyen. And now ȝef...] A. In quo exultatis, modicum nunc si oportet, LV. In which ȝe schulen make ioye, thouȝ it bihoueth. 8. þat ȝe seþ noȝt] A. in quem nunc quoque non videntes. but whan ȝe seþ hym] A. quem cum videritis, EV. forsothe ȝe bileuyng, LV. but ȝe that bileuen =cl. credentes autem. 11. þat telleþ as þe spiryt...] A. scrutantes in quod vel quale tempus significaret in eis spiritus Christi, cf. EV. sekinge

which or what maner tyme the spirit of Crist signyfiede in hem. 12. þat þei...schulde...mynystre] A. quia...ministrabant, LV. for...thei mynystriden. 13. beþ sober in alle pinges & parfyt &] A. sobrii, perfecte sperate, but Lect. Luxov. (Sab.) and 'Biblia Sacra' Basilea 1514 have *perfecti*, LV. sobre, perfit and hope ȝe. is y-prefed] A. offertur, MS. H. has rightly *y-profered*. 17. ȝoure Fader] A. patrem. ȝoure wonyng*e* in þis worlde] A. incolatus vestri, EV. ȝoure pilgrimage, or *litel dwellinge in erthe*, LV. ȝoure pilgrimage. 21. an euerlastynge blisse] E and LV. euerelastinge glory, A. *cl. gloriam*. 24. & his blisse is þe flour] A. et *omnis gloria eius tamquam flos*.

Chap. ii 1. *gyle*] A. omnem malitiam. 4. *a ston*] A. lapidem *vivum*, MS. H. p. 226 has rightly 'a quik ston.' 5. *spirytual houses*] A. domus spiritualis; Hieron. in Ezech. 28 tom. 3, col. 897 domus spirituales; *g. Beda* etc. domos spiritales. 6. *ich wole putten*] A. pono; Hieron. in Ezech. tom. 3, col. 897, MS. Corb. 2 (Sab.) *ponam*; E and LV. I shal putte (LV. sette). 8. *of sclaundre*] A. *petra scandali*. 11. *My leueste frendes*] A. Carissimi. 16. & be ȝe fre, noȝt hauynge...] A. quasi liberi, et non quasi velamen habentes malitia libertatem. 18. & be ȝe sogetis] A. servi, subditi; *cl. adds estote*. 19. *suffrep etc.*] A. si...sustinet quis tristitias patiens iniuste. 21. *for Crist*] A. quia et Christus. 24. For the omission see MS. H. p. 226;—*we beþ*] A. estis; Ambros. 1. 1 de Spir. S. tom. 2, col. 623, Fulgentius 1. 1 ad Trasim. c. 11, p. 79 *sumus*, E and LV. ȝe ben, but EV. (MS. X) 'wee ben.' 25. *erreden*] A. errantes; MS. H. p. 226 has rightly 'þat erreden.'

Chap. iii 2. *a...conuersacioun*] A. conversationem vestram. 3. A. Quarum sit non extrinsecus capillatura aut circumdatio auri aut indumenti vestimentorum cultus. 4. *of a softe spiryt in reste*] A. in incorruptibilitate quieti et modesti spiritus. 7. *with wymmen*] A. om.; August. 1. de bono conjug. to. 6, col. 328 (Sab.) cum uxoribus vestris. þan ȝe beþ] add. 12. *of God*] A. domini. *sterne semblaunt*] A. vultus. 15. *of þe feiþ & of þe hope þat*] de fide et spe quæ=tol. cav. harl. 1772 etc., cf. Berger, *Vulg.* pp. 51, 163; A. de ea quæ in vobis est spe; E and LV. of that feith and hope that is in ȝou. 21. *oure Lord*] =E and LV.; A. om. 22. ȝe weren y-mad] A. efficeremur.

Chap. iv 1. *his—alle manere*] add. 4. *we...hurneþ*] A. concurrenibus *vobis*. ȝoure God] add. 7. *comeþ nyȝ*] A. adpropinquabit, E and LV. schal neȝe. 11. *oure Lord*] add.=E and LV. 12. *My leueste breþeren*] A. Carissimi. 13. *of oure Lord I. C.*] A. eius. 14. *his*] A. Christi. For þe Spiryt etc.] A. quoniam gloriæ dei spiritus in vobis requiescit ab aliis blasphematus, a vobis autem honorificatus; *cl. quoniam quod est honoris, gloriæ, et virtutis Dei, & qui est ejus Spiritus super vos requiescit.* 16. þoroȝ a riȝtful] A. in isto, the translator evidently read *iusto*. 17. ȝow] A. nobis.

Chap. v 1. *a wytnesse*] A. *consenior et testis*. 3. *of ȝoure wylle, of ȝoure soule*] A. ex animo. 9. *he dop in þe same wyse*] A. eandem passionem..,fieri; LV. that the same passioun is maad. 10. *blesse*] A. *gloriam in Christo Iesu*.

II PETER.

Chap. i 2. *Iesu Crist]* A. om.; but Auct. epist. ad Demetriad. p. 46 (Sab.) adds *Iesu Christi*. **4.** *we ben y-maad]* A. efficiamini, Hieron. cont. Jovin. tom. 4, p. 2 efficiamur. **corrupcyoun]** A. concupiscentiae corruptionem. **5.** A. Vos autem curam omnem subinferentes ministrate. **8. ben]** A. adsint et superent. **12. warne]** A. semper commonere. **16. vnwyse]** A. cl. doctas; ssx indoctas; E and LV. vnwise. **oure Lord]** A. domini nostri *Iesu Christi*. **21. of God]** misplaced, A. sancti dei homines.

Chap. ii 4. *bote þrew etc.]* A. Sed rugientibus inferni detractos in tartarum tradidit in iudicium cruciandos reservari. **5.** *a bedel & a fore-goere]* A. praeconem. **15. & Booʒor]** A. ex Bosor. **20. Lord]** A. domini...et salvatoris. **22. forto caste]** A. ad suum vomitum; EV. to his woom or castyng vp; LV. to his castyng.

Chap. iii 1. *to stere ȝow etc.]* A. excito vestram in commonitionem sinceram mentem; LV. Y stire ȝoure clere soule bi monesting togidere. **2. apostoles]** A. apostolorum *vestrorum.* **holy 2°...oure...oure]** add. **7. y-kept...]** A. repositi sunt, igni *reservati.* **8. my dere frendes]** A. carissimi. **9. God]** A. dominus. **11. we]** A. vos. **12. of oure Lord]** A. diei domini. **14.** Cf. 1 Pet. iv 12. **15. Iesu Crist]=** E and LV.; om. A. **17. þoroȝ ȝoure owene infirmyte]** A. a propria firmitate=E and LV. fro ȝoure owne sadnesse.

JAMES.

Chap. i 1. *þat is a seruaunt of oure Lord & oure God I. C.]* A. dei et domini nostri I. C. seruus. *hele and gretynge]* A. salutem. **2. Breþeren]** A. fratres *mei.* **5. obbraydeþ no man]** A. non inproperat, et dabitur ei. **6. in feiþ & trust]** A. in fide. **7. of God]** A. a domino. **11. his fayrnesse]** A. decor *uultus eius.* **17.** A. Omne datum optimum et *omne donum* perfectum. *ouer-schadewynge of rewardyng[e]* A. uicissitudinis obumbratio, EV. schadewynge of whileness, or tyme, LV. ouer-schadewynge of reward. **19. wel]** add. **21. caste ȝe...from ȝow]** A. abientes. *þe word]* A. verbum *dei*, F. ff. om. *dei.* *þat is y-sowe to ȝow]* A. insitum. **23. hym-selfen]** A. uultum nativitatis sua.

Chap. ii 1. *my dere breþeren]* A. Fratres *mei.* **2. on his hond]** A. om.; ff. in digitos. **3. þat is wel cloþed]** A. qui indutus est ueste *praeclaræ*, LV. clothid with clere clothing. **& seye]** A. et dixeritis *ei*, F. ff. et dicatis. **6. hure myȝt]** A. potentiam. **8. A. Diliges proximum tuum sicut te ipsum.** **10. of al þe lawe]** A. omnium. **16. seye]** A. dicat...illis, *Ite in pace.* **oper]** A. et. **20. ded]** A. mortua, by correction otiosa, ff. uacula, F. otiosa, E and LV. ydel. **23. to his God]** A. deo. **25. hure werkes]** A. operibus. *Goddes]* add.

Chap. iii 3. *For]* A. *Si autem.* **4. And grete schyppes þat]** A. Ecce et naues cum magna sint et a validis etc. *whydur þat he wole etc.]* A. ubi *impetus* dirigentis uoluerit, LV. where the meuyng of the gouernour

wole; *ff.* et ubicumque diriguntur uoluntate eorum qui eas gubernant. 6. A. et inflammat rotam natuitatis nostrae, inflammata a gehenna. 7. *þep y-temed*] A. domantur et domata sunt. 8. *for it is a... & wiþ-outen reste*] A. inquietum malum. 9. A. deum et patrem. 14. A. nolite gloriari et mendaces esse. 15. *bote it is an erþelyche wysdom—wysdom—wysdom*] A. sed terrena animalis diabolica. 17. *discret & temperat*] A. modesta. *& assentyng to goode þinges*] A. om.; m. F. bonis consentiens, *ff.* uerecundiae c.; E and LV. consentynge to goode thingis. *demyng*]=E and LV.; F. iudicans, m. diiudicans, A. non iudicans.

Chap. iv 1. *þat þep in*] A. quae militant in. 2. *þe werreþ; þe etc.*] A. belligeratis et non habetis, F. om. et. 3. *vnderfongeþ*] F. *ff.* accipitis, A. accipietis. *scheweþ openlyche*]=LV., scheweþ EV., but A. has 'insumatis,' *ff.* erogetis. 8. *wole neyþleche*] A. adpropinquavit, F. -bit. 9. A. Miseri estote et lugete et plorate. Cf. EV. Be *þe* wrecches in *þoure* *owne iȝen*, and weyle *þe*, and wepe *þe*, LV. Be *þe* wr. and weile *þe*. 10. *wole arere*] A. exaltavit, F. -bit.

Chap. v 1. *her-after*] add. 4. *cryeþ an hiȝ*] A. clamat. 7. *schoures þat perteneþ etc.*] A. temporaneum et serotinum, EV. tymeful and lateful, LV. adds *fruyt*. Cf. *ff.* matutinum et serotinum fructum. 9. *wfore*] A. ad, F. *ff.* ante. 10. *of an efel yssew*] cl. exitus mali, *ff.* de malis passionibus, A. F. om., E and LV. of yuel goyng out. of longe abydynge & of pacynce] A. patientiae. *oure Lord*] A. domini. 11. & *þei han y-seyd... & abyde*] *ff.* Ecce beatos dicimus qui sustinuerunt, A. Ecce beatificamus qui sustinuerunt, E and LV. Lo, we blessem hem þat suffriden. *þe suffrynge & þe abydynge*] A. sufferentiam. 14. *oure L.*] A. domini. 15. *of his sekenesse*] add. 17. *lyche to ȝow*] *ff.* similis nobis, A. adds *passibilis*.

I JOHN.

Chap. i 5. *oure*] add.

Chap. ii 3. *wel*] add. 8. *now*] A. om., *h.* iam. 12. *in þe name of Crist*] A. propter nomen eius. 14. F. *g.* etc. Scribo vobis, patres, quia cognovistis eum qui ab initio est. The verse is omitted in A. cl. *h.*, E and LV. etc.; see Berger, *Vulg.* p. 128, 5. *Y wryte to ȝou, ȝonge men*]=A. *scripsi vobis*; *h.* cl. F. scribo vobis; E and LV. Y write. 18. & *þe habbeþ y-herd*] A. et sicut audistis. 19. *bote in þis etc.*] A. sed ut manifesti sint quoniam non sunt *omnes* ex nobis; *h.* sed ut praesto fiat etc.; *g.* om. *omnes*, E and LV. but that thei be knowun, that (EV. for) thei ben not of vs. 20. *Spiryt*] add. 24. A. *Si in vobis permanserit quod ab initio audistis et vos in filio et patre manebitis.* 25. *þat he wol ȝeuȝ ȝow*] add. 27. *ich haue y-tauȝt*] A. docuit.

Chap. iii 1. *knoweþ*] A. novit. 2. Cf. 1 Pet. iv 12. 3. *þis hope*] A. spem *hanc in eo*. 4. Cf. MS. H. p. 226 for the correct rendering. 6. *knoweþ...sey*] A. vidit...cognovit. 12. *wykked*] A. *ex* maligno. 17. *of þis world*] cl. *g. h.* *huius mundi*; A. mundi, E and LV. of this world. 23. *of God*] A. ejus.

Chap. iv 5. of þis worlde] A. mundi. 12. of God] A. eius.
20. he loueþ] A. diligo.

Chap. v 6. þes comeþ etc.] A. Hic est qui venit..., Iesus Christus. 7, 8. A. 'Quia tres sunt qui testimonium dant, spiritus et aqua et sanguis, et tres unum sunt'; cl. 'Quoniam tres sunt, qui testimonium dant in coelo: pater, verbum, & spiritus sanctus: & hi tres unum sunt. Et tres sunt qui testimonium dant in terra: spiritus, & aqua, & sanguis: & hi tres unum sunt.' Our text agrees with cl. except in having substituted the gloss *filius* for *verbum* and *sanguis et aqua* for *a. et sanguis*. Cf. Berger, *Vulg.* pp. 64, 104.

10. for he haþ etc.] A. quoniam non credidit in testimonio quod testificatus est deus de filio suo. 12. Goddes—Goddes]

add. 13. y wryte] A. scripsi, cl. g. scribo. 14. we schuleþ vnderfongen it—þ] add.; A. has 'quia quodcumque petierimus secundum voluntatem eius, audit nos.'

17. & þer is synne þat is noȝt] A. cl. et est peccatum; E & LV. and there is synne; our text agrees with the Greek, cf. Auth. Version 'and there is a sin not unto death.' 19. y-boren]

add. 21. mawmetes & simulacris] A. simulachris.

II JOHN.

4. oure] add. 7. He þat soþly...in flesch] add. 8. ȝoure] add.
9. Wyte ȝe þat] A. cl. om., E and LV. Witynge þat; the French xiii c. Bible MS. Brit. Mus. 20. B.V. 'Saichent.' his] add. 10. ȝoure] A. om., C. vestram. 11. Lo, y haue...noȝt confounded] A. cl. om.; sx. Ecce prædixi vobis ut in die Domini non confundamini; E and LV. and MS. 20. B.V. (see v. 9) have the same addition. 12. wryte hem] add. by lettere ne by sendyng] glosses, A. per cartam et atramentum; E and LV. bi parchemyn and ynke. with ȝow] add. 13. ȝoure chosen þi suster douȝter] A. filii sororis tuae electae; g. sorores filie. þe grace of God etc.] = E and LV.; A. om.

III JOHN.

1. to dere frend] A. carissimo. 2. Dere frend] A. carissime. my] add. 4. of charyte] A. om.; g. caritatis. 5, 6. My dere frend] A. carissime. ȝoure—holy] add. 7. his] A. om.; cl. eius. 9. ȝow] A. nos. 10. y schal moue] A. commoneam, cl. commonebo. The translator evidently read commovebo. LV. Y schal moneste. ȝow] A. nos. 11. Cf. v. 5 above. 12. goode men—of hym] add. of trewþe] A. ab ipsa veritate. 13. y haue] A. habui. with lettere etc.] A. nolui per atramentum et calamum scribere tibi. 14. þi frendes] A. amici, MS. Cantab. (Sab.) amici tui. ȝoure] add.

JUDE.

1. chose] A. dilectis, evidently misread *delectis*. 3. Dere frende] A. carissimi; MSS. H. and D. have rightly *frendes*. stryue...in upholdynge of þe feip] A. supercertari...fidei. aȝeyn synne] add. 4. This verse is

very badly translated: A. 'Subintroierunt enim quidam homines, qui olim praescripti sunt in hoc judicium, impii, dei nostri gratiam transferentes in luxuriam, et solum dominatorem dominum nostrum Iesum Christum negantes.' *deceyuable—Iesu Crist & zaf hem*] add. *of wykked*] evidently a rendering of *impii*. *& oure L.] cl. et dominum n.* 5. *oure Lord*] add. 6. *þe aungel*] A. angelos, cf. MS. H. p. 227. *his principehede & his comaundementes*] A. suum principatum; LV. her prinshod. *of God*] A. diei, Lucif. (Sab.) dei, E and LV. of...God. 7. *& þe cytee of fynytyme*] A. et finitiae civitates, LV. and the nyȝ coostid citees. 8. *God here Lord*] A. dominationem. *his*] add. 9. *God*] A. dominus; Hieron. (Sab.) Deus. 12. *it beþ þat—þei ben*] add. *þat no fruyt bereþ*] gloss to *vnfruytful*. 15. *yuel*] add. 17. *my breþeren*] A. carissimi. 19. *Holy*] add. 20. *my dere br.*] A. carissimi. house ȝoure-selfen & grounde ȝou] A. superaedificantes. *holylly of verrey feiþ*] A. sanctissimae vestrae fidei. 21. *abydyng...euerlastynge lyf*] A. om.; cl. exspectantes misericordiam Domini nostri I. C. in vitam aeternam. 24. *in þe comynge of oure Lord I. C.*] A. om.; cl. in adventu domini nostri I. C. 25. *to oure Lord* etc.] A. per I. C. dominum nostrum cui gloria magnificentia etc.

ROMANS.

Chap. vi 1. *schulde we seye*] A. dicemus. 3. *Bryþeren*] = E and LV.; Beda in Rom. 6 An ignoratis, fratres; A. F. cl. e. d. f. om. 6. *crucyfyed*] A. *simul* crucifixus. 11. *oure Lord*] = E and LV., cl. Domino nostro, A. F. e. d. f. om. 14. *her-aftur*] add. 16. *to deþ*] = E and LV.; F. in (cl. f. ad) mortem; A. e. d. om. 17. *nowþe—now*] add. 21. *in þilke þ. in þe whuche þ.*] F. g. f. in his (g. illis) in quibus, E and LV. in tho thingis, in whiche, A. e. d. in quibus. 22. A. *in sanctificationem*.

Chap. vii 4. *breþeren*] A. e. d. f. fratres *met*; cl. om. *mei*. *ȝe schulden* etc.] A. fructificaremus. 5. *we sch. make oure fruyt*] A. fructifarent. 8, 9. *of þe lawe*] add. 15. *þat þing...good, þat þing...yfel*] F. cl. bonum—malum, A. e. d. f. om. 22. *of good*] A. dei.

Chap. viii 2. *Crist*] A. Christo Iesu. 7. *þe lawe*] A. legi; cf. MS. H. p. 227. 10. *lyueþ*] = E and LV.; cl. f. vivit; A. F. e. vita, d. vitam. 15. *to God oure Fadur*] A. Abba pater. 20. *eferich*] add. 22. A. ingemiscit et parturit. 23. *bygetynge of Godes children*] f. d. om.; cl. adoptionem filiorum Dei, A. om. *dei*; E and LV. adopcioun of Goddis sones. 24. *he ne hopeþ noȝt*] A. quid sperat. 31. *schulde we seye*] A. dicimus; F. cl. d. f. dicemus. 38. *ne vertues*] cl. neque virtutes; A. F. e. d. f. om.

Chap. xii 1. A. obsecro itaque. 2. *worschup*] A. novitate; cf. MS. H. p. 227. 3. *of God*] A. cl. e. d. f. om.; F. dei. 5. *we*] A. multi—sumus; g. om. multi. 11. *oure L.] A. domino.* 13. *nedynesse*] F. cl. e. f. necessitatibus, A. d. memoriis, E and LV. nedis. 18. This verse is found in MS. H., see App. II. p. 227. 19. A. non vosmetipsos ...carissimi, sed etc.

Chap. xiii 1. *þat beþ...þan heo] add.* 2. See MS. H. p. 227.
4. *his sw.]* A. gladium. 7. A. 'cui vectigal, vectigal,' *om.* here.
9. *þou ne schalt seye no fals wyttnesse] cl. g.* non falsum testimonium dices, E and LV. Thou schalt not seie fals witnessyng; A. F. *e. d. f. om.* *þi neyzebores good] rem proximi tui* (=g. Bibl. Nat. 6, 140 etc., cf. Berger, *Vulg.* p. 76), E and LV. the thing of thi neijbore, A. F. *cl. e. d. f. om.*
11. A. Et hoc scientes tempus, quia hora est iam *nos* surgere. *þat it were] add.* 12. *wole neyȝlyche] f.* adpropinquabit, A. *e. d.* adpropriavit. Cf. LV. hath neijȝed, but EV. schal neijȝe. 14. *oure L. Iesu] A. dominum I. Christum.*

I CORINTHIANS.

Chap. i 10. *ȝe suggen] A. dicatis omnes.* 11. A. Significatum est... *mihi de vobis, fratres mei, ab his qui sunt Cloes, quia etc.* 12. *Petur] A. Cephae.* 21. A. Nam quia in *dei* sapientiam.

Chap. ii 4. *mannes w.] g. cl. humanae sapientiae, A. F. e. f. d. om.* 10. *haþ y-schewed] F. cl. f. e. d.* revelavit, A. -bit. 13. *of þe Spiryt] A. spiritus et virtutis, F. cl. f. e. d.* spiritus. 14. *Spiryt] A. sp. dei.* 15. *For it is y-wryten] 'Sicut scriptum est' Scholiast. Hieron., Beda (Sab.), E and LV. As it is writun, A. F. *cl. f. e. d. om.** 16. *bote þe Spiryt of oure Lord] Nisi Spiritus Domini (=Bibl. Nat. 254, Laud 102, Bibl. Nat. 6, 93, etc. cf. Berger, *Vulg.* pp. 76, 99), A. F. cl. e. d. f. om.* *wyt & þe vnder-*
stondynge] A. sensum.

Chap. iii 1. *herbyfore] add.* 3. *after þe flesch] A. secundum hominem, E and LV. aftir man.* 5. *God] =E and LV. ; A. dominus.* 6. *oure Lord ȝefep] A. deus...dedit.* 13. *of oure Lord] F. cl. f. domini ; E and LV. of the Lord ; A. e. d. om.* *whuch mannes] A. et uniuscuiusque opus quale sit ignis probabit.* Cf. MS. H. p. 227. 14. *& dwelleþ] A. Si cuius opus manserit quod superaedificavit, mercedem accipiet.* 17. *for ȝe beþ etc.] A. templum enim dei sanctum est, quod estis vos.* 22. *Petur] A. Cephas.*

Chap. v 1. A. *Omnino auditur, LV. In al maner.* 2. *no] A. non magis.* 4. *in my sp.] A. et meo spiritu.* 5. *of oure L.] A. domini.* 5. *oure...Crist] A. om., e. d. add 'Christi,' F. cl. f. nostri...Christi.* 6. *al-to-geder] A. totam massam, E and LV. al the gobet.* 7. *Perfore—ȝoure] add.* 10. *wharto—þe world] A. alioquin debueratis de hoc mundo exisse, E and LV. ellis ȝe schulden haue go out of this world.* 11. *of ȝow] add.*

Chap vi 1. *any ȝing] A. negotium, E and LV. a cause.* 4. *y-left worþi] A. contemptibiles ; H. has correctly *lest worþi* ; the corrupt reading of S. and P. is due to the long *s* being misread *f.* 8. *in gyle] A. et fraudatis, cf. MS. H. p. 227.* 10. *A. neque molles, neque masculorum etc.* *ne glotonos] add.* 13, 14. *oure L.—oure L.] add.* 17. *God] A. domino.**

Chap. vii 5. *certeyn tyme of ȝoure boþe assent] A. forte ex consensu ad tempus.* 6. *to ȝow] add.* 12. *A man þat] A. Si quis frater.*

13. & þe w. þat] A. et si qua mulier. 16. A. Unde enim scis, mulier, si virum salvum facies? aut unde scis, vir, si mulierem salvam facies? 20. to-fore God] A. in ea. 22. serfaunt & is freman] A. Qui...vocatus est servus, libertus est domini. 24. broþer] A. cl. f. fratres; m. frater; F. om. 25. commaundement] A. praeceptum domini. 27. vnbounden] A. solutus es ab uxore. 32. of þe worlde] add. 35. oure Lord] A. dominum. 39. from þe lawe of hure housbonde] A. cl. e. d. f. om., F. a lege, m. a lege viri. God] A. domino.

Chap. xi 10. heling] velamen Iren. i. c. 7 p. 37, Hier. Ezech. 44 col. 1030, August. l. 2 de Gen. to. 1, col. 682 c, Beda in 1 Cor. (Sab.); potestatem A. cl. e. d. f. 11. oure L.] A. domino. 12. Cf. MS. H. p. 228. 16. of ȝow] add. 17. For the omitted words see MS. H. p. 228.

Chap. xii 3. Oure L.] A. dominus. 9. grace of helynge men] A. F. cl. e. d. m. f. gratia sanitatum in uno spiritu; T. om. in uno sp. 11. on] A. unus atque idem. 14. for on etc.] A. Corpus non est unum membrum. 15. A. Quoniam non sum manus. 23. we doþ etc.] A. abundantiorem honestatem habent. 28. interpretacyons of w.] =E and LV. cl. T. ambstr.; om. A. F. e. d.

Chap. xiii 2. eueriche] om. A. F. cl. e. d. f., 'omnem' in August. tract. 7 col. 343 (Sab.). from hure places] A. om., EV. fro o place to another (gloss), LV. fro her place. 13. þes] A. tria haec.

II CORINTHIANS.

Chap. vi 1. breþeren—ȝow] add. 3. ȝoure] A. nostrum. 8. A. sicut qui ignoti et cogniti. 15. þe defel] A. Belial. 16. Y..wole women] A. quoniam inhabitabo...et inambulabo, LV. For...and Y schal walke among hem.

GALATIANS.

Chap. v 5. ȝe ne abideþ noȝt] A. nos...exspectamus. 8. Ne assente ȝe to no man in þis] A. F. cl. e. d. om., g. f. Nemini consenseritis; EV. To no man consente ȝe, LV. c. ȝe to no man. 10. oure L.] A. domino. 12. he were y-kut] A. abscindantur. 13. My br.] A. fratres. 16. ȝou in Crist] A. cl. F. e. d. f. om.; Hieron. Schol., Beda (Sab.) in Christo, EV. in Crist, LV. ȝou in Crist. in Crist] A. spiritu. desyres] f. cl. desideria; A. F. desiderium. 20. wycche-craftes]=LV.; doyngis of venym EV., beneficia A. 22. pacience, longe abydynge] A. F. f. longanimitas; e. d. patientia, Beda (Sab.) patientia longanimitas, cf. further Berger, *Vulg.* pp. 129, 203. 23. mansuetude] A. F. om.; cl. e. d. f. mansuetudo. chastite] cl. f. C. castitas, e. d. castitatis; A. F. om., cf. Berger, *Vulg.* pp. 129, 203.

Chap. vi 4. A. in semet ipso tantum gloriam habebit et non altero. 17. markes of þe woundes] A. stigmata.

EPHESIANS.

Chap. iv 1. *oure L.*] A. domino. 8. *þrowȝ awey wrecchednesse*
 A. captivam duxit captitatem. 11. *of þe worldes*] A. sanctorum.
 16. A. ex quo totum corpus *compactum et conexum per omnem iuncturam*
subministrationis. 17. *ȝow—to ȝow*] add. 18. *derke*] add. *wey*
 A. F. e. d. m. f. vita; Aug. in Ps. 118, Gildas Sap. Castig. (Sab.) 'via.'
 22. A. deponere vos *secundum* pristinam conversationem veterem hominem.
 28. *here byfore*] add. 29. *of þe feiþ*] F. cl. e. d. m. f. fidei, A.
 oportunitatis, E and LV. of feiþ.

Chap. v 3. *as it bysemeþ noȝt*] A. sicut decet. 4. *to God*] add.
 8. *oure L.*] A. domino. 18. *lechcherye*] A. *omnis luxuria.* 20, 22. *oure*
L.] A. domino. 20. *þe Fader*] A. *et patri.* 23. *of holy chu[r]che*
cl. ambstr. ejus; A. F. e. d. f. om., E and LV. of his body. 24, 25. *holy*
 add. 26. *of lyf*] A. F. e. d. f. om.; cl. Beda in Eph. 5 vitae, E and
 LV. of lijf. 27. *hure*] A. F. cl. e. d. f. ecclesiam, eccl. om. in Ambros.
 in Luc. 1 (Sab.). 33. A. *Verumtamen et vos singuli unusquisque suam*
uxorem etc.

Chap. vi 1. *eldren*] 'in Domino' follows in' A. cl. *ambstr.*, 'in the
 Lord' in E and LV. 4. A. in *disciplina et correptione domini.*
 7, 21. *oure L.*] A. domino. 12. *sp. armer of wykkednesse*] A. *spiritalia*
nequitiae. 16. *gafelokes & darte*] A. *tela.* 20. *worschupfylche*
 add.; A. *pro quo legatione fungor*, LV. for which Y am set in message
 (EV. *legacie or message*). 21. *Tyte*] A. Tychicus. 23, 24. *oure*] add.

PHILIPPIANS.

Chap. i 29. A. *quia vobis donatum est pro Christo.*

Chap. ii 1. *in-wardnesse of hafynge mercy & reuþe*] A. *viscera et*
miserationes, F. om. *et.* 11. *oure Lord*] A. domini. 12. *herd byfore*
 corrupted from *herbyfore*, see MS. H. p. 228; A. *semper.* *also*] A. *multo*
magis nunc. 15. *sympel*] A. *et simplices.*

Chap. iii 1. *oure L.*] A. domino. *To wryte*] A. *Eadem scribere.*
 3. *oure fl.*] A. *carne.* 4. A. *Si quis alius videtur..., ego magis.*
 6. *after þe folewyng of þe lawe*] A. *secundum aemulationem.* Cf. LV. *bi*
loue. 7. *profytabel & wynnyng*] A. *luera.* 8. *oure*] A. *mei.*
 9. *Iesu Cr.*] A. *Christi.* 12. *y mowe...taken...take*] A. *comprehendam*
...comprehensuþ. Cf. LV. I *comprehende...comprehendide.* 13. A. *ego*
me non arbitror compraehidisse: unum autem etc. 16. *folewe*
 MS. H. has the correct reading: *fele we* etc. A. *ad quod pervenimus, ut*
idem sapiamus. 20. *wherfore*] A. *unde.* *oure S.—oure Lord*] A.
salvatorem—dominum.

Chap. iv 1. *dereste*] A. *carissimi et desiderantissimi.* *oure Lord*
 A. *domino.* *my lefeste breþeren*] A. *Carissimi.* 4, 5. *oure L.*]
 A. *domino, -us.* 8. *of techynge*] F. *e. f. d. cl. disciplinae*, A. *om.*

COLOSSIANS.

Chap. i 9. *of 3ow...God*] add. & eferich] A. *in omni*; MS. H. p. 228
has *in*. 13. *ous—ous*] A. *vos*, F. *cl. d. f. e. nos*. 18. *holy—chylde*
add. 21. *y-mynused*] A. *inimici*, E and LV. *enemyes*. 24. *holy*]
add. 27. *wolde y-knowe*] A. *notas facere*, cf. LV. *wolde make knownen*.
Chap. ii 6. & *perfore 3ef*] A. *sicut ergo*. 8. *prophecye*] A. *philosoſiam*. 11. *Iesu Cr.*] A. *Christi*. 13. *3oure synnes*] A. *omnia
delicta*. 14. *3ow—to 3ow*] A. *nos—nobis*. *from 3ow*] A. *de medio*.
15. *potestates*] A. *potestatis* corrected to *-es*, F. *-es*.

Chap. iii 6. *of mys-trust & of vnbyleſe*] A. *d. f. incredulitatis*, F. *e. d.
diffidentiae*. It seems as if one reading had been inserted here after the
other. 8. *ne pasſe noſt forþ*] A. F. *e. d. om.*; Berger, *Vulg.* pp. 99, 139,
231 quotes several MSS. of the Vulgate where the reading 'non procedat'
occurs (=ambstr., Cod. Reg. B.N. 45, 93; Metz 7**; Monza; B.N. 1*, 3,
342, 11505* etc.). 10. *of God*] add. 11. *male & femal*] = E and
LV.; *e. d. f. masculus et femina*; A. *F. cl. om.* *vncouþe man & couþ
man*] A. *barbarus et Scytha*. 13. *of 3ou*] add. *God*] A. *dominus*.
17. *oure*] add. *Crist*] A. *om.*; F. *cl. e. d. Christi*. 18. *3oure—oure*
add. 22, 24. *oure Lord*] A. *dominum, -o.* 23. *oure—God*] A. *domino*.
24. *knowynge*] A. *scientis*, F. *e. -tes*. *Crist þat is God*] A. *Domino
Christo*. 25. *to-fore God*] F. *cl. f. aput deum*, A. *e. d. om.*

Chap. iv 2. *wake 3e*] A. *vigilantes in ea*. *to God*] add. 7. *Tyte
my broþer*] A. *Thycicus carissimus frater*. *oure Lord*] A. *domino*.

I THESSALONIANS.

Chap. i 2. *makeþ mynde*] A. *memoriam facientes in orationibus
nostris*. 3. & *of 3oure hope*] A. *sustinentiae spei*. 6. *oure L.*]
A. *domini*. 8. *Godes*] A. *domini*. *to 3ou*] A. *nobis*.

Chap. ii 1. *3ou-self*] A. *ipſi fratres*. 2. *oure Lord God*] A. *deo
nostro, F. e. domino n.* 4. & *as*] A. *ut*. 6. A. *nec quaerentes ab
hominibus gloriam, neque a vobis etc.* 7. *to 3ou*] add. 8. *euangelye*
A. adds *Dei*. 9. *ne be chariaunt*] gloss. A. *gravaremus*. 14. *oure
felowchupes*] A. *contribulibus vestris*. 17. *in mouþ & in byholdynge*]
A. *desolati a vobis ad tempus horae, aspectu non corde etc.* Cf. EV. (Q.T.)
*we desolati or withdrawen fro 3ou by mouth, byholdynge as in presence, not
in herte, (K.) we desolat fro 3ou at the tyme of an hour, in bihooldyuge etc.* ;
LV. ...*for a tyme, bi mouth and in biholding etc.* The Latin original of
our text as well as of MSS. Q.T. of the EV. must have had 'desolati a vobis
ore, aspectu etc.'; which reading curiously enough was adopted by the later
revisers. 19. I. *Crist*] A. *e. Iesum*, F. *cl. Iesum Christum*.

Chap. iii 2. *to 3ow*] add. 6. A. *memoriam...bonam semper*.
8. *oure L.*] A. *domino*. 11. *cl. deus et pater noster et dominus noster*
I. C. A. ...*dominus Iesus*. 12. *God*] add. 13. A. *deum et patrem
...domini nostri Iesu*; F. *cl. add Christi*.

Chap. iv 1. *oure L.] A. domino.* **10, 11.** *A. Rogamus...ut abundetis magis et operam detis ut quieti sitis.* *& y-sayd 3ow her-byfore] gloss.* *A. sicut praecipimus vobis.* **12.** *A. et ut honeste etc.* **14, 15.** *oure L.] A. domini, -us.* **16.** *Cryst] A. domino, F. e. Christo.* *oure L.] A. domino.*

Chap. v 2. *wytep] A. diligenter scitis.* *oure L.] A. domini.* **3.** *bote] A. et.* **5.** *Goddes] F. dei, A. e. cl. diei.* *3e bep] F. e. estis, A. cl. sumus.* **12.** *oure L.] A. domino.* **18.** *to God] add.* *ous] A. vobis.* **24.** *& pe trewe God] A. Fidelis est qui vocavit etc.*

II THESSALONIANS.

Chap. i 7. *oure...Crist] add.* **10.** *& oure witn. etc.] A. quia creditum est testimonium etc.* **11.** *þat God fouché saaf...clepyng] =EV.* 'that oure God fouché saf for to clepe 3ou in his clepyng,' whereas LV. 'that oure God make 3ou worthi to his cleping' agrees with A. F. *cl. e. ut dignetur vos vocatione sua deus.* **12.** *oure L.] A. domini.* *A. dei nostri et domini I. C.* EV. (MS. V.) and LV. omit *dei nostri et*.

Chap. ii 2. The order of words is reversed: *A. neque terreamini, neque per spiritum neque per sermonem neque per epistulam tamquam per nos, quasi instet dies domini.* **7.** *he wercheþ] A. Nam mysterium iam operatur iniquitatis.* **8.** *& pe brytnesse] gloss.* **12.** *þat beþ y-lofed] A. fratres dilecti.* **ous] A. vos.** **13.** *of God &] add.* **15.** *A. et deus et pater.*

Chap. iii 3. *God] F. cl. e. Deus, A. dominus.* **4.** *God] A. domino* *3ou don] add.* **11.** *hure þinges] add.* **12.** *oure L.] A. domino.*

HEBREWS.

Chap. i 1. *in many maneres] A. Multifariae et multis modis.* **3.** *an hy3 in hefne] A. in excelsis.* **7.** *þi ser.] A. ministros suos.* **8.** *he seyþ] add.* **9.** *þi God] A. deus, deus tuus.* **11.** *schalt efermore d. st.] A. permanebis.*

Chap. ii 2. *ferme & stabel] A. firmus.* **18.** *þilke] A. et eis, F. om. et.*

Chap. iii 1. *of 3oure] A. nostraræ.* **2.** *Moyses] A. et M.* **6.** *3ef it so be þat] A. si.* **7.** *A. nolite obdurare corda vestra sicut in exacervatione.* **8.** *in desert] follows diem temptationis in A.* **11.** *& y swor to hem] A. sicut iuravi.* *þat þei etc.] A. Si introibunt.* **13.** *prefeþ...* *wherþ] A. adhortamini...ut non.* **14.** *holdeþ etc.] A. initium...firmum retineamus.* **16.** *tarreden] A. audientes exacervaverunt.* **19.** *in-to his reste] add.*

Chap. iv 2. *A. sed non profuit illis sermo auditus, non admixtis fidei ex his quae audierunt.* **3, 5.** *þei ne schuleþ noȝt entren] A. Si introibunt.* **6.** *ne entrede noȝt in-to þat reste] A. non introierunt propter incredulitatem.* **8.** *of þis day] A. numquam de alia...posthac die.* **12.** *of þe myndes] A. compagum.* The right reading is *iuyntes* as in MS.

H. p. 228. Cf. Col. ii 19. **14.** *of oure hope*] = LV. ; of oure feiþ EV. ;
g. fidei nostrae, A. *cl. e. om.* **15.** *þat haþ etc.*] A. temptatum autem.
Chap. v 5. *& sayde*] add. **8.** *Goddes s.*] A. filius.
Chap. vi 1. *& of baptysmes & of t.*] A. baptismatum doctrinae, LV. of
teching of baptimys. But EV. has 'of waishsingis or baptysms, of teching.'
13. A. dicens nisi benedicens benedicam te et multiplicans multiplicabo te.
Chap. vii 4. Abraham...þat was on of þe moste worþy] A. cui et decimas
dedit de praecipuis A. patriarcha. Cf. LV. to whom A....þaf tithis of the
beste thingis. **14.** *of þe kynrede of Iuda*] A. ex Iuda. **26.** *synful
men*] = E and LV. ; F. *cl. e.* peccatoribus, A. peccatis.
Chap. viii 1. *þe Gretnesse of God an hyz in hefne*] A. magnitudinis
in caelis. **5.** *God sayde*] A. inquit. **8.** *God 1º*] add. *God saiþ*
A. dicit dominus. **9.** *God*] A. dominus. **11.** *schal...seye*] A. docehit
...dicens. *þe mest*] A. maiorem eorum. **13.** *waxeþ old*] A. antiquatur
et senescit.
Chap. ix 1. *iustifyenges*] A. iustificationes culturae. **8.** *lyfynge*
A. viam. **9.** *in metes*] A. solummodo in cibis, e. om. solummodo.
14. *hure c.*] A. conscientiam vestram. **15.** *bysechynge* of deþ] A. morte
intercedente. Cf. LV. 'bi deth fallinge bitwixe.' **17.** *makeþ* etc.]
A. qui testatus est.
Chap. x 1. LV. 'For the lawe hauinge a schadewe of good thingis that
ben to come, not the ilke image of thingis, mai neuer make men neijinge
perfit bi the ilke same sacrifices, which thei offren without ceassing bi alle
þeiris.' **2.** A. alioquin non cessassent offerri. **27.** *of Crist*] add.
29. how muche more *trewe ȝef þat etc.*] A. quanto magis putatis deteriora
mereri supplicia qui etc. **34.** *dwellynge in hefne*] A. manentem.
37. *& wiþynne a lytel whyle*] gloss. A. Adhuc enim modicum quantulum,
qui venturus est veniet et non tardavit. **38.** *his fot*] A. se. *his soule*
A. animae meae. **39.** *Goddes chyldren* etc.] A. sed *fidei* in adquisitionem
animaee. It is possible that the translator read 'fi[lii] dei,' since there
seems to be no authority for the present reading.
Chap. xi 4. *offred*] A. obtulit deo. **he spak**] A. loquitur.
10. *werk-men*] A. artifex. **19.** *schewynge*] A. arbitrans. **30.** *men*
A. muri, misread *uiri*. **34.** *dryfen a-wey*] A. effugerunt, LV. dryueden
awai, Auth. Version 'escaped.' Cf. Hebr. xii 25 where the word is correctly
translated. **35.** *housbondes*] A. mortuos, misread *maritos* ? **36.** *&
prisones* etc.] A. insuper et vincula et carcere.
Chap. xii 4. *to þe schedynge of ȝoure blod*] A. usque ad sanguinem.
5. *oure Lord*] A. domini. **6.** *he chasteþ*] A. dominus castigat.
scoureþ] A. flagellat, H. has 'scourgeþ,' see p. 229. **11.** *of deþ*] A. me-
roris, E and LV. of sorewe. **15.** *no man—men*] add. **16.** *mete*
A. *unam escam*. **18.** *& neyȝlechen þer-to*] E and LV. '& able to come to,'
which readings presuppose 'acces(s)ibilem' in the Latin original, A. *accen-
sibilem ignem*. A. et turbinem et caliginem et procellam. **19.** *voyys*
2º] A. verbum. **23.** *þe churche*] A. ecclesiarum, F. ecclesiam. *domes-
man of alle spyrytes*] A. iudicem omnium deum, et spiritus justorum etc.
28. *oure God*] A. placentes deo.

Chap. xiii 1. dwelle *a-mong ȝow*] A. maneat. 2. *han y-pleseyd*
 A. *cl. latuerunt*, F. *placuerunt*. 5. *God*] A. ipse. *Y nul...lefe*
 A. *deseram neque derelinquam*. 10. of whom no men...*bote pilke pat*
 etc.] A. de quo edere non habent potestatem qui tabernaculo deserviunt.
18. A. confidimus enim quia bonam conscientiam habemus in omnibus
 bene volentes conversari. Cf. LV. we han good conscience in alle thingis,
 willynge to do wel. 20. I. *Crist*] A. Iesum. 21. *place*] A. bono
 (*bōo* misread *loco*). *ioye & blysse*] A. gloria.

I TIMOTHY.

Chap. i 1. God & oure S.] A. dei salvatoris. 9. *wel*] add. 11. *of*
þe euangely etc.] A. quae est secundum evangelium gloriae beati dei.
13. & doyngi iniurye to *his serfauntes*] A. contumeliosus, E and LV. & ful
 of wrongis. *of God*] F. *cl. dei*, A. om. 14. Lord I. C.] A. domini.
18. *þat þou occupye þe*] A. secundum praecedentes *in te* prophetias ut
milites in illis bonam militiam. Cf. LV. that thou traueile in hem a good
 trauel. 19. *good feip*] A. fidem. 20. *God*] add.

Chap. ii 1. A. obsecrationes, orationes, postulationes, gratiarum actiones
 pro omnibus hominibus. 6. *whos* wytnesse is *y-confermed* in his tymes]
 A. testimonium temporibus suis, but the reading 'Cuius testimonium t. s.
datum est' occurs in Harl. 1772, *arm.*, *ambstr.* etc., cf. Berger, *Vulg.* pp. 51,
 139, E and LV. 'whos witnessyng is confermyd in his tyme.' 15. *eferiche*]
 add.

Chap. iii 2. *chaste*] A. ornatum, *cl. ornatum*, pudicum. 3. *softe &*
good] A. modestum. 9. *mynstryng*] A. mysterium. 13. *oure*
Lord I. C.] A. Christo Iesu.

Chap. iv 2. *corrupt*] A. cauteriatam, EV. brent (MSS. Q.T. add *or*
corrupt), LV. corrupt, A.V. seared with a hote iron. 3. *tr. men, þat*
A. fidelibus et his qui cognoverunt veritatem. *to God*] add.
4. *to God*] add. 6. *oure—oure Lord*] add. 14. *þe grace*] A. gratiam
quae in te est.

Chap. v 4. *for þe goodness...of hem*] add. 13. *to gon to-gedere...&*
gon aboute etc.] A. simul autem et otiosae discunt circumire domos.
16. *trewe wydewes*] A. Si qua fidelis habet viduas. 18. *þat tyleþ þi*
lond] A. trituranti, E and LV. threischinge. 21. *wiþouten lattyng* of
ony enchesoun] A. Sine praeiudicio, LV. with oute preiudice.

Chap. vi 2. *þat þei*] A. quia fideles sunt. 3. *of þe doctryne*] add.
9. *þe defeles grun*] A. laqueum, F. *cl. add diaboli*; EV. gnare of the deuel,
 LV. snare of the d. 13. *Pylat of Pounce*]=E and LV.; A. Pontio
 Pilato. 16. *& blysse*] add. 17. *þe lyfynge*] *cl. e. vivo*, A. F. om.
18. *hure goodes*] add. 19. *& a good*] A. bonum. The correct reading
 of our text is probably 'in a good,' since & and in are often confused in the
 MSS., cf. 2 Pet. ii 15. *eferlastynge*]=E and LV.; A. veram. 21. *grace*
of God]=E and LV.; A. gratia.

II TIMOTHY.

Chap. i 3. *my God*] F. *e. deo meo*, A. *deo*, E and LV. *my G. y serfe*] A. *servio a progenitoribus*. **5.** *Eurace*] e. *Eurice*, A. F. *cl. Eunice*. **8.** *Iesu Crist*] = E and LV.; om. A. *y trafayle*] A. *conlabora*; cf. 2 Tim. ii 3, iv 5 and LV. ‘*trauele pou.*’ **9.** *of hym*] A. *dei*. *þat beþ y-passed*] add. **12.** *þis*] A. *etiam haec*. *þat tresour etc.*] A. *depositum meum servare in illum diem*. **15.** *Phylegeus*] A. *Phygelus*. **17.** *he come*] A. *venissem*, F. *e. cl. -et*. **18.** *oure L.*] A. *dominus*. *mercy*] A. *misericordiam a domino*, E and LV. ...*of God*. *to me*] = E and LV.; cl. *mihi*, A. F. *e. om*.

Chap. ii 2. *of þilke etc.*] A. *et quae audistis—haec commenda*. **9.** *for wh. ich am y-bournde*] A. *usque ad vincula quasi male operans*. **10.** *þat pei ben y-safed etc.*] A. *ut et ipsi salutem consequantur quae est in C. I.* **19.** *Oure L.*] A. *dominus, -ni*. **21.** *to God*] A. *e. cl. domino*, F. *deo*. **22.** *oure L.*] A. *dominum*. **24.** *good & softe*] A. *mansuetum*. **25.** *þe trewþe*] F. *cl. veritati (=E and LV.)*, A. *e. om*. *myȝt*] A. *paenitentiam*.

Chap. iii 2. *proude*] A. *elati, superbi*.

Chap. iv 3. *good...& hol*] A. *sanam*. *bote þei etc.*] A. *sed ad sua desideria coaceruabunt*. **5.** *& be þou sober*] = E and LV., F. *cl. sobrius esto*, A. *om*.

TITUS.

Chap. i 6. A. *non in accusatione luxuriae aut non subditos*. **9.** *feiþ-ful & a trewe*] A. *fidelem*. *good doctr.*] A. *doctrinam*.

Chap. ii 1. *redy & wys*] A. *prudentes*. **3.** *spekyng & seyenge*] A. *docentes*. **4.** *sober & chaste, redy & wys*] A. *prudentes castas*. **7.** *chastyte...sadnesse*] A. *gravitatem*. **10.** *oure God &*] A. *dei*.

Chap. iii 8. A. *Fidelis sermo est*. **9.** *stryfes*] A. *contentiones et pugnas*.

THE ACTS.

Chap. i 4. *departe nor go away*] A. *ne discederent*. *þo sonde ande þo bihetyng*] A. *promissionem*. **6.** A. *dicentes, Domine, si in tempore etc.* **8.** *vnto þo ferreste ande laste*] A. *ad ultimum*. **11.** *righte as ȝhe save hym ascende*] repetition; *vnto heuen ought to follow wende*. A. *hic Iesus qui adsumtus est a vobis in caelum, sic veniet quemadmodum vidistis eum euntem in caelum*. **12.** A. *a monte qui vocatur Oliveti, qui est iuxta H. sabbati habens iter*. **14.** A. *perseverantes unanimiter in oratione*. *hire breþer*] A. *et Maria matre Iesu et fratribus eius*, E and LV. *hise britheren*. Probably intentionally wrong translation, cf. Commentary on Matthew xii 46, Brit. Mus. Eger. 842, f. 107 b: ‘*his moder & breþer stod with-out ȝernand to speke to hym’*...‘*þe breþer of Crist were not þe childir of his blessid modyr Mary nor þe childir of Ioseph be his oþir wife, as summe suppose, but raper...þei were his chosyns, þe childer of Mary, the*

sistyr of his moder.' 17. *priuete*] A. ministerii; the translator read 'mysterii.' 18. *fledde away ande*] add. *helde*] A. d. possedit, e. g. adquisivit, EV. weeldide, LV. hadde. 19. *Acheldemac*] A. Acheldemac. 25. of þis priuete ande of þis seruice] A. ministerii huius, cf. above, v. 17. *he may dwelle*] A. abiret, E and LV. he schulde go.

Chap. ii 1. alle þo disciples] = E and LV., omnes discipuli P. Var., discipuli om. A. g. 3. *languages*] A. linguæ, E and LV. tungis. 5. *wus*] A. est. 6. *ande ƿis sowne*] gloss. *grete multitude*] A. multitudo. *ande þei merueyld gretly*] gloss. 7. *vpon þis wise*] gloss. 11. *grete won-durs ande dedus*] A. magnalia. 14. *takes ande conceyues*] A. percipite. 17. *sightes ande visiones*] A. visiones. 18. A. super servos meos et super ancillas meas; *boþe men ande wymmen* has no authority and is probably a gloss. 21. *alle or iche whoeuer*] A. omnis quicumque. 23. *bitraid & taken*] A. traditum. *tourmentande*] cl. affligerent, EV. turmentinge, LV. ȝe tormentiden, A. adfigentes. 24. *lowsed ande broken*] A. solutis. 25. I schal puruey *ande force*] A. Providebam. 26. *maked brode*] d. e. g. cl. lætatum, A. delectatum. The translator must have read *latatum, and connected it with the adj. latus, 'broad.' E and LV. ioiede. 29. *say*] A. audenter dicere. 32. *ande of whom*] gloss. 41. *þer*] A. eius. *wonnen vnto God ande turned*] A. adpositæ sunt... *animæ circiter tria milia*, LV. soulis weren encreessid aboute thre thousande. 45. *þer catelle ande per godus*] A. substantias.

Chap. iii 2. *hise frendes sette hym*] A. quem ponebant. 3ode in *ande oute*] A. ab introeuntibus. 7. *wore hise lymes made hole ande sadde*] A. consolidatae sunt bases eius et plantæ, LV. hise leggis and his feet weren sowdid togidere. 8. A. et *exiliens* stetit, et ambulabat, et *intravit cum illis in templum ambulans et exiliens* et laudans dominum. 10. *at þo temple-dore*] A. ad speciosam portam templi. 11. *Salomons porte*] A. porticum qui appellatur Salomonis. *wondurande vpon hem ande biholdande*] A. stupentes. 13. *vnto þo deþe*] A. iudicante illo dimitti, LV. whanne he demede hym to be delyuered. 16. *confermed ande helud*] A. confirmavit. 20. *of God*] A. d. e. g. Domini, Tertul. (Sab.) Dei. 21. *dwelle...ande ƿurhise prophetes*] A. quem oportet caelum quidem suspicere...quae locutus est deus per os sanctorum suorum a saeculo prophetarum. 22. *God oure Lorde...vs...oure*] A. vobis...deus vester...vestris, e. vobis...Dominus Deus noster...vestris. 23. *schal be þutte oute...& oute of his termes*] A. exterminabitur. 25. *disposed ande ordeynde*] A. disposuit. 26. *from þo way of his wikkednes*] A. a nequitia sua.

Chap. iv 1. *As þei stoden ande spaken*] A. Loquentibus...illis. 2. *risinge of deþe*] A. resurrectionem a mortuis. 4. *Goddes word*] A. verbum. 8. *heres ande vndurstondes*] om. A. d., audite cl. e. g., heere EV., here ȝe LV. 10. *vnto ȝowe*] A. omnibus vobis. 11. *He þis Ihesus*] A. Hic. 12. *maye ande bihoues*] A. oporteat. 13. *sawe ande bihelde*] A. videntes. 16. *token ande merueyl*] A. signum. 17. *be...pupplisched ne spoken*] A. ne divulgetur. 18. *unto hem*] add. komawnded hem] A. denuntiaverunt, d. g. præceperunt illis, e. om. illis.

19. *telle vs*] A. iudicate (misread *indicate*). 21. A. At illi comminantes dimiserunt eos, non invenientes quomodo punirent eos, propter populum, d. At illi comminati...nihil invenientes *causam*, qua punirent eos... made... clere *ande knowne*] A. clarificabant. *bi hem*] add. 22. *ande twoo*] not in A. or OL. *þis token ande þis hele*] A. signum istud sanitatis. 23. *of þo kownseile to wende forþe þer way*] add. *vnto þer breþer þat wore conuerted*] A. ad suos, cf. viii 15 *þat wore turned*. 36. *Barsabas*] A. Barnabas... *levites, Cyprus genere*.

Chap. v 1. *wiþ þo konseile of h. wife*] A. conscientia uxore sua. 8. *þow womman*] A. om., cl. mulier, E and LV *womman*. 9. *þo Holygoste of God*] A. spiritum domini. 11. *holy chirche*] A. ecclesia. 14. *of hem þat preyde*] A. credentium, E and LV. *bileuyng*. 15. *in þo felde*] add. *ouer-schine*] A. obumbraret. 16. *þo multitude* etc.] mistranslation, A. *multitudo* vicinarum civitatum. 17. *of enuy ande trecchery*] A. zelo. 18. *komun...þat opunly was knowne*] A. publica. 19. *one of Goddes awngels*] A. Angelus domini. 21. *whanne...herde þis*] A. adveniens. 23. *as hit was lefte*] add. 24. *vnþoghten hem ande spake togider*] A. ambigebant. 30. *of zoure*] A. nostrorum. 31. *ande made hym*] A. hunc deus principem et salvatorem exaltavit. 33. *ande þoþte*] gloss to *ymagynede*, A. dissecabant et cogitabant, LV. thei weren turmentid and thouȝten. 34. *He comanded etc.*, agreement with the OL., cf. d. g. iussit pusillum apostolos foras secedere (d. *facere*), e. jussit foras modicum apostolos fieri. Cf. Bibl. Nat. 11532-3: jussit modicum foras apostolos secedere (Berger, *Vulg.* p. 106). A. has 'iussit foras ad breve homines fieri.' 36. A. *extitit* Theodas dicens esse se aliquem. Our version agrees with the OL.: e. surrexit T. dicens esse aliquem se *magnum*, d....quemdam *magnum* ipsorum, h. s. T. quidam dicens se esse *magnum*, g. exstitit T. dicens se esse quendam *magnum*. Cf. Berger, *Vulg.* p. 161. 38. *hit schal be vndone & worþe vnto noghte*] A. dissolvetur. 39. *bot sufure hem*] add. 40. *komawnded hem*] A. *caesis* denuntiaverunt, LV. denounisiden to hem, that weren betun. 41. *strife ande schame*] A. contumeliam.

Chap. vi 1. *a murmour ande a grucching*] A. murmur. 2. This verse is corrupted. A. has 'Convocantes autem duodecim multitudinem discipulorum.' In S.P.D. *ande þo disciples* is looked upon as a gloss to *apostuls* and consequently omitted. It is more probable that *þo nowmbur offe þo apostuls* was originally a gloss to *twelue*, since *nowmbur* is not the usual way of rendering *multitudo* in this text; it is rendered by *multitude* 14 times out of 17, by *purple* twice (Acts iv 32, xvii 13), only in this place by *nowmbur*. The scribe probably looked upon the original *þo multitude offe* as an unnecessary gloss and left it out. He then joined on *þo disciples* by *ande* to the preceding phrase. It is of course possible that the whole confusion arose from corruptions in the Latin original. *þus vnto hem*] not in A., but d. has 'ad eos' h. eis. 3. *testymony ande wytnes*] A. *testimonii*. *þis bisines ande þis warke*] A. *hoc opus*. 5. *ande gladde were [þei] þer-offe*] probably gloss to *plesinge*, no correspondence in the Latin. *fulle of þo H. ande trewe in þo faiþe*] A. *plenum fide et spiritu*

sancto. *Tymothewe*] A. Timonem. *Pernyenam*] A. Parmenam. 6. *alle*] add. 7. *Goddes*] g. Dei, A. *d. e. h.* Domini. 8. *gostely*] add. 10. *wiþinne hym spake*] A. sapientiae et spiritui qui loquebatur. Cf. *e.* sapientiae quæ erat *in eo* et spiritui sancto quo loquebatur. 15. *amonges hem*] A. *e. d. g.* om., but *h.* has tamquā [vultum] angeli di stantis *inter illos*.

Chap. vii 1. *vnto Steuen*] e. *g.* Stephano, *h.* Stefanum, A. *d.* om. *þat þise men sayne*] add. 2. *ansuered ande saide*] A. *e.* ait, *d. g.* dixit, *h.* respondit. *heres ande rndurstondes*] A. audite. *bifore þat he schulde dye*] A. priusquam moraretur, misread 'moreretur,' cf. *d.* 'postea quam mortuus esset.' 4. *ande þeþen...he kome into þis londe*, etc.] no actual correspondence in the Latin authorities: A. et inde...transtulit illum in terram istam in qua etc., *d.* et ibi erat post mortem patris sui et intrans migravit eum in terram hanc in qua etc., Hieron. Epist. ad Dardan. to. 2 col. 608 (Sab.) et inde...migravit in terram in qua etc. Apparently a confusion of two different readings. Cf. LV. and fro thens aftir that his fader was deed, he translatide him into this loond. 7. The translator read *indicabo* for *iudicabo* and consequently translated 'I schal schewe.' 13. *he scheued, etc.*] A. manifestatum est Pharaoni genus eius, *g.* *innotuit* Pharaoni genus Ioseph. Cf. LV. his kyn was maad knowun to Farao. 14. A. 'in animabus septuaginta quinque' om. 18. *þerinne*] A. in Aegypto, *e. d. g.* om. 19. *ande ordeynde*] add. *þat of oure ȝonge childer, etc.*] differs from A., closer to OL. A. ut exponerent infantes suos, ne vivificantur, *e.* ut facerent expositos infantes suos ut ne vivificantur *masculi*, *g.* ut exponerent...ut non...*masculi*. Cf. LV. that thei schulden putte awey her ȝonge children, for thei schulden not lyue. 21. *into þo flode*] *e.* in flumen, *d.* secus flumen, *A. g. om.* Cf. Bibl. Nat. MS 11532-3, 'Exposito autem illo in flumine,' Berger, *Vulg.* p. 106. LV. in the flood, EV. om. 23. *hise frendes, hise breþer*] A. fratres suos filios Israhel. 24. *one of hise kynne*] *d. g.* de genero suo, *e.* de natione sua, A. om. 27. *or*] *e. g.* aut, A. *d. et.* 31. *vnto hym ande saide*] *e.* dicens ad eum, *g.* ad eum dicens. A. om. 37. *schal raise*] *cl. e. d. g.* suscitabit, A. suscitavit. 42. *kengedome*] A. militiae, *e. d. g. h.* exercitui, E and LV. the knyȝthood. *sacrifice nor etc.*] the translator evidently took 'numquid' to be a negation; LV. Whether ȝe, hous of Israel, offriden to me slain sacrificis etc. 43. *into B.*] *e.* in partem Babylonis, *d.* in illas partes B., *g.* in partes babiloniæ, A. trans Babylonem. 44. *ȝoure*] A. nostris. 45. A. quod et induxerunt suscipientes patres nostri cum Iesu in possessionem gentium, L.V. which also oure fadris token with Ihesu, and brouȝten in to etc. 50. *my hende*] A. manus mea. 52. *of whom*] A. cuius nunc, *e. d. om. nunc.* 55. *his fadire*] A. and OL. Dei. *of þe vertewe*] add. 56. *lettynge*] A. impetum, LV. an assauȝt. 57. *two falsse*] A. *cl. d. e. h.* om., *g.* falsi. *hise clopes*] A. vestimenta sua. 58. *Iesu*] A. Domine Iesu. 59. *rested hym in God ande gafe vnto heuen his goste*] A. obdormivit, *cl. obd.* in Domino. Cf. EV. he slepte in the Lord, LV. he diede.

Chap. viii 1. *ande wente isonder*] gloss. *þat dwelled stille in Ierusalem*] A. *e. om. ; d. g. h.* qui remanserunt (*d. manserunt*) hierusalem. 2. *wep-*

inge *ande sorowe*] A. *planctum*. 3. *holi ch.*] A. *ecclesiam*. *ande destryde hit*] gloss. 4. *how he was Goddes sone*] add. 6. *ande alle wiþ o wille—ande tokens*] glosses. 7. *zode awaye oute of hem*] A. *exiebant*. 9. A. 'Vir autem quidam nomine Simon qui ante fuerat in civitate magus, seducens gentem Samariæ, dicens esse se aliquem magnum.' I have found no correspondence in any Latin source to the additions of this verse. 12. *many*] add. 15. *þat wore turned*] gloss. 18. *vnto hem*] add. 19. *Hauwe þis*] add. 20. *ansuered...& saide*] A. *dixit*. *money ande... catelle*] A. *pecunia*. 22. *wikked boghte*] A. *cogitatio*. 24. *of alle pise*] A. *horum*. 25. *tawghten þei ande preached*] A. *evangelizabant*. 27. *ande was a geldynge þat hade hire in kepinge*] a gloss on *eunuchus*, which is omitted in its right place: A. *et ecce vir Aethiops eunuchus. ande forto preye*] gloss. 33. *dome...ande his rightwise vengeance*] A. *iudicium*. 35. *tawghte hym ande declared*] no correspondence in the Latin; A. has 'Aperiens autem Ph. os suum et incipiens ab scriptura ista evangelizavit etc.' 37. This verse is omitted in A. 39. *of God*] A. *domini*.

Chap. ix 1. Inaccurate translation: A. *Saulus autem adhuc aspirans minarum et caedis in discipulos domini*. 2. *pistels ande comyssions*] A. *epistulas*. *of þo company of þe apostuls or hemseluen*] A. *huius viae*. 5. *hit es ful...prikke*] g. h. cl.; om. A. 6. This verse is omitted in A. e. g. It occurs in h. and cl. 7. *Ande oure Lorde saide vnto hym*] cl. h.; om A. e. g. 8. *no man*] A. *nihil*. 11. *þo way*] A. *vicum*, cf. xii 10. *whos name es Tharsen*] A. *Saulum nomine Tharsensem*. 17. *vnto þe*] add. 18. *slyme as hit wore þo skales of a fische*] A. *tamquam squamae*. 19. A. *cum discipulis qui erant Damasci per dies aliquos*. 20. *zode into...ande preached*] A. *praedicabat*. *vrray G. sone*] A. *filius dei*. 21. *þo lawe þat ben prynces of*] gloss. 23. *he hade, etc.*] A. *Cum implerentur autem dies multi*. 24. *þo ȝates...of þo cyte*] A. *portas*. 26. *Goddes discipul*] A. *discipulus*. 27. *to þo disciples ande—alle*] add. 28. *of Iesu*] A. *domini*. 29. *þo gentyles...þo Grekes*] cl. *gentibus...* *graecis*, A. e. g. om. *gentibus*. 31. *of God*] A. *domini*. 33. A. *qui erat paralyticus* omitted here. 34. *rise vppe fro þi bedde*] A. *surge et sterne tibi*, LV. *rise thou, and araye thee*. 36. *vnto many*] A. om., m. *multis*. 39. *saynte Peter*] A. *Petrus*. 40. *atte his worde, etc.*] A. At illa aperuit oculos suos, et viso Petro resedit. 41. A. *Dans autem illi manum erexit eam*. 43. *longe tyme ande manye dais*] A. *dies multos*.

Chap. x 1. A. *centurio cohortis quae dicitur Italica*. 3. A. *vidit in visu manifeste*. 6. *ande he schal teche, etc.*] cl. *hic dicet tibi quid te oporteat facere*, A. e. d. g. om. 7. *þat wore homely wiþ hym*] gloss. A. *domesticos suos*. *to be one of hem forto wende þat waye*] nothing corresponding in A. or OL. 8. *how hit was*] A. *omnia*. 9. *þo houre of myddaye*] A. *horam sextam*. 16. A. *et statim receptum est vas, etc.* 21. *Saynte*] cf. ix 39. 22. *vnto hym*] d. ad eum, A. e. g. om. *trewhly dredes*] A. *timens*. *ande brynge þe*] gloss. 24. *Peter ande...hym*] A. *illos*. 25. *was komen ande schulde enter*] A. *cum introisset*. wor-

schipped hym] *d. adoravit eum*, A. *e. g. om. eum*. **26.** *as þow erte*] *g. e.* *sicut (g. et) tu, d. quomodo et tu, A. om.* **29.** *forto kome vnto ȝowe*] add. **30.** *fastud ande preyed*] A. *orans eram, e. d. eram jejunans et adorans (d. ...orabam), g. eram iejunans*. Cf. Berger, *Vulg.* p. 106 f. LV. *Y was preiynge ande fastynge.* *þo nynte houre*] misplaced: A. *orans eram hora nona in domo mea.* **33.** A. *tibi praecepta sunt, e. om. tibi.* **34.** *ande vndurstonden*] gloss. **35.** A. *sed in omni gente qui timet eum...acceptus est illi.* **37.** *ande knownen*] gloss. *saynte*] add. **42.** A. *qui consti-tutus est a deo iudex.* **47.** *ne defende*] gloss. **48.** *wiþ hem*] *cl. g.* *apud eos, d. ad eos, A. e. om.*

Chap. xi **1.** *ande conceyueden*] gloss. *breþer*] A. *fratres qui erant in Iudea.* *ande worschipped God þeroffe*] *g. et glorificabant deum, A. e. d. om., LV. and thei glorifieden God.* **8.** *alle vnclene*] A. *commune aut inmundum.* **9.** *vnclene*] A. *commune.* **13.** *awngel of God*] A. *an-gelum.* **17.** *to gife vnto hem þo Holygoste, þat trowed in þo name of Iesu Criste*] = Bibl. Nat. 11533 (Berger, *Vulg.* p. 107) prohibere Deum ne daret illis spiritum sanctum credentibus in nomine I. C., *d. ut non...eis...in eum, A. e. g. om., LV. that he ȝyue not the Hooli Goost to hem that bileyeden in the name of I. C., EV. that he schulde not ȝyue the H. G. to men bileyng in the name of I. C.* **18.** *lyfe euerlastande*] A. *vitam.* **20.** *gentiles*] A. *Grecos.* **26.** Mistranslation: A. *ita ut cognominar-entur primum Anthiociae discipuli Christiani.* **27.** *þat þei per uore*] add. **29.** *þat hit myghte serue hem...vnto þer sustynaunce*] A. *in ministerium.*

Chap. xii **3.** *He sawe þat...He sette*] A. *videns autem...adposuit.* **4.** *fourre*] A. *quatuor quaternionibus.* *for hit was lente[n] tyme*] follows *Peter* in v. 3 according to A. and OL. **7.** *awngel*] A. *angelus domini.* **8.** *schone ande...hoses*] A. *galliculas.* **10.** *a way*] A. *vicum, cf. ix 11.* **13.** *to loke who was þere*] differs from A. *e. ad audiendum, d. respondere, g. obaudire, E and LV. cam forth to se.* **15.** *an*] A. *eius.* **18.** *knyghtes þat hym kepped*] A. *milites.* **19.** *Ande Peter ȝode...]* A. *Herodes...iussit eos duci, descendensque a Iudea in Cæsaream, etc.* **20.** The translator has gone altogether wrong here, *persuaso Blasto* he looked upon as a proper name and *alerentur* he evidently confused with the French verb *aller*. LV. *whanne thei hadden counseiled with Bastus... for as myche that her cuntrees weren vitailid of hym.* **21.** *þo folke of Tiris ande Sidone*] A. *eos.* **25.** *Marcus*] A. *qui cognominatus est Marcus.*

Chap. xiii **2.** *vnto Godde*] A. *domino.* **4.** *Barna[ba]s ande Sawle*] A. *ipsi.* **5.** *mynisterynge of Goddes worde*] A. *in ministerio.* **6.** *Baryehu*] A. *Bariesu, 'Beda comment. in hunc loc. legit Barjeu, et ait corrupto legi Barjesu' (Sab.).* Cf. Berger, *Vulg.* p. 96, note 2. EV. *Barieu, LV. Bariesu.* **7.** *ware...ande wise*] A. *prudente.* *of God*] A. *domini.* **8.** *or called*] gloss. *Ande he þis wyche was abowte in alle þat he kouþe*] A. *quaerens, LV. he souȝte.* **9.** *Poule*] A. *Saulus autem qui et Paulus.* **10-11.** *of God*] A. *domini.* **12.** *trowed in God*] A. *credidit.* *of God*] A. *domini.* **14.** *Persidye*] A. *Pisidiae.* **16.** *heres þise wordes*] A. *audite.* **17.** *comelynges ande dwellynge*] A. *incolae.* *stalworþe arme*

ande highe myghte] A. brachio extento. *oute of þo lande of Egipte*] A. ex ea. 20. domes-men to rewle hem] A. iudices. 21. a kenge to be þer gouernoure] A. regem. 22. after hym þis Saule] A. amoto illo. 23. of hym þis Dauid] A. huius. 25. saide vnto þo folke of Israel] A. dicebat. 26. dere breþer] A. viri fratres. 27. þis Iesu] A. hunc. voyce ande þo spekyng] A. voces. 28. dere breþer] A. fratres. 40. kome...vnto ȝowe] A. superveniat. 42. of þo synagoge] add. 43. comelynges] A. colentium advenarum. 44. amonestud] A. loquentes suadebant. 46. vnto þe Iewes—ande leue ȝowe] add. 47. my hele] A. in salutem. 48. þis worde] add.

Chap. xiv 1. A. Factum est autem in Iconio ut simul introirent in synagogam Iudeorum et loquerentur ita ut crederent Iudeorum et Grecorum copiosa multitudo. 3. *Bot God grawnted sone pees*] d. g. Dominus autem dedit confestim (g. cito d.) pacem, A. om. Cf. Berger, *Vulg.* p. 162. trestly & stedfastely] A. fiducialiter. 6. ande alle þo... in Lystris] d. e. Et commota est omnis multitudo in doctrina eorum (d. in doctrinis). Paulus autem et Barnabas morabantur (d. moras faciebant) in Lystris, E and LV. have this reading. A. g. om. 7. halte ande lame] A. claudus. 9. *To þe...Iesu Criste*] d. e. Tibi dico in nomine Domini (e. D. nostri) Iesu Christi, A. g. om. also E and LV. 10. þo men of Lycaonye] A. lycaonice, LV. in Licaon tunge. 11. ledar ande spekar] A. dux. 12. vnto P. ande B.] belongs to next verse: A. Quod ubi audierunt apostoli Barnabas et Paulus. 15. gentiles] A. omnes gentes. 18. made ille suggestion to þo purple] A. persuasis turbis. 21. made exhortacyone...ande tolde] A. exhortantes. 23. *Psidie*] A. Pisidiam. 26. *disciples of holy chirche*] A. ecclesiam.

Chap. xv 2. ande Poule saide...wore inne] d. dicebat autem Paulus manere sic sicut crediderunt, A. e. g. om. ande Poule...ordeynde] A. statuerunt ut ascenderent Paulus et Barnabas et quidam alii ex aliis ad apostolos, etc. 3. of þo disciples] A. ab ecclesia. conuers. ande þo lifynge] A. conversationem. 7. aschinge ande sechinge] A. conquisitio. oure breþer] A. fratres. 8. he] A. deus. 10. tempte ȝhe] A. temptatis deum. ȝoke ande charge] A. iugum. 13. dere breþer] A. fratres. 16. tabernacle of Dauid] d. e. g. cl.; A. om. Dauid. 22. ande pei chesed] add. 25. dere breþer] A. carissimis. 29. ande fro sacrifice of ydolatrye] gloss. A. ab immolatis simulacrorum et sanguine suffocato et fornicatione. ande þat ȝhe wille...vnto an-þer] d. & quæcunque non vultis vobis fieri, alii ne feceritis. Cf. Berger, *Vulg.* p. 162. A. e. g. E and LV. om. 30. Ande Poule...fro þo apostuls] A. Illi igitur dimissi. multitude of þo disciples] A. multitudine. 31. in a grete ioye] om. A. d. e. g. Cf. MS Sangermanensis 15 (Bibl. Nat. 11553), Berger, *Vulg.* p. 70, note 2, gavisi sunt gaudio magno super consolatione. þat pei hade] add. 32. pr. ande prechors] A. prophetæ. 33. This verse is omitted in the MSS. 35. wiþ ȝoper discipuls of Criste] A. cum aliis pluribus. 36. visite we...ande see we] A. visitemus. 38. warke of þo gospelle] A. opus. 39. amonge hem...] = Sangerm. 15 (as above, v. 31) inter illos dissensio; g. inter eos disceptatio, A. e. d. cl. dissensio. 40. of God]

A. domini. **41.** *congregacyone of holy chirche*] A. ecclesias. *& bade hem...eldars*] A. *e om., g. cl.* præcipiens custodire præcepta apostolorum et seniorum, *d.* tradens autem mandatum presbyterorum, *E* and *I.V.* comaundingē to kepe the heestis (EV. preceptis) of apostlis and eldre men.

Chap. xvi 1. *Ande whanne þei hade gone abowte þise nacyons* agrees more closely with *Codex Armachanus* (Berger, *Vulg.* p. 33): 'Et cum circumiisset has nationes' than with *g.* 'Et cum circuisset civitates,' or *d.* 'Pertransiens gentes istas.' A. *e. om.* The plural is probably due to some scribal error in the Latin source (*ē* for *e*). *wydowe*] *g. uidue*, A. *cl. d. Iudeae, e. om.* **2.** *trewe*] *g. cl. bonum*, A. *e. d. om.* **4.** *þei twaughte*] A. tradebant...custodire. *apostuls whanne*] A. *apostolis et senioribus qui.* **6.** *Goddes*] A. *om., m. dei.* **12.** *þo cyte of Coleyne*] A. *Macedoniae civitas, colonia.* The same error occurs, as M. Berger tells us, in the French xiiith century Bible "... le traducteur ne comprenant pas que la ville de Philipps est, d'après la Vulgate, une 'colonie' de la Macédoine, fait voyager saint Paul en 'la cité Cologne'" (*La Bible franç.* p. 143). **18.** *of hire*] add. **19.** *þe spirite*] A. *spes quaestus eorum.* The translator evidently read *þps*, the contraction of *spiritus*. **20.** *sturbulen ande deceyue*] A. *conturbant.* **22.** A. *Et concurrit plebs adversus eos, et magistratus scisis tunicis eorum iusserunt, etc.* Cf. *d. ...tunc magistratus, discussis vestimentis, jussérunt, etc.* **23.** *beten...ande made hem fulle of etc.*] A. *et cum multas plagas eis imposuissent.* *kepar of þo prison*] A. *custodi.* **25.** *lowtande vnto God loued hym in alle his sonde*] F. *adorantes laudabant Deum*, A. *adorantes Deum hymnum dicebant.* There is no actual correspondence in the Latin sources. **27.** A. *Expergefactus autem custos carceris et videns, etc.* **30.** *Leue lordes*] A. *Domini.* **31.** *oure Lorde*] A. *domino.* **32.** *of God*] A. *domini.* **33.** *þo kepar of þo prisone*] add. **37.** *vnrightly ande vndampned*] A. *publice indemnatos.* **40.** *þei tolde hem whatte God hade done wiþ hem*] *Bibl. Nat. 11533: narraverunt quanta fecisset Dominus cum eis, consolantes eos profecti sunt* (Berger, *Vulg.* p. 107). Cf. *d. ... fecit..., exhortati sunt eos & exierunt.* A. *cl. e. g. om.*

Chap. xvii 3. *Iesus*] A. *Christus Iesus.* **5.** *agayne þo apostuls*] add. *wente, etc.*] A. *adistentes domui I. quaerebant eos producere.* **6.** *criande ande...worfde*] *d. g. clamantes et dicentes quia (d. q. qui) orbem terre inquietant (d. inquitaverunt) hi sunt;* A. *clamantes quoniam hi qui urbem concitant.* **7.** *þat highte*] add. **8.** *of þo cites*] A. *civitatis.* **9.** *to þo princes of þo cyte*] add. **11.** *Ande þise men of Beroam*] A. *Hi as hit was preached to hem*] A. *cl. e. d. om.; g. quemadmodum Paulus annunciat.* **15.** *Ande þo breþer þat*] A. *qui.* A. *accepto mandato...ut...venirent...profecti sunt.* **17.** *ande þo dwellande*] A. *et colentibus, LV. and with men that worschipiden.* **18.** *ande þis þei saide*] add. **19.** *þis newe*] A. *quae est haec nova.* **22.** *of þat towne*] A. *Ariopagi.* **23.** *þise wordes*] add. **25.** *þat man dos*] add. *wynde & inspiringe*] A. *inspirationem.* **29.** *of mannes þenkyngande of m. hondewarke*] A. *cogitationis hominis.* **31.** A. *in viro in quo statuit, fidem præbens, etc.* **34.** *wiþ Poule*] A. *ei.* *many oþer*] A. *ali.*

Chap. xviii 3. *þo same crafte þat þei wore of*] A. eiusdem...artis. *tabernacles*] A. scenae factoriae, but Aug. (vide Sab.) has 'tabernaculorum artifices.' 4. This verse agrees with *cl. g.*, it is omitted in A. *menged ande sette*] g. *cl.* interponens. 10. *to me ande myne*] A. mihi. 14. *to speke*] add. 15. *names of ȝoure lawe*] E and LV., A. and OL. *nominibus et legis.* 17. *þo Iewes*] A. *cl.* omnes, *e. d. g.* omnes Græci. 18. *þo whiche Priscille...his...he...*] A. qui sibi totonderant in Cencris caput; habebant enim votum; but *cl.* has ...totonderat...habebat, referring of course to Aquila. Cf. *e. d.* tonso capite...habebat. 25. *I. Criste*] A. Iesu. 27. *gafe ande speke*] A. contulit.

Chap. xix 5. *oure Lorde Iesu Criste*] A. *e. d.* domini Iesu, *g.* domini I. C. Hieron. contra Lucifer. to. 4, col. 294 (Sab.) Domini nostri I. C. 6. *hende*] A. manum. 9. *of God*] A. *d.* om., *e. g. cl.* Domini. *fro þo* *houre of sexte to þo houre of tenne*] A. *e.* om., *d.* ab hora v usque decima, *g.* ab hora quinta usque in horam decimam. There seems to be no authority for the reading *sexta*. 10. *men*] A. omnes. *of God*] A. domini. 12. *fro hem—of men*] A. ab eis. 13. *of Iesu*] A. Domini I. 14. *of a Iewe*] A. Scevae Iudaei. 17. *oure*] add. 20. *so*] A. Ita fortiter. 23. *of God*] A. *e.* om., *cl. d. g.* Domini. 25. *getynge ande lyuyng*] A. adquisitio. 27. *destroyed ande broghte to noghte*] A. in nihilum deputabitur. 32. *cried ande saide*] A. clamabant. 35. *of louys hire childe*] A. Iovisque prolis, EV. and of the sone Iubiter, LV. and of the child of Iubiter. 38. *gider hem wiþoute-forþe*] The translator has misunderstood the expression 'conventus forenses aguntur.' LV. 'there ben courtis and (of in some MSS.) domes.'

Chap. xx 4. *Sosy þo fadire.* The original of our text must have had *Sosipater*, which the translator rendered as above. A. *cl. e. d. g.* read *Sopater*, but E and LV. have *Sosipater*, similarly Beda and some Greek texts (Sab.). *ande Derbeus*] A. Derbeus. 9. *he felle*] A. *eductus somno cecidit.* *borne vppe and broghte*] A. sublatus. 12. *þo men þat were þer*] add. 14. *alssone fro þeþen he wente, etc.*] A. Cum autem convenisset nos in Asson, adsumto eo venimus Mytilenen, a corrupt passage, the scribe probably transformed *asson* which he did not understand into *alssone*, leaving out the unnecessary *in*. 28. *his*] A. dei. 29. *of God*] om. A. 31. *bes ware ande waker*] A. vigilate. 33. *þat ȝoures was*] *e. m. vestrum*, A. *g. om.*

Chap. xxi 2. *we wente into þat schippe*] A. *ascendentes navigavimus.* 8. *we come*] A. *profecti venimus.* 11. *Poules hende*] A. *Is..tulit zonam Pauli et alligans sibi pedes et manus.* 13. *oure Lorde I. Criste*] A. *e.* domini Iesu, *d.* Domini Christi I., *g.* domini ihesu christi. 14. *to holde hym fro Ierusalem*] add. 16. *Iasonem*] *g.* Iasonem, E and LV. Iason; A. *e.* Mnason, *d.* Nasonem. *we wore harbarowed*] A. hospitaremur. 19. *tolde*] A. narrabat *per singula.* 20. *how many etc.*] A. *quot milia sunt in Iudeis qui crediderunt.* 21. *þat hem owes*] A. *e.* dicens...debere, *g. d.* dicens (om. *d.*) ne circumcidant. 24. *bot also þei schal knowe*] add. 25. *beeste þat es chokud in blode*] A. suffucato. 32. *vnto Ierusalem*] A. ad illos. 34. *Ande diuersite of crynyng was...for*] A. Alii autem

aliud claimabant in turba, LV. But oþere crieden other thing among the puple.

Chap. xxii 3. tawghte ande *ternud*] A. eruditus. 5. epistels ande letters] A. epistulas. 6. þo way] A. g. die, e. diem, the second stroke of the *d* was probably faint in the MS. and the translator read *wie*. 13. biholde ande se] A. respice. 16. þat þus haues schewed vnto þe] add. 18. ande me poghte I harde hym sayande] A. et videre illum dicentem. 21. alle nacyons] A. nationes longe. 28. Lyghtly sais þou þat þou erte a buriase of *Rome*] om. A. e. d. g. The reading occurs in Codex Armanianus 'Quam facile te civem romanum dicis' (=B. N. 17250 etc.). See Berger, *Vulg.* p. 32, note 3; also in EV. but LV. omits it.

Chap. xxiii 4. preste] A. sacerdotem dei. 6. resurrecyone] A. resurrectione mortuorum. 7. diuersed ande *twynned*] A. soluta. 8. saide þo reuerce...was] A. utraque confitentur. 9. faughte] A. surgentes pugnabant. 13. coniuracyone ande...oþe] A. coniurationem. 16. þis harde a childe þat was, etc.] A. Quod cum audisset filius sororis P. *insidias*, venit et intravit. 19. saide vnto] A. interrogavit. 21. biheste ande...wille] A. promissum. 29. þat bere cryme vnto þo *Iewes*] A. *vinculis* habentem crimen. 31. ledde] A. duxerunt per noctem. 32. horses] A. equitibus.

Chap. xxiv 3. euermore] A. semper et ubique. 4. þis] A. nos. 6-7. Ande whanne we haden taken hym]=E and LV.; A. quem et apprehendimus, v. 8. a quo poteris, etc., the remainder of v. 6 and v. 7 being omitted in A. Our text agrees with *cl.* '& apprehensum voluimus secundum legem nostram judicare. Superveniens autem tribunus L. cum vi magna eripuit eum de manibus nostris, jubens accusatores ejus ad te venire.' 10. bifore þe] add. 11. *I come fro Ier.*] A. ascendi adorare in *Hierusalem*. 12. nouþer in þo temple] repetition, not in A. 18. Ande thei toke...oure enmye]=E and LV. and Sixt. Vulgate; om. A. d. e. g. 21. demed] A. iudicor *hodie*. 23. hem] A. de suis. 24. faiþe in oure *Lorde* I. C.] A. fidem quae est in I. C. 27. *Festus*] A. *Porcium F.*

Chap. xxv 9. ande forto haue þanke of hem] gloss to *gife grace*, A. gratiam præstare. 13. men of Baronye] A. Bernice, e. g. (h. in xxvi 30) Beronice. 16. þo crymes þat ben putte vpon hym] A. crimina. 17. hym] A. virum. 21. Ande P. appealed & forto kepe hit] A. P. autem appellante ut servaretur, LV. But for P. apelide that he schulde be kept. 22. Ande *Festus* *answering*] B. N. 4**, Bible de Théod., MS. de Mesmes 'Et Festus ait,' cf. Berger, *Vulg.* pp. 120, 162; om. A. 23. þo men of B.] see v. 13. 25. fonde] A. comperi...eum...admisisse. 26. vnto þo] A. ad te. bifore ȝowe] add.

Chap. xxvi 1. hende] A. manu. gafe his sk. ande saide] A. coepit rationem reddere; g. adds *dicens*. 2. blessed ande clene] A. beatum. 3. Repetition: A. 'omnia quae apud Iudeos sunt consuetudines et quaestiones.' 6. oure *Lorde* God] A. deo. 7. kenge *Agrippa*] A. rex. 13. See above, v. 7. 14. to kes] 'calcitrare,' cf. above ix 5, and Todd, *Apology for Lollard Doctrines*, Camd. Soc. 20, London 1842, p. 85, l. 12 'and be kesed in þe worshipping of þe Trinite a lone.' The corresponding

passage in Gregory runs as follows:—‘et in adoratione solius omnipotentis sanctae Trinitatis humiliter *prosternantur*’ (ed. Bened. ii, col. 1101). I have found no further instances, and no satisfactory explanation of the forms of this word. 16. *he saide*] add. 18. of *þo blynde*] *e. caecorum, A. g. eorum.* 20. *sípen to þem þat wore at I.*] *e. his qui in Hierosolymis, A. g. Hierosolymis.* 21. *ande toke me*] *A. comprehensum temtabant interficere.* 30. Cf. above xxv 13, 23.

Chap. xxvii 1. *be taken*] *A. tradi Paulum cum reliquis custodiis.* 5. *in twelve days*] I am indebted to Mr H. J. White of Merton College, Oxford, for the following note:—‘*XV diebus* is read by the Book of Armagh (our D) and the Old Latin Fleury palimpsest (our h, edit. Berger) as well as by the Greek cursives 137 and C^{ser} (δι ημερων δεκαπεντε) and the harcl. syr. (cum asterisco); the *twelve* has probably come from a misreading of the *fifteen* in Roman numerals. You will find a similar instance in John xi 18 where for *stadiis quindecim* the Old Latin MSS. (*c. l. t.*) read *stadiis duodecim.*’ 7. *Gwyde*] *cl. Gnidum, g. contracnidum; A. Cium.* 8. *into*] *A. venimus in.* *Thessala*] *A. Thalassa.* 9. *longe...ande myche-schippyng* *ande saylynge*] *A. multo...navigatio.* 10. *charge þat es of þo schippe*] *A. oneris.* 12. *þei 2°*] *A. plurimi.* 13. *A. Adspirante autem austro aëstimantes propositum se tenere, cum sustulissent de Asso, legebant Cretam.* 14. *wynde*] *A. ventus typhonicus qui vocatur euroaquilo.* 21. *þis losse*] *A. iniuriam hanc et iacturam.* 30. *as forto keste þer ankers*] *A. sub optentu quasi a prora inciperent anchoras extendere.* 41. *a place þer two sees mette*] *A. g. locum bithalassum;* Cod. Cavensis, Bibl. Nat. 93, 309 etc. add ‘*ubi duo maria conveniebant*’ which is probably the original of our reading, cf. Berger, *Vulg.* pp. 64, 96. LV. ‘*a place of grauel gon al aboute with the see.*’ *Bot þo schippe*] *A. puppis, LV. ‘the last part.’* 42. *and þat þei etc.*] *A. ne quis cum enatasset effugeret, LV. lest ony schulde ascape, whanne he hadde swymmed out.* 44. *saufe & none perished*] add.

Chap. xxviii 1. *þo londe þat we were onne*] add. *Mutilene*] *A. Militene.* 2. *manhede*] a literal rendering of the Latin *humanitatem*, cf. xxvii 3 *manly ‘humane.’* LV. has *curtesie* and *curteisli.* 3. *stikkes*] *A. sarmenitorum multitudinem.* 8. *A. cum orasset et imposuisset ei manus.* 11. *fairnes of castels*] *A. insigne Castrorum.* The same reading occurs in Beda, Comm. in Act. (Sab.), and in Alcuin’s revision of the Vulgate whence it came into the Anglo-Norman Bible: ‘*el quel signe estoit des chasteux.*’ The French Bible of the xiith century reads ‘*un molt noble chastel*’ (= *insigne castrum*). See Berger, *La Bible française*, p. 144. The Early Version has similarly ‘*a noble thing of castels*,’ whereas LV. has been corrected to ‘*an excellent singne of Castours*’ *cl. insigne Castorum.* 15. *þo merket of Appii þo senator*] *A. g. Appii forum et tribus Tabernis.* I have found no authority for this reading. 16. *wiþouten þo castels*] *g. foras manere extra castra, A. om.* Cf. Berger, *Vulg.* p. 96, note 2. 17. *pupil of þo Iewes*] *A. plebem.* 19. *þat I schulde noghte be delyuerde*] add. 21. *none*] *A. neque...aliquis fratrum.* *tolde...dede or ille*] *A. adnuntiavit aut locutus est quid de te malum.* 22. *can ande felys*]

A. sentis. 25. *þei learned*] A. discedebant. The translator evidently read 'discebant.' *of Poule*] A. dicente Paulo. 26. *saye vnto hem*] A. dic. 28. *þis helfulle þinges*] A. hoc salutare dei. 30. *þo Iewes ande þo naciones þat wore called gentyles*] A. e. om.; Cod. Toletanus and Cod. Cavensis read 'disputans et recipiebat omnes qui ingrediebantur ad eum Iudeos atque Grecos,' cf. Berger, *Vulg.* p. 64; g. et disputabat cum Iudeis et Grecis. 31. *oure Lorde*] A. domino.

MATTHEW.

Chap. i 3. *Zaram*] A. Zarad. 4. *Raab*] A. Racab. 11—12. *Iechonyam*] A. Iechoniam *et fratres eius in transmigrationem Babylonis. Et post transmigrationem Babylonis.* 17. *fourtene*] A. *generationes quattuordecim...generationes...generationes.* 18. *moder of Iesu*] A. *mater eius*; Edit. *Stephanica* Parisiis 1538, quoted from ed. of 1546 by W. and W. has 'mater iesu.' EV. *his moder*, LV. (and EV. MS. S.) the modir of Ihesu. *hire*] add. 20. *for-to leue his wyf—oure*] add. 22. *þis*] A. *Hoc—totum.* *seyd*] A. *dictum a domino*; EV. *om. a domino*, LV. (EV. in MS. N.) *seid of the Lord.* *on þis wyse*] add. 23. *hire*] add. *þat is*] A. *quod est interpretatum.* *is 2*] add. 24. *his—Marye*] add.

Chap. ii 1. *þe kynges*] A. *magi*, EV. *kyngis or wijs men*, LV. *astro-myenes.* 3. *in herte*] add. 9. *þre kynges—Heroud*] add. 10. *ioyeful & wiþ etc.*] A. *gavisi sunt gaudio magno valde, et intrantes etc.* 12. *by Herode*] A. *ad Herodem.* 13. *his 1^o*] add. 14. *Ioseph*] add. 15. *of God*] A. *a domino.* 16. *of þe kynges*] A. *a magis.* *in-to Betlem 1^o*] add. *þat were*] add. 17. *Ieremye*] A. *Hieremiam prophetam.* 18. *in hye*] A. *in Rama*; E and LV. *an hiȝ.* 19. *oure*] add. 21. *& Ioseph*] A. *Qui.* 22. *Ioseph—his*] add. *by an aungel*] add.

Chap. iii 2. *schal come nyȝ*] A. *adpropinquavit*; g. etc. (see W. and W.), *appropinquabit.* 3. *oure*] add. 12. *korne*] A. *aream*, E and LV. *corn flore.* 16. *Iesus*] A. *om., cl. etc.* Iesus. *were opene*] A. *aperti sunt ei*; K, *tol.* *om. 'ei.'* *comynge down*] A. *descendentem sicut columbam venientem super se.*

Chap. iv 4. *Crist*] A. *Qui, (f. cui) respondens Iesus dixit.* 6. *to Crist*] A. *ei.* *for God bad etc.*] A. *quia angelis suis mandavit de te, et in manibus tollent te, f. ...ut in manibus tollent te.* 10. *seyde*] A. *dicit, f. etc. dixit.* *to þe fend*] A. *ei.* *Go awey*] A. *cl. vade*; but in a number of MSS. (see W. and W.) 'uade retro.' *for*] A. *om.*; f. etc. *est enim.* 11. *Crist*] A. *eum.* *goode*] add. 12. *Whan Iesus herde*] A. *Cum autem audisset, cl. etc. add 'iesus.'* 15. *lond of Neptalym*] A. *Nepthalim, cl. etc. terra N.* 16. *ȝede*] A. *sedebat, sx. ambulabat.* 17. *schal come nyȝ*] A. *adpropinquavit, sx. etc.* (see W. and W.) *-bit.* 18. *Iesus*] A. *om.; cl. etc. iesus.* 20. *& þe schyp*] add. 21. *two*] A. *duos fratres.* 22. *left*] A. *statim relictis, Z** (see W. and W.) *om. 'statim.'* 23. *of heuene*] add. 25. *& men—men*] add.

Chap. v 1. *Crist*] A. om. 13. *þe erþe 2^o—þis salt*] add. 15. *þei sette it*] add. 19. A. Qui ergo solverit...et docuerit sic homines. *þes com-awndementes*] add. 21. *Soþly ȝe haue h.*] A. Audistis. *to men of þe olde lowe*] A. antiquis; E & LV. to olde men; cf. v. 27. 22. *to his proper 3^o*] add. *is worþi*] A. reus erit. 24. *to be reconsyled*] A. reconciliare, *cl.* etc. reconciliari. 25. *þyn enemy 2^o*] A. adversarius, *g. g¹. c.* adv. *tuus*. 26. *fro þi prysoun*] A. inde. 29. *If it so be*] A. Quod si. 31. *to olde men*] add. 32. *of hire housbonde*] add. 33. *to God*] A. domino, T. deo. 34. *but soþly it is seyd*] A. Ego autem dico. 41. *angrep*] A. angariaberit, *cl.* etc. -verit. 42. A. Qui petit a te, *da ei, et volenti mutuari a te ne avertaris.* 43. *to olde men*] A. om. *frend*] A. proximum, E & LV. thin neiȝbore.

Chap. vi 2. *þyn*] add. 4. *hyre*] add; cf. v. 6. 5. *holy*] add. 6. *pray*] A. ora...*in abscondito.* *þi meede*] add. 10. *to us*] add.

LIST OF WORDS.

The words marked with an asterisk will be found in Appendix I.

abydynge expectation, Rom. viii 19
adrad afraid, 1 Tim. v 20, Tit. ii 8
adreynt p.p. drowned, Prol. 9. 11
agulteþ pr. sg. fails, sins, Tit. iii 11
a-knowe 'to be -,' to confess, *1 John ii 23, 2 John 7
algates always, Rom. xiii 5, 1 Cor. vi 7
allegid pt. pl. lightened, Acts xxvii 38
alþerhigheste highest of all, Acts vii 48
al-þer last last of all, Heb. i 2
anentysched pt. sg. brought to nought, destroyed, Phil. ii 7
anuy annoyance, trouble, 'in -,' inopportunely, 2 Tim. iv 2
a-payd p.p. contented, Heb. xiii 5
arered pt. sg. raised up, Rom. viii 11
aresoun to convince, 'arguere' Jud. 15
a-rewēþ pr. sg. pities, Rom. xii 8
armorye furniture, tackling, Acts xxvii 19
aspyes ambush, wiles, Eph. vi 11; spies, Heb. xi 31
at that, Acts x 15, xi 9, *1 Pet. iv 14, v 2
a-þinken to be displeased, to repent, Heb. vii 22; *a-þouȝt* p.p. Prol. 4. 14
a-þrust thirsty, Rom. xii 20
**auoutoures* adulterers, Jam. iv 4
auowtrye adultery, Mt. v 27, 28
ayuse to consider, Acts xv 6
awghte pt. sg. ought, Acts xxvi 9
aylastande everlasting, Acts xiii 46, 48
azeynward backward, in return, Prol. 5. 13
balled bald, 1 Cor. xi 5
baylys 'lictores,' serjeants, Acts xvi 35, 38
bere-lepe a basket, 'sporta,' Acts ix 25
betty pt. sg. beat, Acts xxii 19
bigge to build, Acts xv 16
bihetynge pt. sg. promised, Acts xiii 23
bikette pt. sg. promised, Acts vii 5; **byhette* p.p. 1 John ii 25
bihetynge a promise, Acts ii 39
bitawghte pt. sg. assigned, delivered, Acts xii 4
bolne to swell, Acts xxviii 6
bourgenyng sprouting forth, budding, Heb. xii 15
boxumnesse obedience, Rom. v 19, vi 16
brenne to burn, 1 Cor. xiii 3; *branneþ* prs. sg. 1 Cor. iii 15
brodde a spike, prod, Acts xxvi 14
buggeþ pr. pl. buy, 1 Cor. vii 30
buriase a citizen, Acts xxi 39, xxii 28
bus pr. sg. behoves, Acts ix 7
buxom pliant, obedient, 1 Pet. iii 6
byare a redeemer, Acts vii 35
byhoteþ pr. pl. promise, 1 Tim. ii 10; *byhoten* p.p. Heb. xi 11, 1 John ii 25; *byhotyng* pr. p. 2 Pet. ii 19
by-hyȝte pt. sg. promised, Prol. 4. 20
**byldeþ* pr. sg. beholds, Jam. i 23
byseþ imp. pl. take heed, Gal. v 15
cacched pt. pl. chased, Acts vii 57
catelle substance, goods, Acts viii 20
**cely* happy, blessed, 1 Pet. iii 4
chaffarynge trading, 1 Thes. iv 6
chargeful burdensome, 1 Thes. ii 7
chariaunt burdensome, chargeable, 1 Thes. ii 9
chausers shoes, Acts xiii 25
**chere* face, appearance, 1 Pet. iii. 12

clergye learning, 1 Pet. v 3
 clipped pt. sg. embraced, Acts xx 10
 code a cud, Prol. 15. 23
 cofenabel timely, opportune, Heb. iv 16
 corueser a tanner, Acts ix 43
 couche bedchamber, Mt. vi 6
 couþ known, Col. iii 11
 curyoure a tanner, Acts x 6, 32
 cynacle, synacle an upper room, Acts i 13, ix 39, xx 8, 9
 dampne to condemn, Acts xxv 16
 defouleþ pr. sg. defiles, 1 Cor. xi 4, 5
 dewle devil, Acts x 38
 dighte pt. pl. prepared, Acts x 10
 dodded p.p. cut, shorn, Acts xviii 18
 dresse pr. pl. direct, 1 Thes. iii. 11, 2 Thes. iii 5
 dronkelew given to drink, 1 Cor. v 11, 1 Tim. iii. 3
 droued p.p. troubled, Acts xv 24, xx 10
 dryt dung, dirt, Phil. iii 8
 eft again, Mt. iv 7, 8
 estfe-schippinge sailing back, Acts xxviii 10
 estfsones again, 1 Cor. iii 20
 enchesoun cause, Rom. xiii 4, Phil. i 28
 *enourned pt. pl. adorned, 1 Pet. iii 5
 empêched pt. pl. hindered, stopped, Acts xxvii 41
 erþe-schake earthquake, Acts xvi 26
 euenhede equity, Acts xvii 31
 fele many, 2 Pet. i 15
 file to defile, Acts xxiv 6; *filed* p.p. Acts ii 31, xxi 28, *2 Pet. ii 22
 flaumbe a flame, Acts vii 30
 fonne 1 sg. prs. am mad, Acts xxvi 25; *fonnes* 2 sg. Acts xxvi 24
 forbugge to redeem, Eph. v 16; *forbouȝt* p.p. 1 Pet. i 18
 for-buggynge redemption, Rom. viii 23, 1 Cor. i 30; *fore-byȝenge*, Tit. ii 14
 *fordide pt. sg. destroyed, 2 Pet. ii 5; *fordon* p.p. 2 Pet. iii 7
 forfendeþ pr. sg. forbids, 3 John 10
 ferleſte p.p. left, Acts ii 31
 forme example, 1 Thes. i 7
 forþynketh pr. pl. repent, Prol. 5. 20
 foucheþ saf pr. sg. vouchsafes, Prol. 5. 5
 *fyllynges defilements, 2 Pet. ii 20
 gabbera a liar, 1 John i 10, v 10
 gafelokes javelins, Eph. vi 16
 gartie pt. sg. made, constrained, Acts xvi 15, xxvi 11
 gaseyn puddle, 'volutabrum,' 2 Pet. ii 22
 gate pt. sg. begat, Mt. i 2
 geldynge a eunuch, Acts viii 27, 34
 get goats, Prol. 15. 25
 getynge gain, 1 Tim. vi 5, 6
 gledes kites, Prol. 15. 31
 gnaisted pt. pl. gnashed, Acts vii 54
 gotten p.p. begotten, Acts xiii 33
 greeſ steps, stairs, Acts xxi 35, 40
 gretynge weeping, Mt. ii 18
 greue to burden, 1 Thes. ii 9
 greyȝyng a preparation, Eph. vi 15
 gripe a kind of gier eagle, vulture, Prol. 15. 30
 grucched pt. sg. murmured, Acts iv 25
 gruccheres murmurers, Jud. 16
 grucchynge a murmuring, 1 Pet. iv 9
 grun a snare, 1 Tim. vi 9; *gren* 1 Cor. vii 35
 gubernacle a helm, Acts xxvii 40
 habbeþ pr. pl. have, 1 Cor. vi 4
 haberiou breastplate, Eph. vi 14, 1 Thes. v 8
 habul suitable, Acts xxvii 12
 halþ side, Prol. 9. 9, 12. 2
 halowe holy one, saint, Acts xiii 35, xx 32
 hatte was called, Acts v 1, xii 13
 hauenyng haven, harbourage, Acts xxvii 12
 hayls to greet, Acts xxv 13; *haylsed* pt. xviii 22, xxi 7
 haylsinge a greeting, Acts xviii 18
 hele health, salvation, 2 Pet. iii 15, Jam. i 1
 heleþ pr. sg. hides, 1 Pet. iv 8
 helynge a covering, garment, 1 Cor. xi 10, Heb. i 12
 heo she, Rom. xiii 1
 herborewynghe hospitality, Rom. xii 13

hernes corners, Acts xxvi 26
heryen to praise, worship, Prol. 11. 11,
 Heb. i 6
heryenges worship, 1 Pet. iv 3
hese 'in -,' in ease, opportunely, 2 Tim.
 iv 2
hestes commands, Col. ii 22
hette p.p. promised, Acts ii 39
hiddels hiding-places, Acts xxvi 26
highed p.p. exalted, Acts v 31
highte pr. sg. is called, Acts xvii 7
hosen p.p. lifted, 1 Tim. iii 6
homlyche familiar, belonging to the
 house, 1 Tim. v 8, Gal. vi 10; *homely*
 Acts x 7
hony-sokkles locusts, Mt. iii 4
hote pr. sg. command, 1 Tim. vi. 13
house to build, 'superedificare,' Jud.
 20, **housed* pt. pl. 1 Pet. ii 7; *how-*
singe pr. p. Acts iv 11
housemeye household, Acts x 2
**hurde* a shepherd, 1 Pet. ii 25; *hirdus*
 ib. v 4
hurneþ pr. pl. run, 1 Pet. iv 4
hurnyng pr. p. running, Prol. 16. 30
huryryng-man hireling, Prol. 15. 10

implyeþ pr. sg. entangles, 2 Tim. ii 4
indurate hardened, Acts xix 9
iunctures bands, Acts xxvii 40

kendames tracts of land, 'regiones,'
 Acts viii 1
kes(e) to kick, 'calcitrare,' Acts ix 5,
 xxvi 14
knafe-chylde a male child, Prol. 17.
 15, Acts vii 19
knuttynges bands, ties, 'conjunctiones,'
 Col. ii 19
komelynge 'advena,' a stranger, Acts
 vii 29
kouþe-name a surname, Acts i 23
kynde grateful, 'gratus,' Col. iii 15
kyndomes Jam. v 4, see *kendames*
kynrede kindred, tribe, Heb. vii 13
kynse 'calcitrare' (in S. P.), Acts ix 5,
 xxvi 14

**late* slow, Jam. i 19
lattyng hindrance, 1 Cor. vii 35,
 1 Tim. v 21

leffulle permissible, Acts xxi 37
leffullyche legitimately, 2 Tim. ii 5
legge to lay, Prol. 13. 20
lendes loins, 1 Pet. i 13
**lerid* learned, 2 Pet. ii 2
lese to lose, Prol. 2. 33, 2 John 8
lesyng a lie, 1 John ii 21, 27
lether evil, Tit. i 12
lette to hinder, Acts viii 36; *latte* pr.
 sg. Heb. xii 15
lewedere more ignorant, Prol. 7. 31
longabydynge patience, long-suffering,
 2 Tim. iii 10
longanymyte long-suffering, Col. i 11
loos fame, repute, 2 Cor. vi 8, Phil.
 iv 8
lotted p.p. allotted, Acts i 17
loued pt. pl. praised, Acts xvi 25
loute to bow down, worship, Mt. iv 9;
lowtande Acts xvi 25
lowghne pt. pl. smiled, laughed, Acts
 ii 13
luther evil, Eph. vi 13
lye flame, 2 Thes. i 8, Heb. i 7
lyffode food, Jam. ii 15, 1 Cor. xiii 3
lyft left, Mt. vi 3
lygge to lie, Prol. 14. 12
lyne pr. pl. lie, Acts xxiii 21
lyte pt. sg. let, Mt. iii 15

maddes 2 sg. prs. art mad, Acts xii
 15
**malyson* cursing, 2 Pet. ii 14
maners manors, estates, Acts xxviii 7
markenes darkness, Acts ii 20
mased amazed, Acts ix 7
mawmetes idols, 1 John v 21, 1 Pet.
 iv 3
me one, 1 Cor. vi 15, vii 36
meke much, great, Acts xxiv 2
menged pt. sg. mixed, mingled, Acts
 xviii 4
meny, meyne household, family, Acts
 iii 25, gentiles ib. iv 27
meridiane south, Acts viii 26
mot pr. sg. must, Prol. 7. 24; *moten*
 pl. ought, 1 John iv 11
motar an advocate, Acts xxiv 1
mote-halle court-house, Acts xxiii 35
mowe pr. pl. can, 1 Cor. vii 9
muke meek, 2 Tim. iii 3

mynde remembrance, 1 Cor. xi 24,
1 Thes. iii 6

mysbylefyd unbelieving, 1 Cor. vii 12,
13; *mysbylefed* men unbelievers,
gentiles, Prol. 14. 31, 1 Cor. vi 7.

mysseggere a railer, 'maledicuſ,' 1 Cor.
v 11

**mysseye* to curse, Jam. iii 9; *mys-
seyde* pt. sg. p.p. 1 Pet. ii 23

**mysword* a curse, 1 Pet. iii 8

nedder viper, snake, Acts x 12, xxviii
8, *Jam. iii 7

nedlyche necessarily, Prol. 7. 24

neghed pt. sg. drew near, Acts xxii 6

neo-menye new moon, Col. ii 16

ner-pe-latere nevertheless, 1 Cor. xii
15, 16

neyȝleche draw near, Jam. iv. 8;
-lachen ib. v 8; -lyche Rom. xiii 11

norysche a nurse, 1 Thes. ii 7

nouþer, noþer, noyþer neither, Acts xxiii
14, xv 10, Mt. v 35

nowþe now, Rom. viii 22

nowȝere nowhere, Heb. ii 16

nul will not, Heb. viii 12

obbrayd, obbroyd reproach, 'impro-
perium,' Heb. xi 26, xiii 13

obbraydēþ upbraids, Jam. i 5; *obraydēd*
p.p. 1 Pet. iv 14

offendikel offence, Acts xxiv 16

oknowe, see *aknowe*, Acts ix 14, 21

opunsched openly shown, Acts ii 20
or before, *2 Pet. ii 12, Mt. i 18, Acts
xxiii 15

otwynne apart, asunder, Acts xv 39

**ouerlye* to oppress, Jam. ii 6; *ouer-
lyen* 2 Pet. ii 7: *ouerlyne* p.p. Acts
x 38

ouerȝode pt. sg. 'circumveniens,' got
the better of, Acts vii 19

outetaken except, Acts xxvi 29, Mt. v
32

outetaker of parsons respecter of per-
sons, Acts x 34, *Jam. ii 1

paas steps, Mt. v 41

palle a mantle, Mt. v 40

parsener a partner, Prol. 1. 16.

plawfere a playfellow, Acts xiii 1

prisons prisoners, Acts xvi 27

propycyatorye mercy-seat, Heb. ix 5

puttynge in 'of hondes' laying on of
hands, Heb. vi 2, 1 Tim. iv 14,
2 Tim. i 6

quyletes gatherings, 'collectionem,'
Heb. x 25

rafeneres robbers, 1 Cor. v 10, vi 10

rafeyn robbery, Phil. ii 6

raþere earlier, former, Heb. viii 7, 13

**recheles* reckless, careless persons,
1 Pet. ii 15

rede pr. sg. advise, Prol. 6. 21

redy prudent, 1 Cor. i 19, Tit. ii 1

redynesse prudence, 1 Cor. i 19

rewme realm, Mt. iv 16, v 10

**rode-tre* the cross, 1 Pet. ii 24

roghte pt. sg. cared, Acts xviii 17

**romynynge* pr. p. roaring, 1 Pet. v 8,
2 Pet. ii 4

ryfelynge a wrinkle, 'ruga,' Eph. v 27

sad solid, heavy, Heb. v 12, Acts iii 7

sadlyche soberly, 1 Pet. i 22

sadnesse firmness, Col. ii 5

saiden 'dissecabantur,' Acts vii 54

schamel stool, Acts ii 35

schamfastnesse modesty, 1 Tim. ii 9

schendēþ pr. pl. put to shame, 1 Cor.
xi 22, pr. sg. ruins, destroys, Gal. v
9

schenschype shame, 1 Cor. xi 14, 2 Tim.
ii 15

schenyte to shun, Tit. iii 9, 10

schere pt. pl. cut, Acts xiv 13

schidesteres chiders, wranglers, Tit. ii 3

schiprode voyage, Acts xxvii 10

schoyēþ pl. put shoes on, Eph. vi 15

schrewde depraved, Acts ii 40

**schryue* pr. pl. confess, 1 John i 9;
schryuynge Mt. iii 5; -ande Acts xix
18

schuleþ pr. pl. owe, Rom. xiii 7

schypbreche shipwreck, 1 Tim. i 19

sege seat, Prol. 2. 5

seggeþ, suggen pr. pl. say, 1 Thes. iv
14, 1 Cor. i 10

**semblante* a face, Jam. i 11

sewe pr. sg. follow, Phil. iii 12

seyʒ pt. sg. saw, Heb. xi 5
sicaryens assassins, Acts xxi 38
siker sure, safe, Acts xxvii 9
siben since, Acts x 30
skille reason, Acts xxii 1; *skelis* Prol. 8. 3, 5
slakande loosening, Acts xxvii 40
slekked p.p. quenched, Mt. iii 12
smeke smoke, Acts ii 19
**smert* quick, Jam. i 19
smertely 'als -,' immediately, Acts x 33, xi 11
sonde a sending, message, Acts i 4, vii 13
soþfastly truly, verily, Acts ii 15
soþfastnes(se) truth, 2 John 1, 2, 3, 4
sowrdowʒ leaven, 1 Cor. v 6, 7, 8
sparde pt. sg. barred, Acts xxvi 10, p.p. ib. xii 14; *sparred*, *sperred* p.p. ib. xxi 30, xxii 19
spouse-brekeres adulterers, 1 Cor. vi 9
sprenge imp. pl. sprinkle, Heb. x 22; *spreynde* pt. sg. ib. ix 19, 21
sterne a star, Acts vii 43, *2 Pet. i 19
steyʒ up pt. sg. ascended, Eph. iv 10; *steghe* pt. sg. Acts ii 34; *steghne* p.p. ib. x 4
stirrte pt. pl. rushed, sprang, Acts xiv 13
stonyed p.p. astonished, amazed, Acts xxii 17
streng string, Prol. 4. 23
stude place, Eph. iv 27
sturbulen pr. pl. disturb, trouble, Acts xvi 20; *stourebulde* pt. pl. ib. xvii 13
styntyngē, stuntyngē ceasing, 1 Thes. i 2, ii 13
sudaries sweating-cloths, Acts xix 12
sundrylyche separately, severally, Heb. ix 5
sunge imp. pl. sin, Eph. iv 26
swen pr. pl. follow, 1 Pet. ii 21, see *sewe*
swot sweat, Prol. 3. 32
syen pt. pl. saw, Heb. iii 9, see *seyʒ*
sykynges sighs, Rom. viii 26
syþes times, 2 Pet. i 15
tarreden pt. pl. irritated, provoked, Heb. iii 16; *tarrynge* provoking, Gal. v 26
tarrynge provocation, Heb. iii 15
tendeþ pr. sg. sets on fire, Jam. iii 6
tenpinges tenth part, tithes, Heb. vii 4, 5, 6, 8, 9
perf unleavened, 1 Cor. v 7, Prol. 17. 33
perfnes (unleavenedness), purity, 1 Cor. v 8
þer-hennes therein, Heb. iv 1
þeþen, þen thence, Acts xviii 7, xxvii 28
þofe though, Acts xxiii 9
þrusten pr. pl. thirst, Mt. v 6
todriuen p.p. torn to pieces, Acts xxiii 10
traiste trust, confidence, Acts xxviii 15
traistely, trestly, tristely confidently, steadfastly, Acts xiii 46, xiv 3, xviii 26
trowe to believe, Acts xv 7
trowþe belief, Acts xv 2
turbulynge disturbance, Acts xii 18
urst trust, Heb. ii 13
twynnes imp. pl. separate, Acts xiii 2; *twynned* p.p. xxiii 7
vmgyuen p.p. surrounded, Acts xxviii 20
vmschone pt. sg. shone round, Acts xxvi 13
vnþoghte(n) pt. bethought, Acts v 24, xi 16
vnboxumnesse disobedience, Rom. v 19
vncely unhappy, Rom. vii 24
vncofenabel unsuitable, 2 Thes. iii 2
vncouþe unknown, Col. iii 11
vnderfongen to receive, 1 John iii 22, consider, have respect of, Jam. ii 9
vnderfongyngē of mennes persones respect of persons, Col. iii 25, 1 Pet. i 17
vndernymen to reprove, condemn, Tit. i 9; *underneme* imp. sg. 1 Tim. v 20; *vndername(n)* p.p. Jam. ii 9; Eph. v 13
**vnþilyngē* undefined, 1 Pet. iii 4
**vnþouled* undefined, Jam. i 27
vnþyfled spotless, Jud. 24
vnþeled p.p. uncovered, 1 Cor. xi 5
vnþunnyngnesse ignorance, 1 Pet. ii 15
vnkynde ungrateful, 2 Tim. iii 2
vn(n)eþis scarcely, 1 Pet. iv 18, Acts xiv 17; **vnne-þus* 1 Pet. iv 18

**vnpesible* restless, Jam. iii 8
vn-redy unwise, Eph. v 17
vntrowþeful unbelieving, Acts xiv 2
upsō-doun upside down, Tit. iii 11

waker watchful, Acts xx 31
 **wanhope* despair, 1 John v 16
ware prudent, cautious, Acts xiii 7, xx 31
warye to curse, Acts xxiii 5; *-ande* pr. p. xix 9; *waries* pr. sg. xxiii 4
waymentacion lamentation, Jam. iv 9, v 9
waymentynge lamentation, Mt. ii 18
waytynges ambush, plots, Acts xx 19
welewe(n) fade, 1 Pet. i 4, v 4, Jam. i 11
wem blemish, spot, 1 Pet. i 19, Eph. v 27
werne to forbid, Acts x 47
wilfullyche willingly, 1 Pet. v 2
wilne imp. pl. will, desire, Rom. xii 16
wite to know, Acts ii 36; *wiste* pt. sg. knew, Acts ii 30
wodnesse madness, 2 Pet. ii 16
wo(o)de mad, wild, Acts viii 11, Jud. 13
wonnes pr. sg. dwells, Acts xvii 24; *wonyed* pt. sg. Prol. 2. 32; *wonned* pt. pl. dwelt, Acts xix 10
wonyngē dwelling, 1 Pet. i 17
wrachful revengeful, 1 Thes. iv 6, Rom. xiii 4
wrye to cover, 1 Cor. xi 6, 7
wycche a sorcerer, Acts xiii 6, 8
wyndel a basket, Mt. iii 12

wyterly assuredly, for certain, Acts xxiii 20

y-blend p.p. blinded, 1 John ii 11
y-brent p.p. burnt, 1 Cor. vii 9
y-dodded p.p. cut off, shorn, 1 Cor. xi 6
y-folewed p.p. baptized, p. 47. 16, 20
y-grefed p.p. charged, burdened, 1 Tim. v 16

y-hyzed p.p. hastened, 1 Thes. ii 17
y-knowe to make known, 'notas facere,' Col. i 27
y-lefed p.p. believed, 1 Tim. iii 16
y-mynused p.p. diminished, Col. i 21
y-seo imp. pl. beware of, take heed to, Phil. iii 2

y-seye p.p. seen, Phil. iii 4
y-spreynd p.p. sprinkled, Heb. ix 13
y-styed p.p. ascended, 1 Cor. ii 9
y-tend p.p. kindled, Jam. iii 6
y-tenþed p.p. tithed, Heb. vii 9
y-wrye p.p. covered, 1 Tim. vi 8

ȝede(n) pt. pl. went, 2 John 7, 3 John 7, see *ȝode*
ȝerde rod, sceptre, Heb. i 8
ȝernes pr. sg. desires, wishes, Acts xv 23, xxiii 26; *ȝernede* p.p. xx 33
ȝerneyngē a desire, wish, Acts xxv 23
ȝete, ȝote to pour, shed, Acts ii 17, 18; *ȝette* p.p. Acts i 18; *ȝotted* p.p. ii 33, x 45
ȝitte yet, Acts xxvi 22; **ȝut* 2 Pet. iii 4
ȝode pt. pl. went, Acts v 41, see *ȝede*
**ȝoue* p.p. given, Jam. i 5

LIST OF SIGNS AND ABBREVIATIONS.

Berger, *Vulg.* Berger, S., *Histoire de la Vulgate pendant les premiers siècles du moyen âge*, Paris 1893.

Bj. Björkman, E., *Scandinavian Loan-words in Middle English*, 1. Upsala 1900, Diss.

Bülbring, *El.* Bülbring, K. D., *Altenglisches Elementarbuch*, Heidelberg 1902.

E.B.V. Paues, A. C., *A fourteenth cent. Engl. Bibl. Version...with some introductory chapters on Middle English Biblical Versions (Prose-translations)*, Cambridge 1902, Diss.

E.E.T.S. The Early English Text Society.

Ekw. Ekwall, E., *Shakespere's Vocabulary, its etymological elements*, Pt. 1. Upsala 1903, Diss.

EV. *The Earlier Wyclifite Version*, edit. Forshall and Madden, Oxford 1850.

Kluge-Lutz. Kluge, F. and Lutz, F., *English Etymology*, Strassburg 1898.

Luick. Luick, K., *Untersuchungen zur engl. Lautgeschichte*, Strassburg 1896.

LV. *The Later Wyclifite Version*, see EV.

Morsb. Morsbach, L., *Mittelenglische Grammatik*, Halle 1896.

N.E.D. Murray, J. A. H., *A New English Dictionary on Historical Principles*, Oxford 1888—.

N.E.G. Sweet, H., *New English Grammar*, Oxford 1898—1900.

Paul's Grdr. Paul, H., *Grundriss der Germanischen Philologie*, 2nd edit., Strassburg 1896—.

Q.F. *Quellen und Forschungen zur Sprach- und Culturgeschichte der Germanischen Völker*, Strassburg.

Sab. Sabatier, P., *Bibliorum Sacrorum latinæ uersiones antiquæ seu uetus Italica*, 3 vols. Remis 1743—9.

S.E.W. Arnold, Thos., *Select English Works of John Wyclif*, 3 vols. Oxford 1869.

Siev. Gr. Sievers, E., *Angelsächsische Grammatik*, 3rd edit., Halle 1898.

t. Br. ten Brink, B., *Chaucers Sprache und Verskunst*, 2nd edit., Leipzig 1899.

Urk. Morsbach, L., *Ueber den Ursprung der neuenglischen Schriftsprache*, Heilbronn 1888.

Manuscripts and editions of the Vulgate.

A. Codex Amiatinus, Tischendorf, 1850.
 arm. Codex Armachanus.
 cav. Codex Cavensis.
 cl. *Biblia Sacra vulgatae editionis Sixti V...jussu recognita et Clementis VIII auctoritate edita*, Parisiis 1848.
 F. Codex Fuldensis, Ranke, 1868.
 g. *Gigas Librorum*, Belsheim, 1879.
 K. Codex Bibliorum Karolinus, Brit. Mus. Add. 10546.
 sx. *Biblia Sacra Vulgatae Editionis Sixti V...iussu recognita*, Antverpiae 1605.
 tol. Codex Toletanus.
 W. and W. Wordsworth, J. and White, H. J., *Nouum Testamentum... Latine secundum editionem S. Hieronymi*, Pars prior, Quattuor Euangelia, Oxonii 1889—98.
 Z. Codex Harleianus 1775.

Old Latin texts.

ambstr. Ambrosiaster, Migne xvii.
 c (Ev.). Codex Colbertinus, Bibl. Nat. 254, Sabatier ; Belsheim, 1888.
 C. Cyprianus, Hartel, Vindobonae 1871.
 d (Ev. Acts). Codex Bezae Cantabrigiensis, Scrivener, 1864.
 d (Paul). Codex Claromontanus, Tischendorf, 1852.
 e (Paul). Codex Sangermanensis Petropolitanus, Sabatier ; Belsheim, 1885.
 e (Acts). Codex Laudianus F. 82, Tischendorf, 1871.
 f (Ev.). Codex Brixianus, Bianchini ; Wordsworth and White, 1889—98.
 f (Paul). Codex Augiensis, Scrivener, 1859.
 ff (James). Codex Corbeiensis Petropolitanus, Wordsworth, 1885.
 g (Acts, Ap.). *Gigas Librorum*, Stockholm, Belsheim, 1879.
 g¹ (Ev.). Codex Sangermanensis 15, Bibl. Nat. 11553; ed. Wordsworth, *Old-Latin Biblical Texts I.* Oxford 1883.
 h (Acts, Cath., Ap.). *Le palimpseste de Fleury*, Berger, 1889.
 m. *Speculum*, Belsheim (*Videnskabssels. Skrifter*) ; Christiania 1899.
 T. *Das Neue Testament Tertullians*, Roensch, 1871.

3 5282 00075 0789

DATE DUE

DATE DUE

BS2038
P3
1974

STACKS BS2038.P3 1974

Bible.

A fourteenth century English Biblical ve



3 5282 00075 0789